



Cornell University Library

Ithaca, New York

BOUGHT WITH THE INCOME OF THE

SAGE ENDOWMENT FUND

THE GIFT OF

HENRY W. SAGE

1891

DATE DUE

1900 1960 M.	
1070	
DEC_ 2 1970-H	
	•
441764	
	k
SAT 1500 P	
NOV = 11 19	G.
GAYLORD	PRINTED IN U.S.A.

Cornell University Library
B 341 Z51
V.2
Aristotle and the earlier Peripatetics;

3 1924 032 291 647

olin



The original of this book is in the Cornell University Library.

There are no known copyright restrictions in the United States on the use of the text.

ARISTOTLE

AND THE EARLIER PERIPATETICS

VOL. II.

WORKS BY DR. E. ZELLER.

- PRE-SOCRATIC SCHOOLS: a History of Greek
 Philosophy from the Earliest Period to the time of Socrates,
 Translated from the German by SARAH F. ALLEYNE. 2 vols.
 Orown 8vo. 30s.
- SOCRATES AND THE SOCRATIC SCHOOLS.

 Translated from the German by O. J. REICHEL, M.A.

 Crown 8vo. 10s. 6d.
- PLATO AND THE OLDER ACADEMY. Translated from the German by SARAH F. ALLEYNE and A. GOODWIN. Crown 8vo. 18s.
- STOICS, EPICUREANS, AND SCEPTICS. Translated from the German by O. J. REICHEL, M.A. Crown 8vo. 15s.
- HISTORY OF ECLECTICISM IN GREEK PHILO-SOPHY. Translated from the German by SARAH F. ALLEYNE, Crown 8vo. 10s. 6d.
- OUTLINES OF THE HISTORY OF GREEK PHILOSOPHY. Translated from the German by SARAH F, ALLEYNE and EVELYN ABBOTT. Crown 8vo. 10s. 6d.

LONGMANS, GREEN, & CO.
39 Paternoster Row, London
New York and Bombay

ARISTOTLE

AND

THE EARLIER PERIPATETICS

BEING A TRANSLATION FROM

ZELLER'S 'PHILOSOPHY OF THE GREEKS'

BY

B. F. C. COSTELLOE, M.A.

J. H. MUIRHEAD, M.A.

IN TWO VOLUMES-VOL. II.

LONGMANS, GREEN, AND CO.

39 PATERNOSTER ROW, LONDON

NEW YORK AND BOMBAY

1897

All rights reserved

A104672

CONTENTS

OF

THE SECOND VOLUME

CHAPTER X

PHYSICS—continued

C. Living Creatures

The Soul, 1. Its relation to the Body, 4. The Body as an Organic Whole related to the Soul as Means to End, 10. Stages of Animate Existence, 21. The Evolution of Organic Life and the Law of Analogy, 24. Indications of life in Inorganic Nature; History of the Earth and Mankind, 29.

Plants, 33.

Animals, 37. Their Bodies and the homogeneous materials of which they consist, 38. Organs and their Functions, 41. Generation and difference of Sex, 48. Sensation, 58. The Five Senses, 62. Sensus Communis, 68. Memory and Imagination, 70. Pleasure and Pain, 75. Sleep and Waking, 75. Dreams, 76. Death, 77. Scale of Value in animal creation, 78. Classification of animal Species, 80.

CHAPTER XI

PHYSICS—continued

Man

The Human Body, 90. Soul and Reason, 92. Active and Passive Reason, 97. Immediate and mediate exercise of Reason, 105. Desire and Volition, 108. Practical Reason and Rational Will, 112. Free Will, Voluntariness, Intention, 114. The question of the Unity of the life of the Soul, 119. The Birth of the Soul, 120. The Union of the Parts of the Soul, 123. The Immortality of the Soul, 129. Personality, 134.

CHAPTER XII

PRACTICAL PHILOSOPHY

A. Ethics

The End of Human Activity: Happiness, 138. The essential elements of Happiness, 140. External Goods, 144. Pleasure, 146. Value

of Pleasure, 148.

Moral Virtue, 153. Virtue as a Quality of the Will distinguished from Natural Impulses, 155. Intellectual Insight, 157. The Origin of Virtue, 160. The Consent of the virtuous Will: the Proper Mean, 161. The Virtues, 163. Courage, Self-control, &c., Justice, 170. Distributive and Corrective Justice. 171. Complete and Incomplete, Natural and Legal Right; other distinctions, 175. The Intellectual Virtues: Insight, 177. The right relation to the Passions, 188.

Friendship: its moral Import, 191. Nature and Kinds of Friend-

ship, 193. Further discussions, 198.

CHAPTER XIII

PRACTICAL PHILOSOPHY—continued

B. Politics

Necessity, Nature, and Functions of the State; Aristotle's Politics. 203. Ethical import of the State, 207. Aim of the State, 208.

The Household as element in the State, 213. Husband and Wife, 214. Parents and Children, 215. Master and Slave, 216. Production and Possession, 220. Against Common Property in Wives, Children, and Goods, 220.

The State and the Citizen, 222. Differences among citizens, 229.

Their political importance, 229.

Forms of Constitution, 233. Comparative Value and Justification of leading forms, 244. Monarchy and Republic, 249.

The Best State, 258. Its natural conditions and economic basis. Training of the Citizen, 261. Birth and Education, 262. Music, 266. Unfinished state of this part of the Politics in reference to Intellectual Training, Punishment, &c., 269. The Constitution, 272.

Imperfect Forms, 274. Democracy, 274. Oligarchy, 277. Aristocracy and Polity, 278. Tyranny, 282. The distribution of

Political Power, Changes in the Constitution, &c., 283.

CHAPTER XIV

RHETORIC

Problem of the Rhetoric, 289. Kinds of Proof, 293. Demonstration, 294. Different species of Demonstration appropriate to

different Kinds of Discourse, 295. Remaining forms of Proof. 296. Style and Arrangement, 297.

CHAPTER XV

THEORY OF FINE ART

Beauty, 301. Art as Imitation, 303. The effect of Art: Catharsis, 307. The Arts, 318. Tragedy, 320.

CHAPTER XVI

RELIGIOUS ASPECT OF ARISTOTLE'S PHILOSOPHY

Aristotle's attitude to Religion, 325. His Theology, 327. Significance and Origin of Popular Religion, 330.

CHAPTER XVII

RETROSPECT

Aristotle's point of view, 336. Development of the System, 338. Gaps and Contradictions, 342. Tendency of the Peripatetic School, 346

CHAPTER XVIII

THE PERIPATETIC SCHOOL: THEOPHRASTUS

His Life, 348. Writings, 351. Standpoint, 355. Logic, 358. Metaphysics: Aporiæ, 364. Theology, 369. Physics: Nature in general; Inorganic Nature, 373. Structure and history of the World, 379. Botanical Theory, 381. Nature of Vegetable life, 383. Parts of Plants, 384. Origin of Plants, 385. Classification, 388. Zoology, 389. Anthropology: the Soul as cause of movement, 390. Reason, Active and Passive, 392. Higher and lower parts of the Soul, 395. The Senses, 396. The Freedom of the Will, 399. Ethics, 399. Happiness, 402. Views on other points of ethical doctrine, 406. Politics, 410. Religious views, 412. Rhetoric and Theory of Fine Art, 414.

CHAPTER XIX

EUDEMUS, ARISTOXENUS, DICÆARCHUS, AND OTHERS

Eudemus, 417. Logic, 418. Physics, 419. Metaphysics, 421. Ethics: Virtue as a divine gift, 422. Theology, 424. Uprightness, 426. Other peculiarities of Eudemian ethics, 427.

Aristoxenus, 429. Ethical views, 431. Theory of Music, 433. Of the Soul, 436

a VOL. II.

ARISTOTLE

Dicæarchus:	Anthropology,	438.	The	practical	and	the theoretic
life, 440.	Politics, 441.			-		
Phanias, Clea	rchus, and other	ers. 44	3.			

CHAPTER XX

THE SCHOOL OF THEOPHRASTUS: STRATO

Demetrius o	f Phalerus a	nd others, 4	47.				
Strato, 450.	Logic and	l Ontology,	454.	Nature	\mathbf{a} nd	Deity,	455,
Physical	principles:	Heat and	Cold,	456.	J ravit	y, Vac	aum,

Time, Motion, 458. Cosmology, 464. Anthropology, 466.

CHAPTER XXI

THE PERIPATETIC SCHOOL AFTER STRATO TILL TOWARDS THE END OF THE SECOND CENTURY

Lyco, 474. Hieronymus, 475. Aristo, 477. Critolaus, 479. Phormio, Sotion, &c., 483.

Pseudo-Aristotelian Literature, 494. Logical, Metaphysical, Physical Writings, 495. The Magna Moralia, 498. The Economics, 498. The Rhetoric addressed to Alexander, 499. Conclusion, 499.

APPENDIX

Ои	THE	FORM	OF	THE	'POLITICS	3'	•	•	•	501
INI	ŒX									509

Addenda and Corrigenda.

Page 5, n. 2, col. 2, l. 10, for cut read cut in pieces

- " 6, l. 8, for alien read allied
- .. 61, 1. 5, for force read faculty
- ., 90, n. col. 1, 1. 19, for whole read whale
 - 111, n. 3, col. 2, II. 2, 7, for cylinders read springs
- " 147, n. col. 1, l. 16, for these last, however, are merely causes read the satisfaction of a want, moreover, is merely the cause
 - 152, n. 1, col. 1, l. 3, omit wrong
- , 171, l. 7, for quality read equality
- , 172, n. 2, col. 2, l. 3 from bottom, after things read that
- ., 178, l. 4, for moral insight read moral virtue
- " 182, n. col. 1, l. 6, for p. 182 read p. 183
- , 184, n. col. 2, l. 10 from bottom, for picture read future
- , 195, n. 4, col. 1, l. 4 from bottom, for 3 on preceding page read 2 supra
- ,, 196, n. 1, col. 1, l. 3, for pupil read audience
 - 204, n. 2, col. 2, l. 5 from bottom, for p. 203 supra, read Appendix, p. 507.
- " 231, n. 1, col. 1, l. 9, for finds itself more at home read exercises more influence
- . 242, l. 10, for indispensable read indisputable
- 243, n. 1, col. 1, l. 6, for chiefly read nearly
- " 245, 1. 1, for But even any one of such advantages as these confers read But even such advantages as these confer of themselves no title to rule in the State.
- , 259, n. 1, col. 1, l. 8, for size read greatness
- " 267, n. col. 1, l. 9, omit or
 - 274, l. 8, for or form, differing read or from differing
- " 292, 1. 9, for But as he regards... sense read Since, however, proof is the chief end in view
 - 322, n. col. 1, l. 8 from bottom, for added read not added
- ., 324, n. 5, col. 1, l. 11, omit vol. i.
- ., 325, Il. 1, 3, for section read chapter
- " " n. 2, col. 2, l. 5, before p. 291 read vol. ii.
- , 327, 1. 6, for scientific read theoretic
- " " last line, omit and
- 331, n. 2, col. 1, l. 2 from bottom, for maveia read marteia
- " 335, n. 1, col. 1, l. 10, for in chap. i. read vol. i. pp. 5, n. 7; 20, n. 2; 38, n.
- , 339, 1. 9, for motion read matter
- , , 1. 10, for relation read relationship
- " 375, n. 1, col. 1, l. 9, for Melinus read Melissus
- ., 382, 1. 6 from bottom, for geological read zoological

References.

The following references are to Vol. i.:—Vol. ii. p. 159, n. 2, col. 1, l. 8; 180, n. 2, col. 2, l. 2; 181, n. col. 2, l. 1, and l. 11 from bottom; 182, n. 1, col. 1, l. 6 from bottom; 204, n. 2, col. 1, ll. 3 and 10, and ll. 2 from bottom; 206, n. 4, col. 2, l. 3 from bottom; 219, n. 3, col. 1, l. 4 from bottom; 236, n. col. 1, l. 10 from bottom; 267, n. col. 1, l. 10; 292, n. 1, col. 1, l. 10; 302, n. 1, col. 1, ll. 6, l2; 331, n. 1, col. 1, l. 1; 343, n. 2, col. 2, l. 1 from bottom.

ARISTOTLE

AND THE

EARLIER PERIPATETICS

CHAPTER X

+0+--

[CHAP. IX. C. OF GERMAN TEXT]

Living Creatures

1. The Soul and Life

What distinguishes living creatures from all others is the Soul.¹ All life, in fact, consists in the power of self-movement,² that is, in a capacity inherent in a being of effecting changes in itself: the simplest form of which is confined, as in the case of plants, to nutrition, growth, and decay.³ But every movement implies two elements

² *Ibid.* ii. 1, 412, b, 16, cf. a,

27, and see infra.

ἐνυπάρχη μόνον, ζῆν αὐτό φαμεν, οἷον νοῦς, αἴσθησις, κίνησις καὶ στάσις ἡ κατὰ τόπον, ἔτι κίνησις ἡ κατὰ τροφὴν καὶ φθίσις τε καὶ αὕξησις. διὸ καὶ τὰ φυόμενα πάντα δοκεῖ ζῆν · φαίνεται γὰρ ἐν αὐτοῖς ἔχοντα δύναμιν καὶ ἀρχὴν τοιαύτην, δι' ἡς αὕξησίν τε καὶ φθίσιν λαμβάνουσι . . οὐδεμία γὰρ αὐτοῖς ὑπάρχει δύναμις ἄλλη ψυχῆς. Ας this lowest form of life presents itself wherever the higher is (see

¹ De An. i. 1, 407, a, 4: the investigation into the nature of the soul is of the highest value for science, μ άλιστα δὲ πρὸς τὴν φύσιν· ἔστι γὰρ οῖον ἀρχὴ τῶν ζψων [ἡ ψυχή].

³ Ibid. ii. 2, 413, a, 20: λέγομεν οδν . . . διωρίσθαι τὸ ἔμψυχον τοῦ ἀψύχου τῷ ζῆν. πλεοναχῶς δὲ τοῦ ζῆν λεγομένου, κὰν ἕν τι τούτων

-something that moves, and something that is moved: form and matter; and if a thing moves itself, it must contain this duality within itself.1 Hence every being that has life must be a compound being; and if we call the material part, which is subject to motion, the body, it will follow that the form, which is the cause of motion, has a being separate from and independent of the body.2 And as the form in general is identified with the efficient and the final cause, this being may also be said to be the final aim or end of the body.³ The form thus considered as motive or efficient force is called by Aristotle 'Entelechy': 4 and hence he defines the Soul as

infra) it may be treated as the universal mark of a living thing: ibid. c. 1, 412, a, 13: τῶν δὲ φυσικών [sc. σωμάτων] τὰ μὲν ἔχει ζωην τὰ δ' οὐκ έχει · ζωην δὲ λέγομεν την δι' αὐτοῦ [αύτοῦ] τροφήν $\tau \in \kappa al$ an enough κal $\phi \theta (\sigma i \nu)$. On the other hand, De An. i. 2, 403, b. 25 (τὸ ἔμψυχον δη τοῦ ἀψύχου δυοίν μάλιστα διαφέρειν δοκεί, κινήσει τε και τώ αισθάνεσθαι), expresses merely the popular view, not the technical definition, of life.

¹ See p. 4, n. 1, infra.

² De An. ii. 1, 412, a, 15: **ὥστε** πᾶν σῶμα φυσικὸν μετέχον ζωῆς οὐσία ἄν εἴη, οὐσία δ' οὕτως ὧς συνθέτη: έπει δ' έστι σώμα τοι ένδε: [TRENDELENBURG: σωμα καλ τοιονδί : TORSTRIK : καί σ. τοιόνδε], ζωλν γλο έχον, οὐκ άν είη τὸ σῶμα ψυχή, ου γάρ έστι τῶν καθ' ὑποκειμένου το σώμα, μάλλον δ' ώς ύποκείμενον καὶ ὕλη. ἀναγκαῖον ἄρα τὴν ψυχὴν οὐσίαν εἶναι ὡς εἶδος σώματος φυσικοῦ δυνάμει ζωὴν ἔχοντος. Part. An. i. 1, 641, a, 14-32; Gen. An. ii. 4, 738, b, 26;

Metaph. viii. 3, 1043, a, 35. Aristotle had already described the soul in the Eudemus as eldos 71:

see i. 383 sq., supra.

³ De An. ii. 4, 415, b, 7, where after the passage quoted, i. 356, n. 1, sup., he goes on, l. 12: ὅτι μὲν οὖν ως οὐσία [sc. αἰτία ἐστὶν ἡ ψυχὴ] δήλον το γάρ αίτιον του είναι πασιν ή οὐσία, τὸ δὲ ζῆν τοῖς ζῶσι τὸ είναι ἐστιν, αἰτία δὲ καὶ ἀρχὴ τούτων ή ψυχή. έτι τοῦ δυνάμει ουτος λόγος ή έντελέχεια. φανερον δ' ως και οδ ενεκεν ή ψυχή αιτία. ώσπερ γάρ ὁ νοῦς ενεκά του ποιεί. τον αὐτον τρόπον ή φύσις, και τοῦτ' έστιν αὐτῆ τέλος, τοιοῦτον δ' ἐν τοῖς ζώοις ἡ ψυχὴ καὶ [?] κατὰ φύσιν πάντα γὰρ τὰ φυσικὰ σώ-ματα τῆς ψυχῆς ὅργανα . . . &s ένεκα της ψυχης όντα. He then goes on to show, what is a matter of course, that the soul is an efficient cause. Part. An. i. 1. 611, a, 25: the οὐσία is both efficient and final cause; τοιοῦτον δέ τοῦ ζώου ήτοι πᾶσα ἡ ψυχὴ ἡ μέρος τι αὐτῆς.

⁴ Cf. i. 379, supra.

the Entelechy, or more accurately as the First Entelechy, of a natural body endowed with the capacity of life. This again applies to none but organic bodies, the members of which are designed for some definite purpose and serve as instruments for the fulfilment of special functions. The Soul accordingly is the First

¹ De An. ii. 1, Aristotle proceeds: ἡ δ' ούσία ἐντελέχεια Îthe form is the efficient force]. τοιούτου άρα σώματος ἐντελέχεια, The expression 'entelecheia' has, however, a double sense: at one time it is the power of action that is understood by it; at another, the activity itself (the standing example of the former meaning is ἐπιστήμη, of the latter, θεωρείν; see ibid., and cf. Metaph. ix. 6, 1048, a, 34; Phys. viii. 4, 255, a, 33; De Sensu, 4, 441, b, 22; Gen. An. ii. 1, 735, a, 9; TREN-DELENBURG, De An. 314 sq.; BONITZ, Arist. Metaph. ii. 394). The soul can be called entelecheia only in the former sense (that of the power), seeing that it is present even in sleep; this is what is meant by the addition πρώτη, when in l. 27 it is said: ψυχή έστιν έντελέχεια ἡ πρώτη σώματος φυσικοῦ δυνάμει ζωήν έχον-Tos. for the power always precedes the activity.

² Aristotle proceeds, l. 28: τοιοῦτο δὲ [sc. δυνάμει (ωὴν ἔχον], δ ὰν ἢ ὀργανικὸν, adding that the parts of plants also are organs, though very simple ones (cf. Part. An. ii. 10, 655, b, 37). On the definition of organic life cf. the passage quoted by TRENDE-LENBURG in loco; Part. An. i. 1, 642, a, 9: as the axe to fulfil its purpose must be hard, οῦτως καὶ ἐπεὶ τὸ σώμα ὖργανον (ἐνεκά

τινος γάρ ξκαστον τών μορίων. δμοίως δὲ καὶ τὸ ὅλον) ἀνάγκη ἄρα τοιονδί είναι καί έκ τοιωνδί, εί έκεῖνο έσται. Ibid. i. 5, 645, b. 14 : ἐπεὶ δὲ τὸ μὲν ὄργανον πᾶν ἕνεκά του, τὸ δ' οὖ ένεκα πρᾶξίς τις, φανερόν δτι καί το σύνολον σώμα συνέστηκε πράξεώς τινος ένεκα πλήρους. As the saw exists for the sake of sawing, so τὸ σῶμά πως τῆς ψυχῆς ένεκεν, καὶ τὰ μόρια τῶν ἔργων πρὸς α πέφυκεν εκαστον. Ibid. ii. 1, 646, b, 10 sqq.: of the constituent parts of living things some are homogeneous, others heterogeneous (see i. 517, n. 6, supra); the former, however, exist for the sake of the latter; ἐκείνων [sc. τῶν ἀνομοιομερῶν] γὰρ ἔργα καὶ πράξεις εἰσίν . . . διόπερ έξ ὀστῶν καὶ νεύρων &c. συνεστήκασι τὰ δργανικά των μορίων. Ibid. ii. 10, 655, b, 37: plants have only a few heterogeneous parts; πρδs γὰρ ὀλίγας πράξεις ὀλίγων ὀργάνων $\dot{\eta} \chi \rho \dot{\eta} \sigma \iota s$. The 'organic' parts of the body, therefore, are those which serve a definite purpose; for this use of the word see, e.g. Gen. An. ii. 4, 739, b, 14: \(\tau \)ois δργανικοίς πρός την συνουσίαν μορίοις. Ingr. An. 4, 705, b, 22: ύσα μέν γὰρ ὀργανικοῖς μέρεσι χρώμενα (λέγω δ' οίον ποσίν ή πτέρυξιν ή τινι άλλφ τοιούτφ) την είρημένην μεταβολήν [locomotion] ποιείται δσα δέ μη τοιούτοις μορίοις, αύτῷ δὲ τῷ σώματι διαλήψεις ποιούμενα προέρχεται, All the

Entelechy of a Natural Organic Body.¹ This definition does not, indeed, apply to the higher portion of the Soul, which in the human spirit is added to its other parts. With this, however, Natural Philosophy has nothing to do: it is rather the subject-matter of the 'First Philosophy.'²

The soul, considered as the form and moving principle of the body, must itself be incorporeal; ³ and here Aristotle contradicts the interpreters of his theory who represent it as being material in nature. It does not move itself, as Plato thought, for then it would be a motum as well as a movens, and every motum exists in space.⁴ Nor is it a harmony of its own body; ⁵ for such a harmony would be either a union or a proportionate mixture of different materials, and the soul is neither one nor the other: the notion of harmony is better suited to physical conditions, such as health, than to the soul.⁶ Again, it is not a number that moves itself,

parts of a living body, however, serve some active purpose.

1 De An. ii. 1, 412, b, 4: εἰ δή τι κοινὸν ἐπὶ πάσης ψυχῆς δεῖ λέγειν, εἴη ᾶν ἐντελέχεια ἡ πρώτη σώματος φυσικοῦ ὀργανικοῦ, and a similar definition is given, 1. 9 sqq.: it is the λόγος [or the οὐσία κατὰ τὸν λόγον] σώματος φυσικοῦ

τοιουδί έχοντος ἀρχὴν κινήσεως καὶ στάσεως ἐν ἑαυτώ.

² See on this subject *Part. An.* ii. 1, 641, a, 17-b. 10:
cf. *De An.* i. 1, 403, a, 27, b, 9

sqq., ii. 2, 413, b, 24.

3 See p. 2, n. 2, supra. De Juvent. 1, 467, b, 14: δηλον ὅτι οὐχ οἶόν τ' εἶναι σῶμα τὴν οὐσίαν αὐτῆς [τῆς ψυχῆς], ἀλλ' ὅμως ὅτι γ' ἔν τινι τοῦ σώματος ὑπάρχει μορίψ,

φανερόν.

⁴ De An. i. 3, 404, a, 21, c. 4, 408, a, 30 sqq. The further reasons that are urged against this view we must here pass over. On the Platonic conception of a world-soul see i. 459, a. 5, supra.

⁵ On this assumption, cf.

ZELLER, Ph. d. Gr. i. 413.

⁶ De An. i. 4 init. 408, a, 30, where this conclusion is supported with further arguments, cf. PHILOP. De An. E. 2, m, (1-r. Fr. 41): révongue 8è un giècle 4

41): κέχρηται δὲ καὶ αὐτὸς δ ᾿Αριστοτέλης ... ἐν τῷ Εὐδήμω τῷ διαλόγῳ δύο ἐπιχειρήσεσι ταύταις. μιὰ μὲν οὔτως τῆ ἀρμον'α, φησὶν, ἐστί τι ἐναντίον, ἡ ἀναρμοστία τῆ δὲ ψυχῆ οὐδὲν ἐναντίον · οὐκ ἄρα ἡ ψυχὴ ἀρμον'α ἐστὶν · ... for it does not move itself, and if it were a number it certainly could not do so.¹ It is not some one sort of material, as Democritus thought, nor a mixture of all materials, as Empedocles held:² for if it were a material it could not spread through all parts of the body,³ since two bodies cannot coexist in the same space; and if the soul must contain all materials, in order that it may be able to perceive them all, the same argument would oblige us to ascribe to it all combinations of materials in order that it may know all. We cannot identify it with the air we breathe, since all living creatures do not breathe.⁴ Nor is it diffused through all sorts of matter,⁵ since simple bodies are not living creatures.

The soul, then, is not in any sense corporeal,

δευτέρα δέ τη άρμονία, φησί, τοῦ σώματος έναντίον έστιν ή άναρμοστία τοῦ σώματος αναρμοστία δὲ τοῦ **ἐμψύχου σώματος νόσος καὶ ἀσθένεια** καί αίσχος. ὧν τὸ μέν ὰσυμμετρία έστὶ τῶν στοιχείων ἡ νόσος, τὸ δὲ των δμοιομερών ή ἀσθένεια, τὸ δὲ τῶν ὀργανικῶν τὸ αἶσχος. [On this, however, see i. 517, n. 6, supra. εί τοίνυν ή αναρμοστία νόσος καί ασθένεια καὶ αἶσχος, ἡ ἀρμονία ἄρα ύγεία και ισχύς και κάλλος. ψυχή δὲ οὐδέν ἐστι τούτων, οὕτε ὑγεία φημί ούτε ίσχυς ούτε κάλλος ψυχήν γαρ είχεν και ό Θερσίτης αϊσχιστος ών. οὐκ ἄρα ἐστὶν ἡ ψυχὴ ἄρμονία. καὶ ταῦτα μὲν ἐν ἐκείνοις. ΤΗΕΜΙΝΤ. De An. 44 sp.; SIMPL. De An. 14, a, o, and OLYMPIODORUS in Phad. p. 142, also mention this argument from the Eudemus.

¹ *Ibid.* 408, b, 32 sqq.; cf. Zell. *Ph. d. Gr.* i. 871, 2.

² On the former of these views see *De An*. i. 5 *init*. c. 3, 406, b, 15 sqq, c. 2, 403, b, 28, and

Ph. d. Gr. i. 807 sq.; on the latter, De An. i. 5, 409, b, 23 sqq. c. 2, 404, b, 8, Ph. d. Gr. i. 725. Only one of Aristotle's many objections to the theory of Empedocles is here given.

³ As it is obvious that the nutritive and sensitive soul at least does, from the fact that when a plant or an animal is cut, life remains in all parts alike so long as its organic conditions are present; *De An.* i. 5, 411, b. 19, ii. 2, 413, b. 13; cf. i. 4, 409, a, 9; *Longit. V.* 6, 467, a, 18; *Juv. ct Sen.* 2, 468, b, 2 sqq. 483.

⁴ De An. i. 5, 410, b, 27.

⁵ Aristotle attributes this view first to Thales, but identifies it specially with Diogenes of Apollonia and Heraclitus; cf. De An. i. 5, 411, a, 7 sqq.; also c. 2, 405, a, 19 sqq. and Zell. Ph. d. Gr. i pp. 178, 2; 238; 240; 587, 2; 642 sq.

and none of the attributes peculiar to corporeal substances can be ascribed to it. On the other hand, it cannot exist without a body. Aristotle is even anxious to indicate the particular matter in which it resides, and which it carries with it as it passes from one being to another in the process of procreation. This he describes at one time as Caloric $(\theta \varepsilon \rho \mu \dot{\rho} \nu)$, at another as Pneuma, regarding it as alien to the æther, and of a higher nature than the four elements; but he is wholly unable to give any clear account of its qualities, or to harmonise this conception with the general teaching of the Physics. The only right view is that the soul is

De An. ii. 1, 413, a, 4: δτι μὲν οῦν οὐκ ἔστιν ἡ ψυχὴ χωριστὴ τοῦ σώματος, ἡ μέρη τινὰ αὐτῆς, εἰ μεριστὴ πέφυκεν, οὐκ ἄδηλον. . . . οὐ μὴν ἀλλ' ἔνιά γε οὐθὲν κωλύει, διὰ τὸ μηθενὸς εἶναι σώματος έντε-λεχείας. Cf. Gen. An. ii. 3, 736, b, 22 sqq. 737, a, 7 sqq. and p. 4, n. 3, supra, and p. 8, n. 1, infra.

² The principal passage upon the subject is Gen. An. ii. 3, 736, b, 29 : πάσης μέν οὖν ψυχης δύναμις έτέρου σώματος ἔοικε κεκοινωνηκέναι θειοτέρου τῶν καλουμένων στοιχείων ' ώς δὲ διαφέρουσι τιμιότητι αί ψυχαί και άτιμία αλλήλων, ούτω καὶ ἡ τοιαύτη διαφέρει φύσις. πάντων μέν γὰρ ἐν τῷ σπέρματι ἐνυπάρχει, ὅπερ ποιεῖ γόνιμα εἶναι τὰ σπέρματα, τὸ καλούμενον θερμόν. τοῦτο δ' οὐ πῦροὐδὲ τοιαύτη δύναμίς έστιν, άλλὰ τὸ ἐμπεριλαμβανόμενον έν τῷ σπέρματι καὶ ἐν τῷ ἀφρώδει πνεθμα καί ή έν τῷ πνεύματι φύσις, ανάλογον οδσα τῷ τῶν ἄστρων στοιχείφ. It is not fire but heat, whether of the sun or of animals, that generates life. $\tau \delta$ $\delta \epsilon \tau \hat{\eta} s$ γονης σωμα, έν ῷ συναπέρχεται τὸ σπέρμα το της ψυχικής άρχης, το

μέν χωριστόν ον σώματος, δσοις έμπεριλαμβάνεται τὸ θεῖον (τοιοῦτος δ' έστιν δ καλούμενος νοῦς), τὸ δ' αχώριστον, τοῦτο τὸ σπέρμα [with WIMMER read σωμα της γονης διαλύεται καὶ πνευματοῦται φύσιν έχου ύγραν και πνευματώδη. the material in which the soul resides is here expressly distinguished from the elements, it is naturally thought of as æther. which elsewhere (see i. 476, n. 2, and 477, n. 1, supra) is described in almost identical terms. But on the other hand the æther is neither hot nor cold, nor as the element of the immutable spheres can it ever enter the region of the earthly changes of birth and death (see i. 473 sq. supra, and admirable discussion in MEYER'S Arist. Thierk. 409 sqq.). Even if, relying upon De Calo, i. 2, 269, a, 7 (on which, however, see i. 474, n. 1, supra), we suppose (with KAMPE, Erkenntnissth. d. Ar. 23) that it is forcibly injected into the organic germ, the question would still remain how we are to explain such a process the form of its body, since the form cannot exist without the matter to which it belongs, and yet it is not

and how the evolution which we must ascribe to the σπέρμα της ψυχικής ἀρχής, whether we take διαλύεσθαι as referring to the germ itself or only to the γονη, is consistent with the immutability of the æther (i. 476, supra). The material in question. moreover, is never described as æther. It is merely compared with it. Nor, indeed, does Aristotle ever speak of an æthereal matter, but only of vital heat and vital breath, as residing in the body. Similarly De Vita. 4, 469, b, 6: πάντα δὲ τὰ μόρια καί παν το σώμα των ζώων έχει τινὰ σύμφυτον θερμότητα φυσικήν: whence the heat of the living. the coldness of the dead, body. **ἀναγκαῖον δὴ ταύτης τὴν ἀρχὴν τ**ῆς θερμότητος έν τῆ καρδία τοῖς έναίμοις είναι, τοίς δ' άναίμοις έν τῶ ἀνάλογον : ἐργάζεται γὰρ καὶ πέττει τῷ φυσικῷ θερμῷ τὴν τροφὴν πάντα, μάλιστα δὲ τὸ κυριώτατον. With the heat of the heart life too becomes extinct, διὰ τὸ τὴν άρχην έντεῦθεν της θερμότητος ηρτησθαι πασι, καλ της ψυχης ώσπερ έμπεπυρευμένης έν τοίς μορίοις τούτοις [the heart is as it were the hearth on which the soul's fire burns] . . . ἀνάγκη τοίνυν αμα τό τε (ην υπάρχειν και την του θερμοῦ τούτου σωτηρ'αν, καὶ τὸν καλούμενον θάνατον είναι την τούτου φθοράν. Part. An. ii. 3, 650, a, 2: as it is only by heat that food can be digested, all plants and animals require an ἀρχὴ θερμοῦ φυσική. c. 7, 652, a, 7 sqq.: the soul is not fire but resides in a fiery body, heat being its chief instrument in the performance of its functions of nourishment

and motion. iii. 5, 667, b. 26: την του θερμού άρχην άναγκαΐον έν $\tau \hat{\varphi}$ αὐτ $\hat{\varphi}$ $\tau \acute{o} \pi \varphi$ [as the sensitive soul] elvai. De Respir. c. 8, 474. a, 25, b, 10: τὸ ζην καὶ ἡ της ψυχης έξις μετά θερμότητός τινός έστιν . . . πυρί γὰρ ἐργάζεται πάντα. This heat resides in the heart. The other faculties of the soul cannot exist without the nutritive, nor the nutritive ἄνευ τοῦ φυσικοῦ πυρός · ἐν τούτω γὰρ ἡ φύσις έμπεπύρευκεν αὐτήν. c. 13, 477, a, 16: the higher animals have more heat; άμα γὰρ ἀνάγκη καὶ ψυχης τετυχηκέναι τιμιωτέρας. c. 16, 478, a, 28: all animals require cooling διὰ τὴν ἐν τῆ καρδία τῆς ψυχης εμπύρωσιν. c. 21 init.: τοῦ θερμοῦ, ἐν ῷ ἡ ἀρχὴ ἡ θρεπτική (which, 480, b, 1, is also called $\pi \hat{v} \rho$). Ibid. c. 17, 479, a. 7 sqq.: the ἀρχη της ζωης gives out δταν μή καταψύχηται το θερμόν το κοινωνοῦν αὐτῆς. When, therefore, through old age the lungs (correspondingly the gills) grow dry and stiff, the fire (i.e. the vital heat) gradually dies away and is easily put out altogether. διό γάρ τὸ ὀλίγον είναι τὸ θερμόν. άτε του πλείστου διαπεπνευκότος έν τῷ πλήθει τῆς ζωῆς, . . . ταχέως αποσβέννυται. De An. ii. 4 fin.: έργάζεται δὲ τὴν πέψιν τὸ θερμόν: διό παν ξμψυχον έχει θερμότητα. Gen. An. ii. 1, 732, a, 18; the higher animals are larger; τοῦτο δ' οὐκ ἄνευ θερμότητος ψυχικής. c. 6, 743, a, 26: ἡ δὲ θερμότης ένυπάρχει έν τῷ σπερματικῷ περιττώματι, 744, a, 29: man has the purest θερμότης έν τῆ καρδία. Cf. Gen. An. ii. 4, 740, b, 29: the nutritive power of the soul forms and feeds plants and aniitself material. This enables us to answer the question about the unity of soul and body. Their relation to one another is just the same as that which subsists

mals, χρωμένη οξον δργάνοις θερμότητι καὶ ψυχρότητι. According to Gen. An. iii. 11 (see i. 460, n. 3, supra) the vital heat resides in the πνεύμα, the ἀρχή τοῦ πνεύματος (De Somno, 2, 456, a, 7) in the heart, from which all animal heat proceeds; in those animals which have no heart, $\epsilon \nu \tau \hat{\omega}$ σύμφυτον πνεθμα ἀνάλονον τὸ άναφυσώμενον καὶ συνιζάνον φαίνεται (ibid. 1. 11). This πνεθμα σύμφυτον, which is a natural and inherent property, not an external adjunct, of animals, is frequently mentioned, as in Gen. An. ii. 6, 744, a, 3, v. 2, 781, a, 23 (ZELLER, Ph. d. Gr. i. 16, 659, b, 17), where we are told that it pervades the channels of hearing and smell, and is the medium by which sounds and smells are conveyed to their respective senses; Part. An. iii. 6, 669, a, 1, where it is said that in the case of bloodless animals, which have less internal heat and do not require to breathe. the $\pi\nu\epsilon\hat{\nu}\mu\alpha$ σύμφυτον is sufficient for purposes of cooling. As, however, according to the above, it is also the seat of animal heat. the phrase must be understood in the sense explained in Respir. 9, 474, b, 31 sqq., to mean that cooling, in the case of such nonrespirating animals as require more than that caused by the air or water that surrounds them, is produced by the expansion and contraction of the πνεθμα ξμφυτον, which in turn, by setting in motion the abdominal membrane which produces, e.g., the chirp of the cricket causes it to act as a

fan (for this is the sense in which we must understand 475, a, 11, 669, b, 1). Beside these passages, the statement in Gen. An. ii. 3, stands rather isolated. Granting that the σωμα θειότερον τῶν στοιχείων there spoken of is distinguished from the πνεθμα in which it resides (ἡ ἐν τῷ πνεύματι φύσις), it is yet hardly possible to attribute to it an æthereal nature. The truth seems rather to be that Aristotle here feels a want which his philosophy as a whole does not enable him to supply. - The writer of spurious treatise π. Πνεύματος discusses the nature of the πνεῦμα ἔμφυτον, though he by no means confines himself to this subject. He gives no indication. however, of the view he held of its material character. - The question of the relation of Aristotle's assumptions with regard to the πνεθμα to his doctrine of the Nous is for later discussion (see Ch. XI. on the Reason, infra).

¹ See p. 2, n. 2, supra, and Metaph. vii. 10, 1035, b, 14 : ἐπελ δὲ ἡ τῶν ζώων ψυχὴ (τοῦτο γὰρ οὐσία τοῦ ἐμψύχου) ἡ κατὰ τὸν λόγον οὐσία καὶ τὸ εἶδος καὶ τὸ τί ην είναι τῷ τοιῷδε σώματι. c. 11, 1037, a, 5: the body is the δλη, the soul the οὐσία ἡ πρώτη, viii. 3, 1043, a, 35. De An. ii. 2, 414, a. 12: as the form is everywhere distinguished from the matter which receives it, so is the soul τοῦτο ῷ ζῶμεν καὶ αἰσθανόμεθα καὶ διανοούμεθα πρώτως, ώστε λόγος τις ầν εἴη καὶ εἶδος, ἀλλ' οὐχ ὕλη καὶ τὸ ὑποκείμενον τριχῶς γὰρ λεbetween form and matter.¹ To ask whether soul and body are one, is just as ridiculous as to ask whether the wax and the form impressed upon it are one. They are and they are not: they are separable in thought, inseparable in reality.² Life is not a combination of soul and body,³ and the living being is not something joined together of these two parts;⁴ but the soul is the active force that operates in the body, or, if you will, the body is the natural organ of the soul. We cannot separate them any more than we can separate the eye and eyesight.⁵ None but a living body deserves the name of body,⁶ and a particular soul can only exist in its own particular body.⁶ Therefore the Pythagorean

γομένης της οὐσίας, καθάπερ εἴπομεν. ών τὸ μὲν είδος, τὸ δὲ ὅλη, τὸ δὲ ἐξ άμφοῖν · τούτων δ' ἡ μὲν ὕλη δύναμις, τὸ δὲ είδος ἐντελέχεια · ἐπεί δὲ τὸ ἐξ ἀμφοῖν ἔμψυχον, οὐ τὸ σῶμά έστιν έντελέχεια ψυχής, άλλ' αύτη σώματός τινος, καί διὰ τοῦτο καλῶς ύπολαμβάνουσιν, οίς δοκεί μήτ' άνευ σώματος είναι μήτε σῶμά τι ή ψυχή, σῶμα μὲν γὰρ οὐκ ἔστι, σώματος δέ τι. De An. ii. 1, 412, b, 11 sqq. thus illustrates: if the axe were a creature, its nature as an axe would be its soul; if the eye were a separate being, its eyesight (οψις) would be its soul, αὕτη γὰρ οὐσία ὀφθαλμοῦ ἡ κατὰ τὸν λόγον. ὁ δ' ὀφθαλμὸς ὕλη δψεως, ής απολειπούσης οὺκ ἔστιν όφθαλμός. The soul is to the body as sight is to the eye.

See i. 351, n. 1, supra.

² De An. ii. 1, 412, b, 6: the soul is the entelecheia of an organic body. διό καὶ οὐ δεῖ ζητεῖν εἰ ἐν ἡ ψυχὴ καὶ τὸ σῶμα, ἄσπερ οὐδὲ τὸν κηρὸν καὶ τὸ σχῆμα, οὐδ' ὅλως τὴν ἑκάστου ὕλην καὶ τὸ οὖ ὕλη.

³ As perhaps the Platonists defined it, consistently with the account of death in *Phædo*, 64, C.

4 Metaph. viii. 6, 1045, b, 11. Top. vi. 14 init.: ζην and the ζφον are not a σύνθεσις η σύνδεσμος of soul and body.

De An. ii. 1, 413, a, 1: ωs δ' ή τόμις καὶ ἡ δύναμις τοῦ ὀργάνου ἡ ψυχή [sc. ἐντελέχεια ἐστιν] · τὸ δὲ σῶμα τὸ δυνάμει τον · ἀλλ' ὥσπερ ὁ ὀφθαλμὸς ἡ κόρη καὶ ἡ τόμις, κὰκεῦ ἡ ψυχή καὶ τὸ σῶμα τὸ ζῷον.

^o Ibid. 412, b, 11, 20, 25. Part. An. i. 1, 640, b, 33 sqq. 641, a, 18. Gen. An. ii. 5, 741, a, 10. Meteor. iv. 12, 389, b, 31, 390, a, 10. Metaph. vii. 10, 1035, b, 24.

7 De An. ii. 2, 414, a, 21 (following on the passage quoted p. 8, n. 1, ευρτα): καὶ διὰ τοῦτο ἐν σώματι ὑπάρχει, καὶ ἐν σώματι τοιούτω, καὶ οὐχ ὥσπερ οἱ πρότερον εἰς σῶμα ἐνήρμοζον αὐτὴν, οὐθὲν προσδιορίζοντες ἐν τίνι καὶ ποίω, καὶπερ οὐδὲ φαινομένου τοῦ τυχώντος δέχεσθαι τὸ τυχόν. οὅτω δὲ γίνεται καὶ κατὰ λόγον · ἔκάστου γὰρ ἡ ἐντελέχεια

notion of one soul passing through bodies of the most various sorts is just as absurd as if one should imagine that one and the same art could use tools of the most various kinds indifferently—that a flute, for example, could be of the same use to a carpenter as an axe.¹

The true essence of everything is its form, and the essence of everything that comes into being is its purpose or end.² Living creatures are no exception to this law. Every living creature is a little world, a whole, the parts of which subserve as instruments the purpose of the whole.³ But every instrument depends upon the nature of the work for which it is designed; so the body exists for the soul, and the qualities of every body are determined by those of its soul.⁴ Nature, like a

έν τῷ δυνάμει ὑπάρχοντι καὶ τῷ οἰκείᾳ ὕλη πέφυκεν ἐγγίνεσθαι. Of. the passages quoted, i. 221, n. 1, supra, from Phys. ii. 9, and elsewhere.

¹ De An. i. 3, 407, b, 13: most writers (Aristotle is thinking principally of Plato) make the mistake of speaking of the union of soul and body, οὐθὲν προσδιορίσαντες, διὰ τίν' αἰτίαν καὶ πῶς έχοντος τοῦ σώματος, καίτοι δόξειεν άν τοῦτ' ἀναγκαῖον είναι διὰ γὰρ την κοινωνίαν το μέν ποιεί το δέ πάσχει καὶ τὸ μὲν κινείται τὸ δὲ κινεί, τούτων δ' οὐθεν ὑπάρχει πρὸς άλληλα τοῖς τυχοῦσιν, οἱ δὲ μόνον ἐπιχειροῦσι λέγειν ποῖόν τι ἡ ψυχὴ, περί δὲ τοῦ δεξομένου σώματος οὐθὲν έτι προσδιορίζουσιν, ώσπερ ένδεχόμενον κατά τοὺς Πυθαγορικοὺς μύθους την τυχοῦσαν ψυχην είς τὸ τυχὸν ἐνδύεσθαι σῶμα δοκεῖ γὰρ ίδιον έχειν είδος καί έκαστον μορφήν, παραπλήσιον δε λέγουσιν ώσπερ εί τις φαίη την τεκτονικήν είς αὐλοὺς ἐνδύεσθαι δεῖ γὰρ τὴν μέν τέχνην χρήσθαι τοῖς ὀργάνοις, τὴν δὲ ψυχὴν τῷ σώμαπι (cf. p. 8, n. 1, supra, ad fin.)

² See i. 375, n. 1, and i. 459, sqq. supra. The expression, Part. Am. i. 1, 640, b, 28, η γὰρ κατὰ τὴν μορφὴν φύσις κυριωτέρα τῆς ὑλικῆς φύσεως, is used with reference to the above question of the relation of soul and body.

3 See p. 3, n. 2, supra, and Phys. viii. 2, 252, b, 24: εἰ δ' ἐν (ψφ τοῦτο δυνατὸν γενέσθαι, τί κωλύει τὸ αὐτὸ συμβρναι καὶ κατὰ τὸ πᾶν; εἰ γὰρ ἐν μικρῷ κόσμφ γίνεται, καὶ ἐν μεγάλω.

4 Part. An. i. 1, 640, b, 22 sqq. concluding (641, a, 29): ωστε και οὕτως ἃν λεκτέον εῖη τῷ περὶ φύσεως θεωρητικῷ περὶ ψυχῆν μᾶλλον ἡ περὶ τῆς ὕλης, ὅσω μᾶλλον ἡ ὕλη δι' ἐκείνην φύσις ἐστὶν ἡ ἀνάπαλιν. c. 5, 645, b, 14: ἐπεὶ δὲ τὸ μὲν ὕργανον πᾶν ἕνεκά του, τῶν δὲ τοῦ σώματος μορίων ἔκαστον ἕνεκά του, τὸ δ' οῦ ἕνεκα πραξίς τις,

iudicious manager, gives to each the instrument it can Instead, therefore, of deducing the spiritual from the corporeal, as the elder physicists had done, Aristotle takes the opposite path, describing the soul's life as the end and the body's life as the means. Anaxagoras had said that man was the most rational being because he had hands. Aristotle denies any truth to this dictum unless it be reversed-man has hands because he is the most rational being; for the instrument must be fitted to its work, not the work to its instrument.2. The nature of the instrument is not. indeed, a matter of indifference in respect to the result: anything cannot be made out of any substance or by any means; 3 but this does not negative the fact that the choice of the instrument depends upon the purpose in view.4 It is perfectly obvious that it does in the case

φανερόν ὅτι καὶ τὸ σύνολον σῶμα συνέστηκε πράξεώς τινος ένεκα πλήρους. . . . ώστε καὶ τὸ σῶμά πως της ψυχης ένεκεν, και τὰ μόρια τῶν έργων πρός à πέφυκεν εκαστον. Metaph. vii. 10, 1035, b, 14 sqq. De An. ii. 4; see p. 2, n. 3, supra. Part. An. iv. 10, 687, a, 10: ή δε φύσις αελ διανέμει, καθάπερ άνθρωπος φρόνιμος, εκαστον τῷ δυναμένω χρησθαι. Ibid. c. 8, 684, α, 28 : ή δε φύσις αποδίδωσιν αεί τοις χρησθαι δυναμένοις εκαστον ή μόνως ή μαλλον, iii. 1, 661, b, 26 sqq.: of those organs which serve for purposes of defence or are indispensable to the support of life, εκαστα ἀποδίδωσιν ἡ φύσις τοις δυναμένοις χρησθαι μόνοις ή μάλλον, μάλιστα δὲ τῷ μάλιστα. Hence the female is usually either wholly or in part unprovided with defensive organs.

² Part. An. iv. 10, 687, a, 7-23, especially the words just after the passage quoted above: προσήκει γὰρ τῷ ὄντι αὐλητῆ δοῦναι μᾶλλον αὐλοὺς ἢ τῷ αὐλοὺς ἔχοντι προσθείναι αὐλητικήν · τῷ γὰρ μείζον καὶ κυριωτέρφ προσθθηκε τοὕλαττον, ἀλλ' οὐ τῷ ἐλάττονι τὸ τιμιώτερον καὶ μεῖζον . . . τῷ οὖν πλείστας δυναμένφ δέξασθαι τέχνας τὸ ἐπὶ πλεῖστον τῶν ὀργάνων χρήτιμον τὴν χεῖρα ἀποδέδωκεν ἡ ψύσις.

3 See pp. 9, n. 7, and 10, n. 1,

**Ipra.

4 There is, therefore, no real inconsistency between the doctrine previously laid down and the statements, *Gen. An.* ii. 6, 744, a, 30, that man's intelligence affords proof of the europaria of the central organ of his life; *Part. An.* ii. 2, 648, a, 2 sqq. c. 4, 651, a, 12, that greater intelligence.

of organic beings. The adjustment of means to end which prevails in nature here displays itself in its fullest perfection.¹ To them we may with most propriety apply the axiom that Nature always produces the best that was possible under the given circumstances.²

This working towards fixed ends begins to show itself in the nutrition and development of organisms. Nutrition is not a mere operation of warmth, as was supposed; warmth may be important in the process, but it is always the soul that regulates it and directs it to a certain definite result. Nor can we adopt the theory suggested by Empedocles for explaining the growth of plants by saying that the fiery element tends upwards and the earthy downwards in their composition; if so,

gence is a consequence of thinner and cooler blood; ibid. iv. 10, 686, b, 22, that the meaner intelligence of animals, children, and dwarfs is to be explained on the ground of the earthliness and immobility of the organ which their souls must employ; De Respir, 13, 477, a 16, that warmer animals have nobler souls, and De An. ii. 9, 421, a, 22, that man excels all other creatures in the fineness of his sense of touch διδ καί φρονιμώτατόν έστι τῶν ζώων, and that among men those who are white, and therefore have a more delicate sensibility, are mentally more highly endowed (cf. also Metaph. i. 1, 980, b, 23). Mental activity may be phenomenally dependent upon certain conditions which in turn exist only for its sake: that which in reality is the primary and conditioning principle may appear to follow in time as a later and

conditioned result; cf. Part. An. ii. i. 646, a, 24. Further consideration, however, reveals the logical difficulties in which we are thus involved. The soul's development is said on the one hand to be conditioned by the capabilites of its body, the character of the body on the other hand is conditioned by the requirements of the soulwhich, then, is primary and conditioning? If the soul, why has it not a body which permits a higher development of its powers? If the body, how can it be itself treated as though it were the mere tool of the soul?

1 Meteor. iv. 12; see i. 468,

п. 5, вирта.

See the discussion, supra, i. p. 459 sqq. The statements there made refer for the most part principally to the organic nature.

⁸ De An. ii. 4, 416, a, 9: δοκεῖ δέ τισιν ἡ τοῦ πυρὸς φύσις ἀπλῶς what keeps the two together and prevents their separation? The same applies to the structure of the organism. It is impossible to explain even the origin of organic creatures on the supposition that their separate parts are formed and brought together by a blind and purposeless necessity, only those combinations surviving which succeed in producing from an aimless stream of matter a being adapted to an end and capable of life. For chance produces only isolated and abnormal results. When, on the other hand, we are dealing with the normal adaptations of Nature we are forced to regard them as purposely designed by her from the beginning. But this is precisely what we

αἰτία τῆς τροφῆς καὶ τῆς αὐξήσεως εἶναι....τὸ δὲ συναίτιον μέν πώς ἐστιν, οὐ μὴν ἁπλῶς γε αἴτιον, ἀλλὰ μᾶλλον ἡ ψυχἡ, ἡ μὲν γὰρ τοῦ πυρὸς αὐξησις εἰς ἄπειρον, εως ὰν ἢ τὸ καυστὸν, τῶν δὲ φύσει συνισταμένων πάντων ἐστὶ πέρας καὶ λόγος μεγέθους τε καὶ αὐξήσεως ταῦτα δὲ ψυχῆς, ἀλλ' οὐ πυρὸς, καὶ λόγου μᾶλλον ἡ ὕλης. Cf. p. 14, n, 2, inf.; and upon aἴτιον and συναίτιον, εντα, i. p. 360, n. 1, and p. 463, n. 1.

1 Ibid, 415, b, 28 sqg.

² As Empedocles tries to do; see following note. We cannot suppose, however, that Empedocles (or any other of the pre-Aristotelian philosophers) expressed the theories of which he is chosen by Aristotle as the representative, in so general a sense as is here attributed to him.

3 Phys. ii. 8, 198, b, 16, Aristotle starts the question: τί κωλύει τὴν φύσιν μὴ ἔνεκά του ποιεῖν μηδ΄ ὅτι βέλτιον, ἀλλ΄ ικοπερ ὑει δ Ζεὐs &c. [see i. 471, supra]
... κοτε τί κωλύει οῦτω καὶ τὰ κολύει οῦτω καὶ τὰ

μέρη έχειν έν τη φύσει, οίον τούς όδόντας έξ ἀνάγκης ἀνατείλαι τοὺς μεν εμπροσθίους όξεις, επιτηδείους πρός τὸ διαιρείν, τοὺς δὲ γομφίους πλατείς και χρησίμους πρός το λεαίνειν την τροφην, έπει ου τούτου ένεκα γενέσθαι, άλλὰ συμπεσείν. δμοίως δὲ καὶ περὶ τῶν ἄλλων μερῶν. έν οσοις δοκεί ύπάρχειν τὸ ένεκά του. ὅπου μὲν οὖν ἄπαντα συνέβη ώσπερ κάν εί ενεκά του εγίνετο. ταῦτα μὲν ἐσώθη ἀπὸ τοῦ αὐτομάτου συστάντα επιτηδείως δσα δε μή ούτως, ἀπώλετο καὶ ἀπόλλυται, καθάπερ Έμπεδοκλης λέγει τὰ βουγενη ανδρόπρωρα.

Α 'Αδύνατον δὲ [Aristotle answers, ibid. 198, b, 34] τοῦτον ἔχειν τὸν τρόπον. ταῦτα μὲν γὰρ καὶ πάντα τὰ φύσεὶ ἡ ὰεὶ οῦτω γίνεται ἡ ὡς ἐπὶ τὸ πολὺ, τῶν δ' ἀπὸ τύχης καὶ τοῦ αὐτομάτου οὐδέν. . . . εἰ οὖν ἡ ὡς ὰπὸ συμπτώματος δοκεῖ ἡ ἔνεκά του είναι, εἰ μἡ οἴόν τε ταῦτ' είναι μήτε ἀπὸ συμπτώματος μήτ' ἀπὸ ταὐτομάτου, ἔνεκά του ἄν εἴη. In farther proof of design in nature, he adds: ἔτι ἐν ὅσοις

are doing in the case of a living being. What makes a living body is not the separate material elements, but their special and peculiar combination, the form of the whole to which they pertain. We cannot explain its structure by the mere operation of elementary forces working in matter, but only by the operation of the soul, which employs these forces as instruments in giving form to matter.² Nature makes only those organs that are fitted for the purpose of each organism, and creates them in order, according to their several uses.3 First she forms the parts on which the life and growth of the being depend; 4 then the remaining most important parts

τέλος ἐστί τι, τυύτου ἕνεκα πράττεται το πρότερον και το έφεξης. ουκούν ώς πραττεται, ούτω πέφυκε, καὶ ώς πέφυκεν, ούτω πράττεται εκαστον αν μη τι έμποδίζη, πράττεται δ' ένεκά του καλ πέφυκεν άρα τούτου ένεκα. Cf. i. 462, n. 2. suma.

¹ Part. An. i. 5, 645, a, 30: just as when we speak of a house or furniture, we mean, not the material of which it is made, but the $\delta\lambda\eta$ $\mu\rho\rho\phi\eta$, so in the investigation of nature we speak περί της συνθέσεως και της όλης οὐσίας, άλλὰ μὴ περὶ τούτων & μὴ συμβαίνει χωριζόμενά ποτε της ούσίας αὐτῶν.

² Gen. An. ii. 4, 740, b, 12: ή δὲ διάκρισις γίγνεται τῶν μορίων fin the formation of the foetus? ούχ ως τινες ύπολαμβάνουσι, διὰ τδ πεφυκέναι φέρεσθαι το δμοιον προς τὸ ὅμοιον (and therefore as in elementary processes); for in that case homogeneous parts, flesh, bones, &c., would unite in separate masses; ἀλλ' ὕτι τὸ περίττωμα το του θήλεως δυνάμει

τοιοῦτόν ἐστιν οἷον φύσει τὸ ζώον. καί ένεστι δυνάμει τὰ μόρια ένεργεία δ' οὐθέν. . . καὶ ὅτι τὸ ποιητικὸν καί το παθητικον, δταν θίγωσιν, . . εὐθὺς τὸ μὲν ποιεῖ τὸ δὲ πάσχει. . . ὥσπερ δὲ τὰ ὑπὸ τῆς τέχνης γινόμενα γίνεται διά τῶν ὀργάνων, έστι δ' άληθέστερον είπειν διά τῆς κινήσεως αὐτῶν, αὕτη δ' ἐστὶν ἡ ένεργεια της τέχνης, η δε τέχνη μορφή των γιγνομένων έν άλλω, ούτως ή της θρεπτικής ψυχής δύναμις, ώσπερ και έν αὐτοῖς τοῖς ζψοις και τοις φυτοίς υστερον έκ της τροφής ποιεί την αύξησιν, χρωμένη οΐον όργάνοις θερμότητι καί ψυχρότητι (ἐν γὰρ τούτοις ἡ κίνησις ἐκείνης καὶ λόγφ τινὶ ἕκαστον γίνεται) οὕτω καὶ έξ άρχης συνίστησι το φύσει γιγνόμενον.

³ *Ibid.* ii. 6, 744, a, 36 : ἐπεὶ δ' οὐθὲν ποιεί περίεργον οὐδὲ μάτην ή φύσις, δηλον ώς οὐδ' ύστερον οὐδέ πρότερον, έσται γάρ το γεγονός μάτην ή περίεργον.

4 In the lower animals the heart or the organ that corresponds to it; Gen. An. ii. 1, 735, a, 23.

of the organism; and lastly the instruments which it employs for special purposes.\(^1\) The nutritive soul is developed first, as forming the common basis of all life: and next the several functions of the soul by which each higher organism raises itself above that which precedes it in the scale of being. First comes a living being, and next some special sort of being.2 obedience to the same law the organism is dissolved in the reverse order. That which life can least dispense with dies last, the less vital organs first; so that Nature works round in a circle to her starting point.3 All parts and functions of the living creature exhibit the same proofs of contrivance, and can only be explained as the product of design. Accordingly all Aristotle's researches into the corporeal nature of animals are governed by this view. The essential and decisive causes are always final causes,4 and whatever leads in the ordinary course of nature to a definite end must have existed for that end. He tries to prove that every organ is just what it must have been in order to fulfil its purpose in the best possible way according to the

¹ Gen. An. ii. 6, 742, a, 16-b, 6, c. 1, 734, a, 12, 26.

² Gen. An. ii. 3, 736, a, 27-b, 14 (cf. 737, b, 17, c. 1, 735, a, 4 sqq.). As the inhabitant of a material body, the soul may be said to exist potentially in the seed. In the evolution of the living being the nutritive soul comes first, next the sensitive and rational: first comes a (φον, then a definite (φον, e.g. a horse or a man. υστερον γὰρ γίνεται τὸ τέλος, τὸ δ' ἴδιόν ἐστι τὸ ἐκάστον τῆς γενέσεως τέλος.

³ Ibid. c. 5, 741, b, 18: that the heart is the central organ is seen at death; ἀπολείπει γὰρ τὸ ζῆν ἐντεῦθεν τελευταῖον, συμβα΄νει δ' ἐπὶ πάντων τὸ τελευταῖον γινόμενον πρῶτον ἀπολείπειν, τὸ δὲ πρῶτον τελευταῖον, ὥσπερ τῆς φύσεως διαυλοδρομούσης καὶ ἀνελιττομένης ἐπὶ τὴν ἀρχὴν ὅθεν ῆλθεν. ἔστι γὰρ ἡ μὲν γένεσις ἐκ τοῦ μὴ ὕντος εἰς τὸ ὄν, ἡ δὲ φθορὰ ἐκ τοῦ ὔντος πάλιν εἰς τὸ μὴ ὄν.

⁴ Cf. i. 459, sqq. supra. ⁵ Cf. p. 17, infra.

means at hand.¹ He points out how every animal is provided with organs adapted to its mode of life, or how the common organs of a tribe are modified to meet its special needs.² Nor does he neglect the interdependence of the different members: distinguishing the principal organs which directly serve to fulfil the end of life, from those which are added for their protection and maintenance; ³ and remarking that Nature always affords the strongest protection to the noblest and the weakest parts,⁴ that, where one organ is not equal to its task, she makes or modifies another for the purpose,⁵ and that she places organs of opposite character near one another, in order that each may temper and supplement the action of the other.⁶ He sees in the artistic instincts of animals an obvious

¹ Proofs of this, the most important of which will call for future discussion, are given throughout the whole work De Fart. An., and in many passages of Aristotle's other zoological and

anthropological works.

² Thus the elephant, being not only a land-animal, but leading also an amphibious life in morasses, is provided with a proboscis that it may breathe more easily under water; Part. An. ii. 16, 658, b, 33 sqq. In like manner the form of birds' beaks depends upon the nature of their food, as is shown (ibid. iii. 1, 662, b, 1, sqq. iv. 12, 693, a, 10 sqq.) in the case of birds of prey, the woodpecker, the raven, grain- and insect-eaters, water- and moorfowl. Dolphins, again, and sharks (ibid. iv. 13, 696, b, 24) have the mouth in the upper part of their

bodies to enable other animals to escape from them more easily, and to prevent them from doing injury to themselves by their voracity.

The flesh, for example, is the principle organ of sense-perception; bones, on the other hand, nerves, veins, skin, hair, nails, &c., exist merely for its sake, as is shown *Part. An.* ii. 8.

⁴ Zeller, *Ph. d. Gr.* ii. 14, 658, b, 2 sqq., iii. 11. 673, b, 8,

iv. 10, 690, b, 9.

5 Ibid. iv. 9, 685, a, 30.
6 Ibid. ii. 7, 652, a, 31: ἀεὶ
γὰρ ἡ φύσις μηχανᾶται πρὸς τὴν
ἐκάστου ὑπερβολὴν βοήθειαν τὴν τοῦ
ἐναντίου παρεδρίαν, ἴνα ἀνιστός ἡ τὴν
θατέρου ὑπερβολὴν θάτερον. b, 16:
ἐπεὶ δ' ἄπαντα δεῖται τῆς ἐναντίας
ροπῆς, ἴνα τυγχάνη τοῦ μετρίου καὶ
τοῦ μεσου: thus the head counterbulances the heart.

example of unconscious contrivance in Nature.1 does he forget the influence of necessity, which here, as elsewhere, cooperates with Nature in the realisation of her designs.2 Indeed, he expressly requires observers of nature to make use of both causes in their explana-Still he holds fast to the belief that physical tions.3 causes are only means employed by Nature for her ends. and that their necessity is only conditional; 4 nor does he cease to marvel at the wisdom with which Nature makes use of the materials suited to her purposes, and overcomes the opposition of such as are antagonistic. Like a good housewife, she employs the dregs and refuse of animal life for beneficial purposes, and suffers nothing to be wasted.5 She turns everything to the best possible account; 6 if she can make one organ

¹ Phys. ii. 8, 199, a, 20: μάλιστα δὲ φανερὸν ἐπὶ τῶν ζώων τῶν ἄλλων, ἃ οὕτε τέχνη οὕτε Βουλευσάμενα ζητήσαντα ούτε ποιεί. ὅθεν διαποροῦσί τινες πότερον νῶ ή τινι ἄλλφ ἐργάζονται οι τ' αράχναι και οἱ μύρμηκες και τὰ τοιαθτα. κατά μικρόν δ' οθτω προϊόντι καὶ ἐντοῖς φυτοῖς φαίνεταιτὰ συμφέροντα γινόμενα πρός το τέλος, οίον τὰ φύλλα τῆς τοῦ καρποῦ ἔνεκα σκέπης ὥστ' εἰ φύσει τε ποιεῖ καὶ ενεκά του ή χελιδών την νεοττιάν καί δ ἀράχνης τὸ ἀράχνιον, καὶ τὰ φυτὰ τὰ φύλλα ένεκα τῶν καρπῶν καὶ τὰς ρίζας οὐκ ἄνω ἀλλὰ κάτω ἕνεκα τῆς τροφης, φανερον ότι έστιν ή αίτία ή τοιαύτη έν τοις φύσει γινομένοις καλ οὖσιν. Cf. i. 463, n. 1.

² See i. 360, n. 1, supra.

³ Ibid, and Part. An. i. 1, 643, a, 14: δύο τρόποι τῆς αἰτίας καὶ δεῖ λέγοντας τυγχάνειν μάλιστα μèν ἀμφοῦν, &c. (Cf. Plato, Tim.

^{46,} C; Div. i. 642, 6). In discussing individual parts of the body he frequently gives both sides in succession, e.g. Part. ii. 14, 658, b, 2: man has thicker hair than any other animal, ἐξ ἀγάγκης μὲν διὰ τὴν ὅγρότητα τοῦ ἐγκεφάλου καὶ διὰ τὰς ῥαφὰς, . . ἔνεκεν δὲ βοηθείας, ὅπως σκεπάζωσι, &c.

⁴ The proofs have already been given, i. 360, n. 1, supra.

⁵ See i. 465, n. 2, supra.

⁶ Thus, for example (Part. An. iii. 14, 675, b, 17 sqq.), the intestines are coiled tightly together, δπως ταμιεύηται ἡ φύσις καὶ μὴ ἀθρόος ἢ ἡ ἔξοδος τοῦ περιττώματος, especially in those animals which are destined for a frugal manner of life. The same thought had already been expressed in Plato, Tim. 72, E.

serve, she does not give an animal several for the same function; ¹ if she needs materials for strengthening one member, she despoils another which appears less indispensable; ² if she can achieve several objects by one

Aristotle explains (Part. An. iii. 2) that different animals are provided with different means of defence, some with horns, others with claws, some with size, others with fleetness, again with repulsive others excrement: ἄμα δ' ίκανὰς καὶ πλείους Βοηθείας οὐ δέδωκεν ή φύσις τοῖς αὐτοῖς. Again, ibid. iv. 12, 694, a, 12, he remarks that birds which have a spur are not endowed with bent falons also; αἴτιον δ' ὅτι οὐδὲν ἡ φύσις ποιεῖ Again, Respir. 10, περίεργον. 476, a, 6 sqq.: gills and lungs never exist together, έπελ μάτην οὐδέν δρώμεν ποιούσαν την φύσιν, δυοίν δ' ὄντοιν θάτερον αν ην μάτην (just before he says: εν δ' εφ' εν ύργανον χρήσιμον). And again, Part. iii. 14, 674, a, 19 sqq.: animals which have more perfect masticating organs (i.e. ἀμφώδοντα) are supplied with a simpler digestive apparatus: those which are defective in the former respect, on the other band, have several stomachs: after enumerating several species of animals which belong to the former class, he proceeds, 674, a, 28: those animals which, like the camel. require more than one stomach on account of their great size and the coarseness of their food, form an exception to the rule; the teeth and stomach of the camel resemble those of horned animals διὰ τὸ ἀναγκαιότερον είναι αὐτῆ τὴν κοιλίαν ἔχειν τοιαύτην ἡ τούς προσθίους όδόντας, it can do without the latter ως οὐδέν ὅντας

προύργου.

² Gen. An. iii. 1, 749, b, 34: thin animals have a greater power of procreation; ή γὰρ είς τὰ κῶλα τροφή τρέπεται τοις τοιούτοις είς περίττωμα σπερματικόν ο γαρ έκειθεν αφαιρεί ή φύσις, προστίθησιν ένταθθα. Part. An. ii. 14, 658, a, 31: in longtailed animals, the hairs of the tail are shorter, in short-tailed, longer, and the same is true of the other parts of the body; πανταχοῦ γὰρ ἀποδίδωσι [ἡ φύσις] λαβούσα έτέρωθεν πρός άλλο μόριον, cf. ibid. c. 9, 655, a. 27: aua bè την αυτην ύπεροχην εis πολλούs τόπους άδυνατεί διανέμειν ή φύσις. further explanations r. Meyer (to whom I gratefully acknowledge my obligations for much of this section), Arist. Thierk. 468: 'Nature employs the earthy refuse either for horns or double rows of teeth' (see Part. An. iii. 2, 663, b, 31, 664, a, 8—or, as in the case of the camel, for a hard palate, ibid. c. 14, 674, b, 2). bear, which has a hairy body, must be content with a stunted tail (ibid. ii. 14, 658, a, 36). In the case of mammals, the earthy material has been employed for their tails, and accordingly, unlike man, they have no flesh upon their legs (ibid. iv. 10, 689, b. 21). Sharks, again, require this earthy material to give their skins the proper thickness, and accordingly have mere gristle for organ, she makes it do the work; 1 although, when this arrangement will not serve, she is no niggard in her contrivances: 2 of the different materials which she has at her disposal she employs the best upon the nobler and the worse upon the less important members. 3 Even in the cases where one cannot attribute any definite utility to certain structures, they are not without a design; for Aristotle thinks that their end may be

their skeletons (*ibid*. ii. 9, 655, a, 23). Meyer quotes further examples from *Part*. An. ii. 13, 657, b, 7, iv. 9, 685, a, 24. Cf. also *Part*. An. iii. 2, 663, a, 31.

1 Thus the mouth, besides the common purpose of eating, serves various other ends in the various animals, and is thus variously formed: ἡ γὰρ φύσις . . . τοίς κοινοίς πάντων μορίοις είς πολλά τῶν ἰδίων καταχρῆται . . . ἡ δὲ φύσις πάντα συνήγαγεν είς εν. ποιούσα διαφοράν αὐτοῦ τοῦ μορίου πρός τὰς τῆς ἐργασίας διαφοράς. (Part. An. iii. 1, 662, a, 18, cf. Respir. c. 11 init.) Likewise the tongue (Respir. ibid.; Part. ii. 17). The hand (Part. iv. 10, 687. a, 19) is οὐχ ἐν ὅργανον ἀλλὰ πολλὰ ἔστι γὰρ ὡσπερεὶ ὅργανον πρδ οργάνων (cf. De An. iii. 8, 432, a, 1); it is (b, 2) καὶ ὅνυξ καὶ χηλή και κέρας και δόρυ και ξίφος καὶ ἄλλο ὁποιονοῦν ὅπλον καὶ ὅργανον, &c.; and similarly the breasts of women, Part. An. iv. 10, 688, a, 19 sqq., the trunk of the elephant, ibid. ii. 16, 659, a, 20, and the tails of animals, ibid. iv. 10, 690, a, 1 (among other passages).

² Part. An. iv. 6, 683, a, 22: ὅπου γὰρ ἐνδέχεται χρῆσθαι δυσὶν ἐπὶ δύ' ἔργα καὶ μὴ ἐμποδίζειν πρὸς ἕτερον, οὐδὲν ἡ φύσις εἴωθε ποιεῖν

ώσπερ ή χαλκευτική πρός εὐτέλειαν όβελισκολίχνιον · (on this GÖTT-LING, De Machæra Delphica, Ind. lect. Jen. 1856, p. 8); ἀλλ' ὅπου μη ενδέχεται καταχρήται τῷ αὐτῷ έπὶ πλείω ἔργα. Polit. i. 2, 1252, b, 1 : οὐθὲν γὰρ ἡ φύσις ποιεί τοιοῦτον οίον χαλκοτύποι την Δελφικήν μάγαιραν GÖTTLING. ONCKEN, Staatsl. d. Ar. ii. 25, who both fail, however, to give a complete account of the matter] πενιχρως, άλλ' έν πρός έν ούτω γάρ αν αποτελοίτο κάλλιστα των οργάνων εκαστον, μη πολλοις έργοις άλλ' ένὶ δουλεῦον. ΜΕΥΕR, Arist. Thierk, 470, rightly remarks that these statements are inconsistent with the principles of the parsimony of nature as previously laid down, and even although we grant that it is possible to find, with Aristotle, a basis of reconciliation in the phrase δπου ένδέχεται, we cannot deny that there is a certain arbitrariness in the way in which it is applied.

³ Gen. An. ii. 6,744, b, 11 sqq., where Nature's management is compared in this respect with that of a household in which the free members receive the best food, the servants a coarse quality, and the domestic animals the

worst.

fulfilled in the very symmetry and perfection of their form, and that this explains why many animals have organs, or at least the indications of them, which they do not use. It is only where he cannot discover the least trace of purpose that our philosopher can bring himself to explain a phenomenon by chance or blind necessity.

1 He treats it, for example, as a universal law that all the organs should be in pairs (διφυή), seeing that the body has a right and a left, a front and a back, an upper and a lower (Part. An. iii. 7 init. c. 5, 667, b, 31 sqq.). Even where to all appearance there is only a single organ, he exerts himself to prove that it is double (ibid. 669, b, 21: διόπερ και ό εγκέφαλος βούλεται διμερής είναι πάσι καὶ τῶν αἰσθητηρίων κατά τὸν αὐτὸν δὲ λόγον ekaatov. η καρδία ταῖς κοιλίαις. Likewise the lungs). Another typical law is that the nobler parts, where it is possible, should be in the upper part, in front and on the right as the better position (Part. An, iii. 3, 665, a, 23, b, 20, c. 5, 667, b, 34. cf. c. 7, 670, b, 30, c. 9, 672, a, 24, c. 10, 672, b, 19 sqq.); so, likewise, that the locomotive impulse (the doxh) should proceed for the same reason from this quarter (Ingr. An. 5, 706, b, 11); cf. Ch. X. on Animals. The same æsthetic conception of Nature's contrivances is expressed in the observation, Part, An. ii. 14, 658, a, 15 sqq., that men are better protected in front than behind the front being the nobler (τιαιωτέρα) side, and therefore demanding stronger defences: and in 1. 30 of the same passage,

where the hairs of the tail of the horse and other animals are described as merely ornamental.

² The hind, while it has no horns, has teeth like the stag. because it belongs to a horned class: and similarly in certain species of crabs the female has claws which belong properly only to the male, δτι έν τῷ γένει είσι τ $\hat{\varphi}$ ξχοντι χηλάς (Part. An. iii. 2, 664, a, 3, iv. 8, 684, a, 33). Again, spleen, which is a necessity only to viviparous animals. and is therefore more strongly developed in these, is yet found to exist in all (πάμμικρον ωσπερ σημείου χάριν) as a kind of counterpoise to the liver, which is on the right side of the body and therefore requires something to correspond to it on the left. ωστ' αναγκαίον μέν πως, μη λίαν δ' είναι πασι τοις ζώοις (Part. An. iii. 7, 669, b, 26 sqq. c 4, 666, a, 27, cf. *H. An.* ii. 15, 506, a, 12). Similarly the monkey, belonging as it does to the four-footed races, is endowed with a tail δσον σημείου χάριν, Η. An. ii. 8, 502, b, 22, c. 1, 498, b, 13. Cf. MEYER, p. 464 sq.; EUCKEN, Meth. d. arist. Forsch. 104 sqq.,

3 A purposeless creation of this kind (περίττωμα) he finds in the gall (Part. An. iv. 2, 677, a,

This prevalence of design in nature shows itself, as we have seen before (i. 466 sqq.), in a gradual progression, a continual process of development. The various functions of the soul and life are not shared by all living creatures in equal perfection, but different forms of animation, and different parts of the soul, may be distinguished, which determine the gradations of animate life. Plants are confined to nutrition and propagation; the nutritive soul alone is active in them.¹ Beasts add to this the sensitive soul, for sensation is the most universal mark of distinction between beasts and plants.² The lowest form of sensation, common to all animals, is the sense of touch; here begins the feeling of pain and pleasure, and the appetites, among which

11 sqq.; see i. 361, n. 1, supra). Upon necessity and chance, p. 359 sqq. supra.

 $\vec{D}e \ An. ii. 2 \text{ (see i. 511, ii. 2, }$ supra). Ibid. 413, b, 7: θρεπτικόν δέ λέγομεν το τοιούτον μόριον της ψυχής οδ και τὰ φυτὰ μετέχει. С. 3 init. c. 4, 415, a, 23; ή γάρ θρεπτική ψυχή και τοις άλλοις υπάρχει, και πρώτη και κοινοτάτη δύναμίς ἐστι ψυχῆς, καθ' ἡν ὑπάρχει τὸ ζῆν απασιν. ης έστιν έργα γεννησαι και τροφη χρησθαι. Hist. An. viii. 1, 588. b, 24; Gen. An. i. 23, 731, a, 24, procreation alone is mentioned as the peculiar function of the vegetable sense; and De An. ii. 4, 416, b. 23, it is said: έπει δε άπο του τέλους απαντα προσαγορεύειν δίκαιον, τέλος δὲ τὸ γεννησαι οίον αὐτὸ, είη αν ή πρώτη ψυχὴ γεννητικὴ οἶον αὐτό. On the other hand, Gen. An. ii. 4, 740, b, 34 sqq. (cf. c. 1, 735, a, 16), shows that it is one and the

same living energy which first forms and afterwards nourishes the body, but that the former is the more important function; εἰ οὖν αὕτη ἐστὶν ἡ θρεπτική ψυχὴ, αὕτη ἐστὶ καὶ ἡ γεννῶσα καὶ τοῦτ' ἐστὶν ἡ φύσις ἡ ἐκάστου, ἐνυπάρχουσα καὶ ἐν φυτοῖς καὶ ἐν ζψοις πᾶσιν.

2 De An. ii. 2, 413, b, 1: τὸ μὲν οὖν ζῆν διὰ την ἀρχὴν ταύτην ὑπάρχει τοῖς ζῶσι, τὸ δὲ ζῷον διὰ τὴν ἀσθησιν πρώτως καὶ γὰρ τὰ μὴ κινούμενα μηδ ἀλλάττοντα τόπον ἔχοντα δ' αἴσθησιν ζῷα λέγομεν καὶ οὐ ζῆν μόνον. De Sensu, c. 1, 436, b, 10; De Jurent. c. 1, 467, b, 18, 27; Part. An. ii. 10, 665, a, 32, 656, b, 3; iv. 5, 681, a, 12; Ingr. An. c. 4, 705, a, 26 sqq. b, 8; Gen. An. i. 23, 731, a, 30; ii. 1, 732, a, 11. Most of these passages expressly notice the distinction between the ζῶν and the ζῷον.

the appetite for food appears first.¹ One division of living creatures combines with sensation the power of locomotion, which also belongs to the bestial soul.² Lastly, besides nutritive and sensitive life, man possesses Reason, the third and highest faculty of the soul.³ The soul exists in no other form than those which we have just described.⁴ These themselves, however, are so related to each other that the higher cannot exist without the lower.⁵ Animal life exhibits

De An. ii. 2, 413, b, 4 sqq. 21 sqq. c. 3, 414, b, 1-16, 415, a, 3 sqq. iii. 12, 434, b, 11 sqq. c 13, 435, b, 17 sqq.; De Sensu, 1, 436, b, 10-18; Part. An. ii. 17, 661, a, 6; H. An. i. 3, 489, a, 17; De Somno, 1, 454, b, 29, c, 2 init. In these passages Aristotle sometimes mentions άφη alone, sometimes άφη και γεῦσις, as the property of all animals, but the apparent inconsistency is explained by the fact that Aristotle regarded the sense taste as a form of touch; De Sensu, 2, 438, b, 30. De An. ii. 9, 421, a, 19; ii. 10 init. iii. 12, 434, b, 18.

² De An. ii. 3, 414, b, 16.
⁸ Ibid. ii. 3, 414, b, 18 (cf. iii. 3, 427, b, 6; Gen. An. i, 23, 731, a, 30 sqq.): ἐτέροις δὲ [τῶν ζώων ὑπάρχει] καὶ τὸ διανοητικόν τε καὶ νοῦς, οἶον ἀνθρώποις καὶ εἴ τι τοιοῦτον ἔτερόν ἐστιν ἡ καὶ τιμιώτερον. On the latter part of this observation see the discussion upon the different kinds of living beings infra.

⁴ De An. ii. 3, 414, b, 19: just as there is no figure which is not either triangular, quadrangular, or with some other number of angles, so there is no soul which is not one or other

of the $\psi v \chi a l$ mentioned.

⁵ Ibid. 414, b, 28: παραπλησίως δ' έχει τῷ περί τῶν σχημάτων καὶ τὰ κατὰ ψυχήν : ἀεὶ γὰρ ἐν τῷ έφεξης ὑπάρχει δυνάμει τὸ πρότερον έπί τε τῶν σχημάτων καὶ ἐπὶ τῶν έμψύχων, οίου έν τετραγώνω μέν τρίγωνον έν αἰσθητικώ δέ τὸ θρεπτικόν . . . άνευ μέν γάρ τοῦ θρεπτικοῦ τὸ αἰσθητικὸν οὐκ ἔστιν τοῦ δ' αἰσθητικοῦ χωρίζεται τὸ θρεπτικὸν έν τοις φυτοις, πάλιν δ' άνευ μέν τοῦ ἀπτικοῦ τῶν ἄλλων αἰσθήσεων οὐδεμία ὑπάρχει, ἀφὴ δ' ἄνευ τῶν άλλων ὑπάρχει . . . καὶ τῶν αίσθητικών δὲ τὰ μὲν ἔχει τὸ κατὰ τόπον κινητικόν, τὰ δ' οὐκ ἔχει. τελευταΐον δὲ καὶ ἐλάχιστα λογισμὸν καὶ διάνοιαν οίς μέν γὰρ ὑπάρχει λογισμός τῶν φθαρτῶν [to the (φα ἄφθαρτα, i.e. the stars, a pure vous belongs], τούτοις καὶ τὰ λοιπά πά τα, οίς δ' ἐκείνων ἕκαστον, οὐ πασι λογισμός, άλλα τοῖς μέν οὐδέ φαντασία, τὰ δὲ ταύτη μόνη ζῶσιν. περί δε τοῦ θεωρητικοῦ νοῦ ἔτερος λόγος (on this see infra). Ibid. c. 2, 413, a, 31, with regard to the θρεπτικόν: χωρίζεσθαι δε τοῦτο μὲν τῶν ἄλλων δυνατὸν, τὰ δ' ἄλλα τούτου άδύνατον έν τοῖς θυητοῖς. Cf. i. 5 fin. De Somno, 1, 454, a. 11. De Juvent. 1, 467, b, 18 sqq.

a developing scale, in which each successive step includes all that went before. Plato's doctrine of the parts of the soul is thus applied to all animate existence, without violence to the general conception of its originator, though with important modifications of detail, and we are enabled to embrace all natural species

¹ Aristotle objects, indeed (De An. iii. 9, 10, 432, a, 22 sqq. 433, a, 31 sqq.), to Plato's threefold division, on the ground that if we make the functions and faculties of the soul our principle of division we have far more than three parts, for the difference between the $\theta \rho \epsilon \pi \tau \iota \kappa \delta \nu$, $\alpha i \sigma \theta \eta \tau \iota \kappa \delta \nu$, φανταστικόν, νοητικόν, βουλευτικόν, ορεκτικών is wider than between the επιθυμητικόν and θυμικόν, and asks, De An. i. 5, 411, b, 5, in view of it: τί οδν ποτε συνέχει την ψυχην εί μεριστή πέφυκεν; it cannot be the body, for it is rather the soul which holds the body together; if, on the other hand, it be said that it is an incorporeal force, then this is the proper soul. But the question immediately recurs, is this simple If the former, or manifold? why cannot the soul itself be so just as well? If the latter, then for the parts of the συνέχον another συνέχον must be sought, and so on ad infinitum. should thus finally be forced to suppose that each part of the soul resides in a particular part of the body, which is obviously not the case either with respect to the reason, which has no bodily organ corresponding to it at all, nor in respect of the lower principle of life, which, in the case of those animals and plants which survive being cut in pieces, lives

on in each of the parts. Nevertheless. Aristotle himself speaks of parts of the soul (see p. 21, n. 1, supra; De Vita, i. 467, b, 16). and although he tries more fully to preserve the unity of its life amid the multiplicity of parts, he cannot be said to have been any more successful than Plato in this endeavour, nor does voûs bear any closer relation in his theory to the lower elements of the soul than does the immortal part in Plato's. His departure from Plato, accordingly, does not seem to be so important in principle. He differs from him partly in his account of different forms of animal life, but Plato, no less than he, assigns the lowest of the three parts into which he divides the soul to plants, the middle one to beasts, and holds that the higher part presupposes the lower but not vice versa; see Div. i. p. 714. The chief difference between the philosophers is in their respective starting points: while Plato begins his investigation into the nature and parts of the soul from the ethical side. Aristotle approaches it from the side of natural science. On the other hand. STRÜMPELL (Gesch. d. theor. Phil. 324 sqq.), as BRANDIS has pointed out, ii. b, 1168 sq., goes too far in saying that Aristotle attributes to one and the same being not only different

from the lowest to the highest in one comprehensive view as concentrated and progressive manifestations of the same life.

This progressive development of animal life corresponds to the actual fact, which Aristotle had no doubt observed, and which had led him in the first instance to his theory, that all organic nature exhibits a steady progress from more imperfect and defective productions to richer and fuller forms of life. 'Nature,' he says, 'makes so gradual a transition from the inanimate to the animate kingdom, that the boundary lines which separate them and the position of the intermediate are rendered indistinct and doubtful. Next to the inanimate kingdom comes that of Plants; and here we not only distinguish greater and less degrees of vitality subsisting among individuals, but the whole tribe seems animate when compared with inorganic substances, inanimate when compared with animals. Again, the transition from plants to animals is so gradual that many marine creatures leave us in doubt whether they are animals or vegetables, since they

faculties or parts of the soul but different souls, to man four, to beasts three (counting the sensitive and the motive principles as two). Aristotle speaks, indeed, of a ψυχὴ θρεπτικὴ, αἰσθητικὴ, λογικὴ, and of different ψυχαὶ (see e.g. preceding page; De Vita, 3, 469, a, 24), but he does not mean that several souls exist together in an individual as so many separate beings; he even defines the relation of these so-called ψυχαὶ to one another in the distinctest manner as one of comprehension,

the nutritive soul being contained in the sensitive, and the sensitive in the rational, just as the triangle is contained in the quadrangle (see preceding note), so that an animal, for instance, can no more be said to contain two souls than a quadrangle can be said to contain two kinds of figures. If he fails, as a matter of fact, perfectly to preserve the unity of the soul throughout (see end of Ch. XII.), we are not on this account justified in denying that he attempted to do so.

adhere to the ground, and cannot live when separated from it. Indeed, the whole tribe of Ostreaceæ, when compared with locomotive animals, resemble vegetables.' The same may be said about sensation, physical structure, mode of life, propagation, the rearing of their young, &c.: in all of these respects we notice a gradual progression of development. The continuity of this order brings into play the law of Analogy, the presence of which Aristotle takes some trouble to demonstrate in the sphere of organic structures and their vital functions. Analogy, as we have shown before, is the bond which unites different genera; in organic nature, as elsewhere, it transcends generic differences, and where no real similarity of kind is possible, produces resemblance. This analogy may be

1 Hist. An. viii. 1, 588, b, 4 sqq.where detailed proof is given; Part. An. iv. 5, 681, a, 12, where, in speaking of zoophytes and the differences which are to be observed amongst them, he remarks: ἡ γὰρ φύσις μεταβαίνει συνεχῶς ἀπὸ τῶν ἀψύχων εἶς τὰ (ῷα διὰ τῶν ζώντων μὲν οὐκ ὕντων δὲ ζώων οὕτως ὥστε δοκεῖν πάμπαν μικρὸν διαφέρειν θατέρου θάτερον τῷ σύννεγγυς ἀλλήλοις.

² I. 272, n. 2, supra. With what follows cf. MEYER, Arist. Thierk. 334 sqq. 103 sq.

⁸ Part. An. i. 4, 644, a, 14. Why are not water and winged animals included under one name? ἔστι γὰρ ἔνια πάθη κοινὰ καὶ τούτοις καὶ τοῖς ἄλλοις (ψοις ἄπασιν. ἀλλ' ὅμως ὀρθῶς διώρισται τοῦτον τὸν πρόπον. ὅσα μὲν γὰρ διαφέρει τῶν γενῶν καθ' ὑπεροχὴν καὶ τὸ μᾶλλον καὶ τὸ ἦττον, ταῦτα ὑπέζευκται ἐνὶ γένει, ὅσα δ' ἔχει τὸ

ανάλογον χωρίς. Two kinds of birds differ from one another by the size, for instance, of their wings; birds and fish, on the other hand, τῷ ἀνάλογον · δ γὰρ ἐκείνο πτερον, θατέρφ λεπίς. Analogies of this kind are found in almost all animals: τὰ γὰρ πολλὰ (ῷα ανάλογον ταὐτό πέπονθεν. Similarly in the following passage, 644, b, 7 sqq. a contrast is drawn between differences which exist within the same genus, e.g. between large and small, soft and hard, smooth and rough animals, and those which permit us to trace only general analogies. To the same effect, c. 5, 645, b, 4: πολλά κοινά πολλοῖς ὑπάρχει τῶν (ώων, τὰ μὲν ἁπλῶς, οἶον πόδες πτερὰ λεπίδες, καὶ πάθη δη τὸν αὐτὸν τρόπον τούτοις, τὰ δ' ἀνάλογον, λέγω δ' ανάλογον, ὅτι τοῖς μέν ύπάρχει πλεύμων, τοῖς δὲ πλεύμων μέν οῦ, δ δὲ τοῖς ἔχουσι πλεύobserved in the most different quarters. In place of blood, bloodless animals have certain humours which correspond to it; 1 and this is also the case with flesh.2 Molluscs, being without fat, are provided with an analogous substance.3, Cartilage and gristle correspond to bones in snakes and fish, and in the lower animals their place is supplied by shells, &c., which serve the same purpose of supporting the body.4 The hair of quadrupeds answers to the feathers of birds, the scales of fishes, and the mail of oviparous land animals 5the teeth of beasts to the bills of birds.6 Instead of a heart, bloodless animals have a similar central organ,7 and instead of a brain, something like one.8 Gills take the place of lungs in fishes, and they inhale water instead of air.9 Roots perform the same office for vegetables as heads, or rather mouths, for animals, and

μονα, ἐκείνοις ἕτερον ἀντὶ τούτου και τοῖς μὲν αἶμα, τοῖς δὲ τὸ ἀνάλογον τὴν αὐτὴν ἔχον δύναμιν ἥνπερ τοῖς ἐναίμοις τὸ αἶμα. Ibid. 20 sqq.; Hist. An. i. 1, 486, b, 17 sqq., 487, a, 9, c. 7, 491, a 14 sqq.; ii. 1, 497, b, 9; viii. 1 (see in/ra).

¹ Hist. An. i. 4, 489, a, 21; Part. An. i. 5, 645, b, 8, ii. 3, 650, a, 34, iii. 5, 668, a 4, 25, Gen. An. ii. 4, 740, a, 21. De. Somno, c. 3, 456, a, 35, and other passages.

² Part. An. ii. 8 init. iii. 5, 668, a, 25, ii. 1, 647, a, 19; Hist. An. i. 3, 4, 489, a, 18, 23; De An. ii. 11, 422, b, 21, 423, a, 14.

³ Gen. An. i. 19, 727, b, 3; Part. ii. 3, 650, a, 34.

¹ Part. ii. 8, 653, b, 33- fin. c. 9, 655, a, 17 sqq. c. 6, 652, a, 2; Hist. iii. 7, 516, b, 12 sqq. c. 8,

517, a, 1, i. 1, 486, b, 19.

⁵ Part. iv. 11, 691, a, 15, i. 4, 644, a, 21. Hist. iii. 10 init. i. 1, 486, b, 21.

⁶ Part. iv. 12, 692, b, 15.

⁷ Part. ii. 1, 647, a, 30, iv. 5, 678, b, 1, 681, b, 14, 28, a, 34; Gen. An. ii. 1, 735, a, 23 sqq. c. 4, 738, b, 16. c. 5, 741, b, 15. De Respir. c. 17, 478, b, 31 sqq. De Motu An. c. 10, 703, a, 14. On the parts which Aristotle regarded as analogous to the heart see

⁸ Part. ii. 7, 652, b, 23, 653, a, 11; De Somno, 3, 457, b, 29.

MEYER, p. 429.

9 Part. i. 5, 645, b, 6, iii. 6 init. iv. 1, 676, a, 27; Hist. An. viii. 2, 589, b, 18, ii. 13, 504, b, 28; De Resp. c. 10 sq. 475, b, 15, 476, a, 1, 22.

27

take up food into their systems.\(^1\) Some animals which have no tongues are provided with an analogous organ.2 The arms of men, the fore feet of quadrupeds, the wings of birds, the claws of crabs, are all analogous,3 while the elephant has a trunk instead of hands.⁴ Oviparous animals are born from eggs; correspondingly, the embryo of mammals is surrounded with a skin like that of an egg, and in the chrysalis insects assume an oval form. Reversely, the earliest germs of higher animal life corresponds to the worms from which insects are bred.5The habits, occupations, tempers, and reason of animals can be compared with those of men; while the human soul in childhood can scarcely be distinguished from that of beasts.6 Thus does one inner bond of union permeate all departments of organic nature—one life unfolds itself from the same fundamental forms in continually ascending degrees of perfection. And as organic nature is the sphere of contrivance and design,

² Part. iv. 5, 678, b, 6-10.

illustrating this with examples he proceeds: τὰ μέν γὰρ τῷ μᾶλλον καὶ ἦττον διαφέρει πρός του άνθρωπου . . τὰ δὲ τῷ ανάλογον διαφέρει . ώς γαρ έν ανθρώπω τέχνη καὶ σοφία καὶ σύνεσις, ούτως ενίοις των ζώων εστί τις έτέρα τοιαύτη φυσική δύναμις. φανερώ-τατον δ' έστι το τοιούτον έπι την τῶν παίδων ἡλικίαν βλέψασιν: ἐν τούτοις γάρ των μέν υστερον έξεων έσομένων έστιν ίδεῖν οἷον ἴχνη καὶ σπέρματα, διαφέρει δ' οὐθὲν ὡς είπειν ή ψυχή της των θηρίων ψυχής κατὰ τὸν χρόνον τοῦτον, ώστ' οὐδὲν άλογον, εί τὰ μὲν ταὐτὰ τὰ δὲ παραπλήσια τὰ δ' ἀνάλογον ὑπάρχει τοῖς άλλοις ζώοις.

¹ De An. ii. 4, 416, a, 4: ως η κεφαλη τῶν ζφων, οὕτως αἱ ρίζαι τῶν φυτῶν, εἰ χρη τὰ δργανα λέγειν ταὐτὰ καὶ ἔτερα τοῖς ἔργοις. De Juvent. c. 1, 468, a, 9; Ingr. An. c. 4, 708, a, 6.

⁸ Part. iv. 12, 693, a, 26, b, 10, c. 11, 691, b, 17; Hist. i. 1. 486, b, 19, c. 4, 489, a, 28, ii. 1, 497, b, 18.

¹ Part. iv. 12, 692, b, 15.

⁵ Hist. vii. 7, 586, a, 19: Gen. An. iii. 9. See i. 467, n. 1, supra.

Ηist. An. viii. 1, 588, a, 18: ἔνεστι γὰρ ἐν τοῖς πλείστοις καὶ τῶν ἄλλων ζώων Υχνη τῶν περὶ τὴν ψυχὴν τρόπων, ἄπερ ἐπὶ τῶν ἀνθρώ πων ἔχει φανερωτέρας τὰς διαφοράς.

it is itself in turn the object which all the inorganic universe must serve. The elements exist for the sake of homogeneous substance, and this for the sake of organic structures. Here, therefore, the order of existence is reversed: that which is last in origin is first in essence and value. Nature, after displaying a continual decrease of perfection from the highest sphere of heaven to earth, there reaches her turning point, and the descending scale of being begins to reascend. The elements by their mixture prepare the conditions necessary for the development of living creatures, and we see Life expanding itself from its first weak germs to its highest manifestation in humanity.

¹ Part. An. ii. 1, 646, a, 12: τοιών δ' οὐσών τών συνθέσεων [on which see i. 517, n. 6, sup.] πρώτην μέν ἄν τις θείη τὴν ἐκ τῶν καλουμένων ύπό τινων στοιχείων δευτέρα δὲ σύστασις ἐκ τῶν πρώτων ἡ των δμοιομερών φύσις έν τοις ζώοις έστιν, οίον όστοῦ και σαρκός και τῶν ἄλλων τῶν τοιούτων, τρίτη δὲ καὶ τελευταία τὸν ἀριθμὸν ἡ τῶν άνομοιομερών, οξον προσώπου καί χειρός και των τοιούτων μορίων. ἐπεὶ δ' ἐναντίως ἐπὶ τῆς γενέσεως έχει καὶ τῆς οὐσίας τὰ γὰρ ὅστερα τῆ γενέσει πρότερα τὴν φύσιν ἐστὶ καὶ πρώτον τὸ τῆ γενέσει τελευταῖον, for the house does not exist for the sake of the stones and the bricks, but these for the sake of the house, and generally the material for the sake of the form and the final product: τῷ μὲν οὖν χρόνφ προτέραν την ύλην άναγκαῖον είναι και την γένεσιν, τῷ λόγφ δὲ την οὐσίαν καὶ την ἐκάστου μορφήν. . . . ώστε την μέν των στοιχείων ύλην άναγκαῖον είναι τῶν ὁμοιομερῶν ένεκεν, ύστερα γὰρ ἐκείνων ταῦτα τῆ

γενέσει, τούτων δὲ τὰ ἀνομοιομερῆ [i.e. organic nature]. ταῦτα γὰρ ἤδη τὸ τέλος ἔχει καὶ τὸ πέρας... ἐξ ἀμφοτέρων μὲν οὖν τὰ ζῷα συνέστηκε τῶν μορίων τούτων, ἀλλὰ τὰ ὁμοιομερῆ τῶν ἀνομοιομερῶν ἕνεκέν ἐστιν · ἐκείνων γὰρ ἔργα καὶ πράξεις εἰσὶν, οῖον ὁΦθαλμοῦ, &C.

2 Cf. what is said in Gen. An. ii. 1, 731, b, 24: ἐπεὶ γάρ ἐστι τὰ μὲν ἀΐδια καὶ θεῖα τῶν ὄντων τὰ δ' ἐνδεχόμενα καὶ εἶναι καὶ μὴ εἶναι, τὸ δὲ καλὸν καὶ τὸ θεῖον αἴτιον ἀεὶ κατὰ τὴν αὐτοῦ φύσιν τοῦ βελτίονος ἐν τοῖς ἐνδεχόμενον ἐστι καὶ εἶναι καὶ μεταλαμβάνειν καὶ τοῦ χείρονος καὶ τοῦ βελτίονος, βέλτιον δὲ ψυχὴ μὲν σώματος, τὸ δ' ἔμψυχον τοῦ ἀψύχου διὰ τὴν ψυχὴν, καὶ τὸ εἶναι τοῦ μὴ εἶναι καὶ τὸ ζῆν τοῦ μὴ ζῆν, διὰ ταύτας τὰς αἰτίας γένεσις ζώων ἐστίν.

3 That Aristotle conceives of such a process of development from lower to higher forms, and of man as the highest step in the scale of evolution, by referAristotle finds the first indications of this Life in inorganic nature. Movement in general may be re-

ence to which we may test the degree of perfection attained by lower forms of being, is obvious from the passages referred to, pp. 21 sq., 25 sq., and i. 465 sq., supra, as well as from those which immediately follow. further Part. An. ii. 10, 655, b, 37 sqq., Gen. An. i. 23, 731, a, In the former of these passages Aristotle says: plants have few and simple organs, τὰ δὲ πρὸς τῷ ζῆν αἴσθησιν ἔχοντα πολυμορφοτέραν έχει την ίδέαν, καί τούτων έτερα προ έτέρων μαλλον, και πολυχουστέραν, δσων μη μόνον τοῦ ζῆν ἀλλὰ καὶ τοῦ εὖ ζῆν ἡ φύσις μετείληφεν, τοιούτο δ' έστι το των ανθρώπων γένος· ή γαρ μόνον μετέχει τοῦ θείου τῶν ἡμῖν γνωρίμων ζώων, ή μάλιστα πάντων. Ιη the latter: της μέν γάρ τῶν φυτῶν οὐσίας οὐθέν ἐστιν ἄλλο ἔργον οὐδὲ πρᾶξις οὐδεμία πλην ή τοῦ σπέρματος γένεσις . . . τοῦ δὲ ζώου οὐ μόνον τὸ γεννήσαι ἔργον (τοῦτο μέν γὰρ κοινόν τῶν (ώντων πάντων), ἀλλὰ καί γνώσεώς τινος πάντα μετέχουσι. τὰ μέν πλείονος, τὰ δ' ἐλάττονος, τὰ δὲ πάμπαν μικρᾶς. αἴσθησιν γὰρ ἔχουσιν, ἡ δ' αἴσθησις γνῶσίς τις. ταύτης δὲ τὸ τίμιον καὶ ἄτιμον πολὸ διαφέρει σκοπούσι πρός φρόνησιν καὶ πρὸς τὸ τῶν ἀψύχων γένος. πρὸς μὲν γὰρ τὸ φρονεῖν ὥσπερ ουδέν είναι δοκεί το κοινωνείν άφης καὶ γεύσεως μόνον, πρός δὲ ἀναισθησίαν Βέλτιστον. It is not inconsistent with this view that, starting from man, Aristotle (Part. An. iv. 10, 686, b, 20 sqq.) should attribute to the different animal tribes a continually diminishing degree of perfection as compared with him, and (Hist.

An. i. 6, 491, a, 19) should begin with man as being best known to us. Nor can we with FRANT-ZIUS (Arist. üb. die Theile d. Thiere, p. 315, 77; contrast MEYER. Arist. Thierk. 481 sqq.) conclude from these passages that Aristotle regards nature under the form of a retrogressive rather than a progressive development, and conceives of its history as that of ideal animal assuming a succession of degenerate shapes as it descends from the human to the vegetable form. For, in the first place, he does not always begin with man, but only when he is treating of the external organs; when, on the other hand, he is dealing with the internal organisation, a field in which more is known of the lower animals than of men, he takes the opposite course (Hist. An. i. 16 init., cf. Part. ii. 10, 656, But, in the second place. it does not at all follow that that which is more known to us must in itself be the first either in point of value or of time, or that because Aristotle, in treating of the forms of organic life. begins with the more perfect and proceeds to the more imperfect. therefore nature follows the same course in producing them. On the contrary, he states as definitely as possible that nature proceeds in the reverse order: see, besides other passages, the preceding note. There is here no question of a metamorphosis such as that described, either retrogressive or progressive. Aristotle does not conceive of an

garded as a sort of life. In a certain sense we attribute animation to everything: we talk of the life of the air and the wind, and find analogies to the phenomena of the organic life of animals in the sea. Again, the world has its youth and age like plants and animals, except that they do not succeed each other as conditions of the whole, but are present simultaneously as alternating states of its parts. A well-watered region may dry up and grow old, while an arid tract may spring into fresh life by timely moisture. When streams increase, the land about their mouths is gradually changed to sea; when they dry up, the sea becomes land. When these changes take place slowly, length

ideal individual either developing or degenerating into various forms. The organic forms do not themselves pass into one another; the transition is effected by nature as she rises to the fuller exercise of her creative power. Cf. p. 25, supra.

See i. 459, n. 5, 460, n. 1, sup.,
 and Gen. An. iv. 10, 778, u, 2:
 βίος γάρ τις καὶ πνεύματός ἐστι καὶ γένεσις καὶ φθίσις. Upon the sea v. Meteor. ii. 2, 355, b, 4 sqq.

356, a, 33 sqq.

2 Cf. on this the full and remarkable exposition, Meteor. i. 14. The same regions, Aristotle there says, are not always wet or dry, but according as rivers arise or disappear, the land retreats before the sea or the sea before the land. This happens, however, κατὰ τινὰ τάξιν καὶ περίοδον. ἀρχὴ δὲ τούτων καὶ αἴτιον ὅτι καὶ τῆς γῆς τὰ ἐντὸς, ὥσπερ τὰ σώματα τὰ τῶν ψυτῶν καὶ ζψων, ἀκμὴν ἔχει καὶ γῆρας. In regard to the latter, however, ἄμα πᾶν

ἀκμάζειν καὶ φθίνειν ἀναγκαῖον : τῆ δὲ γῆ τοῦτο γίνεται κατὰ μέρος διὰ ψυξιν και θερμότητα. As these increase or diminish, portions of the earth change their character. ώστε μέχρι τινός ἔνυδρα δύναται διαμένειν, είτα ξηραίνεται και γηράσκει πάλιν · έτεροι δὲ τόποι βιώσκονται καὶ ἔνυδροι γίγνονται κατὰ μέρος. Where a region dries up, the rivers decrease and finally disappear. the sea retreats, and land is formed where the sea was before: the opposite happens when the moisture of a district increases. As examples of the former process, Aristotle in the following passage (351, b, 28 sqq., 352, b, 19 sqq.) names Egypt, which is unmistakably a πρόσχωσις τοῦ Νείλου, an έργον τοῦ ποταμοῦ (δώρον τοῦ ποταμοῦ, HEROD. ii. 5), and the region surrounding the oracle of Ammon, which, like Egypt, lies below the level of the sea and must therefore once have been the sea bottom; Argolis and the neighbourhood of My. of time and the gradual character of the transformation cause the memory of them to be usually forgotten; 1 when they happen suddenly they belong to that class of devastating inundations 2 to which Aristotle, following Plato, attributed those relapses into primitive barbarism which, coeternal though the human race is assumed to be

cenæ in Greece; the Bosphorus, the shore of which is continually changing. Some, he says (352, a. 17 sqq.; according to ii. 3, 356, b, 9 sqq., he is thinking here of Democritus, but the same view is ascribed to Anaximander and Diogenes; cf. Zeller, Ph. d. Gr. i. 205, 2, 799, 4), attribute these changes to a change in the world as a whole, ώς γινομένου τοῦ οὐρανοῦ, holding that the collective mass of the sea is diminished by gradual evaporation (contrast Meteor. ii. 3). But if in many places the sea changes into land and contrariwise land into sea. we cannot explain this upon the ground of a γένεσις τοῦ κόσμου. γελοίον γάρ διά μικράς και άκαριαίας μεταβολάς κινείν το παν, ο δε της γης όγκος και το μέγεθος ούθέν έστι δήπου πρός τον όλον οὐρανόν, άλλά πάντων τούτων αίτιον ὑποληπτέον **ὅτι γίγνεται διὰ χρόνων εἰμαρμένων,** οίου έν ταίς κατ' ένιαυτου ώραις χειμών, οῦτω περιόδου τινὸς μεγάλης μέγας χειμών και υπερβολή ομβρων. αύτη δ' οὐκ ἀεὶ κατὰ τοὺς αὐτοὺς Deucalion's flood was chiefly confined to ancient Hellas or the country watered by the Achelous. Cf. 352, b, $16: \epsilon \pi \epsilon l$ δ' ἀνάγκη τοῦ ὅλου [the whole globe] γίγνεσθαι μέν τινα μεταβολήν, μη μέντοι γένεσιν καί φθοράν, είπερ μένει [μενεί] το παν, άναγκη . . . μη τους αυτους άει

τόπους ύγρούς τ' είναι θαλάττη καί ποταμοίς και ξηρούς. The Tanais, consequently, and the Nile will one day cease to flow, and the Palus Mæotis will be dried up: τὸ γὰρ ἔργον αὐτῶν ἔχει πέρας ὁ δὲ χρόνος οὐκ ἔχει.

¹ Ibid. 351, b, 8 sqq., which

also refers to Egypt.

² The other possibility, of a sudden destroying heat, is even more completely neglected by Aristotle than by Plato.

3 Plato introduces the story of the Atlantides in the Timaus with the remark that devastating tempests, at one time of fire, as in the time of Phaëthon, at another of flood, overtake mankind at intervals. When cities, with all their attendant civilisation, become overwhelmed in the latter, the survivors, who are for the most part semi-barbarous mountaineers, must begin again from the beginning. Hence we have a vouthful Hellenic culture side by side with an effete Egyptian civilisation. The same conception recurs in the account of the gradual rise of civilised states out of primitive barbarism, in the Laws, iii. 676, B sqq.—the question whether the human race has existed from all eternity or only for an indefinitely long time (vi. 781, E) being left undecided,

with the world, yet from time to time befall it in the history of its civilisation. Life nevertheless in the strict sense exists only, as Aristotle emphatically declares, in beings which are moved by their own soul, i.e. in Plants

and Animals.3

1 Aristotle does not, indeed. expressly say that this is so in any extant passage of his writings; it follows, however, from his whole view of the world that he could not have assigned a beginning to the human race any more than to the world it-As man is the end of nature, she must have been imperfect for an infinite period of time, if at any time the human race did not as yet exist. Moreover, Aristotle actually says (cf. i. 475, n. 4, 508, n. 2, supra, that in the history of civilisation the same discoveries have been made an infinite number of times. his pupil, Theophrastus. among other arguments against the eternity of the world controverts that which uses the comparative recentness of these discoveries to prove that mankind came into being within a definite period of time. See Ch. XII. part 3. According to CENSORINUS. 4, 3. Aristotle taught the eternity of the human race in one of his own writings. The question which he discusses Gen. An. iii. 11, 762, b, 28 sqq. how we are to conceive of the origin of man and the four-footed tribes ($\epsilon l \pi \epsilon \rho$) έγένοντό ποτε γηγενείς, ὥσπερ φασί τινες . . . εἴπερ ἢν τις ἀρχὴ της γενέσεως πασι τοις (φοις) is

suggested hypothetically, and not from the point of view of his own theory. Cf. Bernays, Theophr. v. d. Frömmigk. 44 sq.

² It has already been shown i. 475, n. 4, 508, n. 2, and 256, n. 2, supra, and will be still further proved Ch. XII. part 2, that Aristotle regards religious beliefs and proverbial truths as remnants of a civilisation which has been destroyed by devastations of nature. These devastations, however (according to p. 30, n. 2), can only have affected particular parts of the earth, although often so wide that the scanty survivors of the former population were forced to begin again from the very beginning. When, therefore, CEN-SORINUS, 18, 11, says of the great annus mundi (on which see ZEL-LER, $Ph. d. \dot{G}r. i. 684, n. 4, and$ 250), 'quem Aristoteles maximum potius quam magnum appellat,'we may not conclude (as BERNAYS, ibid. 170, shows) that Aristotle conceived of periodic revolutions in the history of the universe or even of the earth as a whole. He may have employed the expression in discussing the views of others perhaps in the books upon philosophy (on which see p. 56 sq.). 3 See p. 1, supra.

2. Plants.

Plants stand lowest in the scale of living creatures.1 They first display a real soul, inhabiting an organic body, and no mere analogue of a soul. Yet this soul is of the lowest sort, and its functions are confined to nutrition and propagation.2 Vegetables are not endowed with sensation and locomotion or the faculties of life from which they spring.3 They have no vital point of unity (no μεσότης), as is proved by the fact that they continue to live after being cut in pieces; and owing to this defect they are insensible to the form of that which operates upon them.4 Hence we may compare them to animals that have coalesced: for though in reality they have but one soul, they combine several potential souls.5 Again the sexes have not yet

¹ On Aristotle's botanical treatise cf. p. 93. All that his extant works contain upon the subject of plants is to be found collected in WIMMER's Phytologice Aristot. Fragmenta (Breslau, 1838).

² See p. 1, n. 3, supra.

³ See p. 21, n. 2, supra. As plants never awake to sensation, their condition is like an eternal sleep, and they do not, accordingly, participate in the alternations of sleep and waking (De Somno, 1, 454, a, 15; Gen. An. v. 1, 778, b, 31 sqq.). For the same reason there is no distinction between the front and the back in plants, for this depends upon the position of the different organs of sense. Finally, being without the power of locomotion while they participate in growth,

they have no right and left side. but merely an upper and a lower; Ingr. An. c. 4, 705, a. 29-b, 21; Juvent. c. 1, 467, b, 32; De Cælo, ii. 2, 284, b, 27, 285, a, 16, cf. i. 497, n. 1, supra. On Plato's view of plants, which in spite of particular deviations from Aristotle's is yet nearly related to it, see Ph. d. Gr. pp. 731, 714, 7.

⁴ De An. i. 5, 411, b, 19, ii. 2, 413, b, 16, c. 12, 424, a 32; Long. Vitæ, c. 6, 467, a, 18; Juv. et Sen. c. 2, 468, a, 28. See also foll. n. ⁵ Juv. et Sen. 2, 468, a, 29 sqq., where, speaking of insects which can live in a divided form, he says: they are plants which live on in slips; they have only one soul ἐνεργεία, but several δυνάμει. ἐοίκασι γὰρ τὰ τοιαῦτα τῶν ζψων πολλοῖς ζφοις συμπεφυκόσιν. Gen. An. i. 23, 731, a,

attained to separate existence in them: confined to mere vitality and the propagation of their species, they remain in the condition of perpetual union of the sexes.1 The nature of their body corresponds to this incompleteness in the life of their soul. Its material composition consists principally of earth; 2 its structure is simple, designed for few functions, and therefore provided with few organs; 3 deriving its nourishment from the earth, and being deprived of locomotion, it is rooted to the ground, and the upper part of it, which corresponds to the head of animals, is turned downwards the better member to the worse place.4 It is true that in its contrivance we do not altogether fail to trace the designing faculty of nature, but we do so only indistinctly.5 But, though in comparison with other living creatures plants occupy so low a place, compared with

21: ἀτεχνῶς ἔοικε τὰ ζῷα ισπερ φυτὰ εἶναι διαιρετά. De An. ii. 2, 413, b, 18: ὡς οἴσης τῆς εν τούτοις ψιχῆς ἐντελεχεία μὲν μιᾶς ἐν εκάστφ φυτῷ, δυνάμει δὲ πλειόνων. Cf. $Part.\ An$. iv. 5, 682, a, 6; $De\ Resp.\ c$. 17, 479, a, 1; $Ingr.\ An$. 7, 707, b, 2.

Gen. An. i. 23, 731, a, i. 24, b, 8, c. 20, 728, b, 32 sqq. c. 4, 7.17, a, 21, ii. 4 fm. iv. 1, 763, b, 24, iii. 10, 759, b, 30; Hist. An. viii. 1, 588, b, 24, iv. 11, 538, a. 18.

² De Resp. 13, 14, 477, a, 27, b, 23 sqq.; Gen. An. iii. 11,761, a, 29. That Aristotle held that there were other constituents in plants besides earth is obvious from the passage cited i. 482, n. 3, supra. According to Meteor. iv. 8, 384, b, 30, plants consist of earth and water, the water serving for their

food (Gen. An. iii. 2, 753, b, 25; H. An. vii. 19, 601, b, 11), for the consumption of which heat is necessary (see p. 12, n. 3, and p. 14, n. 2 ad fin., supra).

³ De An. ii. 1, 412, b, 1; Part. An. ii. 10, 655, b, 37; Phys. viii. 7, 261, a, 15.

Ingr. An. c. 4 init. c. 5, 706, b, 3 sqq.; Long. Vitæ, 6, 467, b, 2; Juv. et Sen. c. 1 fin.; Part. An. iv. 7, 683, b, 18, c. 10, 686, b, 31 sqq. See further p. 27, n. 1, sup. b Phys. ii. 8, 199, a, 23: καὶ ἐν τοῖς φυτοῖς φαίνεται τὰ συμάξουντα

• Phys. ii. 8, 199, a, 23: καὶ ἐν τοῖς φυτοῖς φαίνεται τὰ συμφέρουτα γινόμενα πρὸς τὸ τέλος, οῖον τὰ φύλλα τῆς τοῦ καρποῦ ἕνεκα σκέπης . . . τὰ φυτὰ τὰ φύλλα ἐνεκα τῶν καρπῶν [sc. ἔχει] καὶ τὰς βίζας οὺκ ἄνω ἀλλὰ κατω ἕνεκα τῆς τροφῆς. b, 9: καὶ ἐν τοῖς φυτοῖς ἔνετι τὸ ἕνεκά του, ῆττον δὲ διέρθρωται,

the inanimate world the operation of the soul in plants, and especially the propagation of the species, must be placed very high.1 As all terrestrial things imitate by their endless reproduction the eternity of Heaven. so living creatures are enabled by means of procreation to partake, within the limits of their own particular species, of the eternal and the divine.2 This, then, is the highest aim of vegetable life.3 A more elevated rank of vitality appears in Animals,4 to which Aristotle

1 Cf. preceding note and p.

² Gen. An. ii. 1, 731, b, 31: ἐπεὶ γὰρ ἀδύνατος ἡ φύσις τοῦ τοιούτου γένους άίδιος είναι, καθ' δν ένδέχεται τρόπον, κατά τοῦτόν έστιν άίδιον το γιγνόμενον, αριθμώ μεν οὖν ἀδύνατον, . . . εἴδει δ' ενδέχεται διὸ γένος ἀεὶ ἀνθρώπων και ζώων έστι και φυτών. Ibid. 735, a, 16: all animals and plants have το θρεπτικόν· τοῦτο δ' ἔστι τὸ γεννητικόν ἐτέρου οΐον αὐτό: τοῦτο γὰρ παντὸς φύσει τελείου ξργον καὶ ζώου καὶ φυτοῦ. De An. ii. 4, 415, a, 26: φυσικώτατον γάρ των ξργων τοίς ζώσιν, όσα τέλεια και μή πηρώματα, ή την γένεσιν αὐτομάτην ἔχει, τὸ ποιῆσαι έτερον οξον αὐτὸ, ζώον μέν ζώον, φυτὸν δέ φυτόν, ϊνα τοῦ ἀεὶ καὶ τοῦ θείου μετέχωσιν ή δύνανται &c. Polit. i. 2, 1252, a, 28. Cf. the passages, Gen. et Corr. ii. 10 and 11 (i. 511. n. 3, sup.), from which Œcon. i. 3, 1343, b, 23 is copied, and on the propositions of Plato which Aristotle here follows, Ph. d. Gr. i.

³ De An. ii. 4. See p. 21, n. 1,

4 Among further details of Aristotle's doctrine of plants may be mentioned: (1) his division

of the plant into root, stem, branches, and leaves. The root is the nutritive organ, and the leaves are veined in order to diffuse the nutriment which is contained in the sap (Part. An. iv. 4, 678, a, 9, iii. 5, 668, a, 22; Juv. et Sen. 3, 468, b, 24). Again (Part. An. ii. 10 init.), he divides the bodies of plants and animals into three chief parts: that by which they take up food into their system (the head), that by which they rid themselves of superfluous matter, and that which lies in the middle between these two. In plants, the root is the head (see p. 27, n. 1, supra); as the nutriment they draw from the earth is already digested, they require no store-chamber for useless surplus (on this see also Gen. An. ii. 4, 740, a, 25, b, 8); nevertheless, the fruit and the seed which form at the opposite end from the root are secretions (Part. An.ii. 3, 10, 650, a, 20, 655, b, 32, iv. 4, 678, a, 11; H. An. iv. 6, 531, b, 8, with which De Sensu. 5, 445, a, 19, where the elements which plants fail to absorb and leave behind in the soil seem to be regarded as περιττώματα of the food of plants, is not inconsisaccordingly devoted so large a portion of his scientific activity.¹

tent).—(2) Earth and water are the food of plants (Gen. et Corr. ii. 8, 335, a, 11; Part. An. ii. 3, 650, a, 3, and p. 34, n. 2, supra. Cf. H. An. vii. 19, 601, b, 12; Gen. An. iii. 11, 762, b, 12); it is the sweet part of their food that nourishes plants and animals (De Sensu, 4, 442, a, 1-12); this they consume by aid of their vital heat (cf. p. 12, n. 3, and p. 14, n. 2, supra, and Part. An. ii. 3, 650, a, 3 sqq.), which, in its turn, is supplied to them partly from their food, partly from surrounding atmosphere, albeit plants do not require respiration; if the atmosphere is too cold or too hot the vital heat is destroyed and the plant withers (De Sensu. c. 6; cf. Respir. 17, 478, b, 31). As to the influence exercised upon the character and colour of plants by the nature of the soil and water, see Polit. vii. 16, 1335, b, 18; Gen. An. ii. 4, 738, b, 32 sqq. v. 6, 786, a, 2 sqq.; H. An. v. 11,543, b, 23; De Sensu, 4, 441, a, 11, 30; cf. Probl. 20, 12; De Color. c. 5. -(3) The seed and the fruit of plants are made of the surplus portion of their food (Part. An. ii. 10, 655, b, 35, c. 7, 638, a, 24; Gen. An. iii. 1, 749, b, 27, 750, a, 20, i. 18, 722, a, 11, 723, b, 16, 724, b, 19, c. 20, 728, a, 26, c. 23, 731, a, 2 sqq.; Meteor. iv. 3, 380, a, 11); they contain both the germ and the food of the new plant (De An. ii. 1, 412, b, 26; Gen. An. ii. 4, 740, b, 6, i. 23,731, a, 7); smaller plants are more fruitful, being able to expend more material upon the formation of seeds: on the other hand, excessive fruitfulness stunts and destroys plants, because it absorbs too much of the nutritive substance (Gen. An. i. 8, 718, b, 12, iii. 1, 749, b, 26, 750, a, 20 sqq. iv. 4, 771, b, 13, i. 18, 725, b, 25; cf. H. An. v. 14, 546, a, 1 -on barren trees, especially the wild fig-tree, see Gen. An. i. 18. 726, a, 6, c. 1, 715, b, 21, iii. 5, 755, b, 10; H. An. v. 32, 557, b, 25). On the origin of the seed, see the remarks, Gen. An. i. 20, 728, b, 32 sqq. c. 18, 722, a, 11, 723, b, 9. On the development of the germ from the seed and on propagation by slips, Juv. et Sen. c. 3, 468, b, 18-28 (cf. WIMMER, p. 31; Brandis, p. 1240); Gen. An. ii. 4 739, b, 34, c. 6, 741, b, 34, iii. 2, 752, a, 21, c. 11, 761, b, 26; Respir. c. 17, 478, b. 33. On selfgeneration in plants and animals, and on parasites, there are remarks in Gen. An. i. 1, 715, b, 25, iii. 11, 762, b, 9, 18; H. An. v. 1, 539, a, 16.—(4) On the length of life and the decay of plants vide Meteor. i. 14, 351, a, 27; Longit. Vitæ, c. 4, 5, 466, a, 9, 20 sqq, c. 6; De Respir. 17, 478, b, 27; cf. Gen. An. iii. 1, 750, a, 20; on the fall of the leaf and evergreens, Gen. An. v. 3, 783, b, 10-22.

i On the sources from which he received assistance, vide the valuable account of Brands, ii. b, 1298-1305. Of his predecessors in this field the most important was undoubtedly Democritus, whom he frequently mentions with the greatest respect. He refers further to certain views of Diogenes of Apollonia, Anaxagoras, Empedoeles, Parmenides,

3. Animals.

The powers of nutrition and propagation are accompanied in all animals by sensation, the feeling of pleasure and pain, and the appetites: in most of them also by the power of locomotion. Hence the sentient and the motive soul is now added to the vegetable.1 Even that moral and intellectual life which reaches its full development in man may be dimly traced in the lower animals: they exhibit gentleness and fierceness, fear and courage, cunning and understanding; nor do we fail to perceive an analogue to the scientific faculty of men in the teachableness of certain animals; while conversely children display the same kind of rudi-

Alcmæon, Herodorus, Leophanes, Syennesis, Polybus, several statements of Ctesias and Herodotus (which, however, he treats with critical distrust), and now and then, rather by way of literary embellishment, to the poets. Notwithstanding all these, he must have mainly relied for his knowledge of animals upon his own observations, supplemented as those were by information received from shepherds, hunters, fishermen, breeders, and veterinary doctors. His theory, with the exception perhaps of a few isolated points, may be regarded as his own original work. 'The setting into place and putting to use of the facts left him by his predecessors,' Brandis remarks, 1303, 'as well as the scientific form which he gave to zoology, are in all probability Aristotle's own work.'

LANGE, indeed, judges differently, Gesch. d. Material. i. 61: 'The belief that Aristotle was a great discoverer in natural science is still widely diffused. The knowledge, however, that he had many predecessors in this field . . . has necessarily caused this opinion to be much critisised,'&c. Yet when we ask where we hear of these predecessors, LANGE refers us (pp. 129, 11, 135, 50) merely to a quotation from MUL-LACH, Fr. Phil. i. 338, who, however, expresses himself much more guardedly: 'haud scio an Stagirites illam qua reliquos philosophos superat eruditionem aliqua ex parte Democriti librorum lectioni debuerit.' On the aid which Alexander is said to have lent Aristotle in his zoological investigations see p. 29 sq.

See p. 21, supra.

mentary moral and intellectual development which we detect in brutes.¹

The character and structure of their bodies answer

¹ H. An. viii. 1, 588, a. 18: ένεστι γάρ &c. (see p. 27, n. 6, supra). καὶ γὰρ ἡμερότης καὶ ἀγριότης καί πραότης καί χαλεπότης καί ανδρία και δειλία και φόβοι και θάρρη καί θυμοί και πανουργίαι και της περί την διάνοιαν συνέσεως ένεισιν ἐν πολλοῖς αὐτῶν ὁμοιότητες. (For the continuation of this passage see p. 27, n. 6.) Ibid. ix. 1 init.: τὰ δ' ήθη τῶν ζώων ἐστὶ τῶν μὲν αμαυροτέρων καὶ βραχυβιωτέρων ήττον ήμ**ιν ἔνδηλα κατὰ τὴν α**ἴσθησιν, των δέ μακροβιωτέρων ένδηλότερα, φαίνονται γάρ έχοντά τινα δύναμιν περί έκαστον των της ψυγης παθημάτων φυσικήν, περί τε φρόνησιν καὶ εὐήθειαν καὶ ἀνδρίαν καὶ δειλίαν, περί τε πραότητα και χαλεπότητα καὶ τὰς ἄλλας τὰς τοιαύτας έξεις. ένια δὲ κοινωνεί τινὸς άμα καί μαθήσεως και διδασκαλίας, τὰ μέν παρ' άλλήλων τὰ δὲ καὶ παρὰ των ανθρώπων, δσαπερ ακοής μετέχει, μη μόνον όσα των ψόφων άλλ' όσα και των σημείων διαισθάνεται τàs διαφοράς. (Cf. c. 3 init. . τὰ δ' ήθη τῶν ζώων . . . διαφέρει κατά τε δειλίαν και πραότητα και ανδρίαν και ήμερότητα και νοῦν τε και άνοιαν.) After discussing the difference between the sexes with respect to disposition, Aristotle continues, 608, b, 4: τούτων έχνη μέν των ήθων έστιν έν πασιν ώς εἰπεῖν, μαλλον δὲ φανερώτερα έν τοϊς έχουσι μᾶλλον ήθος καί μάλιστα έν ανθρώπως τοῦτο γαρ έχει την φύσιν αποτετελεσμένην &c. Cf. i. 1, 488, b, 12 sqq.; Gen. An. i. 23 (see p. 28, n. 3, supra). Upon the docility and sagacity of many animals see also Metanh. i. 1, 980, a, 27 sqq.; Eth. iv. 7.

1141, a. 26; Part. An. ii. 1, 4, 648, a, 5, 650, b, 24. In the ninth book of his Natural History Aristotle treats not only of habits of animals in general but more especially of the traces of intelligence which they exhibit. all quadrupeds the sheep has the smallest amount of intelligence (c. 3, 610, b, 22); the stag, on the other hand, displays a large amount (c. 5). Bears, dogs, panthers, and many other animals find out the proper remedies against wounds and sickness, and the proper means of assistance against the attacks of other animals (c. 6). With what intelligence again do swallows build their nests, and the pigeon provide for his mate and his young (c. 7): how cunningly partridges manage their love-affairs, and hatch and protect their broods (c. 8); how cleverly the crane directs his flight (c. 10); what design is displayed in the habits of birds in general, in the choice of a habitation, in the building of their nests, in the search for food (see ibid. c. 11-36). like manner Aristotle remarks upon the cunning of many marine animals (c. 37), the industry of spiders (c. 39), of bees, wasps, and the like (c. 40-43), the docility and cleverness of elephants (c. 46), the moral instinct of camels and horses (c. 47), the humane disposition of dolphins (c. 48), &c.; with all which it is only natural that much that is questionable should be mixed

to the higher rank which animals occupy in the scale of Their more numerous and various animated nature. functions require a greater number and complexity of organs. Aristotle discusses all these organs in his treatise on the Parts of Animals.1 First (ii. 2-9) he describes the homogeneous materials of which they consist-blood, fat, marrow, brain, flesh, bones, sinews, veins, skin, &c. The fundamental constituents of these materials are the elements of warmth, cold, dryness, and humidity.2 Flesh, or that which corresponds to it amongst the lower classes of animals,3 is the most essential and indispensable portion of the animal economy: for Aristotle, unacquainted as he was with the nerves, believed that flesh was the medium of the most universal of the senses, that of touch, and therefore the most universal organ of animal life.4 Bones, sinews, and external coverings serve to unite and protect the flesh.5 The blood 6 furnishes the nourishment of the various solid

More accurately in the last three books of this treatise; see i. 92, n. 1, and i. 89, n. 2, supra, on these and the 'Avarona'.

έατlν ἀφh, ταύτης δ' αἰσθητήριον τὸ τοιοῦτον μόριον ἐστιν. On the importance of flesh for sensation see, further, c. 1, 647, a, 19, c. 3, 650, b, 5, c. 10, 656, b, 34; H. An. i. 3, 4, 489, a, 18, 23; but especially De An. ii. 11, 422, b, 19, 34 sqq. 423, b, 1 sqq. 29, iii. 2, 426, b, 15. The organ of sensation itself is the heart (see intra).

² Part. An. ii. 2 init. - c. 3, 650, a, 2, referring to the different respects in which one thing is said to be warmer than another, and the transition from one state into another.

³ Cf. p. 26, n. 2, supra.

⁴ Part. ii. 8 init.: πρώτον [σκεπτέον] περί σαρκός εν τοις έχουσι σάρκας, εν δε τοις άλλοις το άνάλογον τοιτος τώρ ζώων έστιν. δήλον δε κατά τον λόγον το γὰρ ζώων έστιν. δήλον δε την πρώτην αῦτη δ΄ ποώτον δε την πρώτην αῦτη δ΄ ποώτον δε την πρώτην αῦτη δ΄ τοι ποώτον δε την πρώτην το το γάρ ποώτον δε την πρώτην αῦτη δ΄ τοι πρώτην το το γάρος του δε την πρώτην το το γάρος σε το γάρος σε την πρώτην το το γάρος σε την σε το γάρος σε

⁵ Part. ii. 8, 653, b, 30 sqq.
⁶ The blood, or that which corresponds to it (see p. 26, n. 1. sup.), is most immediately food (πελευταία οι ἐσχάτη τροφή) to the animal body (De Somno, c. 3, 456, a, 34; Part. ii. 3, 650, a, 32 sqq. c. 4, 651, a, 12; Gen. An.

constituents. The brain serves to cool the blood, and is therefore composed of the cold elements of earth and water; 2 the marrow 3 and other parts 4 are made of surplus blood. Here, therefore, we may notice a graduated scale of means and ends. The homogeneous elements of the body exist for the sake of the organic,5 but while some of them fulfil their end directly as parts of the organism, a second class serves merely as nutriment to the former, and a third consists of the superfluous remnant of the second.6 which nevertheless has a use of its own in the economy of Nature and is not lost.7 Each of these materials is of superior or inferior quality according to its purpose, so that even here different animals and different parts of the same animal do not stand upon the same level.8 The soul resides primarily

ii. 4, 740, a, 21, and passim); on its quality, therefore, much of the life both of soul and body depends; Part. An. ibid., and c. 2, 648, a, 2 sqq. According to the latter passage, thick warm blood is more conducive to strength, thin cool blood to sense perception, and thought. The best mixture is one of warm but thin and pure blood.

¹ Ibid.c.7 (seep 16, n. 6, sup.). Only animals which have blood, therefore, have a brain (ibid. 652, b, 23); human beings have a proportionately larger one than beasts, men than women (653, a, 27), because their blood, being warmer, requires more to cool it. Bloodless animals, however, have something analogous to the brain: see p. 26, n. 8, supra.

Ibid. 652, b. 22.

³ Ibid. c. 6 fin.: [δ μυελδς] της αίματ κης τροφης της είς όστα καὶ ἄκανθαν μεριζομένης ἐστὶ τὸ έμπεριλαμβανόμενον περίττωμα πεφθέν.

Such as the seed, which is afterwards discussed, and the milk (Gen. An. iv. 8).

⁵ See i. 517, n. 6, ii. p. 3, n. 2,

and p. 28, n. 1, supra.

⁶ Part. ii. 2, 647, b, 20 sqq. ⁷ See i. 465, n. 2, supra.

⁸ Part. ii. 2, 647, b, 29 (after explaining the three kinds of δμοιομερή): αὐτῶν δὲ τούτων αί διάφοραλ πρὸς ἄλληλα τοῦ βελτίονος ένεκέν είσιν, οίον των τε άλλων καί αίματος πρός αίμα· το μεν γαρ λεπτότερον το δε παχύτερον καὶ το μέν καθαρώτερόν ἐστι τὸ δὲ θολερώτερον, ἔτι δὲ τὸ μὲν ψυχρότερον το δε θερμότερον έν τε τοις μορίοις τοῦ ένδς ζώου (τὸ γὰρ ἐν τοῖς άνω μέρεσι πρὸς τὰ κάτω μόρια διαφέρει ταύταις ταῖς διαφοραῖς) καὶ έτέρω πρὸς έτερον. Similar differences in flesh are referred to. in the Pneuma, which is the cause of vital heat, and which in turn has its chief seat in the heart.¹

If we proceed to consider the organs formed of homogeneous materials, we must notice in the first place that animals possess a point of functional unity, and consequently an organ in which their vitality is centred: 2 in creatures that have blood this organ is the heart, in others something similar; 3 it is only some of the very lowest classes that so closely resemble plants as to possess at least potentially several points of vitality and to continue living after they have been cut in pieces. 4 This central organ is formed at the very beginning of life in every animal, and cannot be destroyed without its dissolution. 5 Its function 6

Part. iii. 3, 665, a, 1, c. 7, 670, b, 2. De An. ii. 9, 421, a, 25: οί μὲν γὰρ σκληρόσαρκοι ἀφυεῖς τὴν διάνοιαν, οί δὲ μαλακόσαρκοι εὐφυεῖς.

¹ Cf. p. 6, n. 2, supra.
² See p. 33, n. 4, supra.

3 See p. 26, n. 7, supra, and Gen. An. ii. 4, 738, b, 16: ἀρχὴ γὰρ τῆς φύσεως ἡ καρδία καὶ τὸ ἀνάλογον, τὸ δὲ κάτω προσθήκη καὶ τούπου χάριν. De Vita et M. c. 2-4; Part. iii. 4, 665, b, 9 sqq. c. 5, 667, b, 21. For a more detailed account of the parts which, according to Aristotle, represent the heart, and are always situated in the centre of the body, see Part. iv. 5, 681, b, 12-682, b, 8; on their situation see further, Juv. et Sen. 2, 468. a. 20.

⁴ Aristotle remarks this, De An. ii. 2, 413, b, 16 sqq.; Juv. et Sen. 2, 468, a, 26 sqq.; Ingr. An. 7, 707, a, 27 sqq.; Part. An. iii. 5, 667, b, 23, iv. 5, 682, b, 1 sqq. (see p. 33, n. 5, supra), of many insects (which have not yet been

all identified; cf. MEYER, Arist. Thierk. 224).

5 Part. iii. 4, 666, a, 10, 20, 667, a, 32; De Vita, 3, 468, b, 28; Gen. An. ii. 4, 739, b, 33, 740, a, 24, where the view of Democritus is controverted which represented the outer portions as being formed first, 'as though we were dealing with figures of wood or stone and not with living beings, whose evolution proceeds from within outwards.'

⁶ MEYER, Arist. Thierk. 425 sqq. The blood is boiled out of the food by means of the heat of the heart (De Respir. 20, 480, 2 sqq.); the circulation of the blood, as well as the distinction between veins and arteries (Part. iii. 4, 666, a, 6. De Respir. 20, 480, a, 10, and the whole description of the system of the veins, Part. iii. 5; Hist. An. iii. 3), was unknown to Aristotle, who, however, was acquainted with the beating of the heart and

consists partly in preparing the blood, and partly in producing sensation and motion. Next in importance

the pulse (cf. i. 262, n. 1, sup.) and mentions the different quality of the blood (see infra, and cf. p. 40, n. 8, supra). He also accurately describes many of the veins (Part. iii, 5, Hist. An. iii, 3, 513, a, 12 sqq. cf. Philippson, "Τλη ανθρ. p. 28). The veins have their source, not, as Hippocrates and his school held, in the head, but in the heart (Part. ii. 9, 654, b, 11, iii. 4, 665, b, 15, 27, c. 5 init .: Hist. An. iii. 3, 513, a, 21: Gen. An. ii. 4, 740, a, 21; De Somno, 3, 456, b, 1). separation between the purer and the thicker blood is effected, at least in the case of all the larger animals, in the heart, the former passing upwards, the latter downwards (De Somno, c. 3, 458, a, 13 sqq.; Part. iii. 4, 665, b, 27 sqq.; Hist. An. iii. 19, 521, a, 9). The native heat of the heart enables the blood, and this again enables the body, to retain its heat (Part. iii. 5, 667, b, 26); the heart, Part. iii, 7, 670, a, 24, is therefore compared to the Acropolis, as the place in which Nature maintains her sacred fire. The boiling of the blood produces (v. MEYER) steam in the heart, causing the latter to heave and thus expanding the chest; into the space, thus left vacant, air rushes and so cools the whole that it again contracts until the steam which is generated in the heart again produces the pulsation which is transmitted through all the veins and is accompanied by respiration (Part. ii. 1, 647, a, 24, iii. 2, 665, b; Hist. An. i. 16, 495, b, 10; De Respir. 20, 179,

b. 30, 480, a, 2, 14, c. 21, 480, a. 24, b, 17). As the cause of respiration, the heart is also the cause of motion; De Sonno, 2, 456, a, 5, 15, cf. Ingr. An. c. 6. 707, a, 6 sqq. The sinews, moreover, have their source in the heart, which is itself very sinewy, although they are not wholly dependent upon it (Hist. An. iii. 5; Part. iii. 4, 666, b, 13). Aristotle, however, does not explain how the limbs are set in motion by the heart (see MEYER, p. 440). The heart is the primary seat of sensation and of the sensitive life: Part. An. ii. 1, 647, a, 24 sqq. c. 10, 656, a, 27 sqq. b, 24, iii. 4, 666, a, 11, c. 5, 667, b, 21 sqq., iv. 5 (see p. 41, n. 3, supra); De Somno, 2, 456, a, 3; Juv. et Sen. 3, 469, a, 10 sqq. b, 3. Cf. Ch. X., part 3, infra. blood vessels are the channels by means of which sensations reach the heart (Part. iii. 4, 666, a, 16), although the blood itself is without sensation (ibid. and Part. ii. 3, 650, b, 3, c. 7, 652, b, 5). The sense of touch transmits itself by means of the flesh (see p. 39, n. 4, supra), the others through passages (πόροι) which extend from the organs of sense to the heart (Gen. An. v. 2, 781, a, 20), and by which we must suppose him to mean the veins, as MEYER, p. 427 sq., and Philippson, passage referred to above (in treating of the $\pi \delta \rho o \iota$ which lead to the brain: Hist. An. i. 16, 495, a, 11, iv. 8, 533, a, 12; Part. An. ii. 10, 656, b, 16) show; cf. Juv. et Sen. 3, 469, a, 12; Part. ii. 10, 656, a, 29; Gen. An. ii. 6, 744, a. 1;

to the heart is the brain, the purpose of which, as we already know,2 is to cool the blood and temper the warmth arising from the heart. Aristotle directly contradicts the notion that it is the seat of sensation.3 The lungs are also used for cooling the blood, the windpipe 4 supplying them with air.5 With a view to this purpose, their nature is varied according to the greater or less amount of internal heat an animal possesses. The lungs of mammals are the fullest of blood; those of birds and amphibious beasts, of air.6 Fishes, which are

Hist. An. iii. 3, 514, a, 19, i. 11, 492, a, 21. In the case of the senses of smell and hearing. between the objects perceived and the veins that lead to the heart, there is further interposed the πνεθμα σύμφυτον; Gen. An. ii. 6, 744, a, 1; Part. ii. 16, 659, b, 15. The nerves are unknown to Aristotle; cf. Philippson, ibid. and MEYER, p. 432: if he was led to the theory of the abovementioned $\pi \delta \rho o \iota -- b v$ SCHNEIDER (Arist. Hist. An. iii. 47) and FRANTZIUS (Arist. üb. die Theile d. Thiere, p. 280, 54) understand him to mean nerves by the actual observation of certain of the nerves, this of itself would be a proof that he did not know them as nerves. See also Ch. X. part 3.

¹ Part. iii. 11, 673, b, 10.

² See p. 40, n. 1, supra. The spinal marrow is united to the brain for the purpose of being cooled by it.

³ Part. ii. 10, 656, a, 15 sqq. (where Aristotle has chiefly in view PLATO'S Timæus, 75, B sq.); cf. MEYER, p. 431.

4 See Part. iii. 3. Hist. An. iv. 9, where the windpipe is fully treated with especial reference to its function as the vocal organ.

5 For the discussion of this point in detail, v. Part. iii. 6, and the treatise π. 'Aναπνοήs, especially c. 7, 474, a, 7 sqq. c. 9 sq. c. 13, c. 15 sq. The veins branch out from the heart to the lungs and serve to carry the air from the latter to the former; Hist. An. i. 17, 496, a, 27; MEYER, p. 431 (see supra and Ph. d. Gr. i. 730, 4). Plato had already assumed that the heart was cooled by the lungs.

⁶ Respir. 1, 470, b, 12, c. 10, 475, b, 19 sqq. c. 12 init.; Part. iii. 6, 669, a, 6, 24 sqq. It is interesting to observe how Aristotle's imperfect acquaintance with the facts lead him to false conclusions. His observations had led him to see that there is a connection between respiration and animal heat; but as he had no conception either of the oxidation of the blood or of the nature of combustion generally, or of the circulation of the blood, he held that its heat was merely cooled and not nourished by respiration. In Respir. c. 6, 473, as he expressly controverts the view

less in need of cooling organs, are provided with gills in order to expel the water absorbed with their food after it has performed its cooling function. Bloodless animals are without lungs, which, on account of their colder nature, they do not need. The nutritive matter from which the blood is formed in the heart, is prepared by the digestive organs, which are separated from the nobler viscera in the case of all full-blooded animals by the midriff, in order that the seat of the sensitive soul may not be disturbed in its operations by the warm steam rising from the food. The food is

that the air which is inhaled serves for food to the internal fire.

1 Respir. 10, 476, a, 1 sqq. 22, b, 5, c. 16; H. An. ii. 13, 504, b, 28, and other passages; see p. 26, n. 9, supra. The earlier view that fish also breathe air, Aristotle expressly controverts, Respir. c. 2, 3. A solution of the question was only possible (as MEYER remarks, p. 439) after the discovery of the conversion of gases.

² Part. iii. 6, 669, a, 1; Respir. c. 9 (see p. 7 sq. swpra), c. 12, 476, b, 30. Aristotle knows, indeed, of the respiratory organs of some bloodless animals, but he assigned to them another function.

³ In Gen. et Corr. ii. 8, 335, a, 9 sqq., De Sensu, 5, 445, a, 17, Aristotle remarks generally of plants as well as animals that this material is a mixture of all the elements; see i. 482, n. 3, sup. That which properly furnishes nutrition is the sweet part, for this, being lighter, is boiled

away by the heat, while that part which is bitter and heavy is left behind; all else serves merely to season its sweetness (De Sensu, 4, 442, a, 2 sqq., cf. Gen. An. iii. 1, 750, b, 25; Meteor. ii. 2, 355, b, 5; Part. iv. 1, 676, a, 35). Fat is sweet (De Sensu, 4, 442, a, 17, 23; Long. V. 5, 467, a, 4); sweet blood is the more wholesome (Part. iv. 2, 677, a. 27), and fat is well-boiled, nutritious blood (Part. ii. 5, 651, a, 21).

⁴ The teeth perform merely a preliminary function (*Part.* ii. 3, 650, a, 8). On the mouth, as the organ for taking up the food into the system, which, however, serves several other purposes as well, see *Part.* ii. 10 init. (cf. p. 19, n. 1, supra), c. 16, 659, b, 27 sqq., iii. 1; *De Sensu*, 5, 445, a, 23.

⁵ Part. iii. 10. 672, b, 8-24:

⁵ Part. iii. 10, 672, b, 8-24; cf. Ph. d. Gr. i. p. 729. That the vegetable soul (the $\phi to us$) is situated below the midriff, is said also Gen. An. ii. 7, 747, a, 20. Cf. p. 41, n. 3, supra.

subjected to a preliminary process of preparation in the stomach, and reduced to a fluid state, which admits of its entering the body.2 It passes by evaporation into the veins that surround the stomach, and thence into the heart, where it is converted into pure blood.3 Leaving the heart, it is carried to the different parts of the body, according to their several necessities 4 The passage of the blood from the stomach into the veins is effected by the mesentery, the tendrils of which are as it were the roots or suckers by means of which animals absorb their food from the stomach, as plants do from the earth.5 The fatty covering of the epiploon causes an increase of digestive warmth in the abdomen.6 while the same function is performed for the blood by the liver and spleen,7 which also serve as a kind of anchor by which the network of veins is secured.8 On the

pass spontaneously into those parts for which it is destined.

⁵ Part. iv. 4, 678, b, 6 sqq. ii. 3, 650, a, 14 sqq. According to these passages the stomach serves the same purpose for animals, as the earth does for plants; it is the place where their food is kept and prepared for use.

⁶ Part. iv. 3, 677, b, 14, where an attempt is made to explain the formation of the epiploon physically (ἐξ ἀνάγκης).

Part. iii. 7, 670, a, 20 sqq.

8 Part. iii. 7, 670, a, 8 sqq.

(cf. c. 9, 671, b, 9) where the same remark is made of the kidneys and the intestines generally (similarly Democritus compared the navel of the child in the mother to an anchor, see Part. i. 807, 6). It has already been shown (p. 20, n. 1, supra) that the spleen

¹ The nature of which in the different animals is described *Part*: iii. 14, 674, a, 21-675, a, 30; *H. An.* ii. 17, 507, a, 24-509, b, 23, iv. 1, 524, b, 3, c. 3, 527, b. 22, &c.

² Cf. Part. ii. 2, 647, b, 26.

³ Part. ii. 3, 650, a, 3-32, De Somno, 3, 456, b, 2 sqq.

⁴ It is pointed out, Gen. An. iv. 1, 766, a, 10, ii. 6 (see p. 19, n. 2, supra), Meteor. ii. 2, 355, b, 9, that each part is formed and nourished out of suitable materials, the nobler parts of better materials, the lower out of inferior; but we are not told how this is effected. From passages such as Gen. An. iv. 1, 766, b, 8, ii. 3, 737, a, 18, i. 19, 726, b, 9, cf. ii. 4, 740, b, 12 sqq., we gather merely that Aristotle supposes the blood as the exact τoph had.

other hand, the gall is only useless matter which has been rejected by the blood. The full-blooded animals, which on account of their warm nature need more fluid nourishment, are provided in their bladder and kidneys with special organs for rejecting the surplus matter which thus gains admittance into the body.2 sponding to the mouth, which receives food, and the gullet, which conducts it to the stomach,3 all animals possess a conduit in their bowels for expelling the useless refuse of their nourishment.4 But in the case of some animals a portion of the digestive function is performed by the bowels.⁵ The narrowness and windings of these passages serve to moderate the appetite, and therefore the most voracious animals are those which have wide and straight canals like fishes; 6 but the real need of nourishment depends upon the amount of

is not equally a necessity to all animals. Bloodless animals want this intestine as well as fat; Part. iv. 5, 678, a, 25 sqq. ii. 5, 651, a, 25. For further description of the form of these organs in different animals, see Part. iii. 12, 673, b, 20, 28, c. 4, 666. a, 28, c. 7, 670, b, 10. De An. ii. 15, 506. a. 13.

¹ See p. 20, n. 3, supra. Since only sweet substances are nutritious, the bitterness of gall shows that it is a περίττωμα, Part.iv. 2, 677, a, 24. It is accordingly not found in all animals; ibid. 676, b, 25, iii. 12, 673, b, 24; H. An. ii. 15, 506, a, 20, 31.

² Part. iii. 8, 9; H, An. ii. 16. Aristotle knew of exceptions to the above rule and found means of explaining them. His treat-

ment of the fat of the kidneys, 672, a, 1 sqq., from the point of view both of physical necessity and of natural design is especially full and interesting.

³ On the alimentary canal, which, however, is not found in all animals, see *Part*, iii. 14.

⁴ Part. iii. 14, 674, a, 9 sqq. 675, a, 30, 656, b, 5.
⁵ I bid. 675, b, 28.

6 Ιδιά. 675, b, 22: δσα μὲν οὖν εἶναι δεῖ τῶν ζώων σωφρονέστερα πρὸς τὴν τῆς τροφῆς ποίησιν εὐρυχωρίας μὲν οὐκ ἔχει μεγάλας κατὰ τὴν κάτω κοιλίαν, ελικας δ' ἔχει πλείους καὶ οὐκ εὐθυέντερά ἐστιν. ἡ μὲν γὰρ εὐρυχωρία ποιεῖ πλήθους ἐπιθυμίαν, ἡ δ' εὐθύτης ταχυτῆτα ἐπιθυμίας &c. Ιδιά. 675, a, 18; Gen. An. i. 4, 717, a, 23 sqq.; Plato, Tim. 72, E sq.

warmth or cold in the nature of the animal.¹ Support and protection are supplied to the softer parts by the framework of bones, or what corresponds to it in the lower animals.² All the bones of sanguineous animals start from the spine;³ and here it is certain that Aristotle has the credit of being the first to indicate one of their common properties.⁴ The limbs are united to the spine by means of sinews and joints, which connect them all without impeding motion.⁵ With reference to motion and the organs of motion in their mechanical aspect, Aristotle has recorded several just observations.⁶ In other cases he not unfrequently supports remarks of questionable value by artificial and inde-

Part. iv. 5, 682, α, 22: τὸ γὰρ θερμὸν καὶ δεῖται τροφῆς καὶ πέττει τὴν τροφὴν ταχέως, τὸ δὲ ψυχρὸν ἄτροφον.

² Part. ii. 8, 653, b, 33 sqq.; see p. 39, n. 5, supra; ibid. c. 9, 654, b, 27 sqq. On the parts analogous to the bones, see p.

26, n. 4, supra.

^S Part. ii. 9, 654, b, 11: ἀρχὴ δὲ τῶν μὲν φλεβῶν ἡ καρδία, τῶν δ' ὀστῶν ἡ καλουμένη ράχις τοῖς ἔχουσιν ὀστᾶ πᾶσιν, ἀφ' ἦς συνεχὴς ἡ τῶν ἄλλων ὀστῶν ἔστι φύσις.

⁴ Hist. An. iii. 7, 516, b, 22: πάντα δὲ τὰ ζῷα ὅσα ἔναιμά ἐστιν, ἔχει βάχιν ἡ ὀστώδη ἡ ἀκανθώδη.

5 For the full treatment of this subject see Part. ii. 9, 654, b, 16 sqq. On one or two remarkable omissions in Aristotle's Osteology, e.g. of all mention of the pelvis and of the parallel between the legs of animals and human beings, see Meyer, p. 441 sq.

441 sq. $^{\circ}E$. g. in the treatise π . $\pi opelas$ ($\psi \omega \nu$ the statements; that

all that moves requires a fulcrum (c. 3); that two organic parts at least are necessary to produce motion, one to sustain the pressure and one to exercise it (ibid. 705, a, 19); that there is always an even number of feet (c. 8,708, a, 21; Hist. An. i. 5, 489, b, 22); that all forward motion in organic beings is produced by bending and stretching (c. 9, c. 10, 709, b, 26; this chapter further contains discussions on the flight of birds and insects, and the importance of the different organs of flight); that in order that he may stand upright man may not have more than two legs. and that the upper parts of his body must be lighter in proportion to the lower than in the case of the lower animals (c. 11 init.). The same is true of many of the remarks in c. 12-19 on the bending of the joints and the means of locomotion both in men and in different animals.

monstrable assumptions.¹ Nor can we pretend that he made the least advance towards a physiological explanation of the circumstances which affect and accompany locomotion.²

One of the most important distinctions between animals and vegetables is the difference in their manner of reproduction.³ While vegetables have no sex, the separation of the sexes begins with animals, their reunion being only transiently effected for purposes of reproduction. Since animals are not intended for mere

¹ Thus. c. 4 sq. (cf. i. 497, n. 1, sup.), he endeavours, not without much subtilty, to establish the position that motion always proceeds from the right, although he obviously derives it, not from scientific observation, but from dogmatic presupposition (c. 5, 706, b, 11) that the top is superior to the bottom, the front to the back, the right to the left, and that therefore the doxal must have their seat on the upper front and right side. Albeit he remarks himself that we may equally say that these are the superior situations because the apxal have their seat in them. On the latter point cf. ibid. 705, a, 29 sqq.; De Calo, ii. 2, 284, b, 26: ἀρχὰς γὰρ ταύτας λέγω δθεν άρχονται πρώτον αἱ κινήσεις τοις έχουσιν. έστι δε άπο μεν τοῦ ἄνω ἡ αὔξησις, ἀπὸ δὲ τῶν δεξιών ή κατά τόπον, ἀπό δὲ τών **ἔμπροσθεν ἡ κατὰ τὴν αἴσθησιν. He** goes on to add, c. 6 sq., an equally artificial proof of the statement (which is made also c. 1, 704, a, 11, c. 10 init.; Hist. An. i. 5, 490, a, 25 sqq.) that sanguineous animals cannot move on more than four legs

(*Hist. An.* he says plainly four). His account moreover, c. 12 sqq., of the walk of animals, as MEYER shows, 441 sq., is not free from error.

² We are told, indeed, that all motion proceeds from the heart, but it is not explained how this is possible (see p. 41, n. 6, supra). The explanation proposed, π. πνεύματος, c. 8 init., that the vital spirit streams through the sinews and is the moving force, is not Aristotelian.

3 The work in which Aristotle has treated of this question, π . ζώων γενέσεως, has received the warmest recognition even from scientific men of the present day. LEWES, who is not certainly in other respects inclined to place an exaggerated estimate upon Aristotle's scientific investigation, agrees with AUBERT and WIM-MER (p. v. sq. of their edition) in expressing his admiration of this treatise, which handles some of the deepest problems of biology with a masterly grasp, astonishing at so early a time, and is even less antiquated at the present day than Harvey's celebrated work (Arist. § 413).

life, but also for sensation, it follows that the exercise of their reproductive 1 functions must be confined to certain occasions.² Only the ostreaceous tribes and zoophytes 3 are sexless; placed upon the boundary which separates the animal from the vegetable kingdom, they are deprived of the functions which belong to both: they resemble plants in not propagating themselves by copulation, and animals in not being generated from seeds They are, in fact, reproduced by a process of spontaneous generation from slime.4 And the like ambiguity of nature is displayed in their case with regard to locomotion.5

Passing to the comparison of the sexes, we may remark that the male and female are related to each other as form and matter.6 The former is the active, the latter is the passive, part; the one bestows the motive and plastic force, the other supplies the material to be moulded:7

1 The έργον τοῦ ζῶντος, the **ἔργον κοινὸν τῶν ζώντων πάντων.**

² Gen. An. i. 23, from which quotation has already been made, p. 29, supra.

3 Besides a few others, to be mentioned hereafter, which must be regarded as exceptions.

• Gen. An. i. 23, 731, b, 8, c. 1, 715, a, 25, b, 16, ii. 1, 732, a, 13, iii. 11, 761, a, 13-32. Only such relatively simple organisms can be produced in this way, and accordingly if it be true, as some hold, that men and quadrupeds are sprung from the earth, they must have been evolved from worms or eggs which preceded them (Gen. An. iii. 11, 762, b, 28 sqq.). Aristotle, however, does not himself share this view, although it is to be found in

Theophrastus.

⁵ Separation of the sexes is expressly confined to the Ga πορευτικά, and as animals are described in the passage just referred to as μεταξύ δυτα των ζώων και των φυτών, and accordingly of neuter gender, it is said of them, *Ingr. An.* 19, 714, b, 13: τὰ δ' ὀστρακόδερμα κινείται μέν, κινείται δὲ παρὰ φύσιν • ου γάρ έστι κινητικά, άλλ' ώς μέν μόνιμα καὶ προσπεφυκότα κινητικά, ώς δε πορευτικά μόνιμα. previously said that they move as animals with feet would move if their legs were cut off.

6 See i. 353, supra.

7 Gen. i. 2, $7\hat{1}6$, a, 4: $\tau \hat{\eta} s$ γενέσεως άρχὰς άν τις οὐχ ἡκιστα θείη το θηλυ και το άρρεν, το μέν άρρεν ώς της κινήσεως και της the one gives the soul, the other the body.¹ Aristotle maintains this opinion so firmly that he denies any participation on the part of the male seed in the material composition of the embryo,² declaring that it only communicates the necessary impulse to the substance derived from the female,³ as is the case generally with form in its relation to matter, active to passive, propelling to propelled. In each of these cases the former does not enter into any material union with the latter principle, but only operates upon it.⁴ Just for this reason, according to Aristotle, is the male distinct

γενέσεως ἔχον τὴν ἀρχὴν, το δὲ θῆλυ ὡς ἕλης. c. 20, 729, a. 9: τὸ μὲν ἄρρεν παρέχεται τό τε εἶδος καὶ τὴν ἀρχὴν τῆς κινέσεως, τὸ δὲ θῆλυ τὸ σῶμα καὶ τὴν ὕλην. L. 29: τὸ ἄρρεν ἐστὶν ὡς κινοῦν, τὸ δὲ θῆλυ, ξ θῆλυ, ὡς παθητικόν. Again, c. 21, 729, b, 12, 730, a, 25, ii. 4, 738, b, 20–36, 740, b, 12–25, and passim; cf. also foll. notes.

¹ Gen. An. ii. 3 (see supra, p. 6, n. 2): τὸ τῆς γονῆς σῶμα, ἐν ῷ συναπέρχεται τὸ σπέρμα τὸ τῆς ψυχικῆς ἀρχῆς. Ibid. 737, a. 29 (see p. 52, n. 2, infra) c. 4, 738, b, 25: ἔστι δὲ τὸ μὲν σῶμα ἐκ τοῦ θήλεος, ἡ δὲ ψυχὴ ἐκ τοῦ ἄμρενος.

" Gen. An. 1. 21, 22: the young is formed in the mother, in whom lies the material on which the plastic force of the father is exercised but into which the male seed does not enter as any part of the embryo, ὅσπερ οὐδ' ἀπὸ τοῦ τέκτονος πρὸς τὴν τῶν ξύλων ὕλην οὕτ' ἀπέρχεται οὐδὲν, οὕτε μόριον οὐθέν ἐστιν ἐν τῷ γιγνομένω τῆς τεκτονικῆς, ἀλλ' ἡ μορφὴ και τὸ εἶδος ἀπ' ἔκείνου ἐγγίνεται διὰ τῆς κινήσεως ἐν τῆ ὅλη, καὶ ἡ μὲν ψυχὴ, ἐν ῷ τὸ εἶδος, καὶ ἡ μὲν ψυχὴ, ἐν ῷ τὸ εἶδος, καὶ ἡ

ἐπιστήμη κινοῦσι τὰς χεῖρας . . . αί δὲ χεῖρες καὶ τὰ ὄργανα τὴν ὕλην.

³ He compares the seed in this respect, Gen. An. i. 20, 729, a, 11, ii. 4, 739, b, 20, with the runnet which causes milk to curdle. Ibid. iv. 4, 772, a, 22, however, deprecates too exact an application of this comparison.

⁴ Gen. An. i. 21, 729, b, 1: does the male seed contribute to the formation of the young is ένυπάρχον καὶ μόριον δν εὐθὺς τοῦ γινομένου σώματος, μιγνύμενον τῆ ύλη τῆ παρά τοῦ θήλεος, ἡ τὸ μέν σῶμα οὐθὲν κοινωνεῖ τοῦ σπέρματος, ή δ' ἐν αὐτῷ δύναμις καὶ κίνησις ; Aristotle decides for the second of these views; for, on the one hand, οὐ φαίνεται γιγνόμενον εν ἐκ τοῦ παθητικοῦ καὶ τοῦ ποιοῦντος ώς ἐνυπάρχοντος ἐν τῷ γινομένῳ τοῦ ποιοῦντος, οὐδ' ὅλως δὴ ἐκ τοῦ κινουμένου καί κινοῦντος, and, on the other, it is supported by several other facts which show that generation is possible without material contact between the male seed and the female matter, as in the case of the subsequent fructification of wind-eggs.

from the female, wherever it is possible; for if the form is superior to the matter, the more distinct they are. the better the result must be. 1 Accordingly, he is careful to distinguish between the procreative substance of the male, which is the seed, and that of the female, which he identifies with the catamenial discharge. He holds that they are both, generically, of the same sort and the same origin, being a secretion of nutritive matter, a product of the blood.2 This fluid, however, is secreted in larger quantities and of a cruder sort with the weaker sex, forming the menses of women or what corresponds to them among other animals; in men. however, it becomes seed.3 Thus the same substance

1 Gen. An. ii. 1, 732, a, 3: βελτίονος δὲ καὶ θειστέρας τὴν φύσιν ούσης της αίτίας της κινούσης πρώτης, η δ λόγος ύπάρχει καὶ τὸ είδος, της ύλης, βέλτιον και τὸ κεχωρίσθαι το κρείττον του χείρονος. διά τοῦτ' ἐν ὅσοις ἐνδέχεται καὶ καθ' δσον ένδέχεται κεχώρισται τοῦ θήλεος τὸ ἄρρεν.

² The detailed investigation of the subject is to be found in Gen. An. i. 17-20. Aristotle begins (721, b, 11 sqq. cf. c. 20, 729,a, 6, 730, a, 11) by denying the opinion that the semen is a secretion drawn from all parts of the body (on which of ZELL. Ph.d. Gr. i. 805, 2, 720, 6, AUBERT-WIMMER, p. 7 of their ed.). He then (724, a, 14 sqq.) shows that σπέρμα must be one of two things, either an excrement from the organic parts of used-up matter (a σύντηγμα) or a surplus of nutritive matter (a περίττωμα), and in the latter case either a useless or a useful surplus. It cannot be a σύντηγυα, nor can it be a useless

περίττωμα; it must therefore be a part of the useful περίττωμα of the body. But the most useful nutritive substance is the τροφή έσχάτη or the blood; the σπέρμα is therefore της αίματικής περίττωμα τροφής, τής είς τὰ μέρη διαδιδομένης τελευταίας (c. 19, 726, b. 9). This is the reason why children resemble their parents: δμοιον γὰρ τὸ προσελθὸν πρὸς τὰ μέρη τῷ ὑπολειφθέντι " ὥστε τὸ σπέρμα έστι το της χειρός ή το τοῦ προσώπου ἡ ὅλου τόῦ ζορου άδιορίστως χείρ ή πρόσωπον ή δλον ζάον και οίον ἐκείνων ἕκαστον ένεργεία, τοιούτον το σπέρμα δυνάμει (ibid. c. 13). On the properties and material composition of the semen, see Gen. An. ii. 2.

³ Ibid. 726, b, 30 sqq. c. 20, 729, a, 20. Aristotle, c. 19, 727, a, 15 sqq. explains the weaker veins. the paler colour, the smaller quantity of hair, and the smaller bodies of women on the ground of defective supply of blood.

receives so different an application in the two cases, that where it takes the one form it cannot exhibit the other.1 We see at once how well this theory of the two procreative substances fits into our philosopher's views about the generative process and the relation of the If the menses consist of the same material Seves. as the seed, except that it has not received in them the same development, we may compare them to imperfect seed.² So they contain potentially what the seed possesses actually; they are the matter, while the seed communicates the impulse to development and form. Being a remnant of the essential nutriment, the menses and the seed continue even after their union in the embryo the motion which they previously maintained in the bodies of the procreative pair, and by the exercise of their native impulse to growth and nutrition produce something that resembles its parents.3 If the being to be brought forth were merely vegetable, the

male. Cf. c. 5, 741, a, 15. 3 Ibid. 737, a, 18: τοῦ δὲ σπέρματος όντος περιττώματος καλ κινουμένου κίνησιν την αὐτην καθ' ήνπερ το σώμα αὐξάνεται μεριζομένης της έσχάτης τροφής, όταν έλθη είς την ύστέραν συνίστησι καλ κινεί τδ περίττωμα το τοῦ θήλεος την αὐτην κίνησιν ήνπερ αὐτό τυγχάνει κινούμενον κάκείνο, καλ γάρ έκείνο περίττωμα καὶ πάντα τὰ μόρια ἔχει δυνάμει, ένεργεία δ' οὐθέν. καὶ γὰρ τὰ τοιαῦτ' ἔχει μόρια δυνάμει, ή διαφέρει τὸ θηλυ τοῦ ἄρρενος. Εσπερ γάρ και έκ πεπηρωμένων ότε μεν γίνεται πεπηρωμένα ότὲ δ' οῦ, οῦτω καὶ ἐκ θήλεος ότὲ μὲν θῆλυ ότὲ δ' οῦ, ἀλλ' ἄρρεν. τὸ γὰρ θῆλυ &c. (see preced. n.). Cf. i. 19, 726. b, 13 (see n. 2 on preceding page).

¹ C. 19, 727, a, 25: επεὶ δὲ τοῦτ' ἐστὶν δ γίγνεται τοῖς θήλεσιν ὡς ἡ γονὴ τοῖς ἄρρεσιν, δύο δ' οὐκ ἐνδέχεται σπερματικὰς ἄμα γίνεσθαι ἀποκρίσεις, φανερὸν ὅτι τὸ θῆλυ οὐ συμβάλλεται σπέρμα εἰς τὴν γένεσιν. εἰ μὲν γὰρ σπέρμα ἦν, τὰ καταμήνια οὐκ ἃν ἢν \cdot νῦν δὲ διὰ τὸ ταῦτα γίγνεσθαι ἐκεῖνο οὐκ ἔστιν. It is shown also, \cdot .20, cf. ii. 4, 739, a, 20, that there is nothing else that can be taken for female semen.

 $^{^2}$ Gen. An. ii. 3, 737, a, 27: τὸ γὰρ θῆλυ ὥσπερ ἄρρεν ἐστὶ πεπηρωμένον, καὶ τὰ καταμήνια σπέρμα, οὐ καθαρὸν δέ. ἐν γὰρ οἰκ ἔχει μόνον, τὴν τῆς ψυχῆς ἀρχὴν, as may be seen in the case of wind-eggs, which are produced without the co-operation of the

PHYSICS

female, he holds, would suffice for its development, since the nutritive forces of the soul are already active in her portion of the procreative substance. For the birth of an animal, on the other hand, male seed is indispensable, since it alone contains the germ of sensitive life. The matter of the male having thus begun to operate actively upon the passive substance of the female, an effect is produced corresponding to the nature of both. Their proper nature grows and develops from the two elements, not because the materials are spatially attracted to their like, but because each element when once set in motion moves in the direction for which it has a natural predisposition 2—because, in fact, the seed

¹ Gen. An. ii. 5, 741, a, 9: if the material for the birth is contained in the female περίττωμα and the female portion of the same had the same soul as the male. why is it unproductive by itself? αίτιον δ' ὅτι διαφέρει τὸ ζῷον τοῦ φυτοῦ αἰσθήσει . . . εἰ οὖν τὸ άρρεν έστι το της τοιαύτης ποιητικόν ψυχής, όπου κεχώρισται τὸ θήλυ καί τὸ ἄρρεν, ἀδύνατον τὸ θῆλυ ἐξ αύτοῦ γεννᾶν ζῷον. It is seen, however, in the case of windeggs that the female is to a certain extent capable of unaided production. These have a certain δύναμις ψυχική, although only of the lowest kind, viz. θρεπτική, but as animals possess a sensitive soul as well, no animal can come from them. If there were animals of which no males are to be found, as perhaps is the case with the red sea mullet (although this is still far from certain, in such cases the female would be self-begotten. On the other hand, where there is a

separation of the sexes this is impossible; otherwise the male would serve no purpose; whereas in reality it is from the male that the sensitive soul comes at

the beginning.

² Ibid. ii. 4, 740, b, 12: ἡ δὲ διάκρισις γίγνεται τῶν μορίων [in the process of evolution oux us τινες ύπολαμβάνουσι διὰ τὸ πεφυκέναι φέρεσθαι το δμοιον πρός το δμοιον· [a view which he pro-ceeds to refute] . . . άλλ' ὅτι τὸ περίττωμα τὸ τοῦ θήλεος δυνάμει τοιοῦτόν ἐστιν οἷον φύσει τὸ ζῷον, καλ ένεστι δυνάμει τὰ μόρια ένεργεία δ' οὐθὲν, διὰ ταύτην τὴν αἰτίαν γίνεται έκαστον αὐτῶν, καὶ ὅτι τὸ ποιητικόν και το παθητικόν δταν θίγωσιν, δν τρόπον έστι το μέν ποιητικόν το δέ παθητικόν, . . . εὐθὺς τὸ μὲν ποιεῖ τὸ δὲ πάσχει. ύλην μέν οδν παρέχει το θηλυ, την δ' ἀρχην της κινήσεως το άρρεν. The operative force is here the nutritive soul, whose instruments are cold and heat. c. 5, 741, b, 7: the male portion is the

contains the germ and potentiality of the soul.¹ The operative forces which nature uses in this process are heat and cold;² but the character of the generative matter and of the germinal life which it contains, determines and regulates these forces.³ Every germ brings forth a being similar to that from which it sprang, because the blood, the direct source of nutriment to the body, tends to form a body of a certain definite sort, and this tendency continues to operate in the seed. Hence it happens that the character of individuals as well as of races comes to be propagated in the act of

primary source of the evolution. as it is this which contributes the sensitive soul. ενυπαρχόντων δ' ἐν τῆ ὕλη δυνάμει τῶν μορίων, Υταν άρχη γένηται κινήσεως, ώσπερ έν τοῖς αὐτομάτοις θαύμασι συνείρεται τὸ ἐφεξῆς καὶ ὁ βούλονται λέγειν τινές τῶν φυσικών, τὸ φέρεσθαι els τὸ ὅμοιον, λεκτέον οὐχ ὡς τόπον μεταβάλλοντα τὰ μόρια κινεῖσθαι, άλλά μένοντα καὶ άλλοιούμενα μαλακότητι καὶ σκληρότητι καὶ χρώμασι καὶ ταῖς ἄλλαις ταῖς τῶν δμοιομερών διαφοραίς, γινόμενα ένεργεία α υπηρχεν όντα δυνάμει πρότερον, a view which had already been proved in detail in c. 1 (from 733, b, 30, onwards).

¹ See on this, Gen. ii. 1, 733, b, 32, 735, a, 4 sqq. c. 3, 736, b, 8 sqq. and p. 6, n. 2, supra.

² In generation proper these spring from the φύσις τοῦ γεννῶν-τος; in spontaneous generation, from the κίνησις και θερμότης τῆς ἄρας; ibid. ii. 6, 743, a, 32.

* Ibid. c. 1, 734, b, 31: σκληρὰ μὲν οῦν καὶ μαλακὰ &c. ἡ θερμότης καὶ ψυχρότης ποιήσειεν ἄν [τὰ μόρια], τὸν δὲ λόγιν, ῷ ἤδη τὸ μὲν

σάρξ τὸ δ' ὀστοῦν, οὐκέτι, ἀλλ' ἡ κίνησις ή άπο τοῦ γεννήσαντος τοῦ έντελεχεία δυτος δ έστι δυνάμει ή [read τδ] έξ οῦ γίνεται, as is further expounded. c. 4, 740, b, 25 (see last note of preceding page). c. 6, 743, a, 3: h δè γένεσίς έστιν έκ των όμοιομερων ύπο ψύξεως καλ θερμότητος. After explaining different materials are formed in both ways, he continues, 1. 21: αύτη δὲ [heat] ούτε ὅ τι έτυχε ποιεί σάρκα ἡ ὖστοῦν, οὔθ' δπη έτυχεν, άλλά το πεφυκός και ή πέφυκε και ότε πέφυκεν. ούτε γάρ τὸ δυνάμει ον ύπο τοῦ μη την ἐνέργειαν έχοντος κινητικού έσται, ούτε τὸ τὴν ἐνέργειαν ἔχον ποιήσει ἐκ τοῦ τυχόντος . . . ή δὲ θερμότης ένυπάρχει έν τῷ σπερματικῶ περιττώματι τοσαύτην καὶ τοιαύτην έχουσα την κίνησιν καὶ την ἐνέργειαν, όση σύμμετρος είς έκαστον τῶν μορίων . . . ἡ δὲ ψύξις στέρησις θερμότητός έστιν. χρήται δ' ἀμφοτέροις ή φύσις έχουσι μὲν δύκαμιν ἐξ ἀνάγκης ὥστε τὸ μὲν τοδί τὸ δὲ τοδί ποιείν, ἐν μέντοι τοις γινομένοις ένεκά τινος συμβαίνει τό μέν ψύχειν αὐτῶν τὸ δὲ θερμαίgeneration.¹ If the male seed, which communicates the impulse of development, has sufficient vigour to mature the substance offered to it, the child follows its father's sex: if it lacks the necessary warmth, a being of colder nature, a woman, is born. For the ultimate distinction between the two sexes is one of greater or less vital heat: the warmer nature can mature the blood to perfect seed, the colder must content itself with supplying the raw material of procreation in the catamenial discharge.² Woman is an unfinished man, left standing on a lower step in the scale of development.³ The gen-

νειν &c.; for all this takes place (1.16) $\tau \hat{\eta}$ μèν έξ ἀνάγκης $\tau \hat{\eta}$ δ' οὐκ έξ ἀνάγκης ὰλλ' ἕνεκά τινος.

1 See p. 51, n. 2, sup. and p. 58, n. 3, inf. Gem. An. iv. 1, 766, b, 7: το μὲν σπέρμα ὑπόκειται περίττωμα τροφής δυ τὸ ἔσχατου. ἔσχατου δὲ λέγω τὸ πρὸς ἔκαστου [i.e. each part of the body; see p. 45, n. 4, supra] φερόμενου. διὸ καὶ ἔοικε τὸ γεννώμενου τῷ γεννήσαντι.

² After refuting various views as to the origin of the difference of the sexes, Aristotle proceeds, Gen. An. iv. 1, 765, b, 8: ἐπεὶ τὸ άρρεν και το θηλυ διώρισται δυνάμει τινί και άδυναμία (τὸ μὲν γὰρ δυνάμενον πέττειν και συνιστάναι τε καὶ ἐκκρίνειν σπέρμα ἔχον τὴν άρχην τοῦ είδους άρρεν . . . το δέ δεχόμενον μέν άδυνατοῦν δὲ συνιστάναι καὶ ἐκκρίνειν θῆλυ [similarly i. 20, 728, a, 18]) ἔτι εἰ πᾶσα πέψις ἐργάζεται θερμῷ, ἀνάγκη καὶ τῶν ζώων τὰ ἄρρενα τῶν θηλέων θερμότερα εἶναι. [The proof being that the former excrete the prepared seed, the latter in menstruation the raw blood.] . . . άμα δ' ή φύσις την τε δύναμιν αποδίδωσιν έκάστω καὶ τὸ ἄργανον Βέλτιον

γάρ ούτως , . . τρίτον δέ πρός τούτοις ληπτέον ὅτι εἴπερ ἡ φθορά εἰς τούναντίον, και το μη κρατούμενον ύπο του δημιουργούντος άνάγκη μεταβάλλειν είς τουναντίον. Hence the true explanation: ὅταν γὰρ μη κρατή ή άρχη μηδε δύνηται πέψαι δι' ἔνδειαν θερμότητος μηδ' ανάνη είς το ίδιον είδος το αύτοῦ. άλλα ταύτη ήττηθη, ανάγκη είς τουναντίον μεταβάλλειν. . . έπελ δ' έχει διαφοράν έν τη δυνάμει, έχει καί το υργανον διαφέρον : ώστ' eis τοιοῦτον μεταβάλλει. The same account is repeated clearly and precisely, 766, b, 8. Cf. c. 3, 767, b, 10. A number of facts are adduced, c. 2, in support of this theory.

3 See p. 52, n. 2, supra; Gen. An. ii. 3, 737, a, 27: το γάρ θηλυ ωσκερ άρρεν έστι πεπηρωμένον. iv. 6, 775, a, 14: ασθενέστερα γάρ εστι και ψυχρότερα τὰ θήλεα την φύσιν και δεί ὑπολαμβάνειν ωσκερ αναπηρίαν είναι την θηλύτητα φυσικήν. i. 20, 728, a, 17: εοικε δε και την μορφήν γυνή και παῖς, και έστιν ή γυνή ωσκερ άρρεν ωσκερ άγονον. v. 3, 784, a, 4. Cf. egg egg

erative organs themselves are adapted to their functions; we must not regard them as the causes but as the signs of sexual difference.1 We should rather look for the ground of sex distinction in the vital principle itself and in the central organ and seat of life: for though it is not complete until the sexual parts appear, yet its germs are laid in the formation of the heart at the very commencement of fœtal existence.2 On this account sex plays a most various and important part in animal life, influencing to a greater or less extent the temper as well as the physical structure of animals,3 while castration is followed by vast changes in the nature of men and brutes.4

Longit. V. 6, 467, a, 32, νανωδέστερον γὰρ τοῦ θήλεος τὸ ἄρρεν, the upper portions of his body being relatively greater, does not quite harmonise with this, for it is just the excessive size of those portions that constitutes the dwarfishness of children (Part. An. iv. 10, 686, b, 10; De Mem. 2, 453, a, 31, b, 6), with whom women are compared.

1 See last note but one. ² Ibid. 766. a. 30: εἰ οὖν τὸ μέν ἄρρεν ἀρχή τις καὶ αϊτιον, ἔστι δ' άρρεν ή δύναταί τι, θηλυ δέ ή άδυνατεί, της δε δυνάμεως δρος καί της άδυναμίας το πεπτικόν είναι ή μη πεπτικόν της ύστάτης τροφής, δ . ἐν μὲν τοῖς ἐναίμοις αἷμα καλεῖται έν δὲ τοῖς ἄλλοις τὸ ἀνάλογον, τούτου δέ τὸ αἴτιον ἐν τῆ ἀρχῆ καὶ τῷ μορίω τῶ ἔχοντι τὴν τῆς φυσικῆς θερμότητος άρχην, άναγκαΐον άρα έν τοῖς έναίμοις συνίστασθαι καρδίαν, καλ ή άρρεν έσεσθαι ή θήλυ τό γινόμενον. ἐν δὲ τοῖς ἄλλοις γένεσιν ύπάρχει τὸ θῆλυ καὶ τὸ ἄρρεν τὸ τῆ καρδία ἀνάλογον, ἡ μὲν οὖν

άρχη του θήλεος και άρρενος και ή αίτία αύτη καὶ ἐν τούτω ἐστίν. θηλυ δ' ήδη και άρρεν έστιν, όταν έχη καὶ τὰ μόρια οίς διαφέρει τὸ θηλυ τοῦ ἄρρενος.

3 The chief passages on this head are H. An. iv. 11, where the peculiarities in the physical structure of each of the sexes in the various animal tribes, and ibid. ix. 1, where differences of character are discussed.

⁴ A description of which is given, H. An. ix. 503. Gen. An. iv. 1, 766, a. 28, gives the reason: ότι ένια τῶν μορίων ἀρχαί εἰσιν. άρχης δὲ κινηθείσης πολλά ἀνάγκη μεθίστασθαι των ακολουθούντων. According to the passage just referred to, such an effect could not be expected to follow the excision of the testicles, but only of the heart: especially as Aristotle, Gen. An. v. 7, 787, b, 26, without knowing their special functions, treats the former as a mere appendage to the seminal ducts. For the account of the

Other phenomena besides the distinction of sex proceed from weakness in the procreative power. movement communicated by the male seed tends to form a being similar to the parent from whose body was derived the motive force. If, however, the seed is not vigorous enough to overcome the generative substance of the female, a woman is born; or if it cannot succeed in imitating the paternal type, then the child resembles its mother and not its father; again, should the seed fail in both of these attempts, which usually happens, a female child is born with a resemblance to its mother.1 If the movement is itself deficient in force,2 the child lacks the personal characteristics which the movement ought to reproduce, and only receives, in descending degrees, the generic properties which the parent had possessed over and above those of his own individuality. Instead of the parental type, that of the family is transmitted, so that the child resembles his grandparents, or still more distant ancestors. So it may happen that nothing but the type of the race is communicated, so that the child, for instance, has a human form without any family characteristics. Lastly, it is possible that the offspring should turn out merely a living creature without even the human attributes, as in the case of children born with bestial forms.3 the proper relation between the male and female

matter which he gives in accordance with the latter hypothesis, see *ibid.* 788, a, 3 sqq.

768, a, 2 sqq. 21 sqq.
² Aristotle expressly distin-

guishes, ibid. 768, a, 14, 31, ἐὰν . λυθῶσιν αἰ κινήσεις, from the other case, ἐὰν μἡ κρατήση ἡ κίνησις [τοῦ ἀνδρός].

see *ibid*. 788, a, 3 sqq.

1 Gen. An. iv. 3, 767, b, 15 sqq.,
768, a, 2 sag, 21 sag

³ *Ibid.* iv. 3; cf. esp. 767, b, 24, 768, b, 15, 769, b, 2 sqq.

is altogether wanting, then no conception at all follows.

Among the phenomena of life which are common to all animals we may next mention Sensation, the most important point of difference between animals and vegetables.² Sensation is a change produced in the percipient by the object perceived,³ a movement communicated to the soul through the medium of the body.⁴

¹ *Ibid.* c. 2, 767, a, 13 sqq. A number of other passages relating to the distinction of the sexes and to procreation, we must be content briefly to indicate. The sexual parts of different animals are discussed Gen. An. i. 2-16, ii. 6; Hist. An. iii. 1, cf. AUBERT-WIMMER, pp. 3 sq. of their edition of De Gen. An.; puberty, menstruation, and lactation, Gen. iv. 8, ii. 4, 738, a, 9 sqq.; the causes of fruitfulness and unfruitfulness, Gen. ii. 7, 746, a, 29-c. 8 fin.; πολυτοκία, ολιγοτοκία and μονοτοκία, certain kinds of abortion, the perfect and imperfect formation of children, superfectation and the like, Gen. iv. 4-7; the formation of the bodies of animals and the order of the development of their parts, Hist. viii. 7 sq.; Gen. ii. 1, 734, a, 16-33, 735, a, 12 sq. c. 4, 739, b, 20-740, b, 25, c. 5, 741, b, 15 sqq. c. 6 (743, b, 20 compares nature to an artist, who first sketches the outline of his picture and then lays on the colours); the nourishment of the embryo through the navel, Gen. ii. 7, Hist. viii. 8; the production and development of birds, Gen. iii. 1 sq. 6; of fishes, iii. 3-5, 7; of mollusca and testacea, ibid.

iii. 8; of insects, especially bees (with regard to which Aristotle holds that the queens and female workers are born of queens, drones of working bees, and that there is no marriage among them), ibid. iii. 9, 10, Hist. v. 19 (cf Lewes, Arist. § 188 sqq.); spontaneous generation, ibid. iii. 11, i. 23 fin., Hist. v. 15 sq. c. 19, 551, a sq. c. 11, 543, b, 17, vi. 15, 569, a, 10 sqq.; the nature of the birth and the time of pregnancy, ibid. iv. 9.—The differences which separate the various grades of animal creation in respect of their origin and method of propagation will call for further discussion below, and the origin and gradual evolution of the soul will be the subject of the next chapter.

² See pp. 27 and 37, supra; and with the following account cf. Bäumker, Des Arist. Lehre von den Sinnesvermögen (Leipsic, 1877).

3 De An. ii. 5 init.

κίνησίς τις διὰ τοῦ σώματος τῆς ψυχῆς. De Somno, 1, 454, a,
9. How far we may speak of a 'movement of the soul' at all is the subject of subsequent discussion.

The nature of this process may be explained and estimated by the abstract laws of action and passivity.¹ It is the object of perception which sets the change in motion, the percipient which undergoes the change. The former is active, the latter passive. Hence the latter is related to the former in the same way as the actual to the possible or as form to matter. The perception for which a subject is fitted by its nature is developed into actuality by the object perceived; the form of the object is impressed upon the percipient.² This relation, however, is further conditioned by the nature of the percipient Like thought, perception can only legitimately be called a passive affection, if the phrase is taken to include the progress from mere capacity to actuality.³

¹ See the passages quoted vol. i. 454 sqq.,to which express allusion is made *De An*. ii. 5, 417, a, 1.

² De An. ii. 5, 417, a, 9 to the end of the chapter, where the preceding discussion is summed up in the words: τὸ δ' αἰσθητικὸν δυνάμει έστιν οΐον το αίσθητον ήδη ἐντελεχεία, καθάπερ εἴρηται· πάσχει μὲν οδν οὐχ ὅμοιον δν, πεπονθός δ' ώμοίωται καὶ ἔστιν οἶον ἐκεῖνο, iii. 2, 425, b, 25: ἡ δὲ τοῦ αἰσθητοῦ ἐνέργεια καὶ τῆς αἰσθήσεως ἡ αὐτὴ μέν ἐστι καὶ μία, τὸ δ' εἶναι οὐ ταὐτὸν αὐταῖν : λέγω δ' οΐου ψόφος δ κατ' ἐνέργειαν καὶ άκοη ή κατ' ἐνέργειαν . . . ὅταν δ' ἐνεργῆ τὸ δυνάμενον ἀκούειν καὶ ψοφή το δυνάμενον ψοφείν, τότε ή κατ ἐνέργειαν ἀκοὴ ἄμα γίνεται καὶ δ κατ' ενέργειαν ψόφος. And as operations and motions take effect upon passive subjects, this particular operation takes place upon the percipient. Cf. infra, p. 60, n. 3, p. 61, n. 4; and see Part. An. ii. 1, 647, a, 5 sqq.

³ De An. ii. 5, 417, b, 2: οὐκ ἔστι δ' ἀπλοῦν οὐδὲ τὸ πάσχειν. άλλὰ τὸ μὲν φθορά τις ὑπὸ τοῦ ἐναντίου, τὸ δὲ σωτηρία μᾶλλον τοῦ δυνάμει όντος ύπο τοῦ έντελεγεία δυτος καὶ δμοίου ούτως ώς δύναμις πρός έντελέχειαν. Thus in the case of learning, we must either refrain altogether from saying that the learner is the subject of an operation or we must distinguish between two kinds of πάσχειν-τήν τε έπὶ τὰς στερητικὰς διαθέσεις μεταβολήν και την έπι τας έξεις και την φύσιν (cf. i, p. 197). Similarly with perception: so soon as the percipient comes into the world, έχει ήδη ώσπερ ἐπιστήμην καὶ τὸ αἰσθάνεσθαι. καὶ τὸ κατ' ἐνέρ. γειαν δε δμοίως λέγεται τω θεωρείν (as the latter is the actual application of a faculty which is already possessed, so perception is the activity of a faculty which already exists in the percipient); διαφέρει δὲ Sc. τὸ αἰσθάνεσθαι τοῦ θεωρείν], ότι του μέν τὰ ποιητικά

Perception, therefore, may be equally described as an act, or more accurately as the joint act of percipient and perceived, which act, however, has its seat in the former. Further, the perceived object can be said to stand to the percipient in the relation of actuality to possibility only in so far as the one is capable of being perceived and the other of perceiving. It is not the matter of an object which acts upon the sense in question, but only those properties of an object which the particular sense is designed to perceive. Hence it follows that it is the sensible form of objects without the matter that is received in the act of sensation. The material object itself is not communicated to the percipient, but only its operation. This apprehension of the

τῆς ἐνεργείας ἔξωθεν, τὸ δρατὸν καὶ τὸ ἀκουστόν &c. iii. 7, 431, a, 4: φαίνεται δὲ τὸ μὲν αἰσθητὸν ἐκ δυνάμει ὄντος τοῦ αἰσθητικοῦ ἐνεργεία ποιοῦν [The perceived object makes that which is capable of perception and which is only a δυνάμει δν into an ἐνεργεία ὄν.] οὐ γὰρ πάσχει οὐδ' ἀλλοιοῦται. διὰ ἄλλο εἶδος τοῦτο κινήσεως [something different from κίνησις]. ἡ γὰρ κίνησις τοῦ ἀτελοῦς ἐνέργεια ἔτέρα ἡ τοῦ τετελεσμένου (such also, however, is the αἰστητικὸν according to ii. 5, 417, b, 29 sqq.).

1 De An. iii. 2, 426, a, 15: ἐπεὶ δὲ μία μέν ἐστιν ἡ ἐνέργεια ἡ τοῦ αἰσθητικοῦ, τὸ δ' εἶναι ἕτερον &c. Cf. foll. n. There is here no question of any reciprocal operation of the sensible object and the sensitive organ (Prantl, Arist. v. d. Farben, 144, whom Kampe criti-

cises, Erk.-Theorie d. Arist. 80, 4), for the object is not subject to any operation, but there is a joint operation, the result of which is perception. That this act gives a true account of the objects perceived, has already been said, in vol. i. pp. 208 sqq.

11 101.1. pp. 200 3qq.

2 De An. ii. 2, 456, a, 5: εἰ δἡ ἐστιν ἡ κίνησις καὶ ἡ ποίησις καὶ τὸ πάθος ἐν τῷ ποιουμένφ, ἀνάγκη καὶ τὸν ψόφον καὶ τὴν ἀκοὴν τὴν κατὰ ἀδυαμιν εἶναι . . ἡ μὲν οδν τοῦ ψοφητικοῦ ἐνέργεια ἐστι ψόφος ἡ ψόφησις, ἡ δὲ τοῦ ἀκουστικοῦ ἀκοὴ ἡ ἄκουσις. Similarly with all the other senses: ἡ τοῦ αἰσθητοῦ ἐνέργεια καὶ ἡ τοῦ αἰσθητικοῦ ἐν τῷ αἰσθητικοῦ ἐν τῷ αἰσθητικοῦ ἐν τῷ αἰσθητικοῦ ἐν τῷ

S De An. ii. 12 init.: ἡ μèν αἴσθησίς ἐστι τὸ δεκτικὸν τῶν αἰσθητῶν εἰδῶν ἄνευ τῆς ὕλης, οἰον ὁ κηρὸς τοῦ δακτυλίου ἄνευ τοῦ σιδήρου καὶ τοῦ χρυσοῦ δέχεται τὸ σημεῖον, λαμβάνει δὲτὸ χρυσοῦν ἡ τὸ

form without the matter is only possible where there is in the soul a point of unity, a centre in which the sensible impressions can reflect themselves; and on this account perception first appears in the animal kingdom.\(^1\) Moreover, since the faculty of perception is the force and form of the physical organ, it presupposes a certain harmony in its component parts; and if this harmony is disturbed by too vehement an impression on the sense, then the faculty of perception is lost.\(^2\) The seat of this faculty is invariably a homogeneous body\(^3\) which must contain potentially both of the opposite qualities that may be communicated to it by the objects of sense; but just for this reason it must itself stand midway between them.\(^4\) The operation of the object upon

χαλκοῦν σημεῖον, ἀλλ' οὐχ ή χρυσός ή χαλκός, δμοίως δὲ καὶ ή αἴσθησις έκαστου ύπο τοῦ ἔχοντος χρῶμα ἡ χυμόν ή ψόφον πάσχει, άλλ' οὐχ ή έκαστον ἐκείνων λέγεται, ἀλλ' ή τοιονδί και κατά τον λόγον. (There is no trace, however, in this passage of what VOLKMANN, Grundz. d. Arist. Psychol. [Abhandl. d. böhm. Gesellsch. x. 126 sq. Psychol. i. 218] finds in it, viz. that 'sense is not affected by sounds &c. in so far as each of these is what it is, but in so far as the sense is what it is.') Cf. foll, n, and De An. iii. 2, 425, b, 23: τὸ γὰρ αλσθητήριον δεκτικόν τοῦ αλσθητοῦ άνευ της ύλης εκαστον. Whence it follows that all perception is of a universal, a τοιόνδε; see i. 207, n. 1, supra.

1 De An. ii. 12, 424, a 32: plants have no αἴσθησις, although they are not without souls; αἴτιον γὰρ τὸ μὴ ἔχειν μεσότητα, μηδὲ τοιαύτην ἀρχὴν οἴαν τὰ είδη μηδὲ τοιαύτην ἀρχὴν οἴαν τὰ είδη

δέχεσθαι τῶν αἰσθητῶν, ἀλλὰ πάτχειν μετὰ τῆς ὅλης. iii. 12, 434, α, 29: those ζῶντα are without αἴσθησις, ὅσα μὴ δεκτικὰ τῶν εἰδῶν ἄνευ τῆς ὅλης. Cf. also supra, pp. 33 sqq. and notes, as well as the remarks infra, upon the sensus communis.

2 De An. ii. 12, 424, a, 26: the αἰσθανόμενον is a body (μέγεθος); αἴσθησις, on the other hand, is not μέγεθος, ἀλλὰ λόγος τις καὶ δύναμις ἐκείνου [τοῦ αἰσθανομένου] φανερον δ' ἐκ τούτων καὶ διὰ τί ποτε τῶν αἰσθητῶν αὶ ὑπερβολαὶ φθείρουσι τὰ αἰσθητήρια · ἐὰν γὰρ ἢ ἰσχυροτέρα τοῦ αἰσθητηρίου ἡ κίνησις, λύεται ὁ λόγος, τοῦτο δ' ἡν ἡ αἴσθησις, ὥσπερ καὶ ἡ συμφων.α καὶ ὁ τόνος κρουομένων σφόδρα τῶν χορδῶν. Cf. iii. 13, 435, b, 15.

³ Part. An. ii. 1, 647, a, 2 sqq., where αἰσθητήρια in this sense are distinguished from the ὀργανικὰ μέρη (face, hands, &c.).

4 Aristotle remarks this spe-

the senses depends upon a medium which transmits it from the one to the other. Flesh is the medium of the sense of touch, air and water of the other senses; 1 and to this medium the materials of which the organs of sense consist correspond. The connection, however, of the five senses with the four elements 2 is only tentatively adopted by Aristotle.3 The higher tribes of animals cially of touch, De An. ii. 11, tempted to establish this con-

cially of touch, De An. ii. 11, 423, b, 29 sqq. This sense, he says, perceives the opposite qualities of bodies; τὸ δὲ αἰσθητήριου αὐτῶν τὸ ἀπτικόν . . . τὸ δυνάμει τοιοῦτόν ἐστι μόριον. Since perception is a πάσχειν by which the δυνάμει ον is made by the operative principle into something like that which itself is ενεργεία (cf. supra, p. 59, n. 2), διδ τοῦ δμοίως [sc. ώς τὸ αἰσθητήριον] θερμοῦ καὶ ψυχροῦ ή σκληροῦ καὶ μαλακοῦ οὐκ αἰσθανόμεθα, ἀλλὰ τῶν ύπερβολών, ώς της αίσθήσεως οίον μεσότητός τινος ούσης της έν τοίς αλσθητοίς ἐναντιώσεως. καὶ διὰ τοῦτο κρίνει τὰ αἰσθητά. τὸ γὰρ μέσον κριτικόν: just as the eye in order that it may be able to perceive black and white must be neither of these actually but both potentially, so it is with the sense of touch.

1 Ibid. ii. 7, 419, a, 7-35. According to this passage, the medium of the perceptions of sight is light, of hearing air, of smell moisture; περὶ δὲ ἀφῆς καὶ γεὐσεως ἔχει μὲν ὁμοίως οὐ φαίνεται δέ. Their medium (see supra, p. 39, n. 4) is flesh. For further details, see infra, and in i. 518, n. 3, supra

Aristotle remarks himself (Part. An. ii. 1, 647, a, 12; De Sensu, c. 2, 437, a, 19 sqq.) that several of his predecessors at-

tempted to establish this connection, but he does not say to whom he refers. The citations on the views of Empedocles and Democritus (ZELLER, Ph. d. Gr. i. 723, 817, 3) and from Plato (ibid. ii. a, 727, 3) on this head are not sufficient to explain the statement (in the above passage De Sensu) that one of the four elements was assigned to each of the senses, but that this only raised the difficulty of the discrepancy in their respective numbers.

³ See the two passages, De An. iii. 1 and De Sensu, 2, 438, b, 16 sqq. In the former of these Aristotle desires to show that there cannot be more than the five senses (the opposite had been asserted by Democritus: see ZELL. Ph.d. Gr. i. 817, 5), which he proves in this way: the properties of things are perceived either immediately or by means of a medium. The former is the case with the perception of touch (only in the sense, however, that the medium is in the percipient itself: see n. 1, supra, and cf. De An. ii. 11, 423, b, 12). In the latter case the sensitive organ for each class of perceptions must consist of an elementary material of the same kind as that through the medium of which the perceptions reach the possess all the five senses; the lower are without one or other. It is only the sense of touch, and its de-

Properly speaking, however, we have only water and air to deal with, as fire operates as vital heat in all the senses, and earth peculiarly (idias) either in none or in touch (of which taste, according to Aristotle, is a subordinate variety: see p. 22, n. supra). Even flesh, however. the organ of the latter sense. does not consist merely of earth, but of a mixture of earth and water and air. Although it is, therefore, the most material of all the organs of sense, it yet stands in the middle between the different kinds of tangible things, and is sensitive to them all. (De An. ii. 11, 423, a, 11 sqq. iii. 13, 435, a, 11-b, 2; Part. An. ii. 1, 647, a, 19, c. 8, 653, b, 29.) The pupil of the eye is of water; sounds are perceived by air in the passages of the ear; the sense of smell resides in both air and water. The perception of universal properties of things, however, such as form, size, motion, &c., cannot be confined to the organs of any particular sense, being in its nature common to all (cf. infra, pp.66 sqq.).—In the second of the above passages it is said: ωστ' είπερ τούτων τι συμβαίνει, καθάπερ λέγομεν, φανερόν ώς δεί τοῦτον τον τρόπον ἀποδιδόναι καὶ προσάπτειν έκαστον τῶν αἰσθητηρ'ων ένὶ τῶν τοῦ μέν ὅμματος τὸ στοιγείων. δρατικόν ΰδατος ύποληπτέον, ἀέρος δέ το των ψόφων αίσθητικον, πυρος δέ την ύσφρησιν. δ γάρ ένεργεία ή ζσφρησις τοῦτο δυνάμει τὸ ὀσφραντικόν . . . ή δ' όσμη καπνώδης τίς ἐστιν ἀναθυμίασις, ἡ δ' ἀναθυμίασις ή καπνώδης ἐκ πυρός . . . τὸ δ' απτικόν γης. το δέ γευστικόν είδές τι άφης ἐστίν. It is impossible (as ALEX. in loco, p. 80 sq. pointed out) to suppose that Aristotle here intends to assign the organs of the various senses to the four elements respectively. He here repeats what he says in the $De\ An$, of the organ of smell when he remarks that it is merely δυνάμει what δσφρησις is ένεργεία. δυνάμει γὰρ θερμή ή τοῦ ψυχροῦ ὅλη έστιν, and that, like the eye, it is closely connected with the brain, the coldest and dampest part of the body; but smell itself is assigned to fire, because it is produced by the heating of the cold olfactory organ by the doub καπνώδης, which is of a fiery nature. (So also c. 5, 444, a. 8-22, where Aristotle explains on this ground the æsthetic pleasure in smells peculiar to man; see last note on next page.) But according to Bekker's text. the words φανερον ώς δεί &c. would give the meaning just referred to as inadmissible. It is all the more welcome to find that, as BÄUMKER, p. 47 sq. reminds us. four of the seven MSS, in De Sensu, 438, b, 17, give el before δεί, so that we may read: φανερόν ώς εί δεί . . . των στοιχείων, τοῦ μέν δμματος &c. In this view, Aristotle offers the explanation that follows only hypothetically, and from a point of view different from his own. This view of the passage corresponds precisely with that of ALEX. ibid., who seems, therefore, also to have read el before del; cf. p. 78:

pendent sense of taste, which is quite indispensable.1 Of touch Aristotle says that it is as impossible for an animal to be without it as for any other creature but an animal to possess it. It is, in fact, the most universally important sign of life; and therefore any excessive impression made upon this sense would not, as in the case of the others, destroy a single organ alone, but the life itself of the animal.2 These two senses are thus the commonest and lowest; they serve the baser needs of life: 3 while sight and hearing, as the means of rational development, occupy the highest rank. Hearing, however, deserves the preference, since we owe to this sense the possibility of oral instruction.4 Of all living creatures man is furnished with the subtlest taste and subtlest feeling; many animals exhibit the other senses in a greater state of acuteness,5 but in the case of man they play a special part in his spiritual culture.6

εί ούτω, φησίν, ἐπὶ τῆς ὄψεως ἔχει καί διὰ τοῦτο, καθὰ ἐγλίχοντό τινες, έκαστον αίσθητήριον έκάστω τῶν στοιχείων ανατίθεται &c.; p. 80: οὐ γὰρ δὴ ἀρέσκοντα αὐτῷ λέγει &c.; cf. also Part. An. ii. 1, 647, a, 12.

On this point cf. the not wholly consistent statements, Hist. An. iv. 8; De An. ii. 3, 415, a, 3 sqq, iii. 12, 434, b, 11–29, c. 13, 435, b, 17 sqq,; De Sensu, 1, 436, b, 12 sqq.; De Somno, 2, 455, a, 5; Metaph. i. 1, 980, b, 23; MEYER, Arist. Thierk. 432 sq, and p. 22, n. 1, supra.

² De An. iii. 12, 13, 434, b,

22, 435, b, 4-19.

every animal for the preservation of life, the other senses, on the

other hand, are so οὐ τοῦ εἶναι ένεκα, ἀλλὰ τοῦ εδ. De An. iii. 13, 435, b, 19; cf. c. 12, 434, b,

⁴ De Sensu, 1, 436, b. 12 to end of chap.; Metaph. ibid.

⁵ De An. ii. 9, 421, a, 9-26; De Sensu, 4, 440, b, 30 sqq.; Part. An. ii. 16 sq., 660, a, 11, 20; Gen. An. ii. 2, 781, b, 17.

6 De An. ibid.: man's higher intelligence is explained on the ground of his finer feeling; but it is certain that Aristotle regarded the human eye and ear as also of higher signifi-cance for the development of the spiritual life than those ³ Feeling is indispensable to of the lower animals; Eth. iii. 13, 1118, a, 16 sqq., he remarks of smell, hearing, and sight, Coming to the particular senses, Aristotle observes that the seat of sight is in the pupil of the eye. Formed of water, this organ is affected by colours which are communicated to it through a transparent medium.' Sounds acting on our ears through the medium of air are transmitted to the sense by the air in the auditory passages.² Smells are conveyed to the olfactory organ by air and water: they are inhaled with the air by respiring animals; to non-respiring animals water is the medium of smell.³ The primary qualities of matter which belong to all bodies and their particular modifica-

De Sensu, 5, 443, b, 15-444, a, 9, ibid. 1. 28 sqq., of smell, that man alone takes delight in these sensations for their own sake and not merely for the sake of food (albeit smell is his lowest sense: De Sensu, 1, 440, b, 31; De An. ii. 9, 421, a, 9); of the senses generally Aristotle says, Gen. An. ibid.: την μέν οὖν πόρρωθεν ἀκρίβειαν τῶν αἰσθήσεων ἤκιστα ὡς είπεῖν ἄνθρωπος ἔχει ὡς κατὰ μέγεθος των ζώων, την δέ περί τας διαφοράς μάλιστα πάντων εὐαίσθητον, his organs of sense being the purest, and the least earthy and material, and his skin being the finest. MEYER, ibid. 435 sq., brings together his statements with regard to the sensitive organs of the various animals.

¹ See p. 64, supra; De Sensu, 2, 438, a, 12 sqq. b, 5; Hist. An. i. 8, 491, b, 20; Part. An. ii. 8, 653, b, 25, c. 10, 686, a, 37 sq.; G.n. An. ii. 6, 744, a, 5, and elsewhere; cf. BÄUMKER, 48 sq., and i 518, n. 3, supra. That the eyes also operate upon the objects (and that not merely by

reflecting the light) is proved, De Insomn. 2, 459, b, 23 sqq., by a fictitious experience.

² Part. An. ii. 10, 656, b, 13 sqq.; De An. ii. 8, 420, a, 2 sqq.; cf. p. 478; BÄUMKER, 52. It is not quite clear how Aristotle conceives of the connection of this air with the central organ of sense; he merely remarks, Part. An. ibid., that the ears are united with the occiput (which, according to his opinion, i. 262, n. 1, supra, is empty) by means of passages.

3 De An. ii. 9, 421, b, 8 sqq. iii. 1 (see p. 6, suyra); De Sensu, 5, 442, b, 27 sq. 444, a, 8 sqq.; cf. p. 537, 3, 539, 6, 478, med.; BAUMKER, 53 sq. It has been already remarked, p. 62, n. 3, supra, that the sense of smell also is connected with the brain, but there is nothing said about any connection between it and the heart. Aristotle shows, De Sensu, 5, 455, a, 4 sqq., that smell occupies a middle position between the aiσθήσεις άπτικαl and δι άλλου αίσθητικαί.

tions are the proper objects of the sense of touch.¹ The organ of touch is the heart: the medium through which impressions are transmitted to the heart is the flesh; ² and the same may be said of taste, which is nothing but a species of touch,³ the only difference being that the tongue is its sole conductor.⁴ How the sensations communicated by particular senses can have their seat in the head,⁵ while the seat of the sensitive life itself is in the heart,⁶ and all sensation belongs to one and the same part of the soul,⁷ Aristotle fails to ex-

¹ De An. ii. 11, 423, b, 26: άπταλ μέν οδν είσιν αί διαφοραλ τοῦ σώματος ή σῶμα λέγω δὲ τὰς διαφοράς αι τα στοιχεία διορίζουσι, θερμόν ψυχρόν, Επρόν δγρόν. sides these fundamental qualities the sense of touch perceives also hardness and softness and others, and Aristotle asks accordingly, 422, b, 19, whether it is only one sense or several. He rejects the latter supposition, however, 1. 27 sqq., with the remark that the other senses also perceive more than one evartiotis: by hearing, for example, besides height and depth we perceive loudness of sound, softness and roughness in the voice, &c. Therefore BREN-TANO'S assertion (Psychol. d. Ar. 85) that it is erroneous according to Aristotle to regard feeling as only a single sensitive faculty, is not accurate.

² Šee p. 39, n. 4, p. 62 n. 3, sup; De An. ii. 11, 422, b, 20, 35 sqq. 423, b, 1 sqq. 22; Part. An. ii. 10, 656, b, 35; De Vita, 3, 469, a, 5-20; BÄUMKER, 54 sqq.

³ See p. 22, n. 1, supra, and on the sources of taste, i. 518 sq.

• De An. ii. 11, 423, a, 17 sqq. c. 10, 422, a, 34.

⁵ BÄUMKER, 78 sqq., shows as against SCHELL (*Die Einheit des Seelenl. nach Ar.* 163 sqq.) from *De An.* ii. 1, 412, b, 18, 413, a, 2, ii. 11, 423, b, 17 sqq. iii. 2, 426, b, 8; *Purt. An.* ii. 1, 647, a, 2 sqq. c. 8, 653, b, 24 sqq., and other passages, that Aristotle assumes this to be the case in respect to the above three senses. Cf. *De Sensu*, c. 2 (p. 62, n. 3, swpra).

* Vide p. 41 sq. The view that the brain is the seat of sensation (AlcMæon, see Zeil. Ph.d. Gr. i. 456, 1; Plato, Tim. 67, B, 76, D), is expressly refuted by Aristotle: Part. An. ii, 10, 656, a, 15 sqq. b, 11, c. 7, 652, b, 2; De Juvent. 3, 469, a, 20. He holds himself that the brain is devoid of feeling, resting his view upon supposed experiences, upon which see Meyer, Arist. Thierk. 431.

⁷ De An. iii. 1, 425, a, 31, and more fully De Sensu, 7, 449, a, 5 sqq., where inter alia: ἀνάγκη ἄρα ἔν τι εἶναι τῆς ψυχῆς, ῷ ἄπαντα αἰσθάνεται, . . ἀλλο δὲ γένος δι' ἄλλου. Just as one and the same thing has different properties, so θετέον καὶ ἐπὶ τῆς ψυχῆς τὸ αὐτὸ καὶ ἔν εἶναι ἀριθμῷ τὸ αἰσθητικὸν καὶ ἔν εἶναι ἀριθμῷ τὸ αἰσθητικὸν

plain. If his view is that the pictorial image is generated in the organs of sense, while its reference to the object takes place in the heart,2 the question still remains, how can sensation originate in organs in which the sensitive soul does not reside?

πάντων, τὸ μέντοι είναι έτερον καί έτερον των μέν γένει των δε είδει. ώστε και αἰσθάνοιτ' αν αμα τῶ αὐτῶ καλ ένλ, λόγφ δ' οὐ τῷ αὐτῷ. De Somno, 2, 455, a, 20: ἔστι μέν γὰρ μία αξσθησις καὶ τὸ κύριον αἰσθητήριον εν το δ' είναι αισθήσει τοῦ γένους έκάστου έτερον (its character is different in each kind of sensation).

Neither from Part. An. iii. 4,666, a, 16, ii. 10, 656, b, 3; cf. Hist. An. i. 4, 489, a, 23; De Somno, 2, 455, b, 6, nor from the passage in c. 3 of the π. ἐνυπνίων, which seems to give the greatest support to this view, are we justified in saying with certainty that Aristotle regards the blood as the conductor by which the sensitive movements are led to the heart. He certainly assumes that a portion of the blood flows at intervals back to the heart, carrying its own natural motions with it (ibid. 461, b, 11). From this, however, he merely concludes (as will be shown, p. 71, n. 3, infra) that the movements caused by previous perceptions and latent in the organs of sense, being no longer overpowered by movements in the blood, are liberated and carried in like manner to the heart: it appears, therefore, that he regards them as different from those in the blood.

² This is the view put forward in the passage just referred to in the treatise upon Dreams, where

461, a, 30 goes on to say: $\tau \hat{\varphi}$ μέν γάρ έκειθεν [sc. ἀπὸ τῶν αἰσθητηρίων] ἀφικνεῖσθαι την κίνησιν πρός την άρχην και έγρηγορώς δοκεί δράν και ακούειν και αισθάνεσθαι. καί διά το την όψιν ἐνίοτε κινεῖσθαι δοκείν οὐ κινουμένην δράν φαμέν, καί τώ την άφην δύο κινήσεις είσανγέλλειν τὸ εν δύο δοκείν. words refer, as the repetition of δοκείν shows, to the cases of selfdeception discussed c. 2, 460, b. 3 sqq. 11, 20, 22 sqq. c. 3, 461, b, 30. These Aristotle explains on the ground that the judgment upon the object and the pictorial image are due to the exercise of different faculties (ibid. 460, b, 16 : αίτιον δὲ τοῦ συμβαίνειν ταῦτα τὸ μὴ κατὰ τὴν αὐτὴν δύναμιν κρίνειν τό τε κύριον [subj.] και δ τὰ φαντάσματα γίνεται). ὅλως γὰρ [as c. 3, 461, b, proceeds] τὸ ἀφ' έκάστης αἰσθήσεώς φησιν ή ἀρχή, έὰν μὴ ἐτέρα κυριωτέρα ἀντιφῆ. φαίνεται μέν οὖν πάντως, δοκεῖ δ' ου πάντως το φαινόμενον [the sun, for example, appears to us to be a foot broad, nevertheless we refuse to believe it; c. 2, 460, b, 18], ἀλλ' ἐὰν [but only when] το επικρίνον κατέχηται ή μη κινηται την οίκείαν κίνησιν. It is this κύριον καλ ἐπικρῖνον (461, b, 24 sq.) which refers the sense-perception to its object. It, for instance, when sensation presents us with the image of a particular man, identifies it with the man in question. In sleep, on the other hand, when

The separate senses, however, are insufficient of themselves to explain the fact of sense-perception. The universal qualities of things—such as time, motion and rest, unity and multiplicity, size and form—are not, like sound and colour, the peculiar objects of special senses; '1 they are perceived by all the senses, and only indirectly by each. The faculty, therefore, by which they are perceived must be distinct from all the particular senses: it must be a sensus communis or 'common sense.'2 This sense, moreover, enables us to compare and distinguish the perceptions of different senses.'3 When,

consciousness is imprisoned, the image is taken for the object itself. The seat of this faculty cannot be other than a single κύριον αἰσθητήριον (De Somno, 2, 455, a, 21), of which sleep and waking are particular states (see

p. 75, infra).

De An. ii. 7, Aristotle distinguishes between καθ' αδτά [not merely κατά συμβεβηκός αἰσθητά between iou and κοινά, remarking 418, a, 11: λέγω δ' ίδιον μεν δ μή ενδέχεται έτέρα αἰσθήσει αἰσθάνεσθαι . . . κοινά δὲ κίνησις, ἡρεμία, ἀριθμδς, σχημα, μέγεθος. Similarly, iii. 1, 425, a, 13: ἀλλὰ μὴν οὐδὲ τῶν κοινών οξόν τ' είναι αίσθητήριόν τι ίδιον, ὧν καὶ ἐκάστη αἰσθήσει αἰσθανόμεθα κατά συμβεβηκός [TOR-STRIK'S proposal to read οὐ κ. σ. is rightly rejected by BRENTANO, Psychol. d. Ar. 98], οΐον κινήσεως, στάσεως, σχήματος, μεγέθους, άριθμοῦ, ἐνός. De Mem. 450, a, 9. On time see p. 73, n. 4, infra.

We are informed of motion &c through the separate senses κατὰ συμβεβηκὸς (De An. iii. 1; v. preceding note). These qualities are accompaniments of particular

sense-perceptions, and the multiplicity of the senses even assists us in distinguishing them from the latter (ὅπως ἦττον λανθάνη τὰ άκολουθούντα καὶ κοινά, ibid. 425. b, 5). Were we therefore confined for our perception of them to the particular senses, we should know them only as accessory (e.g. if we saw a white object, which moved, we should perceive only its colour and not its motion). των δε κοινών ήδη έχομεν αζσθησιν κοινην οὐ κατὰ συμβέβηκός οὐκ ἄρ' ἔστιν ἰδία (ibid. 425, a, $24 \, {\rm sqq.}$). DeMem. ibid. says that size and motion are known to us by the same faculty as time, kal 70 φάντασμα [sc. αὐτῆs] τῆs κοινῆs αἰσθήσεως πάθος ἐστίν. Cf. i. 435, n. 2, supra.

3 De An. iii. 2, 426, b, 8: each sense perceives τὰς τοῦ ὑποκειμένου αἰσθητοῦ διαφορὰς, e.g. sight, those of colour. ἐπεὶ δὲ καὶ τὸ λευκὸν καὶ τὸ γλυκὸ καὶ ἔκαστον τῶν αἰσθητῶν πρὸς ἔκαστον κρίνομεν, τίνι αἰσθανόμεθα ὅτι διαφέρει; ἀνάγκη δὴ αἰσθήσει αἰσθητὰ γάρ ἐστιν . . οὕτε δὴ κεχωρισμένοις ἐνδέχεται κρίνειν ὅτι ἔτερον τὸ

69

further, we declare the phenomena presented to us by the senses at one time to be objectively real, at another to be unreal, it cannot be our senses themselves that pronounce this judgment, for their presentations are in both cases alike; nor if we are deceived in our judgment, are the senses to blame for the mistake, seeing that they always report correctly. The common principle of all sense-perception is alone responsible for the reference of the perception to the object, and therefore for the mistakes that are made. The same principle, finally, is the basis of self-consciousness which accompanies all sense-perception: since perception is different from the thing perceived, the senses which supply us with the picture of the object cannot also inform us of its objective reality. The organ of the common sense is the

γλυκύ τοῦ λευκοῦ, ἀλλὰ δεῖ ἐνί τινι ἄμφω δηλα είναι. It must therefore be one and the same faculty by which we distinguish different kinds of sensations from one another: and to this, in order that these may be compared with one another, these must be simultaneously present, meeting in it as two lines meet in a common point. (The details of this theory, which suggests many difficulties, cannot be here discussed; besides TRENDELENBURG in loco. see the discussion of it in KAMPE. Erkenntnissth. d. Ar. 107; BREN-TANO, Psychol. d. Ar. 90 sqq.; BÄUMKER, 70 sqq.). Similarly c. 7, 431, a, 20: τίνι δ' ἐπικρίνει τί διαφέρει γλυκὺ καὶ θερμόν . . . ἔστι γὰρ ἕν τι· οὕτω δὲ καὶ ἡ στιγμή και όλως ό δρος [the boundary | &c. Just as one sense knows the distinction between white and black, so one and the same

faculty can know the distinction between whiteness and sweetness. De Somno, 2, 455, a, 17: καὶ κρίνει δὴ καὶ δύναται κρίνειν ὅτι ἔτερα τὰ γλυκέα τῶν λευκῶν, οὕτε γεύσει οὕτε ὕψει οὕτ' ἀμφοῖν, ἀλλά τωι κοινῷ μορίῳ τῶν αἰσθητηρίων ἀπάντων. ἔστι μὲν γὰρ μία ἀσθησις &c. (see p. 66, n. 7, supra).

¹ Cf. i. 209, n. 3, supra.

² See p. 67, n. 2, supra, where this is shown to have been Aristotle's view.

 heart, in which, as we have already seen, the general principle of the sensitive life resides.2

To this single faculty of perception, or 'common sense,' Aristotle proceeds to attribute a number of important mental phenomena.3 It is the source of imagination and memory,4 which are therefore shared by many brutes as well as by man. Imagination is a movement produced by sensation, an after-effect of the sense-perception 5—in other words a spent sensa-

καὶ ἀκούει αἰσθάνεται [so Bonitz, Arist. Stud. iii. 72, reads according to the text of two MSS.; ΒΕΚΚ. has καὶ αἰσθ.]· οὐ γὰρ δὴ τῆ γε ὄψει δρᾶ ὅτι δρᾶ . . . ἀλλά τινι κοινώ μορίω των αίσθητηρίων απάν-

The heart is the ξν κοινόν αίσθητήριον, είς δ τὰς κατ' ἐνέργειαν αίσθήσεις άναγκαῖον ἀπαντᾶν (De Juvent. 1, 467, b, 28); τό γε κύριον των αισθήσεων έν ταύτη τοις έναίμοις πασιν. Εν τούτφ γάρ αναγκαίον είναι το πάντων τῶν αἰσθητηρίων κοινδν αἰσθητήριον (ibid. c. 3, 469,

a, 10).

² Cf. supra, p. 42 sq. and p. 66, n. 6, and on the question how the sensations of the three senses which have their seat in the head are transmitted to the heart, p. 67, n. 1. But the heart is also the seat of the sense of touch (see p. 67, n. 1, supra); and to this the remark, De Somno, 2, 455, a, 22, seems to refer, where it is said that the ίδιον and the κοινόν of αίσθησις [for this we must suppose to be the meaning of τοῦτο, l. 22, placing with BONITZ the words οὐ γὰρ . . . χρώματος, I. 17-22, in a parenthesis] ἄμα τῷ ἁπτικῷ μάλισθ' ὑπάρχει, this being the only one of the senses whose organ is also the central organ of sensation.

3 For the following account see FREUDENTHAL, Ueber d. Begriff d. Wortes partagla b. Arist. 1863.

4 De An. iii. 3, 428, a, 9, 21, c. 10, 433, a, 11, c. 11 init.; Hist. An. i. 1, 488, b, 25; De Mem. 1, 449, a, 28, 450, a, 15, c. 2, 453, a, 6; Metaph. i. 1, 980, a, 27, b, 25; cf. p. 71, n. 3, p. 73, n. 4, infra. Some animals, therefore, dream as well as man, Divin. p. S. 2, 463, b. 12,

⁵ After showing, De An. iii. 3, that it is neither αἴσθησις, nor νοῦς, nor ἐπιστήμη, nor δόξα, nor a combination of doca and alothous, Aristotle proceeds, 428, b, 10: άλλ' ἐπειδή ἔστι κινηθέντος τουδί κινεῖσθαι ἕτερον ὑπὸ τούτου, ἡ δὲ φαντασία κίνησίς τις δοκεί είναι καλ ούκ άνευ αισθήσεως γίγνεσθαι άλλ' αίσθανομένοις και ὧν αίσθησις ἐστίν, έστι δε γίνεσθαι κίνησιν ύπο της ένεργείας της αἰσθήσεως, καὶ ταύτην δμοίαν ανάγκη είναι τη αἰσθήσει, είη αν αύτη ή κίνησις ούτε άνευ αλσθήσεως ένδεχομένη ούτε μη αίσθανομένοις ύπάρχειν, και πολλά κατ' αὐτὴν και ποιείν και πάσχειν τὸ έχον, και είναι καὶ ἀληθη καὶ ψευδη. L. 30: εἰ οὖν μηθὲν μὲν ἄλλο ἔχει τὰ εἰρημένα tion.¹ The motion caused by the external impression upon the sensitive organ not only produces an immediate effect in the sensation which follows, but continues in the organ,² whence under certain circumstances it passes to the central organ, and in this way reproduces the pictorial image,³ even in the absence of the ob-

† φαντασία [so the majority of the MSS.; TORSTR. with E reads † ή φαντ., but considers the words spurious; BEKK. and TREND. are certainly wrong in reading † μὴ φαντασίαν] τοῦτο δ' ἐστὶ [TORSTR. conj. ἔχει] τὸ λεχθὲν, ἡ φαντασία ὰν εῖη κίνησις ὑπὸ τῆς αἰσθήσεως τῆς κατ' ἐνέργειαν γιγνομένη. De Insomn. 1, 459, μ, 17 (a passage which establishes the true reading in De An. 429, a, 2 as γιγνομένη, not -ης).

¹ Rhet. i. 11, 1370, a, 28: ἡ δè φαντασία ἐστὶν αἴσθησίς τις ἀσθενής.

² De Mem. 1, 350, a, 27: the πάθος, where έξις is μνήμη, consists of a kind of ζωγράφημα, which αἴσθησις produces in the soul (i.e. the ψυχη αἰσθητική) and in the part of the body where it resides; η γαρ γινομένη κίνησις ένσημαίνεται οΐον τύπον τινά τοῦ αἰσθήματος καθάπερ οἱ σφραγιζόμενοι τοις δακτυλίοις. On this account, under deep emotion or in the early years of childhood, memory is weak, the excitement being too strong, καθάπερ ἃν είς ὕδωρ δέον έμπιπτούσης της κινήσεως καί της σφραγίδος; conversely in old age διὰ τὸ ψήχεσθαι [wear] καὶ διὰ σκληρότητα τοῦ δεχομένου τὸ πάθος οὖκ ἐγγινεται ὁ τύπος. The same phenomenon is explained, c. 2, 453, b, 4, as the result, not only in the case of children but of old men, of a κίνησις caused in the former case by the rapid growth, in the latter by the rapid decay, of the body. The latter passage would of itself be sufficient to prove that in Aristotle's view the persistence of the sense-impressions, which are compared to the impress of a stamp, is not that of actual material copies of the objects (even in his account of senseperception itself, p. 58 sq. supra, Aristotle gives no countenance to such a view), nor even that of qualitative changes in the organs themselves, but is due to the continuance in the organs of the motions caused by the original This, however, besensation. comes still more obvious from the quotations that follow in the next note. On the whole subject see FREUDENTHAL, p. 20

sqq.

3 This is the sense of the passage in π. ἐννπν. c. 3, already referred to. After showing in the beginning of c. 2, ὅτι καὶ ἀπελθόντος τοῦ θύραθεν αἰσθητοῦ ἐμμένει τὰ αἰσθήματα αἰσθητὰ ὅντα, that the faculty which gives judgment upon the corresponding objects is different from that which supplies the sense with the images of them (of. p. 67, μ. 2), and that in this way we get the delirious fancies of fever and other illusions of sense into which we are seduced by passion

ject.¹ To this power of reproducing images of sense Aristotle gives the name of Phantasy; and to the images themselves the cognate name of phantasms.² Phantasy,

and emotion, Aristotle proceeds in c. 3: the motions caused partly by impressions made upon us from without, partly by those produced from within the body itself, are repressed during the day by the activity of sense and thought, and rendered imperceptible Γάφανίζονται ώσπερ παρά πολύ πῦρ ἔλαττον—as the light of the stars before the sun]; νύκτωρ δὲ δι' ἀργίαν τῶν κατὰ μόριον αίσθήσεων και άδυναμίαν τοῦ ἐνεργεῖν . . . ἐπὶ τὴν ἀρχὴν τῆς αἰσθήσεως [the heart] καταφέρονται καὶ γίνονται φανεραί καθισταμένης της ταραχη̂s. The same thing takes place in sleep (461, a, 18 sqq.): $\tau \dot{a}$ φαντάσματα καὶ αι ὑπόλοιποι κινήσεις αί συμβαίνουσαι άπὸ τῶν αἰσθημάτων Tthose lingering remnants of the motions produced by impressions upon the senses which are the cause of phantasms; cf. p. 70, n. 5, supra δτέ μέν ύπο μείζονος ούσης της είρημένης κινήσεως άφανίζονται πάμπαν, ότε δε τεταραγμέναι φαίνονται . . . καθισταμένου δὲ καὶ διακρινομένου τοῦ αίματος ἐν τοῖς έναίμοις, σωζομένη τῶν αἰσθημάτων ή κίνησις ἀφ' ἐκάστου τῶν αἰσθητηρίων [the motion caused by the sense-impression which is transmitted from the organs of sense to the heart | ἐρρωμένα τε ποιεί τὰ ένύπνια, καὶ [sc. ποιεί] φαίνεσθαί τι και δοκείν διά μέν τὰ άπο της όψεως καταφερόμενα δράν, διὰ δὲ τὰ ἀπὸ της ακοής ακούειν. δμοιοτρόπως δὲ και από των άλλων αίσθητηρίων. For the ἀρχή accepts as true what the senses report, so long as it remains uncontradicted by a more authoritative report (cf. p.

67, n. 2, supra); δταν γάρ καθεύδη [as is explained, 461, b, 10], κατιόν. τος του πλείστου αίματος έπι την άρχην συγκατέρχονται αί ένουσαι These exist, however, κινήσεις. partly δυνάμει partly ένεργεία, the former appearing (ἐπιπολάζειν) when the others by which they have hitherto been repressed disappear: καὶ λυόμεναι ἐν ὀλίγω τῶ λοιπώ αίματι τώ έν τοις αισθητηρίοις κινοῦνται [in the blood which is left behind in the organs of sense after the main body of it has flowed back to the heart, the sensitive motions contained in it. which have hitherto lain latent. become liberated owing to the exhaustion, by the diminution of the quantity of blood, of those motions which have hitherto restrained them], έχουσαι όμοιότητα ωσπερ τὰ ἐν τοῖς νέφεσιν, & παρεικάζουσιν ανθρώποις και κενταύροις ταχέως μεταβάλλοντα. long as we keep hold even of a remnant of consciousness sleep we do not mistake those images for the things; if on the other hand we have lost all consciousness that we are asleep, we take the one for the other. Dreams (τὰ φαινόμενα εἴδωλα καθεύδοντι, 462, a, 11) are therefore only the remnants of the motions caused by sensation (461, b, 21), as which they are often clearly recognised at the moment of waking.

¹ Hence he says, De An. iii. 8, 432, a, 9: τὰ γὰρ φαντάσματα ὥσπερ αἰσθήματά ἐστι πλὴν ἄνευ ὅλης.

² For proof of this see BONITZ,

moreover, he holds to be the source of the images which accompany thought.¹ To these it is impossible to apply the above sensational explanation: ² they must be considered as in some way independent products of intellectual activity. Aristotle, however, has given us no account of their origin or their relation to the images of sense. While the reports of the single senses in their own departments are unerringly true, the imagination and the general reports of the 'common sense' are exposed to illusion.³ If an imagination relates to earlier perceptions and presents a copy of them, then we call it memory $(\mu\nu\eta\mu\eta)$; ⁴

Ind. Arist. 811, b, 11 sqq. 812, a, 9, 25.

¹ See next chapter.

² Aristotle actually distinguishes between two kinds of φαντασία. De An. iii, 10, 433, b. 28: ὀρεκτικόν δὲ [sc. τὸ ζῷον ἐστὶν] οὐκ ἄνευ φαντασίας. φαντασία δε πᾶσα ἢ λυγιστικὴ ἢ αἰσθητική. ταύτης μέν οὖν καὶ τὰ ἄλλα ζῷα μετέχει. c. 11, 434, a, 5: ή μέν οὖν αἰσθητικὴ φαντασία . . . καὶ έν τοις άλλοις ζώοις ὑπάρχει, ἡ δὲ βουλευτική έν τοις λογιστικοίς. As αἰσθητική φαντ. can only here mean the power of reproducing from the motions that linger in the organs of sense the images represented by them, the part. βουλευτική (or λογιστική: το γάρ Βουλεύεσθαι και λογίζεσθαι ταὐτόν, Eth. vi. 2, 1139, a, 12) must mean the power of projecting images of things in the future, of means and ends whose comparative value it is the function of βούλευσις to estimate with a view to the exercise of choice. Such images, however, are not, like those of memory, given in

the excitations of the organs of sense.

³ See i. 209, n. 3, and ii. 67, n. 2, supra.

* De Mem. i : all memory refers to the past and therefore presupposes the intuition of time, 449, b, 28: δσα χρόνου αλσθάνεται, ταῦτα μόνα τῶν ζώων μνημονεύει, καὶ τούτω φ αἰσθάνεται. (See i. 436, n. 2, ii. 70, n. 4, and 71, n. 3, supra.) The faculty upon which memory depends is phantasy, for it always refers primarily to sensory images, and in a derivative and secondary sense to thoughts in so far as thought itself is impossible without a pictorial image, as is shown (450, a, 15) by the fact that brutes have memory as well as man. Cf. 450, a, 13: &στε τοῦ νοουμένου Γνοοῦντος or νοῦ ?] κατὰ συμβεβηκὸς ἃν είη, καθ' αύτό δὲ τοῦ πρώτου αἰσθητικοῦ. 450, a, 22: τίνος μέν οὖν τῶν τῆς ψυχης έστιν η μνήμη, φανερόν, ότι οδιπερ και ή φαντασία και έστι μνημονευτά καθ' αδτά μέν όσα έστλ φανταστά, κατά συμβεβηκός δὲ ὅσα μη άνευ φαντασίας. The φάντασμα,

and the conscious reproduction of a memory is recollection ($\dot{a}v\dot{a}\mu\nu\eta\sigma\iota s$). Man alone is capable of recollection, since he alone can reflect; ¹ but memory, as we have said, is shared by brutes. Recollection depends upon the natural coherence of the movements which produce the imaginative pictures; by virtue of this coherence one image is called up by another formerly connected with it.² These movements have their seat in the

however, only becomes a recollection (μνημόνευμα) when we recognise in it the copy of an actual perception, when we connect with it the thought that it is the repetition of a previous perception-a point upon which we are not always certain. Accordingly we sometimes fail to recognise actual memories as such, and at other times mistake mere fancies for memories (450, b, 18 sqq.). Τὶ μὲν οδν ἐστὶ μνήμη [the chap, concludes και τὸ μνημονεύειν, εζρηται, δτι φαντάσματος. ως εἰκόνος οὖ φάντασμα, ἔξις (which taken, not, should be FREUDENTHAL, ibid. 36 elsewhere, in its narrow sense discussed i. 285, n. 3, supra, but in the simple sense of having or keeping; cf. c. i. 449, b, 25) και τίνος μορίου των εν ήμεν, δτι τοῦ πρώτου αἰσθητικοῦ καὶ ῷ χρόνου αἰσθανόμεθα.

1 Hist. An. i. 1 fin.; De Mem. ii. 451, b, 2, 453, a, 6 sqq. As the reason of this, it is said in 453, a, 9: ὅτι τὸ ἀναμιμνήσκεσθαί ἐστιν οῖον συλλογισμός τις ΄ὅτι γὰρ πρότερον ἡ εἶδεν ἡ ἡκουσεν ἡ τι τοιοῦτον ἔπαθε, συλλογίζεται ὁ ἀναμιμνησκόμενος, καὶ ἔστιν οῖον ζήτησίς τις. τοῦτο δ' οἶς καὶ τὸ Βουλευτικὸν ὑπάρχει, φύσει μόνοις συμβέθηκεν καὶ γὰρ τὸ βουλεύσθαι

συλλογισμός τίς ἐστιν. Η. Απ. ibid. also connects βουλεύεσθαι with ἀναμιμνήσκεσθαι as peculiar to man.

² Perhaps Aristotle this explanation, ibid. 451, a, 10 sqq., with a tacit reference to the mnemonics mentioned by him in other passages (De An. iii. 3, 427, b, 19; De Insomn. 1. 458, b, 20; Top. viii. 14, 163, b, 28). Recollection, he says, takes place, ἐπειδή πέφυκεν ή κίνησις ήδε γενέσθαι μετά τήνδε; if the connection is a necessary one, the first is invariably recalled by the second; if it is merely habitual, only as a rule. Sometimes, however, a single occurrence creates a fixed habit. 'Aναμιμνήσκεσθαι both in the case of intentional and unintentional recollection consists in recalling former motions in their order until we arrive at the object of search. We start in this process ἀπὸ τοῦ νῦν [i.e. from a present intuition | ή άλλου τινός, καλ ἀφ' δμοίου ή έναντίου ή τοῦ σύνεγγυς. Aristotle has not further develored these hints upon the socalled laws of the association of ideas, nor has he explained whether of the two principles of ἀνάμνησις, ἀνάγκη and ἔθος, the former embraces only those cases heart.¹ Lastly, from sensation and imagination arise the feelings of pleasure and pain,² and the appetites, whereof we shall have to treat in detail when we come to Anthropology.³

Aristotle regarded Sleep and Waking as conditions of the common faculty of perception.⁴ Sleep is the imprisonment of that faculty, waking is its free activity.⁵

in which the physical movement that underlies the pictorial image spontaneously produces other such movements or includes also those in which the content of a given presentation conducts necessarily to the recollection of certain others. On the other hand, Aristotle gives us the general law which determines the succession of those associations which depend upon habit, viz. that each presentation is recalled by that which immediately preceded it on its former occurrence: τῷ γὰρ ἔθει ἀκολουθοῦσιν αι κινήσεις άλλήλαις, ήδε μετά τήνδε (451, b, 28, cf. l. 22).

1 Ibid. 453, a, 14 sqq., where it is stated, δτι σῶματικόν τι τὸ πάθος, καὶ ἡ ἀνάμνησις ζήτησις ἐντοιούτφ φαντάσματος . . . ὁ ἀναμινησικόμενος σωματικόν τι κινεῖ ἐν ῷ τὸ πάθος; what this is is not, indeed, further explained. Since, however, the seat of memory in general is the heart, it must be this which is meant.

2 De An. ii. 2, 413, b, 23: δπου μέν γὰρ αἴσθησις, καὶ λύπη τε καὶ ἡδονὴ, ὅπου δὲ ταῦτα, ἐξ ἀνάγκης καὶ ἐπιθυμ'α. iii. 3, 414, b, 4: ῷ δ᾽ αἴσθησις ὑπάρχει, τοὑτῷ ἡδονἡ τε καὶ λύπη καὶ τὸ ἡδύ τε καὶ λυπηρόν. (Similarly De Sonno, 1, 454, b, 29.) υ. 7, 431, a, 10: ἐστι τὸ ἡδεσθαι καὶ λυπεῖσθαι τὸ ἐγεργεῖν τῆ αἰσθητικῆ μεσότητι

πρὸς τὸ ἀγαθὸν καὶ κακὸν, ἢ τοιαῦτα. Phys. vii. 3, 247, a, 24: ἢ γὰρ κατ' ἐνέργειαν τὸ τῆς ἡδονῆς ἢ διὰ μνήμην ἢ ἀπὸ τῆς ἐλπίδος. εἰ μὲν οῦν κατ' ἐνέργειαν, αἴσθησις τὸ αἴτιον, εἰ δὲ διὰ μνήμην ἢ δι' ἐλπίδα, ἀπὸ ταύτης ἡ γὰρ οῖα ἐπάθομεν μεμνημένοις τὸ τῆς ἡδονῆς ἢ οῖα πεισόμεθα ἐλπίζουσιν. We shall return to pleasure in dealing with the Ethics, but heither here nor there do we find an accurate psychological account of the feeling.

⁸ Cf. meantime *De An.* ii. 2, 413, b, 23, c. 3, 414, b, 1-16, iii. 7, 431, a, 8 sqq. iii. 11; *De Somno*, i. 454, b, 29; *Part. An.* ii 17, 661 a, 6

ii. 17, 661, a, 6.

⁴ Ibid. c. 2, 455, a, 5-b, 13: sleep and waking do not belong to the senses individually, but to the κύριον τῶν ἄλλων πάντων αἰσθητήριον, the πρῶτον ῷ αἰσθά-

νεται πάντων.

5 De Somno, i. e.g. 454, a, 32: εἰ τοίνυν τὸ ἐγρηγορέναι ὅρισται τῷ λελύσθαι τὴν αἴσθησιν . . . τὸ δ' ἐγρηγορέναι τῷ καθεύδειν ἐναντίον . . . τοῦτο δ' ἐστὶν ἀδυναμία δι' ὑπερβολὴν τοῦ ἐγρηγορόναι . . . ἀνάγκη πὰν τὸ ἐγρηγορόν ἐνδέχεσθαι καθεύδειν ἀδύνατον γὰρ ὰεὶ ἐνεργεῖν. It is impossible, however, that it should sleep for ever, for to sleep without awaking would be to lose the power of sensation. 454, b, 25: τῆς δ'

Hence these conditions are only exhibited by beings capable of sensation; but with them they are invariable, for the faculty of perception cannot remain active without experiencing exhaustion from time to time.1 The object of sleep is to maintain life, to refresh and restore: and this again subserves the higher purpose of waking activity.2 The natural causes of sleep lie in the nutritive process. The vital warmth drives the fumes away from the food upwards; collecting there, they make the head heavy and induce sleepiness; but cooling in the brain, they sink down again and cause a refrigeration of the heart, in consequence of which the activity of this chief organ of sensation is suspended. This condition lasts until the food is digested and the purer blood, destined for the upper portions of the body, is secreted from the denser sort, which passes downwards.3 Dreams arise from the internal motions of the organs of sense, which continue after the transmission of external impressions has ceased. In the waking state these motions disappear beneath the action of sense and thought; but in sleep, on the contrary, and especially towards the end of sleep, when the disturbance of the blood has ceased, they stand forth more clearly.4 Hence it may happen that an internal motion

αἰσθήσεως τρόπου τινὰ τὴν μὲν ἀκινησίαν καὶ οῗον δεσμὸν ὕπνον εἶναί φαμεν, τὴν δὲ λύσιν καὶ τὴν ἄνεσιν ἐγρήγορσιν.

1 See preceding note and De Somno, 1, 454, b, 14-455, a, 3, where it is said that all animals except ostracea are actually observed to sleep, and that, on the general grounds mentioned

above, we must suppose that these sleep also.

² *Ibid.* ii. 455, b, 16-28, c. 3, end.

³ De Somno, c. 3, where this point is very fully discussed.

⁴ As is shown and interestingly illustrated by careful observations from cognate fields, π. ἐνυπνίων (see p. 71, n. 3, supra), cf. Divin,

in the body, which would not be perceived in waking hours, makes itself felt in dreams, or that dreams, reversely, impel people to subsequent action by the images which they present to the soul. It is also possible that sensible impressions reach us in sleep which would not have struck upon our senses in the more disturbed atmosphere of the daytime, or would have failed to arouse our attention. Thus some prophetic dreams may be explained naturally; anything beyond this must be considered a casual coincidence, for we notice that many dreams do not come true at all.¹

Death, like sleep, must be explained by an alteration in the central organ. It happens when the vital warmth, which resides in the heart (or the correspond-

p. S. 1, 463, a, 7 sqq. Dreams according to the account here given (c. 3, 462, a, 8, 29) are κινήσεις φανταστικαί [movements caused by fancy] ἐν τοῖς αἰσθητηρίοις, . . . τὸ φάντασμα τὸ ἀπὸ τῆς κινήσεως τῶν αἰσθημάτων, ὅταν ἐν τῷ καθεύδειν ἢ, ἢ καθεύδει, τοῦτ' ἐστὶν ἐνόπνιον.

¹ This is essentially the doctrine set forth in the treatise π. τῆς καθ' ὕπνον μαντικῆς. It cannot, on the other hand, be regarded as the expression of Aristotle's scientific conviction when in one of his Dialogues (see i. 390, n. 3, supra) he speaks of the soul in sleep and just before death, when about to withdraw from the body into its true being, as possessed of a power of insight into the future. Such a view, it is much more probable, does not at all express his own conviction, but merely an

opinion which, he thinks, may have given rise to the belief in the existence of the Gods. If at the time of the composition of this dialogue he attributed any real value to this opinion, it would be only one of the many proofs of the influence which the views of Plato still exercised over him. His whole treatment of the subject as given above shows how far he was at a later'time from regarding sleep as a higher condition of the spiritual life. The views that Cic. Divin. i. 38, 81 attributes to Aristotle on the power of prophetic foresight ('aliquid in animis præsagiens atque divinum') said to be possessed by hypochondriacs were much more probably taken from one of the Dialogues, than from Divin. p. S. c. 2 init. or Eth. Eud. vii. 14, 1248, a, 39.

ing member), is extinguished.1 The cause of this extinction, which affects all fire alike, is generally the want of nourishment. This may be brought about in two ways: either the operation of antagonistic materials 2 may prevent the fire from maturing its aliment, which in the case of life is the vapour rising from the blood; or else an excess of warmth may induce too rapid consumption of it.³ The latter takes place in the natural decay of old age. During a length of time the respiratory organs have been growing gradually harder and drier, moving themselves in consequence more slowly, and becoming incapable of providing the necessary covering process for the inner heart.4 Accordingly the inner fire decreases more and more, until at last it is extinguished, like a little flame, by some insignificant movement.⁵ The causes of greater or less longevity are discussed by Aristotle in a special treatise.6

Up to this point we have dealt exclusively with the common conditions and peculiarities of animal life. These common characteristics are displayed in the most different forms and degrees of completeness by the different races of animals. The animal kingdom exhibits

Aristotle.

¹ De Vita, c. 4; see pp. 7 and 42, supra, and cf. Respir. 17, 478, b, 31 sqq. 479, a, 7 sqq.

² As in the extinction of fire by water.

³ De Vita, c. 5, 496, b, sq. The third possible case, when the supply of the requisite aliment fails, as in death by starvation, is here unnoticed by

⁴ That this is the purpose served by respiration has already been proved at p. 43.

⁵ De Respir. 17, 479, a, 7 sqq. cf. De Vita, 5, 469, b, 21, 470, a, 5 (where the suffocation of fire by coals is cited as an illustration, and explained in the same way). Meteor. iv. 1, 379, a, 3; Longit. V. 5, 466, a, 19, 22, b, 14; Gen. An. v. 3, 783, b, 6.

⁶ Περὶ μακρυβιότητος καὶ βραχυβιότητος: cf. Gen. An. iv. 10, 777, b, 3. Upon the results there arrived at, c. 5, 6, it is impracticable here to enter more fully.

a gradual and continuous progression from the poorest and most undeveloped forms of life to the highest, and it is Aristotle's undisputed distinction to have first discovered this scale and to have followed it through all aspects of animal life.\(^1\) Even the local habitations of the different animals, the elements to which they belong, enable us to distinguish their several degrees of honour and importance.\(^2\) Nor must the variations

¹ As has already been generally shown, p. 20 sqq. *supra*; cf. i. 466 sqq.

² Aristotle frequently touches upon this point. His statements upon it, however, are not always consistent with one another either in regard to the birth and habitations, or in regard to the elementary constitution of different living creatures. Meteor. iv. 4, 382, a, 6 (De An. i. 5, 411, a, 9 relates to another subject) he says : ἐν γῆ καὶ ἐν ὕδατι ζῷα μόνον έστιν, έν ἀέρι δὲ καὶ πυρί οὐκ ἔστιν. δτι των σωμάτων ύλη ταῦτα, (On the statement in the latter clause r. i. 483, n. 2, supra). On the other hand, according to CIC. N. D. ii. 15, 42; PLUT. Plat. V. 20, 1 (Fr. Ar. 19), he had declared, probably in the dialogue π. φιλοσοφίαs, that as there are land-, water-, and airanimals (ζώρα χερσαῖα, ένυδρα, πτηνὰ, or according to Cic. 'cum alioium animantium ortus in terra sit, aliorum in aqua, in aëre aliorum'), there must also be ζφα o)odvia, and the stars must therefore be animate. Again, Hist. An. v. 19, 552, b, 6-15, he speaks of worms which spring by spontaneous generation from ice, flies which spring from fire, whereas, Gen. et Corr. ii. 3, 330, b, 29, he had expressly denied that any.

thing at all springs from either ice or fire. If we may put down to a popular mode of speech the mention of air-animals in the treatise π. φιλοσοφίας, by which are only meant winged animals, yet the fire-animals mentioned in his Natural History and alluded to by other writers (cf. FABRICIUS, on Sext, Pyrrh. i. 41. IDELER, on Meteorol. ii. 454; PHILO, Plant. Noë, 216, A, De Gigant. 285, A) cannot be reconciled with his other statements. But, secondly, with regard to the material constituents of living bodies, Aristotle holds (DeAn. i. 5, 411, a, 9. iii. 13 init., and the passage referred to in i. 482, n. 3, sup.) that while each contains a mixture of all the elements, there may be a preponderance of different elements in different bodies. Here also, however, his statements are not always consistent. De Respir. 13, 477, a, 27, he says: τὰ μὲν γὰρ έκ γης πλείονος γέγονεν, οίον το τῶν φυτών γένος [and acc. to Gen. An. ii. 6, 743, b, 10, shell-fish and crustacea], τὰ δ' έξ ὕδατος οἷον τὸ τῶν ἐνύδρων * τῶν δὲ πτηνῶν καὶ πεζων τὰ μὲν ἐξ ἀέρος τὰ δ' ἐκ πυρός. Έκαστα δ' ἐν τοῖς οἰκείοις τόποις έχει την τάξιν αὐτῶν. On the other hand, Gen. An. iii. 11, 761, b, 13: τὰ μέν γὰρ φυτὰ θείη in their vital heat be neglected, as that is a point of the greatest moment in determining the perfection of animate existence.1 Together with the vital heat must be mentioned the character of the blood and of the humours corresponding to it in other animals, on which depends the broad distinction between sanguineous and bloodless creatures.2 The temper and intelligence of animals are regulated in a great measure by the constitution of their blood, while of course its influence over their physical structure is not less important.3 It is only sanguineous animals which have flesh, the bloodless are

τις αν γης, ύδατος δὲ τά ἔνυδρα, τὰ δὲ πεζὰ ἀέρος το δὲ μᾶλλον καὶ . ήττον καὶ ἐγγύτερον καὶ πορρώτερον πολλήν ποιεί και θαυμαστήν διαφοράν. τὸ δὲ τέταρτον γένος οὐκ ἐπὶ τούτων τῶν τόπων δεῖ ζητεῖν · καίτοι βούλεταί γέ τι κατά την τοῦ πυρὸς είναι τάξιν. . . άλλὰ δεί τὸ τοιοῦτον γένος (ητείν έπὶ της σελήνης · αύτη γάρ φαίνεται κοινωνοῦσα τῆς τετάρτης ἀποστάσεως. The whole class of me(à (land animals and birds) are here assigned to the air, just as De Sensu, c. 5, 444, a, 19, men and quadrupeds are classed with those δσα μετέχει μαλλον της τοῦ ἄερος φύσεως: fire-animals on the other hand are said to inhabit the moon, of which there is a suggestion also De An. ii. 3, 414, b, 18 (see p. 20, n. 3, supra). But it remains to be asked how in the ethereal region, to which the moon also belongs, there can be beings constituted of all the elements. Cf. MEYER, Arist. Thierk. 413 sq. 393, and i. 472 sqq. supra.

¹ De Resp. 13, 477, a, 16: τὰ τιμίωτερα τῶν ζώων πλείονος τετύχηκε θεριότητος άμα γάρ ανάγκη

καί ψυχής τετυχηκέναι τιμιωτέρας. ² On this distinction, of which Aristotle very frequently makes use, see, besides many other passages, Hist. An. i. 4-6, 489, a, 30, 490. a, 21, 26 sqq. b, 9. ii. 15 init iv. 1 init. c. 3 init.; Part. An. ii. 2, 648, a, 1. c. 4, 650, b, 30, and the passages referred to 26, n. 1. supra. From Part. iii. 4, 665, a, 31 (Δημόκριτος δ' ἔοικεν οὐ καλῶς διαλαβείν περί αὐτῶν, εἴπερ ψήθη διὰ μικρότητα τῶν ἀνα'μων ζώων ἄδηλα $\epsilon \hat{l} \nu \alpha i \quad \tau \alpha \hat{\nu} \tau \alpha = \text{their intestines}$ Brandis, ii.b. 1301 concludes that Democritus had made the distinction between sanguineous and bloodless animals; the inference, however, is a doubtful one, as Democritus may have mentioned only particular species of animals, and the general designation of them as avaima may be Aristotle's.

³ Part. An. ii. 2, 648, a, 2 (see p. 39. n. 6, supra); c. 4, 651, a, 12: πολλών δ' έστιν αίτία ή τοῦ οἵματος φύσις καὶ κατὰ τὸ ἦθος τοῖς ζώοις καὶ κατά την αζσθησιν. εὐλόγως . ὕλη γάρ ἐστι παντός τοῦ σώματος.

provided with something analogous to flesh; the former have a heart, the latter another kind of central organ.2 The vital heat and composition of the blood, again, determine the development of the organs of refrigeration and secretion—the brain, lungs, kidneys, bladder, and their peculiar functions.3 In everything relating to the motion and posture of animals, Aristotle does not fail to recognise a special significance. Some tribes grow like plants adhering to the ground: the more perfect races, on the contrary, are capable of locomotion at will.4 Furthermore, he traces very considerable differences in the organs of motion and the modes of progression displayed by the latter.⁵ It is only in the case of locomotive creatures that we find the opposition of right and left, to which Aristotle attributed much importance.6 together with a more complex organisation.7 Lastly, while in shell-fish and plants the head looks downwards, and while in animals without feet or with many feet it is turned to the middle of the world. it is turned upwards in bipeds, and particularly in man.8

¹ See p. 26, n. 2, supra.

See p. 26, n. 7; p. 41, n. 3, sup.
See p. 26, n. 8; p. 40, n. 1,

and p. 43, n. 6, supra.

⁴ Hist. An. viii. 1,588, b, 10 sqq.; Part. An. iv. 5,681, a, 12-20; Ingr. An. 19; De An. ii. 3,415, a, 6, and p. 49, n. 5, supra.

⁵ Even birds seem stunted (κεκολόβωται) in this respect, but fish even more so (Part. An. iv. 13 init.); in the motion of serpents and worms there is properly no distinction of right and left (Ingr. An. 4, 705, b, 22 sqq.); in the case of insects the multitude of their feet indicates deficient

unity and centralisation of the vital force (*ibid*. c. 7), while—in common with some birds—they have little power of steering their flight (*ibid*. 10, 710, a, 4).

⁶ See p. 33, n. 3, sup., and Ingr. An. 4, 705, b, 13 to end. Aristotle there remarks (706, a, 18) that the distinction between right and left reaches its highest development in man, διὰ τὸ κατὰ φύπιν μάλιστα ἔχειν τῶν (ఢών. φύσει δὲ βέλτιόν τε τὸ δεξίδν τοῦ ἀριστεροῦ καὶ κεχωρισμένον.

⁷ Part. An. iv. 7 init.

* Part. An. iv. 7, 683, b, 18;
Ingr. An. c. 5; De Vita, 1, 468,

The structure of the body and the relation of its members correspond to these differences of posture.1 In human beings the upper portion of the body is lighter than the lower, for the sake of their intellectual activity, and because of their greater warmth. In quadrupeds the size and weight of these parts are greater. As the vital heat decreases, and the earthly ingredients begin to preponderate, the number of the feet is multiplied, until at last they disappear, and the whole body becomes one great foot. Beyond this point the head begins to turn downwards, sensation disappears, the animal becomes a vegetable.2 The size of animals, again,

a. 5. Man's upright posture is explained, Respir. 13, 477, a, 20, as the result of the purity and abundance of his blood; Part An. ii. 7, 653, a, 30, iii. 6, 669, b, 4, it is accounted for by the cognate fact of his higher temperature, heat having the effect of raising the body, as is proved by the fact that warm-blooded quadrupeds (the ζφοτόκα) are the more upright. Part. An. iv. 10, 686, a, 25, the argument is put teleologically: man has arms instead of forefeet. δρθὸν μὲν γάρ ἐστι μόνον τῶν (ώων διά τὸ τὴν Φύσιν αὐτοῦ καὶ τὴν ούσίαν είναι θείαν έργον δὲ τοῦ θειστάτου τὸ νοεῖν καὶ φρονεῖν τοῦτο δ' οὖ δάδιον πολλοῦ τοὖ ἄνωθεν ἐπικειμένου σώματος το γάρ βάρος δυσκίνητον ποιεί την διάνοιαν καλ την κοινην αίσθησιν. The increased weight of the upper portions of the body requires that it should he placed horizontally on several legs, οὐ δυναμένης φέρειν το βάρος της ψυχης, πάντα γάρ ἐστι τὰ ζῷα νανώδη τάλλα παρά τον άνθρωπον νανώδες γάρ έστιν οδ το μέν άνω n. 8, supra.

μέγα τὸ δὲ φέρον τὸ βάρος καὶ πεζεῦον µікро́ν &c. [cf. i. 467, п. 2, supra] . . . διδ καλ άφρονέστερα πάντα τὰ ζώα τῶν ἀνθρώπων ἐστίν. . . . αἴτιον δ΄ .. ὅτι ἡ τῆς ψυχῆς ἀρχὴ πολλῷ δη δυσκίνητός έστι και σωματώδης. έτι δ' ελάττονος γενομένης της αἰρούσης θερμότητος καὶ τοῦ γεώδους πλείονος, τά τε σώματα έλάττονα τῶν ζώων ἐστὶ καὶ πολύποδα. τέλος δ' ἄποδα γίγνεται και τεταμένα πρός την γην. μικρόν δ' ούτω προβαίνοντα καὶ τὴν ἀρχὴν ἔχουσι κάτω καὶ τὸ κατὰ τὴν κεφαλὴν μόριον τέλος ακίνητόν έστι καί άναίσθητον, καλ γίνεται φυτόν.

¹ Ingr. An. c. 11: since man is a biped and designed for an upright walk, the upper parts of his body must be lighter, the lower heavier. Birds cannot have the upright posture; man on account of this posture cannot have wings (for the reason given for this, the student must consult Aristotle himself). Cf. prev. n. and Hist. An. ii. 4, 500, b. 26.

² Part. An. iv. 10; see p. 81,

corresponds to their place in the scale of existence: the warmer animals, according to Aristotle's notion, are generally speaking greater, and therefore the sanguineous animals are larger than the bloodless, although he does not fail to notice several exceptions to this rule. 1 Another obvious basis of classification may be found in the mode of birth and propagation. Some animals are viviparous, and form their offspring in the womb, either with or without the intervention of an egg.² A second class lay eggs, perfect in the case of birds, oviparous quadrupeds, and snakes; imperfect in the case of fishes, molluses, and molluscous ostracea. A third kind propagate themselves by worms, produced sometimes with. sometimes without, copulation,3 and attaining their ultimate form only after repeated transformation: almost all insects belong to this class. A fourth series spring by spontaneous generation from slime or from the excretions of animals: as, for instance, the majority of shellfish and some fishes and insects.4 The common fundamental type of all these different modes of propagation is development from worms through eggs to organic form: 5 but this process runs a different course, produ-

¹ Respir. 13, 477, a, 18; Longit. V. 5, 466, b, 18, 28; Part. An. iv. 10, 686, b, 28; Hist. An. il. 5, 490, a, 21 sqq.; Gen. An. ii. 1, 732, a, 16 sqq.

The former is the case (Gen. An. ii. 1, 732, a, 32, i. 10, and elsewhere) with man, horses, cattle, dolphins, &c., the latter with cartilaginous fish and vipers.

³ Instances of monogenesis Aristotle finds in bees and some fishes: Gen. An. iii, 10 (see p. 58,

n. 1, supra), c. 5, 755, b, 20, ii. 5 (see p. 53, n. 1, supra); Hist. An. iv. 11, 538, a, 19.

⁴ Gen. An. ii. 1, from 732. a, 25 onwards; Hist. An. i. 5, 489, a, 34-b, 18; Polit. i. 8, 1256, b, 10 sqq. On viviparous animals see especially Gen. An. ii. 4 sqq.; on the others and on spontaneous generation, the passage cited p. 58, n. 1, and p. 49, n. 4, sup., and also MEYEB, Arist. Thierh. 453 sqq.

⁵ On the one hand, he holds

cing a more or less perfect result, according to the higher or the lower status of the animal. So, since the warmer and less earthy animals are the noblest, we may say that birth and development follow the warmth and material composition of the organisms. The mode of their birth reflects the perfection or imperfection of their nature, and if we estimate the whole animal kingdom by this one standard, we obtain a scale which leads gradually from the most perfect down to the least perfect. Nor are the senses equally distributed among

that the embryo even of oviparous and viviparous animals is vermicular at first, and, on the other, the chrysalisation of insects which appear first as worms is a transformation into the form of an egg: so that even here the law of analogy does not desert us; Gen. An. iii. 9, 758, a, 32: σχεδον γαρ ξοικε πάντα σκωληκοτοκείν πρώτον τδ γὰρ ἀτελέστατον κύημα τοιοῦτόν έστιν. έν πασι δέ και τοις (ωοτοκούσι και τοίς φοτοκούσι τέλειον ώδυ το κύπμα το πρώτου άδιδοιστου δυ λαμβάνει την αύξησιν τοιαύτη δ' ἐστὶν ἡ τοῦ σκώληκος φύσις. μετά δὲ τοῦτο τὰ μὲν ώστοκεῖ τὸ κύημα τέλειον τὰ δ' ἀτελὲς, ἔξω δὲ γίγνεται τέλειον, καθάπερ ἐπὶ τῶν ίνθύων είρηται πολλάκις, τὰ δ' ἐν αύτοις ζφοτοκούντα τρόπον τινά μετά το σύστημα το έξ άρχης φοειδές γίνεται περιέχεται γάρ το ύγρον υμένι λεπτώ, καθάπερ αν εί τις ἀφέλοι το των ώων δστρακον. (Cf. on this point Hist. An. viii. 7.) The insect germ is a worm, whether it is born by ordinary or by spontaneous generation, and the same is true of caterpillars and of the supposed spiders' eggs. προελθόντα δὲ πάντα τὰ σκωληκώδη καί του μεγέθους λαβύντα τέλος οἷον φὸν γίγνεται [in chrysalisation] . . . τούτου δ΄ αἴτιον ὅτι ἡ φύσις ὁσπερανεὶ πρὸ ὥρας φὸτοκεῖ διὰ τὴν ἀτέλειαν τὴν αὐτῆς, ὡς ὅντος τοῦ σκάληκος ἔτι ἐν αὐξήσει φοῦ μαλακοῦ. The same is the case with moths and similar animals. Cf. n. 2, infra.

¹ Gen. An. ii. 1, 732, b, 28: ζφοτοκεί μέν τὰ τελεώτερα τὴν φύσιν τῶν ζώων καὶ μετέχοντα καθαρωτέρας άρχης οὐθεν γάρ (φοτοκεῖ ἐν αύτῷ, μὴ δεχόμενον τὸ πνευμα καλ άναπνέον. τελεώτερα δέ θερμότερα την φύσιν καί ύγρότερα καὶ μὴ γεώδη τῆς δέ θερμότητος της φυσικής δρος δ πλεύμων δσων έναιμός έστιν . . ωσπερ δὲ τὸ ζῷον τέλεον, ὁ δὲ σκώληξ καὶ τὸ ώὸν ἀτελές, οῦτως τὸ τέλειον έκ τοῦ τελειοτέρου γίνεσθαι πέφυκεν. Warmth and moisture are favourable, cold and dryness hostile to perfect development: Aristotle tries to show, 733, a. 3 sqq., how the various methods of production depend upon the various ways in which these are distributed and combined.

² Ibid. 733, a, 32: δεῖ δὲ νοῆσαι ὡς εἄ καὶ ἐφεξῆς τὴν γένεσιν ἀπυδίδωσιν ἡ φύσις. τὰ μὲν γὰρ τελεώτερα καὶ θερμότερα τῶν ζώων

the different tribes: it is only the more perfect which possess all the five senses, while the others partake of them in more or less completeness.\(^1\) Again, there are only a few animals in which memory and imagination are developed from sensation; and accordingly they differ widely in intelligence and docility.\(^2\) In the last place, Aristotle turns his attention to the habits and character of animals, and is at pains to point out the characteristics which establish a closer or more distant resemblance between the life of men and brutes,\(^3\) noticing especially, for instance, how in the sexual life of animals and their treatment of their young we have all stages, from a merely vegetable indifference up to a species of moral conduct towards offspring.\(^4\)

Aristotle failed to combine these different points of view in such a way as to establish a complete and graduated classification of the whole animal kingdom: nor, indeed, did he succeed in avoiding constant errors and contradictions in his treatment of this subject, owing to the complicated and crossing principles of

τέλειον αποδίδωσι το τέκνον κατά το ποιδν [i.e. with perfectly developed organs] . . . καὶ γεννά δη ταῦτα ζῷα ἐν αύτοῖς εὐθύς. τὰ δέ δεύτερα έν αύτοις μέν οὐ γεννά τέλεια εὐθὺς (ζφοτοκεῖ δὲ ώρτοκήσαντα πρώτον), θύραζε δὲ ζφοτοκεῖ. τὰ δὲ ζῷον μὲν οὐ τέλειον γεννῷ, ἰον δὲ γεννῷ καὶ τοῦτο τέλειον τὸ ώδν, τὰ δ' ἔτι τούτων ψυχροτέραν έχοντα την φύσιν άδν μέν γεννά οὐ τέλειον δὲ φόν, ἀλλ' ἔξω τελειοῦται, καθάπερ τὸ τῶν λεπιδωτῶν ἰχθύων γένος και τὰ μαλακόστρακα και τὰ μαλάκια. το δε πέμπτον γένος και ψυγρότατον οὐδ' φοτοκεῖ ἐξ αὐτοῦ, άλλά καὶ τοῦ [τὸ] τοιοῦτον έξω συμβαίνει πάθος αὐτῷ, ισπερ εἴρηται τὰ γὰρ ἔντομα σκωληκοτοκεῖ τὸ πρῶτον προελθὰν δ΄ φάδης γίνεται ὁ σκώληξ (ἡ γὰρ χρυσαλλὶς καλουμένη δύναμιν ψοῦ ἔχει). εἶτ' ἐκ τούτου γίνεται ζῷον ἐν τῆ τρίτη μεταβολῆ λαβὸν τὸ τῆς γενέσεως τέλος.

¹ Hist. An. iv. 8; De An. ii. 2, 415, a, 3; De Somno, 2, 455, a, 5, and p. 64, supra.

² See the passages referred to supra, p. 70, n. 4, and p. 38, n. 1.
³ See p. 38, n. 1, supra.

⁴ Hist. An. viii. 1, 588, b, 28, cf. Oecon. i. 3, 1343, b, 13.

division which he followed. He generally divides the brute creation into nine departments, between which some transitional forms intervene: these are viviparous quadrupeds, oviparous quadrupeds, birds, fishes, whales, molluscs, malacostraca, testacea, and insects.2 Close to the oviparous quadrupeds are placed the snakes, although in several points they resemble fishes.3 A more general law of classification is his opposition between sanguineous and bloodless animals. To the former belong the first five classes of those we have enumerated; to the latter, the remaining four.4 But though this opposition has so broad an application,5 and though Aristotle uses it as an essential distinction,6 he does not divide the whole animal kingdom into the two classes of sanguineous and bloodless, and then subdivide these into species as viviparous, &c.7 His other systems of classi-

¹ With the following account cf. MEYER, Arist. Thierk. 485 sqq.

² Hist. An. i. 6, ii. 15 init. 1v. 1 init., Part. An. iv. 5 init., among other passages. Cf. Meyer, ibid. 102 sqq. 151 sqq., ibid. 71 sqq., but especially 84 sqq., upon Aristotle's objections to dichotomy and to other artificial classifications.

³ See, on the one hand, Part. An. iv. 1 init., Hist. An. ii. 17, 508, a, 8, among other passages, and, on the other, Hist. An. iii. 7, 516, b, 20, ibid. c. 1, 509, b, 15, v. 5, 540, b, 30; Gen. An. i. 3, 716, b, 16; Part. iv. 13, 697, a, 9. MEYER, ibid. 154 sq.

⁴ See the passages cited, p. 80, n. 2, supra.

⁵ See p. 80, supra.

6 Hist. An. ii. 15, 505, b, 26: τούτω γὰρ διαφέρει τὰ μέγιστα γένη πρός τὰ λοιπά τῶν ἄλλων ζψων, τῷ τὰ μὲν ἔναιμα τὰ δ' ἄναιμα εἶναι. Part. iv. 3, 678, a, 33: ὅτι γάρ ἐστι τὰ μὲν ἔναιμα τὰ δ' ἄναιμα ἐν τῷ λόγῷ ἐνυπάρξει τῷ δρίζοντι τὴν οὐσίαν αὐτῶν. Cf. BRANDIS, ii. b, 1294 sq.

⁷ Cf. MEYER, *ibid*. 138 sq. In Part. An. i. 2 sq. Aristotle sets forth in detail the reasons why he regards it as inadmissible to base his classification upon such a division (see i. 241, n. 3, supra, and cf. i. 271, n. 2, sup.), expressly stating, 642, b, 30: χαλεπον μέν οδν διαλαβείν καί είς τοιαύτας διαφοράς ων έστιν είδη ωσθ' ότιοῦν (ώον έν ταύταις ὑπάρχειν καὶ μὴ ἐν πλείοσι ταὐτόν . . . πάντων δὲ χαλεπώτατον η αδύνατον είς τὰ άναιμα (no other word could have been used consisteptly with the context which follows). This characteristic is fication are employed with even less rigour, as when he speaks of land- and water-animals, of viviparous, oviparous, and vermiparous, of locomotive and non-locomotive, of two-footed, four-footed, many-footed, and footless, of walking, flying, swimming creatures, of carnivora and herbivora, and so on. Nor does Aristotle, in tracing the subordinate species into which the summa genera are divided, make use of these distinctions for the purpose of classification. He rather tries to find the natural divisions by observation, and if he cannot succeed in marking off the species by these means, he does not hesitate to assume intermediate races belonging partly to the one sort and partly to the other. Lastly,

unsuitable for the differentia of a summa species, if for no other reason than because it is a negative one, and negative conceptions cannot be further subdivided according to any inlying principle of classification (642, b, 21, 643, a, 1 sqq. b, 9-26).

Hist. An. i. 487, a, 34, viii. 2 init. ix. 48, 631, a, 21, ii. 2, 648, a, 25, among other passages; cf. Part. i. 2, 642, b, 10 sqq; Top. vi. 6, 144, b, 32 sqq.; MEYER, 84 sq. 140. See also p. 79, n. 2, supra. Hist. An. i. 5, 489, a, 34,

² Hist. An. i. 5, 489, a, 34, among other passages; see MEYER, 97 sq. 141 sq., and p. 82 sq. supra, according to which as a fourth class we should have self-generated animals.

³ Ingr. An. 4. 705, b, 13; Part. An. iv. 5, 681, b, 33 sqq. c. 7 init.

⁴ Hist. An. i. 4, 489, b, 19; Part. An. iv. 10, 687, a, 2, 689, b, 31 sqq.; Ingr. An. 1, 704, a, 12. c. 5, 706, a, 26 sqq., b, 3 sqq.

5 Neugting and atnuc are re-

presented, Hist. An. i. 5, 489, b, 23, 490, a, 5, as separate classes, the latter being subdivided into $\pi \tau \epsilon \rho \omega \tau \lambda$, $\pi \iota \lambda \omega \tau \lambda$ and $\delta \epsilon \rho \iota \mu \delta \pi \tau \epsilon \rho \omega \tau \lambda$, opposed to these we have as a third class all those which move upon the earth.

⁶ Hist. An. i. 1, 488, a, 14, viii. 3, 592, a, 29, b, 15, 28; Polit. i. 8, 1256, a, 24, among other passages; v. MEYER, p. 100.

⁷ MEYER, *ibid.* p. 158-329, gives an exhaustive account of these.

8 Such transitional forms are: the monkey standing between man and viviparous quadrupeds; the bat between flying and walking animals, but properly with as much claim to be reckoned among viviparous quadrupeds as the seal, which is assigned a place between land- and water- animals; the ostrich, which, although a bird, in many points resembles a quadruped; the crocodile, which is an oviparous quadruped approximating to a

though it cannot be denied that Aristotle's system represents a gradual progression toward completeness in the animal creation which attains its summit in man, 1 yet the respective dignities of whole classes are left undetermined, and the different points of view from which he judges them intersect each other so awkwardly that the same class often ranks higher in one respect and lower in another. Zoophytes, generally speaking, are less perfect than true animals; shell-fish are less perfect than locomotive creatures, the footless than those which are provided with feet, the vermiparous than the oviparous, and these than the viviparous; all animals than But whether insects rank above molluscs and malacostraca, birds above amphibious animals, fishes above snakes, or vice versa, Aristotle does not enable us to decide. We may even doubt 3 about the respective positions of shell-fish and insects. Again, though sanguineous animals are the nobler on account of their greater vital warmth and their more complex organisation, still some insects, like bees and ants, are superior to many of them in intelligence and art.4 If birds as oviparous animals rank below mammals, their posture approximates them to man; 5 it seems strange, therefore, that they should be more remote from mankind in

fish; serpents (see p. 86, n. 8, su-pra); among bloodless animals the nautilus and the hermit crab are molluscs which are related to crustacea. See the references given by MEYER, pp. 146–158. The zoological position of man is discussed infra, p. 90, n. 1.

¹ See p. 25 sqq. supra; p. 28, n. 3, among other passages.

² See i. 487 sq. supra.

³ As MEYER, p. 486, shows.
4 Part. An. ii. 2, 648, a, 4
sqq.; see p. 39, n. 6, supra, where

sqq.; see p. 39, n. 6, supra, where a solution of the difficulty is suggested, which, however, is hardly an adequate one.

⁵ Ingr. An. 5, 706, a, 25, b, 3; Hist. An. i. 5, 489, b, 20.

mode of birth and physical structure than the mammals.1 When we take the spontaneous generation of sexless animals as a sign of a low rank, intermediate between the vegetable and animal worlds, we are surprised to find the same mode of propagation not only in insects but even in fishes.2 On the other hand, since viviparous animals are the most perfect,3 whales and dolphins, as well as skates and vipers, take precedence of birds and amphibious animals, though inferior to them in many respects.4 If we explain the transition from quadrupeds to multipeds, and from these to footless creatures by a continual declension of warmth, the bloodless insects ought to be warmer than the sanguineous snakes, fishes, and dolphins.⁶ It cannot be denied that the complex variety of the facts cannot always be harmonised with the presuppositions of the system, and that it is impossible to avoid disproportion and even contradictions in its application. The majority of these defects appear to have escaped Aristotle's notice; others he tries to avoid by artificial means:7 but he never allows himself to be shaken in his great conviction that organic nature presents a graduated scale of progressive development towards perfection.

¹ Since an upright posture is said to accompany greater vital heat; see p. 81 sq. supra.

See p.82 sq. sup., cf. p. 48 sq.
 Gen. An. ii. 4, 737, b, 26.

Cf. p. 83, n. 2, supra.

In the case of cartilaginous fish and vipers this requires no proof; in the case of cetaceans their want of feet at least, and as compared with birds the position of their heads, are in Aristotle's view important defects.

⁵ See p. 81, supra.

⁶ Cf. MEYER, p. 487 sq. where further examples are given.

⁷ See also *Gen. An.* i. 10 sq. where the viviparousness of sharks is explained on the ground of their natural coldness, whereas the same property in mammals is made to depend upon their greater heat and perfection; cf. *Part. An.* iii. 6, 669, a, 24 sqq.; *Gen. An.* ii. 4, 737, b, 26, and other passages.

CHAPTER XI

CONTINUATION

Man'

THE end of this evolution is Man. His body unites him with the lower animals, and especially with the class of viviparous land-animals.\(^1\) But already even in

' It might be doubted whether man is classed by Aristotle with viviparous quadrupeds or placed in a class by himself. Thus, Hist. An. i. 6, 490, b, 15 sqq., those γένη which have no subordinate species under them are compared to the genus $\delta \nu \theta \rho \omega \pi os$; on the other hand, ibid. ii. 8 init., man is opposed to the τετράποδα, and the monkey is described as an intermediate form between them. This apparent contradiction is due to the fact that Aristotle has no name for the whole class: as a biped, man cannot be classed along with τετράποδα ζφοτοκοῦντα; on the other hand, ζφοτοκοῦντα would embrace the whole which he declares to be a separate $\gamma \in \nu$ os. In reality man is treated as a species of the same genus to which viviparous quadrupeds belong. This is unmistakably the intention in Hist. An. i. 6, 490, b, 31 sqq., where he is described along with the lion, the stag, &c., as an eldos του γένους του των

τετραπόδων ζώων καὶ ζωοτόκων, and as one which has no subordinate species under it; Part. i. 5, 645, b, 24, where vovis is adduced as an example of a γένος, ἄνθρωπος of an είδος; Hist. An. ii. 15, 505. b, 28, where the first class of sanguineous animals is described comprehensively as ἄνθρωπός τε καὶ τὰ ζφοτόκα τῶν τετραπόδων: ibid. vi. 18 init. . περί μέν οὖν τῶν άλλων ζώων . . . σχεδον εξρηται περί πάντων . . . περί δὲ τῶν πεζῶν δσα ζφοτοκεί και περί ανθρώπου λεκτέον τὰ συμβαίνοντα, Gen. An. i. 8, 738, a, 37: ούτε γὰρ τὰ ζφοτοκοῦντα όμοίως ἔχει πάντα [sc. τὰς ὑστέρας], ἀλλ' ἄνθρωποι μὲν καὶ τὰ πεζὰ πάντα κάτω . . . τὰ δὲ σελάχη ζφοτοκοῦντα ἄνω. ii. 4, 737, b, 26: τὰ ζωοτοκοῦντα καὶ τούτων ἄνθρωπος. A certain distinction between man other viviparous land-animals is doubtless referred to in these and other passages (e.g. Part. An. ii. 17, 660, a, 17), but Aristotle does not seem to have rethe characteristics of his physical organism we have evidences of something higher, which raises him far above the lower animals. His body is of a warmer temperature than theirs. He has therefore more blood in proportion and a larger brain.1 In him alone, as the greater heat and nobility of his nature demands, we have true symmetry of form and the upright posture which corresponds with it.2 In man the distinction between the right and the left is most fully developed.3 As his blood is the purest, 4 his sensibility is most delicate, his powers of perception the most refined, and his understanding the keenest.⁵ His mouth, his windpipe, his lips, and his tongue add to their other functions that of speech, which marks him out from all living things.⁶ Nature has not confined man, as she has the other animals, to one means of defence. His means of self-preservation are infinite, and can be adapted to suit his changing needs.7 His hand is the tool of all

garded it as sufficiently fundamental to constitute man a

separate yévos.

¹ Part. An. ii. 7, 653, a, 27-37, iii. 6, 669, b, 4, iv. 10 (see p. 81, n. 8, supra); Respir. 13, 477, a, 20. Upon this depends also length of life (in which respect man is held to be excelled only by the elephant) in so far as this depends in turn upon the correspondence between the composition of the body and the surrounding atmosphere, and especially upon the heat of its upper portions; Gen. An. iv. 10, 777, b, 3 sqq.; Longit. Vit. c. 5, 6, 466, a, 30 sqq. b, 14, 467, a, 31.

² Besides the passages already referred to, cf. Ingr. An. 5, 706, b, 3, 9, c. 11, 710, b, 5-17; De Vita, 1, 468, a, 5, and i. 467, n. 3,

³ Ingr. An. 4, 706, a, 18; see p. 81, n. 6, supra.

⁴ Respir. 13, 477, a, 20. ° See p. 64, n. 6, and p. 11, п.

6 Part. ii. 16, 659, a, 30 sqq. c. 17, 660, a, 17 sqq. iii. 1, 662, a, 20, 25; Gen. v. 7, 786, b, 19; Hist. An. iv. 9, 536, a, 32.

⁷ Part. An. iv. 10, 687, a, 23, in the celebrated passage upon the human hand, after the words quoted, p. 11, n. 2, supra, Aristotle says: ἀλλ' οἱ λέγοντες ὡς συνέστηκεν οὐ καλῶς ὁ ἄνθρωπος ἀλλὰ χείριστα τῶν ζώων | because he is naked and defenceless; Aristotle has

tools, so ingeniously contrived for the most widely different purposes that it takes the place of every other. In a word, man is the first and most perfect of all living creatures. And for this reason, just as each less perfect thing finds its end in that which is more perfect, so all lower forms of animal life are destined for the use of man.

It is in the soul of man, however, that this perfection has its proper seat. Even his physical superiority has only been vouchsafed to him because his body has to serve as the instrument of a nobler soul.⁵ While the other animals are confined to the lower operations of the nutritive and sensitive life, man rises above them all by virtue of his faculty of thought.⁶ Nutrition,

probably in view PLATO'S Protagoras, 21, C] οὐκ ὀρθῶς λέγουσιν. τὰ μὲν γὰρ ἄλλα μίαν ἔχει Βοήθειαν, καὶ μεταβάλλεσθαι ἀντὶ ταύτης έτέραν οὐκ ἔστιν, ἀλλ' ἀναγκαῖον ἄσπερ ὑποδεδεμένον ἀεὶ καθεύδειν καὶ πάντα πράττειν, καὶ τὴν περὶ τὸ σῶμα ἀλεώραν μηδέποτε καταθέσθαι, μηδέ μεταβάλλεσθαι ὁ δὴ ἐτύγχανεν ὅπλον ἔχων. τῷ δὲ ἀνθρώπῳ τάς τε βοηθείας πολλὰς ἔχειν καὶ ταύτας ἀεὶ ἔξεστι μεταβάλλειν, ἔτι δ' ὅπλον οῖον ὰν βούληται καὶ ὅπου ὰν βούληται ἔχειν.

1 See the further account in the passage just quoted, and p. 19, n. 1; also De An. iii. 8, 432, a, 1, where the hand is called δργανον δογάνον.

2 Hist. Am. ix. 1, 608, b, 5: the ethical characteristics of the sexes are more prominent $\dot{\epsilon}\nu$ τοῖς $\dot{\epsilon}\chi$ ουσι μάλλον $\dot{\eta}$ θος καὶ μάλιστα $\dot{\epsilon}\nu$ άνθρώτ $\dot{\phi}$ τοῦνο [sc. τὸ ζῷον] γὰρ $\dot{\epsilon}\chi$ ει τὴν φυσιν ἀποτετελεσμένην.

Gen. An. ii. 4, 737, b, 26: ἔστι δὲ τὰ τέλεια ζῷα πρώτα, τοιαῦτα δὲ τὰ ζφοτοκοῦντα, καὶ τούτων ἄνθρωπος πρώτον.

³ Cf. p. 28.

- 4 Polit. i. 8, 1256, b, 15: Nature has provided that every creature should meet with its necessary food when it comes into the world; ωστε δμοίως δήλον δτι και γενομένοις οιητέον τά τε φυτά των ζώων ένεκεν είναι καί τάλλα (ψα των άνθρώπων χάριν, τὰ μέν ήμερα καί διά την χρησιν καί διά την τροφην, των δ' άγρίων, εί μη πάντα, άλλα τά γε πλείστα της τροφής και άλλης βοηθείας ένεκεν, ໃνα καὶ ἐσθὴς καὶ ἄλλα ὄργανα γίνηται έξ αὐτῶν. εὶ οὖν ἡ φύσις μηθὲν μήτε ἀτελès [without reason] ποιεί μήτε μάτην, ἀναγκαῖον τῶν ἄνθρώπων ένεκεν αὐτὰ πάντα πεποιηκέναι την φύσιν.
 - ⁵ See p. 10 sq. supra.
 - ⁶ See p. 22 sq. supra.

propagation, the alternations of sleep and waking, birth, old age, death, sense-perception, even imagination and memory, are common to man and beast alike;1 nor do these phenomena as they exhibit themselves in each differ essentially from one another.2 And the same is true of the feelings of pleasure and displeasure and the desires that spring from them.3 That which belongs to man alone of all known creatures is Mind or Reason (Noûs).4 By 'Nous' Aristotle means the power of Thought in its widest acceptation,5 but also more specifically the faculty of thought in so far as it deals with supersensible reality, and especially the faculty of

Voluntary recollection alone is beyond their power; cf. p. 73 sq.

² On these points, therefore, we have simply to refer to the previous chapter.

See p. 22, n. 1, supra.

4 Aristotle, like Plato, distinguishes for this reason between the rational and the irrational part of the soul; Eth. i. 13, 1102, a, 26 sqq.; Polit. vii. 15, 1334, b, 17, and passim.

⁵ De An. iii. 4, 429, a, 23: λέγω δὲ νοῦν ῷ διανοεῖται καὶ

ύπολαμβάνει ή ψυχή.

⁶ After explaining, De An. iii. 4, 429, b, 10 sq., the distinction between the concrete thing with its ingredient of matter and the pure unadulterated form. Aristotle continues, l. 12: τὸ σαρκὶ εἶναι καὶ σάρκα ἢ ἄλλφ ἢ άλλως έχοντι κρίνει . . . τῷ μὲν οδυ αλσθητικώ το θερμου και το ψυχρον κρίνει και ὧν λόγος τις ή σάρξ άλλφ δὲ ήτοι χωριστῷ, ἡ ὡς ή κεκλασμένη έχει πρός αυτήν όταν ἐκταθῆ, τὸ σαρκὶ εἶναι [the pure conception of the σάρξ] κρίνει.

conceptions: έτέρω άρα ή έτέρως έχοντι κρίνει, καὶ ὅλως ἄρα ὡς χωριστά τὰ πράγματα τῆς ὅλης, ούτω και τὰ περί του νοῦν. The subject of kpivel is vovs, as is shown by the preceding context. It may, indeed, seem strange that it is said of it that it knows (for we must give this more general signification to kplvew here, as in De An. iii. 3, 428, a, 2) heat and cold and the sensible qualities of things in general τῷ αἰσθητικῷ (where not only is it not necessary on account of the context to read alσθητώ with BRENTANO, Psychol. d. Ar. 134, but it is not admissible). But while the simple perception of the data of sense belongs to alongous, and not to vous, yet every judgment relating to. them is shared in by thought (vous in the wider sense) (cf. i. 209, n. 3, and 211, n. 1, sup.), and to this extent reason also may be described as that which by means of the perceptive faculty knows sensible things. Conceptions, on the other hand, as such, universal thoughts The same is true of all abstract limited to no individual experigrasping in an immediate act of consciousness that which cannot be the object of mediated knowledge. This part of the soul cannot be entangled in the life of the body. It must be simple, changeless, impassible.²

ence are known by reason per se. although the material for them is supplied by sense-perception (as in the case of the conception of σάρξ). Instead of saving this simply, Aristotle expresses himself in such a way as to leave it ambiguous whether these are recognised by a faculty different from that by which sensible objects are recognised or by the same faculty acting in a different way. If we had here a dilemma between the two terms of which we had to decide, we could only say, as Aristotle does, that they are known ἄλλω (νοῦς being another faculty) than by τὸ αἰσθητικόν. But the statement of three alternatives, if nothing else, shows that Aristotle regards each of the first two descriptions as admissible in a certain sense. The Nous knows insensible things by a faculty different from that by which it knows sensible objects, and, indeed, different in essence and actual reality (χωριστον) from the faculty of senseperception, seeing that it knows them by itself alone; but in so far as it is also true that the reason knows sensible things, we may say that it knows insensible things by a different method; it knows the former directly, the latter only indirectly by means of the judgment it passes upon This is the the data of sense. meaning of the words h ws h κεκλασμένη &c., the further explanation of which is of minor

importance in connection with the essential meaning of the passage, since this would be the same even although we take the illustration of the broken and extended line as merely explana-

tory of ἄλλως ἔχειν.

To this faculty belong first and chiefly the highest principles of thought, the ἄμεσα; cf.i.197, n. 4, supra. In this way (according to i.197, n. 3, sup., cf. the citation from Metaph. xii. 7, i. 203, n. 3, sup.) Nous knows itself by an immediate intuition, as thinker and thought here coincide. Whether the thought of God and other metaphysical conceptions are also the objects of immediate cognition, Aristotle, as already observed, i. 204, does not say.

² De An. iii. 4, 429, a, 18 (on what precedes see i. 199, n. 2, sup): άνάγκη ἄρα, ἐπεὶ πάντα νοεῖ, ἀμιγῆ είναι, ώσπερ φησίν 'Αναξαγόρας [see ZELL. Ph. d. Gr. i. 886, 1 | Ίνα κρατῆ, τοῦτο δ' ἐστὶν ἵνα γνωρ'ζη · παρεμφαινόμενον γάρ κωλύει τὸ άλλότριον καλ άντιφράττει, ώστε μηδ' αὐτοῦ είναι φύσιν μηδεμίαν άλλ' ή ταύτην, δτι δυνατόν. δ άρα καλούμενος της ψυχης νους . . . οὐθέν ἐστιν ένεργε'α τῶν ὄντων πρὶν νοεῖν. διό οὐδὲ μεμίχθαι εὔλογον αὐτὸν τῷ σώματι. ποιός τις γάρ αν γίγνοιτο. ψυχρός ή θερμός [it would in this case partake of the properties of the body and as it would thus bring with it definite qualities to the cognition of vontà, it could not exhibit that ἀπάθεια—see i. 199, n. 2, supra-and purity from

Just as it has for its object pure form abstracted from all matter, so is it itself free and unfettered by the It has no bodily organ like the senses; 2 it is not born into existence like the other parts of the

admixture which it requires for the exercise of its universal faculty of thought; an explanation which seems to harmonise better with the meaning of διδ &c. than that of BREN-TANO, ibid. 120 sqq.], ή κάν ὄργανόν τι είη, ὥσπερ τῷ αἰσθητικῷ • νθν δ' οὐθέν ἐστιν: b, 22. ἀπορήσειε δ' άν τις, εἰ ὁ νοῦς ἀπλοῦν ἐστι καὶ ἀπαθès [HAYDUCK, Observat. crit. in loc. al. Arist. p. 3. not without reason regards these words as strange, inasmuch as it hardly requires to be explained, as is done 1. 25 sqq., that $\tau \delta$ ἀπαθès is not subject to πάσχειν; he would therefore strike them out; we might prefer instead of ἀπαθὲς to read 'ἀμιγὲς' see 429, a, 18 quoted above] καλ νοήσει, εἰ τὸ νοεῖν πάσχειν τί This independence of the *ἐστιν*. explains the remark which is added, De An. ii. 1, 413, a, 4 sqq. to the definition of the soul as the entelectry of its body: it follows that the soul (or at any rate certain parts of it, if it has parts) is not separate (χωριστός) from the body: οὐ μην ἀλλ' ἔνιά γε οὐθὲν κωλύει (see p. 6, n. 1, supra). Cf. further n. 3 below, p. 96, n. 2, infra, and the passages referred to below bearing upon νοῦς ποιητικός; also De An. i. 3, 407, a, 33: h νόησις ξοικεν ήρεμήσει τινί καί έπιστάσει μαλλον ή κινήσει. Phys. vii. 3, 247, b, 1 : οὐδ' αἱ τοῦ νοητικοῦ μέρους ἕξεις ἀλλοιώσεις. Ibid. 247, a, 28: ἀλλὰ μὴν οὐδὲ

τῷ διανοητικῷ μέρει τῆς ψυχῆς ἡ άλλοίωσις &c.; nor is ληψις έπιστήμης a γένεσις or άλλοίωσις, but rather an ηρεμία καλ κατάστασις ταραχης—the removal of obstructions which hinder the reason in the exercise of its functions, resembling the awakening from

sleep.

¹ See p 93, n. 6, sup. Χωριστός is often applied to Nous, the lower faculties of the soul being ἀχώρι. στοι; cf. preced and foll. n. p. 96, n. 1, infra. De An. ii. 2, 413, b, 24: περίδε του νου και της θεωρητικής δυνάμεως ούδέν πω φανερόν, άλλ' ἔοικε ψυχης γένος έτερον είναι, και τοῦτο μόνου ενδέχεται χωρίζεσθαι [sc. τοῦ σώματος], καθάπερ το άζδιον τοῦ

φθαρτοῦ.

² See preced. and foll. n. and the further statement De An. iii. 4, 429, a, 29: ὅτι δ' οὐχ ὁμοία ή ἀπάθεια τοῦ αἰσθητικοῦ καὶ τοῦ νοητικού, φανερόν έπλ τών αἰσθητηρίων καλ της αλοθήσεως, ή μέν γάρ αίσθησις ού δύναται αἰσθάνεσθαι έκ τοῦ σφόδρα αἰσθητοῦ . . . ἀλλ' ὁ νοῦς ὅταν τι νοήση σφόδρα νοητόν, οὐχ ήττον νοεί τὰ ὑποδεέστερα, ἀλλὰ καὶ μάλλον το μέν γάρ αίσθητικον ούκ άνευ σώματος, ό δὲ χωριστός. In view of these definite declarations, the attempt (KAMPE, Erkenntnissth. d. Ar. 12-49) to attribute to the Nous a material substratum consisting of æther must appear at the outset a profitless one. Not even the passage quoted p. 6. n. 2, from Gen. An. ii. 3 can be adduced in support of it, for even there the σπέρμα of the soul; 1 nor is it affected by the death of the body.2 It is real, therefore, only in the act of thinking; apart

ψυχική άρχη, so far as it refers to the Nous, is described as γωριστόν σώματος and even although it is said that it enters the womb with the γονη, it does not follow from this that it is united to this or any other material substratum: the Nous is said, indeed, to be in the body during life, but not to be mixed up with it or entangled in its life; the youn itself it enters from without; cf. p. 100, infra. Furthermore, even although the æther like the Nousis called divine and unchangeable, the essential distinction between them (the one is a body, the other is not) is not thereby abolished, for it has already been shown, i. 476, that we have nothing to do with any 'immaterial matter'; and when KAMPE, p. 32, 39, argues in support of his view that the stars. which are made of æther, are intelligent beings, he forgets that it is not the stars themselves that are so, but the spirits by whom they and their spheres are moved. Although, lastly, the Nous is said, Eth. x. 7, 1177, b, 34, as compared with the multiplicity of the other faculties of the soul, to be 'of small compass (τῷ ὅγκῷ μικρὸν) but pre-eminent in power and value,' we cannot fairly conclude from this metaphorical expression that it is held by Aristotle to be united to a body.

1 Gen. An. ii. 3, 736, a, 31, Aristotle asks: πότερον ένυπάρχει [ἡ ψυχὴ] τῷ σπέρματι καὶ τῷ κυήματι ἡ οὄ, καὶ πόθεν; to which hererικὴν ψυχὴν τὰ σπέρματα καὶ τὰ κυήματα τὰ χωριστὰ δῆλον ὅτι τὰ κυήματα τὰ χωριστὰ δῆλον ὅτι

δυνάμει μèν ξχοντα ένεργεία δ' οὐκ ἔχοντα, πρίν ή καθάπερ τὰ χωριζόμενα τῶν κυημάτων έλκει την τροφήν καὶ ποιεῖ τὸ της τοιαύτης ψυχης έργον. With regard to the ψυχή αἰσθητική and vontuch he then shows that either all their parts must come into being for the first time at the moment of birth or must all have pre-existed, or else that some of them do the one, some the other, and continues: ὅτι μὲν τοίνυν οὺχ οἶόν τε πάσας προϋπάρχειν φανερόν έστιν έκ τῶν τοιούτων. δσων γάρ έστιν άρχων ή ενέργεια σωματική, δήλον ὅτι ταύτας ἄνευ σώματος άδύνατον ὑπάρχειν, οἶον βαδίζειν άνευ ποδών ώστε καί θύραθεν είσιέναι άδύνατον. γάρ αὐτὰς καθ' αὑτὰς εἰσιέναι οἶόν τε ἀχωρίστους ούσας, ούτ΄ ἐν σώματι είσιέναι το γάρ σπέρμα μεταβαλλούσης τῆς περίττωμα τροφής έστιν [and therefore not something coming from withλείπεται δὲ [δη] τον νοῦν out]. μόνον θύραθεν ἐπεισιέναι καὶ θεῖον είναι μόνον ούθεν γάρ αύτοῦ τη ένεργεία κοινωνεί σωματική ένέργεια. 737, a, 7: τὸ δὲ τῆς γονῆς &c. see p.6, n. 2, sup. De An. i. 4; see foll. n. For further discussion of the question of the entrance of reason into the body, see p. 80,

2 De An. i. 4, 408, b, 18: δ δὲ νοῦς ἔοικεν ἐγγίνεσθαι οὐσία τις οὖσα καὶ οὐ φθείρεσθαι. μάλιστα γὰρ ἐφθείρετ' ὰν ὑπὸ τῆς ἐν τῷ γήρα ἀμαυρώσεως, νῦν δ' ἴσως ὅπερ ἐπὶ τῶν αἰσθητηρίων συμβαίνει εὶ γὰρ λάβοι ὁ πρεσβύτης ὅμμα τοιονδὶ, βλέποι ὰν ὥσπερ καὶ ὁ νέος. ὥστε τὸ γῆρας οὐ τῷ τὴν ψυχήν τι πεπον-

from this it is the mere potentiality of thought.¹ And since actual thought in the sphere of nature precedes the mere potentiality to think, while in the sphere of the human mind potentiality necessarily precedes actuality,² Aristotle distinguishes two kinds of Reason in man—the Actual and the Potential, the Active and the Passive: ³ that which produces everything, and that which becomes everything.⁴ The former alone is separate and distinct from the body—impassible, eternal, immortal, absolutely pure and perfect Actuality. Pas-

θέναι, ἀλλ' ἐν ῷ [= ἀλλὰ τῷ πεπονθέναι τι ἐκεῖνο ἐν ῷ ῆ ψυχή ἐστιν], καθάπερ ἐν μέθαις καὶ νόσοις. καὶ τὸ νοεῖν δὴ καὶ τὸ θεωρεῖν μαραίνεται ἄλλου τινὸς ἔσω [inside the body] φθειρομένου, αὐτὸ δὲ ἀπαθές ἐστιν [the subject of ἀπαθές is τὸ νοοῦν, which corresponds to νοῦς αλονε and is to be supplied from νοεῖν] . . . δ δὲ νοῦς ἴσως θειδτερόν τι καὶ ἀπαθές ἐστιν. iii. 5, 430, a. 22 (see p. 98, n. 1, infra); Metaph. xii. 3, 1070, a. 24 sqq. (see Sec. on Immortality, infra).

De An. iii. 4,429, a, 21 sqq. b. 5 sqq. 30; see i. 199, n. 2, supra, where the meaning of this statement is further explained.

² See i. 199, n. 2, supra

^a Aristotle certainly speaks of νοῦς παθητικὸς (see p. 98, n. 1, infra); on the other hand, he nowhere uses the expression ποιητικὸς νοῦς (cf. Bonitz, Ind. Ar. 491, b, 2; WALTER, Die Lehre v. d. prakt. Vern. 278 sqq.), perhaps because he wished to avoid the ambiguity which might arise out of the opposition he elsewhere makes between ποιεῦν απα πράττειν on the one hand, and θεωρεῦν on the other (see i. 182, n. 2,

supra), if the νοῦς ποιητ. were taken to be the antithesis of νοῦς θεωρητικός (De An ii. 3, 415, a. 11, iii, 9, 432, b, 27, iii, 10, 433, a, 14), in the same sense as voûs трактікдя (De An. iii. ibid.) must be. But a the νοῦς ποιητ, is called αίτιον και ποιητικόν, as it is said πάντα ποιείν, and as ποιητικός is elsewhere constantly used as the antithesis of παθητικός (Ind. Ar. 555, b, 16 sqq.), we seem to be perfectly justified in speaking of the passive and the active reason, especially as this seems to be already a recognised mode of expression in ALEX. De An. 140 (cf. WALTER, 282).

* De An. iii. 5 init.: èπel δ'
κοπερ èν ἀπάση τῆ φύσει ἐστί τι
τό μὲν ὕλη έκάστω γένει (τοῦτο δὲ
δ πάντα δυνάμει ἐκεῖνα), ἔτερον δὲ
τὸ αἴτιον καὶ ποιητικόν, τῷ ποιεῖν
πάντα, οῖον ἡ τέχνη πρὸς τὴν ὕλην
πέπονθεν, ἀνάγκη καὶ ἐν τῆ ψυχῆ
ὑπάρχειν ταύτας τὰς διαφοράς. καὶ
ἔστιν ὁ μὲν τοιοῦτος νοῦς τῷ πάντα
γίνεσθαι, ὁ δὲ τῷ πάντα ποιεῖν, ὡς
ἔξις τις, οῖον τὸ φῶς τρόπον γάρ
τινα καὶ τὸ φῶς ποιεῖ τὰ δυνάμει
ὕντα χρώματα ἐνεργεία χρώματα.

sive Reason, on the other hand, is born and dies with the body, and is a partaker in its states.¹

If we try, however, to reduce this account to a clear and consistent theory, we are met by many questions which Aristotle has left unanswered.

1 Thid, where Aristotle continues: καλ οῦτος ὁ νοῦς Γό ποιητικός] χωριστός και άπαθής και αμιγής τη οὐσία ων ένεργεία [or ένέργεια]. ἀεὶ γὰρ τιμιώτερον τὸ ποιούν του πάσχοντος και ή άρχη της ύλης. τὸ δ' αὐτό ἐστιν ἡ κατ' ενέργειαν επιστήμη τω πράγματι · [cf. 398. n. 3. supra] ή δὲ κατὰ δύναμιν χρόνω προτέρα ἐν τῷ ἐνὶ, ὅλως δὲ οὐδέ so TORSTR. reads instead of οὐ] χρόνω · άλλ' οὐχ ότὲ μὲν νοεῖ ότ $\dot{ \epsilon}$ δ' οὐ νο $\dot{ \epsilon} \dot{ \epsilon}$. χωρισθελς δ' έστλ μόνον τοῦθ' ὅπερ ἐστλ [apart from the body it is only what it is without admixture of any foreign ingredient], και τοῦτο μόνον ἀθάνατον καὶ ἀΐδιον. οὐ μνημονεύομεν δὲ, ὅτι τοῦτο μὲν ἀπαθὲς. ὁ δὲ παθητικός νους φθαρτός και άνευ τούτου οὐθέν νοεί. The words at the beginning of this passage are interpreted by BRENTANO (Psychol. d. Ar. 175) and HERT-LING (Mat. u. Form, 173) as meaning 'this Nous also is separate.' This is opposed, however, both to the grammar and to the sense of the passage; in the first place, the connection is thus broken between this sentence and the preceding (we should require at least και ούτος δε δ νους &c.), and, secondly, not only is there nothing in the previous discussion about another kind of Nous which is also χωριστός and ἀπαθής, but Aristotle knows of none such, the νοῦς παθητικός, of which he has just been speaking, being of course not ἀπαθης, while the Nous that

is spoken of, c. 4 (as will be shown p. 101, n. 2, infra), is itself the active Nous. The words: τὸ δ' αὐτὸ ... χρόνφ that follow are repeated at the heginning of c. 7; but as they there awkwardly interrupt the connection, TORSTRIK, p. 199, is doubtless right in holding that they along with the rest of c. 7, § 1 (to τετελεσμένον, 431, a, 7) are out of place. On the other hand, TORSTRIK (p. 185) cannot be right in striking out the ούχ in the words άλλ' ούχ ότὲ μὲν νοεί &c. According to his reading no intelligible meaning can be attached to the remark that the Nous at one time thinks, at another it ceases to think; whereas it becomes quite intelligible if we suppose Aristotle to say: 'In the world as a whole merely potential knowledge does not precede actual knowledge even in the order of time (not to speak of that of being); it is not the case (in the world as a whole) that the Nous [this must in any case be supplied as the subject at one time thinks. at another ceases to think.' (To make this sense more obvious a comma might be placed instead of a colon before αλλ' οὐχ &c.) Nor is this sense inconsistent with $\mu \dot{\eta}$ del $\nu o \in \hat{\iota} \nu$, c. 4, 430, a, 5, as these words refer to thought in the individual, in which the passage before us also recognises the distinction between the potential and the actual, and therefore $\tau \delta$ μη del voeiv.

In the first place, with regard to Active Reason, it might appear that this is not only the Divine in man, but that it is identical with the Divine Spirit itself. For while it enters each man along with the germ of his physical and psychical nature as something individual, yet at the same time the terms in which it is described are such as apply only to the Universal Spirit. It is at least difficult to understand what is left of individuality when we have abstracted from it not only all corporeal life, but also all active evolution, all passive states, and with these all memory and self-consciousness.3 So far Alexander of Aphrodisias had excellent cause to seek for the Active Reason in the Divine Spirit rather than in a part of the human soul.4 But this cannot be Aristotle's meaning. For the extramundane Divine Spirit cannot be identified with the indwelling principle of Reason which passes into the individual at birth and is a part of the human soul.5 Yet how we are precisely to represent to ourselves this part of our soul, and what kind of reality we are to ascribe to it, it is difficult to Since it is said to enter the body from without,6

's That even these belong to the sphere of the passive reason is expressly stated *De An*. iii. 5 (p. 97, n.1), and proved in the sequel.

4 Cf. Part. iii. a, 712, 4.

See the passages cited, p. 96, n. 1 and 2, supra, and Eth. x. 7, 1177, a, 15: εἶτε θεῖον δν καὶ αὐτὸ [ὁ νοῦς] εἴτε τῶν ἐν ἡμῖν θειότατον. b, 30: εἰ δἡ θεῖον ὁ νοῦς πρὸς τὸν ἄνθοωπον.

² This can only be where there is a transition from the potential to the actual; in the active reason, on the other hand, there is nothing merely potential, for all is pure actuality.

⁵ The distinction between the active and the passive reason is said (and to this THEMIST. De An. 89, b, pp. 188 sq. Sp. and AMMON. in PHILOP. De An. Q, 3, 0, also appeal) to reside ἐντῆ ψυχῆ (see ibid. supra); of one μόριον τῆς ψυχῆς it is said, De An. iii. 4, 429, a, 10, 15, that it is ἀπαθὲς; the νοῦς χωριστὸς is called. De An. ii. 2, 413, b, 2½, ψυχῆς γένος ἔτερον &cc.

⁶ See p. 96, n. 1, supra.

it must have existed previously. And this is evidently Aristotle's view.1 Since, moreover, even after it has entered the body it stands aloof from it and takes no part in its activity,2 the independence of its life is not compromised by this union, nor is it conditioned in any way by the life of the body. But on the other hand, whether we look at the matter from our own or from Aristotle's point of view, the individuality which belongs to Reason as a part of the human soul appears in this way to be sacrificed. For according to Aristotle the individual Callias or the individual Socrates is constituted only by the union of the universal form of man with this particular human body.3 So, in like manner, only when Reason enters a human body and employs it as its instrument do we have an individual human But how when it is united with no body, or when in spite of such union it has no material organ and is wholly unaffected by the body, it could be the reason of this definite individual-how, in other words, it could constitute a rational Ego, baffles comprehen-

¹ Inthe passage 736, b, 15 sqq. referred to at p. 96 ευρ., it is said with regard to the ψυχλ αἰσθητική and νοητική: ἀναγκαῖον δὲ ἤτοι μὴ οὐσας πρότερον [sc. τὰς ψυχὰς] ἐγγίνεσθαι πάσας ἢπάσας προϋπαρχούσας, ἢ τὰς μὲν τὰς δὲ μὴ, καὶ ἐγγίνεσθαι ἢ ἐν τῆ ΰλη [therefore in the menses] μὴ εἰσελθούσας ἐν τῷ τοῦ ἀρρενος σπέρματι, ἢ ἐνταῦθα [in the mother] μὲν ἐκεῖθεν [from the σπέρμα] ἐλθούσας, ἐν δὲ τῷ ἄρρενι ἢ θύραθεν ἐγγινομένας ἀπάσας ἢ μηδεμίαν ἢ τὰς μὲν τὰς δὲ ψή. As the passage proceeds immediately to say (see p. 96, n. 1, ὅτι μὲν τοίνυν

οὐχ οἶόν τε πάσας ποϋπάρχειν, φανερόν ἐστιν [since some are united to bodily organs], ἄστε καὶ θύραθεν εἰσιέναι ἀδύνατον—it is obvious that according to Aristotle προϋπάρχειν and θύραθεν εἰσιέναι are inseparably connected, and that accordingly if the latter is true of the Nous and of it alone, the former must also be true.

² Cf. p. 94, n. 2, p. 96, n. 1, ενρ. (οὐθὲν αὐτοῦ τῆ ἐνεργεία κοινωνεῖ σωματικὴ ἐνέργεια).

³ Cf. i. 369, n. 5, 6, supra.

sion.¹ Aristotle himself says,² indeed, that we do not recollect the former existence of active reason, because it is the passive reason which renders thought possible, and this is perishable;³ just as he predicates con-

1 How its connection with the body is in this case possible at all is equally unintelligible, seeing that according to p. 106, n. 5, infra, the body is connected with the soul itself as its tool.

² In the words quoted p. 98, n. 1, sup., from De An. iii. 5, 430, a, 23 : οὐ μνημονεύομεν δὲ &c. It does not matter very much whether we understand these words in their simplest sense as meaning that in the present life we have no recollection of the former one. or that after death we have no recollection of the present life, or more generally that the eternal life of the active Nous is wholly without memory- for the reasons why 'we do not remember' hold of the continuity of consciousness between the life which the reason lives in union with the passive Nous and that which it lives in freedom from it both backwards and forwards. In the first instance, however (as is shown by BIEHL, Ueb. d. Begr. des vous b. Arist. Linz, 1864, p. 12 sq., and TRENDELENBURG in loco, who, however, afterwards, n. on p. 404, 2nd ed., changed his view), the words certainly mean that in the present life we remember no former one. This is the meaning suggested by the context and supported by the present tense of the verb.

⁸ Οὐ μνημονεύομεν δὲ ὅτι τοῦτο μὲν ἀπαθὲς, ὁ δὲ παθητικὸς νοῦς φθαρτὸς καὶ ἄνευ τούτου οὐθὲν νοεῖ. TRENDELENBURG translates the

latter words, 'and as the passive reason does not think anything apart from the active reason. But it is not easy to see what they add to the explanation. If memory belongs to the νοῦς παθητικλε of course, as φθαρτός (which as the antithesis of ἀίδιον refers to the beginning as well as the ending of existence, cf. i. 366, n. 1 fin. supra) the latter can have no recollection of the time in which it did not vet exist, or at the time in which it no longer exists; and the remark καλ ἄνευ &c. is therefore superfluous. If, on the other hand it is the νοῦς ἀπαθης to which memory belongs, the failure of memory is not explained at all, since it is said, not that it cannot do without the νοῦς παθητικός, but that the νοῦς παθ. cannot do without it in the exercise of its activity. We must take τούτου, therefore, as meaning the νοῦς παθητ. and νοεί either in an absolute sense, according to a familiar usage in Aristotle = οὐθεν νοεί δ νοών (or ή ψυχή), no thought is possible, or as having the active Nous for its subject. The latter is not inconsistent with the previous οὐχ ότὲ μέν νοεί &c. (p. 98, n. 1); for even there it is admitted that in the individual potential knowledge precedes actual, and therefore σὐχ ότὲ μὲν νοεί &c. does not apply to individual thought. It is of this, however, that we must understand Aristotle to speak in the words, άνευ τούτου οὐθὲν νοεί; which mean, therefore, nothing

tinuous thought (which he attributes to active reason) only of reason in general, and not of reason in any individual.¹ But where shall we look for that principle of reason which in unchangeable, eternal, unfettered by the body, and ceaselessly active, if it coincides neither with the Divine thought on the one hand, nor with the thought of any individual on the other?

No less serious are the difficulties that surround the doctrine of the passive reason. We understand what led Aristotle to distinguish in the first instance a twofold reason in man: he could not overlook the gradual evolutions of the spiritual life and the difference between the faculty and the activity of Thought; while, on the other hand, he was forbidden by the principles of his philosophy to think of Pure Reason as in any sense material, or at least to predicate of it attributes and states which can belong to matter alone. We see, also, what in general he meant by the phrase Passive Reason: viz. the sum of those faculties of representation which go beyond imagination and sensible perception and yet fall short of that higher Thought, which has found peace in perfect unity with its object. The Passive Reason is that side of Thought which deals with the manifold of sense. It has its roots in the life of the body, and develops out of sensible experience.2

more than the statement elsewhere made, that the soul cannot think without a $\phi d\nu \tau a\sigma \mu a$ (cf. p. 108, n. 2, infra).

(Gesch. d. Entw. i. 518, cf. Hundb. ii. b, 1178) understands by 'passive spirit,' spirit 'in its connection with representation in so far as it borrows the material for mediating thought from it and sensible perception and requires mental pictures,' or 'in so far as it operates as mediat-

In the words of the passage we have been discussing (p. 98, n. 1): ἡ δὲ κατὰ δύναμιν χρόνφ προτέρα ἐν τῷ ἐνὶ &c.

² In this sense BRANDIS

But when we go on and try to form a more definite conception of this part or faculty of the soul, we find the theory full of the most obvious contradictions and defects. On the other hand, Passive Reason is identified with Nous and the spiritual element in man. This Aristotle definitely distinguishes from all the faculties of sense-perception, so that it is impossible to identify it either, as Trendelenburg 1 did, with the unity of these, or, as Brentano does,2 with fancy as the seat of mental pictures.3 All these man has in common with the beasts, whereas Nous is that which elevates him above them.4 And yet, on the other hand, everything is denied of the Passive Reason as such, which elsewhere is regarded as peculiarly characteristic of Reason itself. Speaking of Nous quite generally, Aristotle says that it is neither born nor dies; it is liable to neither suffering nor change; it is separate from the body and has no bodily organ; it acts altogether independently of the body: it enters it from without; it

ing thought.' Similarly, BIEHL, Ueb. d. Begr. d. voïs b. ARIST. (Linz, 1864, Gymn. Progr.), pp. 16 sq. But the difficulties above noted are not thus met.

'Quæ a sensu inde ad imaginationem mentem antecesserunt, ad res percipiendas menti necessaria; sed ad intellegendas non sufficiunt. Omnes illas, quæ praæcedunt, facultates in unum quasi nodum collectas, quatenus ad rescogitandas postulantur, νοῦν παθητικὸν dictas esse arbitramur. Similarly, Hertling, Mat. u. Form, 174, defines νοῦς παθ. as 'the cognitive capacity of the sensitive part.'

² Psychol. d. Ar. 208 sq.

³ Upon which see p. 108, n. 2, infra.

4 Cf. p. 58 sq., p. 61, with p. 93 supra. The name itself of νοῦς παθητ. is a preliminary objection to this explanation. For the faculties of sensation and presentation Aristotle has the fixed terms, αἴσθησις and φαντασία. Why, then, should he make use of another incomprehensible and misleading one without giving any indication that it is synonymous with these terms? Nor can appeal be made to Eth. vi. 12, 1143, b, 4, as αἴσθησις does not there mean sense-perception; cf. i. 250, μ. 1, supra.

neither comes into existence with it nor perishes with it.1 Yet in the sequel we learn that all this holds in truth only of the Active Reason. It alone is bodiless, impassible, eternal, imperishable, &c.2 By what right, then, Passive Reason can be regarded as Nous, or how two natures with characteristics so incompatible—the one mutable, the other immutable; the one passive, the other impassive; the one mere potentiality, the other ceaseless activity—how these two can constitute one being, one spiritual personality, passes comprehension. Nor do we require to look further than the impossibility of harmonising the Aristotelian doctrine of the twofold Reason with itself to find an explanation of the wide

¹ Cf. p. 93 sq.

² See p. 98. The attempt to obviate this difficulty by the supposition of a third form of νοῦς, as the 'receptive understanding,' differing alike from the active and the passive reason and alluded to De An. iii. 4 (BREN-TANO, Psychol. d. Ar. 143, 175, 204 sq. 208; HERTLING, Mat. u. Form, 170 sq.) cannot be supported. Aristotle indeed calls vovs (De An. iii. 4, 429, a, 15) δεκτικόν του είδους, but there is not a word to indicate that he regards this 'receptive' reason as a third faculty different from the active and passive. He is speaking in De An. iii. 4 of Nous quite generally, as he does alo in identical terms and with the same generality in De An. i. 4. ii. 1, 2; Gen. An. ii. 3 (p. 94, n. 2; p. 95, n. 1,p. 96, n. 2, sup.). It is equally difficult to obtain any clear conception of this 'receptive understanding' or to find a place for it in Aristotle's doctrine of the

soul. Nor, indeed, would anything be gained by such an assumption. If it is said, in De An. iii. 5, that the active Nous alone is χωριστός, απαθής, αμιγής, αθάνατος, αίδιος, and if the same predicates are assigned in c. 4 to a different faculty, i.e. the 'receptive' reason (there is no express mention, indeed, here of its eternity, but this is involved in χωριστός), we have simply a contradiction in terms. If, on the other hand, those predicates are first assigned to Nous in general, and it is afterwards added that they belong only to the higher part of it, whereas the other statement made about it (that it is nothing everyela before it thinks; see, p. 94, n. 2, supra) is true of its lower part, there is at least no obvious contradiction in the explanation. In this case the difficulty arises later, when we further ask how are we to conceive of these two parts in dedivergence of the views of its critics as to its true meaning.1

Reason realises itself in Thought, which regarded in its essence is not the mediate process of forming conceptions by the gradual union of their several parts, but is a single immediate apprehension of intelligible reality, constituting one indivisible act.² It deals, not with

' Theophrastus had already found difficulties in Aristotle's doctrine of the Nous (cf. 2nd ed. pp. 677 sq.) The example of Aristocles and Alexander of Aphrodisias shows (cf. ZELL, pt. iii. a. 703 sq. 712) how the later Peripatetics differed on the subject. Cf. further the citations and explanations of THEMIST. De An. 89, b, 9 sq. and PHILOP. De An. Q. 2, and sqq. (less satisfactory is SIMPL. De An. 67, b. f.). In the middle ages it was chiefly among the Arabian philosophers and the Italian followers of Averroës that the question was debated. The older and the more recent views upon the doctrine of the twofold na ure of the Nous, especially (p. 8-29) those of Avicenna, Averroës and Thomas, are fully discussed by BRENTANO, ibid. 5 sqq.

² As already shown (i. 203, n. 3, sup.), Aristotle describes the thinking of νοῦs as a contact of it with the object of thought. In this way it has unity and especially qualitative simplicity, which is not, like the unity of space and time, again itself divisible; De An. iii. 6 init.: ἡ μὲν οῦν τῶν ἀδιαίρετων νόησις ἐν τούτοις, περὶ & οὐκ ἔστι τὸ ψέοδος . . . τὸ δ' ἀδιαίρετον ἐπεὶ διχῶς, ἡ δυνάμει ἡ ἐνεργεία, οὐθὲν κωλύει νοεῖν τὸ ἀδιαίρετον, ὅτων νοῆ τὸ μῆκος ἀδιαίρετον γὰρ

ένεργεία και έν χρόνω άδιαιρέτω: δμοίως γάρ δ χρόνος διαιρετές καλ αδιαίρετος τῷ μήκει, οἴκουν ἔστιν είπειν εν τῷ ἡμίσει τί εννοεί έκατέρω, οὐ γάρ ἐστιν, ἄν μη διαιρεθῆ. άλλ' ή δυνάμει [i.e. in every spatial quantity, if it is presented, not successively, but simultaneously as a whole, an αδιαίρετον is thought, for though divisible it is not actually divided] . . . τδ δὲ μὴ κατὰ ποσὸν ἀδιαίρετον ἀλλὰ τῶ εἴδει νοεῖ ἐν ἀδιαιρέτω χρόνω καὶ ἀδιαιρέτω της ψυχης. After showing further that in the case of space and time the indivisible quantities like the point are known only by antithesis to the divisible. and that this is so also with evil, Aristotle continues, 430, b, 24: εὶ δέ τινι μὴ ἔστιν ἐναντίον τῶν aiτίων [these words, which Tor-STRIK also, 193 sqq., endeavours to emend by a conjecture which is not quite clear, seem obviously to be most emended by assuming that Twv alτίων, for which Cod. S. gives έναντίων, his arisen from έναντίον by a reader's error and duplication; for the πρώτον, the divine reason, is said also to have no ἐναντίον by reason of its immateriality, Metaph. xii. 10, 1075, b, 21, 21, αὐτὸ ξαυτὸ γινώσκει και ενεργεία εστι και χωριστόν. That this knowledge is immediate

any combination of conceptions, but with the pure conceptions themselves, which are the undemonstrable presuppositions of all knowledge. It is, therefore, absolutely true and infallible,1 and must be distinguished from mediate apprehension² or knowledge.³ Yet Aristotle fails to tell us what are the faculties upon which its exercise depends and what is its relation to these, although we can hardly but suppose that some operation of the Active upon the Passive Reason is here Similarly Opinion 4 may be regarded as the product of Reason and Perception,5 although here also

is implied both here and in passages such as Anal. Post. i. 3, 72, b, 18, ii. 9 init. (των τί ἐστι τὰ μὲν ἄμεσα καὶ ἀρχαί εἰσιν, ἃ καὶ είναι και τι έστιν ύποθέσθαι δεί ή άλλον τρόπον φανερά ποιῆσαι); с. 10, 94, a, 9, where it is added that the reason is the faculty which has to do with first principles. Cf. i. 245 sqq., i. 197, n. 4, supra.

¹ See i. 197, n. 4, supra.

² This mediate knowledge was distinguished from vous by Plato by the name διάνοια or έπιστήμη (see ZELL. pt. i. 536, 2); similarly Arist. De An. i. 4, 408, b, 24 sqq. where it is called διάνοια, and ibid. ii. 3, 415, a, 7 sgq. where it is called λογισμός and διάνοια. Usually, however, Aristotle employs διάνοια and διανοείσθαι in a wider sense, for thought generally (e.g. Metaph. vi. 1, 1025, b, 6; Polit. vii. 2, 1324, a, 20, c. 3, 1325, b, 20; Eth. ii. 1 init.; Poet. 6, 1450, a, 2, and elsewhere); τὸ λογιστικὸν indicates (De An. iii. 9, 432, b, 26) likewise the faculty of thought in general, although in most places (e.g. Eth. vi. 2, 1139, a, 12, sqq.; De An. iii. 10, 433, a, 12, b, 29, c. 11, 434, a, 7) it is the deliberative faculty, or practical reason (see infra). On διάνοια, cf. ALEX. on Metaph. 1012, a, 2; THEMIST. De An. 71, b, o; TRENDELEN-BURG, Arist. De An. 272; Schwegler, Arist. Metaph. iii. 183; BONITZ, Arist. Metaph. ii. 214, and especially WAITZ, Arist. Org. ii. 298; on Loyiouds Bonitz, ibid. 39 sq.

⁸ Eth. vi. 3, 1139, b, 31 (after explaining the distinguishing characteritics of ἐπιστήμη): ή μεν άρα επιστήμη εστίν έξις άποδεικτική. See further ibid. above and cf. i. 163, n. 3. It is a further meaning of the word when in Anal. Post. i. 3, 72, b, 18, 33, 88, a, 36, an ἐπιστήμη ἀναπόδεικτος is spoken of, and defined as υπόληψις της αμέσου προτάσεως (on which see i. 197, supra).

On the difference between opinion and knowledge, see i.

163, supra.

⁵ On the one hand, δόξα has to do, not, like knowledge, with we are without any express statement. Moreover, it must be by the operation of Reason that man can recall at pleasure his former impressions and recognise them as his own.¹ To the same source in Reason we must refer, lastly, practical wisdom or insight (φρόνησιs) and art. These Aristotle distinguishes from knowledge in that they both refer to something that can be otherwise than it is; the former having for its object an action, the latter a creation.² He remarks, however, at the same time that they both depend upon right knowledge, and he singles out wisdom especially as one of the intellectual virtues.³ But that which reveals more clearly than anything else the dependence of reason upon the lower faculties in Aristotle's doctrine

the necessary and immutable, but with $\tau\delta$ $\epsilon\nu\delta\epsilon\chi\delta\mu\epsilon\nu\sigma\nu$ ällows έχειν, it is ὑπόληψις της αμέσου προτάσεως καὶ μὴ ἀναγκαίας (Anal. Post. i. 33, 89, a, 2; cf. Metaph. vii. 15, 1039, b, 31; Eth. vi. 3, 1139, b, 18); the contingent, however, can only be known empirically by perception. On the other hand, ὑπόληψις, which in reality coincides in meaning with δόξα (Eth. ibid.; Top. vi. 11, 149, a, 10; Categ. 7, 8, b. 10; Anal. Pri. ii. 21, 66, b, 18, 67, b, 12 sqq. and elsewhere; WAITZ, Arist. Org. i. 523), is assigned to νοῦς, and δόξα is distinguished (De An. iii. 3, 428, a, 20) from φαντασία by the remark: δόξη μέν έπεται πίστις (οὐκ ἐνδέχεται γὰρ δοξάζοντα οἶς δοκεῖ μὴ πιστεύειν), τῶν δὲ θηρίων οὐθενὶ ὑπάρχει πίστις, φαντασία δὲ πολλοίς. έτι πάση μέν δόξη ακολουθεῖ πίστις, πίστει δὲ τὸ πεπεῖσθαι. πειθοί δε λόγος των δε θηρίων

ένίοις φαντασία μέν ὑπάρχει, λόγος δ' οὕ.

5' oŭ.

1 See p. 74, n. 1, supra.

² Eth. vi. 4, 1140, a, 16: έπει δε ποίησις και πράξις έτερον, ἀνάγκη τὴν τέχνην ποιήσεως άλλ' οὺ πράξεως εἶναι. Thus τέχνη is defined (Eth. vi. 4) έξις μετά λόγου άληθοῦς ποιητική, φσόνησις (ibid. and c. 5, 1140, a, 3, b, 4) έξις άληθης μετά λόγου πρακτική περί τὰ ἀνθρώπω ἀγαθὰ καί κακά. On the former see further i. 208, n. 1, supra; on the latter Lth. vi. 7 sq., c. 11, 1143, a, 8, c. 13, 1143, b, 20, vi. 1152, a, 8; Polit. iii. 4, 1277, a, 14, b, 25; and on ποίησις and πράξις i. 183, n. 1, supra. We shall return to both in discussing the Ethics.

 5 See preced. n. and Rhet. i. 9, 1366, b. 20: φρύνηστε δ' έστὶν ἀρετή διανοίας, καθ' ἡν εὖ βουλεύ-εσθαι δύνανται περὶ ἀγαθῶν καὶ κακῶν τῶν εἶρημένων εἰς εὐδαι-

μονίαν.

is his view of the gradual evolution of Knowledge out of Perception and Experience.¹ He remarks, also, that all thoughts are necessarily accompanied by an inner representation or imaginative picture, whose service to Thought is similar to that of the drawn figure to the mathematician. And for this he finds a reason in the inseparable union of insensible Forms with sensible Things.² This complete interdependence of reason and sense, however, only makes all the more palpable the gaps which Aristotle's doctrine of Nous leaves between the two.

The same is true also of the practical activity of Reason in the sphere of the Will.³ Even in the lower irrational animals Desire springs from sensation, for wherever there is sensation there is pleasure and pain, and with these comes Desire, which is indeed nothing else than the effort after what is pleasant.⁴ Sensation announces to us in the first place only the existence of an object, and towards this we place ourselves by the feelings of pleasure and pain in definite attitudes of acceptance or refusal. We feel it to be good or bad,

¹ See i. 205, supra.

² De Am. iii. 8; see also ibid. c. 7, 431, a. 14: τῆ δὲ διανοητικῆ ψυχῆ τὰ φαντάσματα οἷον αἰσθήματα ὑπάρχει . . . διὸ οὐδέποτε νοεῖ ἄνευ φαντάσματος ἡ ψυχή. b, 2: τὰ μὲν οὖν εἴδη τὸ νοητικὸν ἐν τοῖς φαντάσμασι νοεῖ. De Mem. 1, 419, b, 30: ἐπεὶ δὲ . . . νοεῖν οὺκ ἔστιν ἄνευ φαντάσματος συμβαίνει γὰρ τὸ αὐτὸ πάθος ἐν τῷ νοεῖν ὅπερ καὶ ἐν τῷ διαγράφειν ἐκεῖ τε γὰρ οὐθὲν προσχρώνοι τῷ τὸ ποσὸν ὡρισμένον εἶναι τὸ τριγώνου, ὅμως γράφουεν ὡριστιένου οἰ, διως γράφουεν ὡριστος διως γράφουεν ὡριστος διως γράφουεν ὡριστιένον οῦν δριστιένον ὁν δρι

κατά το ποσόν και δ νοῶν ὡσαύτως, κᾶν μη ποσόν νοῆ, τίθεται προ όμμάτων ποσόν, νοείδ' οὐχ ἢ ποσόν. ἀν δ' ή φύσις ἢ τῶν ποσῶν, ἀδριστον δὲ, τίθεται μὲν ποσον ὡρισμένου, νοείδ' ἢ ποσόν μόνους.

³ SCHRADER, Arist. de Voluntate Doctrina, Brandenb. 1847. (Gymn. Progr.); WALTER, Die Lehre v. d. prakt. Vernunft in d. griech. Phil. 1874.

⁴ De An. ii. 2, 413, b, 23, 3, 414, b, 4; De Sonno, 1, 454, b, 29; Part. An. ii. 17, 661, a, 6; cf. p. 22, n. 1, supra.

and there arises in us in consequence longing or abhorrence—in a word, a Desire.¹ The ultimate ground of this desire lies in 'the practical good,' i.e. in that of which the possession or non-possession depends upon our own action. The thought of this good sets the appetitive part of the soul in motion,² which in turn through the organs of the body moves the living creature.³ The inner process by which desire arises

1 De An iii. 7, 431, a. 8: το μèν οὖν αἰσθάνεσθαι ὅμοιον τῷ φάναι μόνον καὶ νοεῖν ὅταν δὲ ἡδὺ ἡ λυπηρὸν, οἷον καταφᾶσα ἡ ἀποφᾶσα, διώκει ἡ φεύγει [cf. Εth. vi. 2, 1139, a, 21: ἔστι δ΄, ὅπερ ἐν διανοία κατάφαπις καὶ ἀπόφασις, τοῖτ' ἐν ὀρέξει δίωξις καὶ φυγή] καὶ ἔστι τὸ ἡδεσθαι καὶ λυπεῖσθαι τὸ ἐνεργεῖν τῆ σἰσθητικῆ μεσότητι πρὸς τὸ ἀγαθὸν ἡ κακὸν, ἡ τοιαῦτα. καὶ ἡ ψυγἡ δὲ καὶ ἡ ὑρεξις τοῦτο [v. l. τὸ αὐτὸ] ἡ κατ' ἐνέργειαν, καὶ οὐχ ἔτερον τὸ ὀρεκτικὸν καὶ φευκτικὸν, οὕτ' ἀλλήλων οὕτε τοῦ αἰσθητικοῦ ἀλλά τὸ εἶναι ἄλλο.

² All desire, therefore, presupposes a presentation, although the latter must by no means be mistaken for desire. $D_r An$. iii. 10, 433, α, 9: φαίνεται δέ γε δύο ταῦτα κινοῦντα, ἡ ὄρεξις ἡ νοῦς, εἴ τις τὴν φαντασίαν τιθ∈ η ὡς νόησίν τινα πολλά γάρ παρά την έπιστήμην ἀκολουθοί σι ταις φαντασίαις και έν τοις άλλοις ζώσις ου νοήσις οὐδὲ λογισμός ἐστιν, ἀλλὰ φαντασία . . . ώστε εὐλόγως ταῦτα δύο φα νεται τὰ κινοῦντα, ὕρεξις καὶ διάνοια πρακτική . . . καὶ ἡ φαντασία δὲ όταν κινή, οὺ κινεί άνευ ὀρ ξεως. b. 27: η δρεκτικόν τὸ ζώον, ταύτη κινητικόν . δρεκτικόν δέ οὺκ ἄνευ φαντασίας φαντασία δὲ πασα ή λογιστική ή αίσθητική: [See p. 73, n. 2, supra.] ταύτης

μèν οδν καὶ τὰ ἄλλα ζῷα μετέχει. (Cf. c. 11, 434, a, 5.) Phantasy is thus (as SCHRADER, p. 8 sq. and BRENTANO, Psychol. d. Ar. 161, also remark) the link which connects our thoughts with the desires and impulses which spring from them. Of the process, however, by which thought thus passes into desire Aristotle gives no further analysis.

³ De An. iii. 10, 433, a, 27: άελ κινεί μέν το δρεκτον [as was previously proved, l. 14 sqq] αλλά τοῦτ' ἐστίν ἡ τὸ ἀγαθὸν ἡ τὸ φαινόμενον άγαθόν, οὐ πᾶν δὲ, άλλὰ τὸ πρακτὸν ἀγαθόν. πρακτὸν δ' έστι το ένδεχόμενον και άλλως έχειν. ὅτι μὲν οὖν ἡ τοιαύτη δύναμις κινεί της ψυχης ή καλουμένη ὕρεξις, φανερόν . . . ἐπεὶ δ' ἐστὶ τρ'α, εν μεν το κινούν, δεύτερον δ' ὧ κινεί, τρίτον τὸ κινούμενον τὸ δὲ κινοῦν διττὸν, τὸ μὲν ἀκίνητον, τὸ δὲ κινοῦν καὶ κινούμενον [cf. i. 389, ετιντα]. έστιδε το μεν ακίνητον το πρακτόν αγαθόν, το δε κινούν και κινούμενον το όρεκτικον (κινείται γάρ το ορεγόμενον ή ορέγεται, και ή ἔρεξις κίνησίς τίς έστιν [as TREN-DELENBURG rightly reads] ή ἐνέργεια) [v. l. ή ἐν.—Torstr. conjectures ή ένεργεία, but this is unnecessary], τὸ δὲ κινούμενον τὸ ζώον - ῷ δὲ κινεῖ ὀργάνω ἡ ὅρεξις, ήδη τοῦτο σωματικόν ἐστιν. We Aristotle represents as a syllogistic conclusion, inasmuch as in each action a given case is brought under a general rule.¹ In order properly to understand how bodily movements spring from will and desire we must recollect that all changes of inner feeling involve a corresponding change in the state of the body.² This is more fully developed in the treatise on the *Motion of Animals*. The process by which will follows upon the presentation of the object, is, we are told, a kind of inference. The major premiss is the conception of a general end; the minor premiss is an actual instance coming under the general conception; while the conclusion is the action which issues from the subsumption of the second under the first.³ Usually, however, the

shall recur to this at a later point. A good commentary on the passage before us is furnished by *De Motu An.* 6, 700, b, 15 sqq., which is probably

modelled upon it.

¹ Eth. vi. 5, 1147, a, 25: ή μὲν γὰρ καθόλου δόξα ἡ δ' ἐτέρα περί τῶν καθ' εκαστά ἐστιν, ὧν αίσθησις ήδη κυρία · [Similarly De An. iii. 4. 434, a, 17.] ὅταν δὲ μία γένηται έξ αὐτῶν, ἀνάγκη τὸ συμπερανθέν ένθα μέν φάναι την ψυχην, έν δὲ ταῖς ποιητικαῖς πράττειν εὐθὺς. οίον, εἰ παντός γλυκέος γεύεσθαι δεῖ, τουτὶ δὲ γλυκὸ, ὡς ἕν τι τῶν καθ' εκαστον, ἀνάγκη τον δυνάμενον καί μη κωλυδιιένον άμα τοῦτο καί πράττειν. c. 13, 1144, a, 31: οί γάρ συλλογισμοί τῶν πρακτῶν άρχην έχοντές είσιν, έπειδη τοιόνδε τὸ τέλος καὶ τὸ ἄριστον. Cf. c. 12, 1143, b, 3 (see i. 197, n. 4, supra), where a 'minor premiss' is spoken of in reference to action. ² De An. i. 1, 403, a, 16: ĕoike

δὲ καὶ τὰ τῆς ψυχῆς πάθη πάντα είναι μετά σώματος, θυμός, πραότης, φόβος, έλεος, θάρσος, έτι χαρά καί τὸ φιλεῖν τε καὶ μισεῖν ἄμα γὰρ τούτοις πάσχει τι τὸ σῶμα. This is seen in the fact that according to the physical state forcible impressions at one time produce no effect; at another, light impressions produce a deep effect. έτι δε τούτο μάλλον φανερόν μηθενδς γάρ φοβερού συμβαίνοντος έν τοις πάθεσι γίνονται τοις του φοβουμένου [in consequ-nce of physical states |. εὶ δ' ουτως ἔχει, δηλον ύτι τὰ πάθη λόγοι ἔνυλοί εἰσιν. ωστε οί δροι τοιοῦτοι οΐον τὸ οργ ζεσθαι κίνησίς τις τοῦ τοιουδὶ σώματος ή μέρους ή δυνάμεως ύπδ τοῦδε ένεκα τοῦδε. Cf. Eth. ibid. 1147, a, 15, and what is said, p. 75, n. 2, on pleasure and pain as events in the αίσθητική μεσότης.

³ Mot. An. 7, 701, a, 7: πως δὲ νοῶν ὅτὲ μὲν πράττει, ὅτὲ δ' οὐ πράττει, καὶ κινεῖται, ὅτὲ δ' οὐ syllogism assumes a simpler form by the omission of the obvious minor premiss; 1 while, on the other hand, the usurpation of the place of the major premiss by the demands of desire, in cases when we act without consideration, constitutes rashness.2 The power of the will, however, to move the organs of our body is here explained as an effect of the heat and cold, which are caused by the feelings of pleasure and pain; these in turn, by the expansion or contraction of particular parts, produce certain changes and movements in the body.3

κινείται : ἔοικε παραπλησίως συμβαίνειν καὶ περὶ τῶν ἀκινήτων διανοουμένοις και συλλογιζομένοις. άλλ' ἐκεῖ μὲν θεώρημα τὸ τέλος . . . ἐνταῦθα δ' ἐκ τῶν δύο προτάσεων τὸ συμπέρασμα γίνεται ή ποᾶξις, οξον όταν νόηση ότι παντί Βαδιστέον ανθρώπω, αὐτὸς δ' άνθρωπος, βαδίζει εὐθέως. After illustrating this by further examples. Aristotle proceeds, l. 23: αί δὲ προτάσεις αἱ ποιητικαὶ διὰ δύο εἰδῶν γίνονται, διά τε τοῦ ἀγαθοῦ καὶ διὰ τοῦ δυνατοῦ [the latter perhaps with reference to Eth. iii. 5, 1112, b, 24 sqq.].

¹ Ibid. 1. 25 : ωσπερ δε των ερωτώντων ένιοι, οδιτω την ετέραν πρότασιν την δήλην οὐδ' ή διάνοια έφιστασα σκοπεί οὐδέν · οίον εἰ τὸ βαδίζειν άγαθον άνθρώπω, ότι αὐτὸς άνθρωπος, οὺκ ἐνδιατρίβει.

² L. 28: διὸ καὶ ὅσα μὴ λογισάμενοι πράττομεν, ταχύ πράττομεν. δταν γὰρ ἐνεργήση ἡ τῆ αἰσθήσει ποδε τὸ οδ ένεκα ή τῆ φαντασία ή τῷ νῷ, οῦ ὀρέγεται εὐθὺς ποιεί: αντ' έρωτήσεως γάρ ή νοήσεως ή της ορέξεως γίνεται ενέργεια. ποτέον μοι, ή ἐπιθυμία λέγει τοδὶ δέ ποτον ή αίσθησις είπεν ή ή φαντασία ή δ νοῦς. εὐθὺς πίνει.

³ Ibid. 701, b, 1: Just as

automata, owing to the mechanical adjustment of the cylinders. are set in motion by a slight touch, so with living beings, in whom the bones take the place of wood and iron, the sinews that of the cylinders (cf. also the passage quoted p. 53, n. 2, from Gen. An. ii. 5). The impulse, however, in their case is given αὐξανομένων τῶν μορίων διὰ Θερμότητα καὶ πάλιν συστελλομένων διὰ ψύξιν καὶ ἀλλοιουμένων. ἀλλοιοῦσι δ' αί αἰσθήσεις καλ αί φαντασίαι καλ αί εννοιαι. αί μεν γάρ αἰσθήσεις εὐθὺς ὑπάρχουσιν ἀλλοιώσεις τινές οὖσαι, ή δὲ φαντασία καὶ ή νόησις την τῶν πραγμάτων ἔχουσι δύναμιν · τρόπου γάρ τινα το είδος το νοούμενον το τοῦ θερμοῦ ή ψυχροῦ ή ήδεδς ή φοβερού τοιούτον τυγχάνει ην ολόν περ καὶ τῶν πραγμάτων έκαστον. διό και φρίττουσι και φοβούνται νοί, σαντες μόνον, ταῦτα δὲ πάντα πάθη και αλλοιώσεις είσίν. άλλοιουμένων δ' έν τῷ σώματι τὰ μέν μείζω τὰ δ' ἐλάττω γίνεται. ὅτι δὲ μικρὰ μεταβολή γενομένη ἐν άρχη μεγάλας και πολλάς ποιεί διαφοράς ἄποθεν, οὐκ ἄδηλον; a slight movement of the helm produces a great effect upon the bow of a ship, so a small change Under Will also Aristotle—who, like Plato, does not regard Emotion as a peculiar form of activity—classes all that we should rather place under the latter head. Love, for example, he refers to $\theta \nu \mu \dot{\rho} s$, by which he understands, not only spirit, but also heart.

As Aristotle proceeds, however, Desire is found to bear a different character according as it springs from rational representation or not. Granted that it is always the desirable that causes desire in us, yet the desirable may be either a real or merely an apparent good,² and so the desire itself may either spring from rational reflection or be irrational.³ To the latter class

in the heart causes flushing, pallor, trembling, &c. over the whole U. 8: ἀρχὴ μὲν οὖν, ώσπερ είρηται, της κινήσεως τὸ ἐν τῷ πρακτῷ διωκτὸν καὶ φευκτόν. έξ ἀνάγκης δ' ἀκολουθεῖ τῆ νοήσει καὶ τῆ φαντασία αὐτῶν θερμότης καὶ ψύξις. το μέν γαρ λυπηρον φευκτον. τὸ δ' ἡδὺ διωκτὸν, . . ἔστι δὲ τὰ λυπηρὰ καὶ ἡδέα πάντα σχεδὸν μετὰ ψύξεώς τινος καὶ θερμότητος. So with fear, fright, sexual pleasure, &c. μνημαι δέ και έλπίδες, οΐον εἰδώλοις χρώμενοι τοῖς τοιού-τοις, ότὲ μὲν ἦττον ὀτὲ δὲ μᾶλλον αλτίαι των αὐτων είσιν. And since the inward parts from which the motion of the limbs proceeds are so arranged that these changes take place very easily in them, the motions follow our thoughts instantaneously. τὰ μὲν γὰρ δργανικά μέρη [accusative] παρασκευάζει επιτηδείως τὰ πάθη, ἡ δ' ὕρεξις τὰ πάθη, τὴν δ' ὕρεξιν ἡ φαντασία αὐτη δὲ γίνεται ἡ διὰ νοήσεως ἡ διὰ αἰσθήσεως, άμα δὲ καὶ ταχύ διὰ τὸ ποιητικόν καὶ παθητικόν τῶν πρὸς άλληλα είναι την φύσιν.

1 Polit. vii. 7, 1327, b, 40: δ θυμός ἐστιν δ ποιῶν τὸ φιλητικόν αὅτη γάρ ἐστιν ἡ τῆς ψυχῆς δύναμις ἢ φιλοῦμεν. σημεῖαν δέ πρὸς γὰρ τοὺς συνήθεις καὶ φίλους ὁ θυμός αἄρεται μᾶλλον, ἡ πρὸς τοὺς ἀγνῶτας, ὀλιγωρεῖσθαι νομίσας. Cf. foll pages.

2 De An. iii. 10; see i. 109, n.

² De An. 111. 10; see 1. 109, n. 3, supra.

³ De An. iii. 10, 433, a, 9 (see 1. 109, n. 2, sup.); 1. 22: νῦν δὲ δ μὲν νοῦς οὐ φαίνεται κινῶν ἄνευ ὀρέξεως . ή γὰρ βούλησις ὅρεξις ὅταν δὲ κατά του λογισμου κινήται, καὶ κατά βούλησιν κινείται, ή δ' ὅρεξις κινεί παρά του λογισμόν. ή γάρ ἐπιθυμία δρεξίς τις έστίν. νοθς μεν οθν πας ορθός ορεξις δε και φαντασία και όρθη και ούκ όρθη, b, 5 : έπει δ' ορέξεις γίνονται έναντίαι άλλήλαις, τοῦτο δὲ συμβαίνει ὅταν ὁ λόγος καὶ ἡ ἐπιθυμία ἐναντίαι ὧσι, γίνεται δ' ἐν τοῖς χρόνου αἴσθησιν ἔχούσιν (δ μέν γὰρ νοῦς διὰ τὸ μέλλον ανθέλκειν κελεύει, ή δ' ἐπιθυμία δια τὸ ἥδη)... εἴδει μὲν ἐν ἄν εἴη τὸ κινούν, το δρεκτικόν, ή δρεκτικόν, . . . ἀριθμῷ δὲ πλείω τὰ κινοῦντα. Rhet. i. 11, 1370, a. 18: των δέ

belong anger and the appetite for sensual gratification.¹ In so far as reason goes to constitute the conception of the end and reacts upon the desire it is called Practical or Deliberative Reason.² Desire which is guided by

έπιθυμιῶν αἱ μὲν ἄλογοί εἰσιν αἱ δὲ μετὰ λόγου. Sensual desires are ἄλογοι, μετὰ λόγου δὲ ὅσα ἐκ τοῦ πεισθῆναι ἐπιθυμοῦσιν. Polit. iii. 4, 1277, a, 6: ψυχὴ ἐκ λόγου καὶ ὀρέξεωs. Ibid. vii. 15, 1334, b, 18: τῆς ψυχῆς ὁρῶμεν δύο μέρη, τὸ τε ἄλογον καὶ τὸ λόγον ἔχον, καὶ τὰς ἑξεις τὰς τούτων δύο τὸν ὰριθμον, ὧν τὸ μέν ἐστιν ὅρεξις τὸ δὲ νοῦς. Cf. foll. note.

Following Plato, Aristotle often opposes these two forms of ρεξις άλογος to one another; Rhet.i. 10 (see p. 114, n. 3, infra). De An. ii. 3, 414, b, 2 : ὅρεξις μέν γαρ επιθυμία καὶ θυμός καὶ βούλησις (ἐπιθυμία is then defined as ὅρεξις τοῦ ἡδέος); iii. 9, 432, b, 5: ἔν τε τῷ λογιστικῷ γὰρ ἡ βούλησις γίνεται, καὶ ἐν τῷ ἀλόγῳ ἡ ἐπιθυμία καl δ θυμός. Eth. iii. 4, 1111, b, 10: while προαίρεσις is neither έπιθυμία nor θυμός, since both the latter belong also to irrational beings, but the former does not. Polit. vii. 15 (see p. 114, n. 3, infra), cf. Mot. An. 6, 700, b, 22, c. 7, 701, a, 32; Eth. Eud. ii. 7, 1223, a, 26; M. Mor. i. 12, 1187, b, 36. In the Topics (ii. 7, 113, a, 35 sq., iv. 5, 126, a, 8, v. 1, 129, a, 10) the Platonic division of the λογιστικόν, θυμοειδές and $\epsilon \pi$ ιθυμητικόν is employed as one which is generally recognised, and Eth. vii. 7, 1149, a, 24 follows Plato in the remark (Ph. d. Gr. i. 714) that it is less disgraceful to be unable to rule θυμός than the desires: ξοικε γάρ δ θυμός ἀκούειν μέν τι τοῦ λόγου, παρακούειν δέ; it yields to

the first impulse to TIMMO(a given by the reason without awaiting its fuller commands : ἐπιθυμία, on the other hand, makes for pleasure the moment that Adyos or αἴσθησις declares anything to be pleasant. Nevertheless in the stricter psychological discussion, De An. iii. 9, 432, a, 18 sqq., Aristotle rejects the view that the λογιστικόν, θυμικόν and έπιθυμητικόν are the three parts of the soul which produce motions, partly because the distinction between them is less than, e.g., that between the θρεπτικόν and αἰσθητικόν, and partly because the ορεκτικών cannot thus be divided and the soul made to consist of three separate parts.-Aristotle gives no more accurate definition of θυμός; even P. Meyer's minute discussion of the passages that bear upon it ('O bulds ap. Arist. Platonemque, Bonn, 1876) arrives at conclusions as unsatisfactory as the shorter one by Walter, ibid. 199 sqq. on the customary meaning of the word. According to this, it indicates as a rule the passions which prompt to the avoidance or retaliation of injuries. Nevertheless the tenderer emotions are also assigned to it: cf. p. 112, n. 1.

² De An. iii. 10, 433, a, 14: νοῦς δὲ [sc. κινητικὸν] ὁ ἕνεκά του λυγιζόμενος καὶ ὁ πρακτικός · διαφέρει δὲ τοῦ θεωρητικοῦ τῷ τέλει. καὶ ἡ ὅρεξις ἕνεκά του πᾶσα · οἱ γὰρ ἡ ὅρεξις, αὕτη ἀρχὴ τοῦ πρακτικοῦ νοῦ · τὸ δ' ἔσχατον ἀρχὴ τῆς πράνου · τὸ δ' ἔσχατον ἀρχὴ τῆς πράνου · τὸ δ' ἔσχατον ἀρχὴ τῆς πράνου · δο ἐσχατον ἀρχὴ τῆς πράνου · δο ἐσχατον ἀρχὴ τῆς πράνου · δο δ' ἔσχατον ἀρχὴ τῆς πράνου · δο δ' ἔσχατον ἀρχὴ τῆς πράνου · δο δ' ἔσχατον ἀρχὴ τῆς · δο ἐσχατον ἀρχὴ τῆς πράνου · δο δ' ἔσχατον ἀρχὴ τῆς · δο δ' ἐσχατον ἀρχὴ · δ' ἐν ὰν ἐν ἐν ἐν ἐν ἐ

reason Aristotle, with Plato, calls Will in the narrower sense of the word, appropriating the name Desire to its irrational exercise.3 The latter stands in a twofold relation to reason. On the one hand, it is intended to submit to it, and by this obedience to obtain a share in it. On the other hand, being in its own nature irrational it resists the demands of reason, and often overpowers them.4 Between these two kinds of impulse stands man with his Free Will; for that we

ξεως. ώστε εὐλόγως ταῦτα δύο φαίνεται τὰ κινοῦντα, ὄρεξις καὶ διάνοια πρακτική. See further, p. 109, n. 5, sup. Cf. c. 9, 432, b, 27. Eth. vi. 2, 1139, α, 6: ὑποκείσθω δύο τὰ λόγον έχοντα, εν μεν φ θεωροῦμεν τὰ τοιαῦτα τῶν ὄντων, ὅσων αἱ ἀρχαὶ μη ενδέχονται άλλως έχειν, έν δέ ῷ τὰ ἐνδεχόμενα πρὸς γὰρ τὰ τῷ γένει έτερα καὶ τῶν τῆς ψυχῆς μορίων έτερον τώ γένει το πρός έκάτερον πεφυκός . . . λεγέσθω δὲ τούτων το μέν έπιστημονικον το δέ λογιστικόν. το γαρ βουλεύεσθαι καλ λογίζεσθαι ταὐτὸν, οὐθείς δὲ βουλεύεται περί των μη έκδεχομένων άλλως έχειν. L 26: αῦτη μὲν οδν ἡ διάνοια καὶ ἡ ἀλήθεια πρακτικὴ, της δε θεωρητικής διανοίας και μη πρακτικής μηδέ ποιητικής τὸ εὖ καὶ κακώς τάληθές έστι καὶ ψεῦδος· τοῦτο γάρ ἐστι παντός διανοητικοῦ ἔογον, τοῦ δὲ πρακτικοῦ καὶ διανοητικού ή άλήθεια δμολόγως έχουσα τη δρέξει τη δρθή. L. 35: διάνοια δ' αὐτὴ οὐθὲν κινεῖ, ἀλλ' ἡ ἕνεκά του καί πρακτική. Ibid. c. 12, 1143, b, 1; see p. 197, n. 4, supra. Polit. vii. 14, 1333, a, 24: διήρηταί τε διχή [τὸ λόγον ἔχον], καθ' ὅν περ εἰώθαμεν τρόπον διαιρείν δ μέν γάρ πρακτικός έστι λόγος ὁ δὲ θεωρητικός. Cf. p. 106, n. 2, sup. For a closer view of the practical reason and the activity which proceeds from

it see ch. xii. part 2, infra.

¹ Ph. d. Gr. i. p. 505. 2 'Practical reason'itself must not be mistaken for 'will,' which, to Aristotle, is essentially a desire; the former is merely thought in

relation to action.

³ De An. iii. 10, 433, a, 22 sqq. (see p. 112, n. 3, supra), and c. 11, 434, a, 12 (see foll. n.), where βούλησις is opposed to υρεξις, Rhet. i. 10, 1369, a, 2: ἔστι δ' ἡ μέν βούλησις άγαθοῦ ὅρεξις (οὐθεὶς γάρ βούλεται άλλ' ή ὅταν οἰηθῆ είναι άγαθον) άλογοι δ' ὀρέξεις ὀργή και ἐπιθυμία, Eth. v. 11, 1136, b. 7: ούτε γάρ βούλεται οὐθείς δ μή οἴεται εἶναι σπουδαῖον, ὅ τε ἀκρατὴς ούχ α οίεται δείν πράττειν πράττει. See further, p. 113, n. 1. Cf. PLATO'S statements, Fh.d. Gr.i. p. 505, and p. 719, 3. At other times the word has a wider meaning, as Polit. vii. 15, 1334, b, 22 (θυμός γάρ καί βούλησις έτι δὲ ἐπιθυμία καὶ γενομένοις εὐθὺς ὑπάρχει τοῖς παιδίοις). In Eth. iii. 6, both meanings are concerned, where to the question whether βούλησις has reference to the good or to the apparently good, the reply is given that per se, and in a virtuous man, it is to the former alone; in a bad man, to the latter.

4 Eth. i. 13, 1102, b. 13: we

are the authors of our own actions, and that it lies in our own power to be good or bad, is Aristotle's firm

must distinguish in the soul a rational and an irrational part. The latter, however, is of two The one of its constituent parts, the nutritive soul. has nothing to do with action; **ἔοικε δὲ καὶ ἄλλη τις φύσις τῆς** ψυχης άλογος είναι, μετέχουσα μέντοι πη λόγου. Both in the temperate and the intemperate man, reason operates on the one hand; φαίνεται δ' έν αὐτοῖς καὶ άλλο τι παρά του λόγου πεφυκός. δ μάχεταί τε καὶ ἀντιτείνει τῷ **ἀ**τεχνῶς γὰρ καθάπερ τὰ λόνω. παραλελυμένα τοῦ σώματος μόρια eis τὰ δεξιὰ προαιρουμένων κινήσαι τουναντίον είς τὰ ἀριστερὰ παραφέρεται, καὶ ἐπὶ τῆς ψυχῆς ἐπὶ τάναντία γάρ αἱ δρμαὶ τῶν ἀκρατῶν . . . καὶ ἐν τῆ ψυχῆ νομιστέον είναι τι παρά τον λόγον, έναντιούμενον τούτω καλ άντιβαίνον . . λόγου δὲ καὶ τοῦτο φαίνεται μετέχειν, ωσπερ είπομεν πειθαρχεί γουν τώ λόγω τὸ τοῦ ἐγκρατοῦs . . . φαίνεται δή και το άλογον διττόν, το μέν γάρ φυτικόν οὐδαμῶς κοινωνεῖ λόγου, τὸ δ' ἐπιθυμητικὸν καὶ ὅλως ὀρεκτικὸν μετέχει πως, ή κατήκοδυ έστιν αὐτοῦ καὶ πειθαρχικόν . . . ὅτι δὲ πείθεταί πως ύπο λόγου το άλογον, μηνύει καλ ή νουθέτησις καλ πᾶσα ἐπιτίμησίς τε καλ παράκλησις. εἰ δὲ χρὴ καλ τοῦτο φάναι λόγον έχειν, διττόν έσται και το λόγον έχου, το μέν κυρίως και έν αύτῷ, τὸ δ' ώσπερ πατρός ἀκουστικόν τι. Polit. vii 14, 1333, α, 16: διήρηται δέ δύο μέρη τῆς ψυχῆς, ὧν τὸ μὲν ἔχει λόγον καθ' αὑτὸ, τὸ δ' οὐκ ἔχει μὲν καθ' αύτὸ, λόγφ δ' ὑπακούειν δυνάμενον. De An. iii. 11, 434, a, 12: νικά δ' ἐνίοτε [ἡ ὄρεξις] καὶ κινεῖ την βούλησιν ότε δ' έκείνη ταύτην,

ωσπερ σφαίρα [ν. 1. -αν] ή δρεξις την δρεξιν, δταν άκρασία γένηται. Φύσει δὲ ἀεὶ ἡ ἄνω ἀρχικωτέρα καὶ κινεῖ, ώστε τρείς φοράς ήδη κινείσθαι. The various attempts made to explain and amend the last passage by TRENDELENBURG and TORSTRIK, in loco, BRENTANO, Psychol. d. Ar. 111 sq., and the Greek commentators (discussed in Tren.), it is the more justifiable here to omit as the thought expressed is clear enough. Departing from previous editions, Zeller would now suggest:... δτè δ' ἐκείνη ταύτην, ώσπερ ή άνω σφαίρα την κάτω, ότὲ δ' ἡ ὅρεξις . . . γένηται [φύσει . . . κινεί], ωστε, &c. Aristotle's doctrine differs from that of Plato as presented Ph. d. Gr. i. 713 sq., only in this, that in place of the Platonic bumbs we have here the appetites as a whole.

¹ Eth. iii. 7, 1113, b, 6: $\epsilon \phi'$ ήμιν δε και ή άρετη, δμοίως δε και ή κακία. ἐν οἶς γὰρ ἐφ' ἡμῖν τὸ πράττειν, και το μη πράττειν, και έν οἷς τὸ μὴ, καὶ τὸ ναί · ὥστ' εἰ τὸ πράττειν καλὸν ὃν ἐφ' ἡμῖν ἐστι, και το μη πράττειν έφ' ημίν έσται αίσχρον ον, και εί το μη πράττειν καλον δυ έφ' ήμεν, και το πράττειν αίσχρον ον έφ' ήμιν. εί δ' έφ' ήμιν τὰ κακὰ πράττειν καὶ τὰ αἰσχρὰ, δμοίως δὲ καὶ τὸ μὴ πράττειν, τοῦτο δ' ἦν τὸ ἀγαθοῖς καὶ κακοῖς εἶναι, ἐφ' ἡμῖν ἄρα τὸ ἐπιεικέσι καὶ φαύλοις είναι . . . ή τοίς γε νῦν εἰρημένοις <u>ἀμφισβητητέον, καὶ τὸν ἄνθρωπον</u> ου φατέον άρχην είναι ουδέ γεννητην τῶν πράξεων, ὥσπερ καὶ τέκνων; εί δὲ ταῦτα [if he is author of his own actions] φαίνεται καλ μη έχομεν είς άλλας άρχὰς άναγαγεῖν παρὰ τας έφ' ήμιν, ών και αι άρχαι έν

conviction, which he supports by the recognised voluntariness of virtue, and by the moral responsibility which is presupposed in legislation and in the judgment universally passed in rewards and punishments, praise and blame, exhortation and warning.2 In the case of settled moral states, it is true that he believes it to be partly otherwise. These in their beginnings, indeed, depend upon ourselves; but when we have once become good or bad it is just as little in our power not to be so, as when we are sick to be well.3 In like manner he admits that when the will has once acquired a definite bent, the external action necessarily follows.4 But when it is said that all desire what seems good to them, and that they are not responsible for this seeming, Aristotle refuses to admit it, since even the disposition which determines our moral judgments is our own creation.5 Nor does he regard with more favour the attempt to prove from the nature of the disjunctive judgment the

ήμιν και αὐτὰ ἐφ' ἡμίν και ἑκούσια. c. 5, 1112, b, 31: ἔοικε δη, καθάπερ είρηται, ἄνθρωπος είναι ἀρχή τῶν πράξεων, and elsewhere. On Aristotle's doctrine of the freedom of the will, see SCHRADER, ibid.; TRENDELENBURG, Histor. Beitr. ii, 149 sqq.

Aristotle frequently makes use of this argument, accusing the dictum of Socrates and Epicharmus, οὐθείς έκών πονηρός οὐδ' άκων μάκαρ (on which see Ph. d. Gr. i 462, 5, iii. b, 119, 2, cf. 719, 3), of the inconsistency of declaring good to be voluntary, evil involuntary; Eth. iii. 7, 1113, b, 14, 1114, b, 12 sqq.
² Eth. ibid. 1113, b, 21, 1114,

a. 31, where this is fully discussed

and the question investigated how far and in what cases we are irresponsible for ignorance or mental and bodily defects, and how far, on the other hand, we are responsible for them as in themselves culpable.

³ Eth. iii. 7, 8, 1114, a, 12 sqq., b, 30, cf. v. 13, 1137, a, 4, 17: particular just and unjust actions are voluntary and easy, but τὸ ώδὶ ἔχοντας ταῦτα ποιεῖν ούτε βάδιον ούτ' ἐπ' αὐτοῖς.

4 Metaph. ix. 5, see i. 385, n. 2, supra.

⁵ Ibid. iii. 7, 1114, a, 31 sqq. The question how far it is possible consciously to commit a mistake is more fully discussed in the Ethics. See infra.

logical impossibility of a contingent result.¹ On the contrary, he regards voluntariness as an essential condition of all action that is the subject of moral judgment;² and if this does not exhaust the conception of volition (for Aristotle calls the actions of children and even of animals voluntary),³ at least without voluntariness no volition is possible. If all that is voluntary is not also intentional, yet all that is intentional must

¹ See i. 230, n. 4, supra. It has already been there shown that Aristotle does not hereby avoid all difficulties; but this only shows more clearly how important he regarded it to rescue the possibility of voluntary actions.

possibility of voluntary actions. ² Eth. iii. 1 init. : της ἀρετης δη περί πάθη τε και πράξεις ούσης. καλ έπλ μέν τοις έκουσίοις έπαίνων καὶ ψόγων γινομένων, ἐπὶ δὲ τοῖς ακουσίοις συγγνώμης, &c. In c. 1-3, cf. v. 10, 1135, a, 23 sqq. τδ έκούσιον and ἀκούσιον are fully discussed. According to the account here given, that is in. voluntary which is done under compulsion or in ignorance. We must distinguish, however, in the former between physical compulsion, which constitutes absolute involuntariness, and moral compulsion, which is only relative: in the latter, between unconscious action (ἀγνοοῦντα ποιεῖν), which may also be voluntary (as when something is done in haste or anger), and action from ignorance (& ἄγνοιαν πράττειν). As, further, there are many things on which an action depends (nearly corresponding to the familiar quis, quid, ubi, &c., Aristotle mentions: τίς καὶ τί καὶ περὶ τί ἡ ἐν τίνι πράττει, ενίστε δε και τίνι, οΐον οργάνω και ένεκα τίνος), we must

ask to which of these the ignorance refers: the action being involuntary in the highest degree when the mistake concerns the essential points of its aim and object. Finally, it makes a difference, according to Aristotle, whether an action committed in ignorance is matter of regret or not; if the doer does not regret it he acquiesces in it, so that while it cannot be regarded as voluntary, it is not involuntary in the sense of being against his will (c. 2 init. and fin.; cf. vii. 8, 1150, a, 21, c. 9 init.). On the other hand, that is (c. 3 init.) έκούσιον οδ ή άρχη έν αὐτῷ εἰδότι τά καθ' έκαστα έν οίς ή πράξις, or (1135, a, 23) δ άν τις τῶν ἐφ' αὐτῶ όντων είδως και μη άγνοων πράττη μήτε δυ μήτε ώ μήτε οδ ένεκα. Cf. Rhet. i. 10, 1368, b. 9: ἐκόντες δὲ ποιοῦσιν ὅσα εἰδότες καὶ μὴ ἀναγκα(όμενοι. On the other hand, deliberation is not a necessary condition of voluntariness: on the contrary. Aristotle expressly denies that passion and emotion destroy the voluntariness of an action.

³ Eth. iii. 3, 4, 1111, a, 24, b, 8. Will, however, in the stricter sense (see p. 114, n. 3, supra), cannot be attributed to either of them.

needs be voluntary.¹ It is in his view the intention upon which in the first instance the moral quality of an act depends.² In like manner deliberation is only possible with reference to those things which lie within our own power.³ Aristotle, however, has not attempted to indicate more exactly the inner processes by which free volition operates, nor to solve all the difficulties which surround the doctrine of the Freedom of the Will. The

¹ Eth. iii. 4, 1111, b, 6: ἡ προαίρεσις δη έκούσιον μέν φαίνεται, οὐ ταὐτὸν δὲ, ἀλλ' ἐπὶ πλέον τὸ έκούσιον · τοῦ μὲν γὰρ έκουσίου καὶ παίδες καὶ τἆλλα ζῷα κοινωνεί, προαιρέσεως δ' οδ, καὶ τὰ ἐξαίφνης έκούσια μέν λέγομεν, κατά προαίρεσιν δ' ού. 1112, a, 14: ἐκούσιον μὲν δη φαίνεται [ή προαίρεσις], τὸ δ' έκούσιον οὐ πᾶν προαιρετόν. (So also Rhet. ibid.: 8σα μεν οὖν έκόντες [sc. ποιοῦσιν], οὐ πάντα προαιρούμενοι, είδότες **άπαιτα**,) Aristotle then further distinguishes προαίρεσις from ἐπιθυμία. θυμός, βούλησις (by which he here means wish, rather than will as it is directed towards what is impossible and beyond our power) and δόξα (or, more accurately, a certain kind of δόξα, e.g. right opinion upon what is right, what is to be feared, &c., and generally upon practical questions); its characteristic mark is deliberation (c. 5, 1113, a, 2: βουλευτόν δὲ καὶ προαιρετόν τὸ αὐτὸ, πλην ἀφωρισμένον ήδη τὸ προαιρετόν το γάρ έκ της βουλης προκριθέν προαιρετόν έστιν); accordingly, το προαιρετον is defined as βουλευτον όρεκτον των έφ' ήμιν, and προαίρεσις as βουλευτική όρεξις $\tau \hat{\omega} \nu \ \hat{\epsilon} \phi^{i} \ \hat{\eta} \mu \hat{\imath} \nu \ (ibid. 1. 9 sq.); \ \hat{\epsilon} \kappa$ τοῦ βουλεύσασθαι γὰρ κρίναντες δρεγόμεθα κατά την Βούλευσιν. The

same description is repeated Eth. vi. 2, 1139, a, 23, cf. v. 10, 1135, b, 10 (προελόμενοι μὲν [πράπτομεν] ὅσα προβουλευσάμενοι, ἀπροαίρετα δὲ ὅσα ἀπροβούλευτα). On the other hand, ὅρεξις in the narrower sense of mere irrational desire is said $De\ An$. iii. 11, 434, a, 12, cf. l. ὅ sq., to be without part in τὸ βουλευτικόν.

² Τῷ γὰρ προαιρεῖσθαι τὰγαθὰ ἢ τὰ κακὰ ποιοί τινές ἐσμεν (ibid. c.

4, 1112, a, 1).

Βουλευόμεθα δὲ περὶ τῶν ἐφ' ημίν πρακτών, ibid. c. 5, 1112, a, 30. 'Aristotle further shows (1112, b, 11 sqq. vii. 9, 1151, a, 16) that deliberation deals, not with the end, but with the means. We set ourselves an end and then ask, just as in mathematical analysis. what are the conditions under which it may be attained; we next inquire what is required to create these conditions, and so on until we arrive by a process of analysis at the first condition of the desired result which lies in our power. With the knowledge of this condition, deliberation ceases; with the endeavour to realise it, action begins. TRENDELENBURG, Histor. Beitr. ii. 381 sq.; WALTER, Lehre v. d. prakt. Vern. 220 sq.

credit of first clearly perceiving these points belongs to the Stoics, while it has been left to modern philosophy fully to appreciate their force.

Before going on, however, to examine from the point of view of the Aristotelian Ethics the forms of activity which proceed from free self-determination, there are some anthropological questions which still demand investigation. These have been already touched upon, but only now admit of a complete survey.

As Aristotle recognises in the collective sphere of animate existence a progressive evolution to ever higher forms of life, so he regards the life of the human soul from the same point of view. Man unites in himself every form of life. To the nutritive life he adds the power of sensation and motion, and to these again the life of reason. Thought rises in him from sensation to memory and imagination, and thence to reflexion and the highest stage of the pure intuitions of the reason; action, from sensual desires, to rational will. capable not merely of perception and experience, but also of art and science. He raises himself in moral action above animal desire just as in the latter he transcends the merely vegetable processes of nutrition and propagation. Aristotle accordingly sums up his whole doctrine of the Soul in a single sentence: the Soul is in a certain sense all Actuality, inasmuch as it unites in itself the sensual and the spiritual, and thus contains the Form of both 1—a description which applies especially, of course, to the soul of man. But just as we found it to be a defect in Plato's theory that he was

¹ See vol. i. p. 199, n. 2, supra.

unable to find any inner principle of unity in the three parts into which he had divided the soul, and that he undoubtedly failed to propound this problem with scientific accuracy, so we have to regret in Aristotle a similar omission. The relation between the sensitive and nutritive life might itself have suggested the question whether the latter is an evolution from the former, or whether they come into existence simultaneously, and subsist side by side separate from one another. And where, if the latter be the case, are we to look for the connection between them and the unity of animal life? This difficulty, however, is still more pressing in reference to Reason and its relation to the lower faculties of the soul. Whether we regard the beginning, progress, or end of their union, everywhere we find the same unsolved dualism; nowhere do we meet with any satisfactory answer to the question 2 where we are to look for the unifying principle of personality—the one power which governs while it unites all the other parts of the The birth of the soul, speaking generally, soul.3 coincides, according to Aristotle, with that of the body whose entelechy it is. He not only rejects any assumption of pre-existence, but he expressly declares that the germ of the life of the soul is contained in the male semen and passes with it from the begetter into the begotten.4 But, on the other hand, he is unable to

Ph. d. Gr. i. pp. 717 sq.

Which Aristotle, however, does not forget to put to Plato; see p. 23, n. 1, supra.

S Even SCHELL'S attempt (Die Einheit des Seelenlebens aus d. Principien d. arist. Phil. entwickelt. Freib. 1873) to prove the

complete consistency of the Aristotelian doctrine is wholly unsuccessful. Detailed criticism of it may here be omitted without prejudice to the following investigation.

⁴ See p. 10, n. 1, p. 6, n. 2, p. 53, n. 3, and p. 96, n. 1, suvra.

apply this to the rational part of the soul, since that is something wholly different from the principle of life in the body. While, therefore, it is held that the germ of this also is propagated in the seed, it is yet asserted 1 at the same time that it alone enters man from without,2 and is not involved in his physical life.3 But how an immaterial principle which has absolutely nothing in common with the body and possesses no bodily organ can be said to reside in the semen and propagate itself through it, is wholly incomprehensible 4-not to mention the fact that not one word is anywhere said of the time or manner of its entrance into it. Nor can this difficulty be met by the assumption that the Spirit proceeds direct from God,5 whether we regard its origin as an event necessarily following the operation of natural laws, or as in each case the effect of a creative act of the Divine Will.6 For the former view, which

¹ See p. 96, п. 1, 2, su-

² It enters the womb, indeed, in the seed, but comes to the latter θ t ρ a θ ε ν, as is clearly explained in the passages quoted, p. 96, n, 1, Gen. An. ii. 3, 736, b, 15 sqq.

* Χωριστός (Gen. An. ii. 3, 737, a, 9; D* An. iii. 5; see p. 96, μ. 1, and p. 98, n. 1, sup.), which here, as perhaps also in Plato's account of the Ideas, means not merely separable but actually separate, the equivalent phrase οὐθὲν γὰρ αὐτοῦ τῆ ἐνεργεία κοινωνεῖ σωματική ἐνέργεια being used for it, 739, a, 28.

4 We cannot conceive of an immaterial being occupying a position in space, nor is the relation of the active force to the

implement it employs, which is used to explain the union of soul and body (p. 3, n. 2, supra), applicable to the reason, which has no such implement. Cf. p. 94, n. 2, and p. 100, n. 2.

⁵ Brandis, *Gr.-Röm. Phil.* ii. b. 1178.

6 The latter view, that of the so-called 'creationists,' was not only generally assumed by mediaval Aristotelians as undoubtedly Aristotle's, but is accepted by BRENTANO, Psychol. d. Ar. 195 sqq, whom FERTLING, Mat. und Form, 170 (more cautiously also L. SCHNEIDER, Unsterblichkeitslehre d. Arist. 54 sq.), is inclined to follow. According to BREN, 'the spiritual part is created out of nothing by the immediate act

coincides more or less with the doctrine of Emanation, there is not only no support whatsoever in Aristotle's system, but it is wholly irreconcilable with his view of the unchangeable and transcendent nature of God.1 The assumption, on the other hand, of the creation of the human spirit by the Deity conflicts with Aristotle's express and emphatic statement 2 that God does not interfere actively in the world by an exercise of will.3 Aristotle says, moreover, as distinctly as possible, that the spirit is exempt from birth no less than from death, thus attributing to it pre-existence.4 though in a certain impersonal sense. It was impossible, accordingly, that the question how and by whom it was produced at the birth of the body should have even been raised by him. Even upon the only question that could arise—the question regarding the causes which determine the spirit's union with a human body, and with this particular body in each particular case, and regarding the way in which this union takes place—Aristotle's writings contain not a single word; whether it be that this question never suggested itself to him, or that he

of God, and at the same time the character of a human body is given to the material part (p. 199); the reason is produced by God from nothing at the moment at which the fœtus in its natural development reaches the last stage (which, according to n. 2, preceding page, must be at a point of time previous at any rate to the procreative act); see also p. 203.

¹ Cf. also i. 413 sqq. Still less of course can we, with GROTE (Arist. ii. 220, 230), regard the absolutely immaterial spirit to be an effluence from the æther, the $\theta \epsilon \hat{\imath} o \nu \sigma \hat{\omega} \mu \alpha$.

² On which see i. 399 sq.

3 As is rightly remarked also by BIEHL (Ueb. d. Begriff vous b. Arist. Linz, 1864; Gymn -

Progr. p. 9).

4 Cf. the passages quoted, p. 96, n. 1, and p. 101, n. 2, sup. The obvious meaning of these passages cannot justly be set aside upon the general grounds advocated by BRENTANO, p. 196 sq., which find no support either in the psychology of Aristotle or in

regarded it as insoluble and preferred to leave it alone.¹ Nor is he more explicit with regard to the question of the origin of the 'Passive Reason,' whose existence is said to begin and end with that of the body.² Although we should naturally assume that he regards it as the outcome of the union of the active spirit with the faculty of reproductive imagination, yet he gives us no hint to help us to form a definite conception of its origin.³

If we further examine the union in man of different faculties, we find it difficult to understand how in one being two parts can be united, of which the one is exposed to passive states, the other incapable of passivity; the former bound up with the body, the latter without a physical organ. Does Reason, we may ask, participate in the physical life and the mutation of the lower faculties, or do the latter participate in the immutability and impassiveness of Reason? We might find support for both assumptions in Aristotle's writings, yet each in turn can be shown to be inconsistent with the presuppositions of his philosophy. On the

any rightly interpreted statement to be found in his texts.

d. menschl. Seele nach Arist. Halle, 1873, p. 46 sq.) supposes the passive reason to be a radiation of the active on its entry into the body. This assumption, however, finds no support in any statement of Aristotle or in his system as a whole. According to Aristotelian principles, the reason, like all immaterial and unmoved being, can promote the development of other things by solicitation, but cannot develop anything else from itself.

¹ The words, Gen An. ii. 3, 736, b, 5, to which Brentano, 195, calls attention, point rather to this: δίδ καὶ περὶ νοῦ, πότε καὶ πῶς μεταλαμβάνει καὶ πόθεν τὰ μετέχοντα ταύτης τῆς ἀρχῆς, ἔχει τ' ἀπορίαν πλείστην καὶ δεῖ προθυμεῖσθαι κατα δύναμιν λαβεῖν καὶ καθόσον ἐνδέχεται.

² Cf. p. 98, n. 2.

³ SCHLOTTMANN (Das Vergängliche und Unvergängliche in

one hand, in his account of 'Passive Reason' the qualities of the perishable parts of the soul are transferred to Reason; while, on the other hand, just as immaterial Form in general or the motive power as such is said to be itself unmoved, so Aristotle denies movement and change not only to Reason, but also to the Soul in general. The conception of the Passive Reason, in fact, concentrates in itself all the contradictions we are at present considering. The motionless-

¹ See p. 96 sqq. supra.

² See the passage already quoted, p 5, from De An. i. 3, 4. Aristotle opens the discussion at the beginning of c. 3 with the explanation that not only is it not true to say that the soul can, from its nature, be an έαυτο κινούν, άλλ' έν τι των άδυνάτων το ύπαρχειν αυτή κίνησιν. Of the arguments by which this is proved, the first (406, a, 12) is to Aristotle completely convincing: τεσσάρων δὲ κινήσεων οὐσῶν, φορᾶς, ἀλλοιώσεως, φθίσεως, αὐξήσεως, ή μίαν τούτων κινοῖτ' αν η πλείους η πάσας. εὶ δὲ κινείται μη κατά συμβεβηκός, φύσει αν ύπάρχοι κίνησις αὐτῆ. εἰ δὲ τοῦτο καὶ τόπος: πάσαι γὰρ αἱ λεχθεῖσαι κινήσεις έν τόπφ. εί δ' έστιν ή οὐσία της ψυχης το κινείν έαυτην, ού κατά συμβεβηκός αὐτῆ τὸ κινείσθαι ὑπάρχει. After proving in detail how impossible it is that the soul should move, and especially that it should move in space, Aristotle returns, c. 4, 408, a, 30, once more to the original question and declares that it is impossible that the soul should be self-moving; it can move and be moved only κατά συμβεβηκός, οίον κινείσθαι

μέν έν ῷ ἐστὶ, τοῦτο δὲ κινεῖσθαι ύπὸ της ψυχης άλλως δ' οὐχ οἶόν τε κινείσθαι κατά τόπον αὐτήν. It might, indeed, appear that it moves itself. φαμέν γάρ την ψυχὴν λυπεῖσθαι χαίρειν θαρρεῖν φοβεῖσθαι, ἔτι δὲ ὀργίζεσθαί τε καὶ αἰσθάνεσθαι καὶ διανοεῖσθαι ταῦτα δὲ πάντα κινήσεις είναι δοκοῦσιν. δθεν οἰηθείη τις αν αὐτὴν κινεῖσθαι: τὸ δ' οὺκ ἔστιν ἀναγκαῖον . . . βέλτιον γὰρ ἴσως μη λέγειν την ψυχην έλεειν η μανθάνειν η διανοείσθαι, άλλὰ τὸν ἄνθρωπον τῆ ψυχή. τοῦτο δὲ μη ώς ἐν ἐκείνη της κινήσεως ούσης, άλλ' ότε μέν μέχρι ἐκείνης, ότὲ δ' ἀπ' ἐκείνης, οίον ή μεν αίσθησις από τωνδί [it is a motion which proceeds from the senses to the soul, $\dot{\eta}$ δ ' άνάμνησις άπ' έκείνης έπὶ τὰς έν τοις αισθητηρίοις κινήσεις ή μονάς. Phys. vii. 3, 246, b, 24, shows with reference to the higher faculties that neither virtue and vice on the one hand, nor thought on the other, can be said to be an αλλοίωσις of the soul, although they are produced by an άλλοίωσις Cf. p. 94, n. 2.

³ Cf. i. 386, n. 1, and i. 359, n. 1, supra.

4 See p. 103 sq. supra.

ness of the lower faculties of the soul is contradicted among other things 1 by what has just been said about the characteristic difference between them and Reason. For how can they be susceptible of impression when they are wholly excluded from movement and change, seeing that every impression involves a change? 2

Where, finally, are we to look in this union of heterogeneous parts for that centre of equilibrium of the soul's life, which we call Personality? It cannot reside, it would seem, in Reason, for this is the permanent universal element in man which is unaffected by the changing conditions of individual life; it is not born. and it does not die; it is free from all suffering and .change; it is subject to no failure or error; neither love nor hate nor memory nor even intellectual activity3 belongs to it, but only to the man in whom it resides.4 Neither can Personality lie in the lower faculties of the For, on the one hand, Aristotle, as we have just seen, combats the view that these are subject to motion, and finds the proper subject of the changing states of feeling and even of intelligent thought, not in the soul itself, but in the union of both soul and body in man. On the other hand, he asserts that the essence of each

¹ As, for instance, the passage quoted, p. 109, n. 5, according to which, in desire, the appetitive part of the soul is both mover and moved, the Goor is only moved; and the description of sensation, p. 58, n. 4.

² See i. 454, n. 2, 3.

⁸ Διάνοια in the sense of discursive thought as explained, p. 106, n. 2.

Besides the passages quoted,

p. 99, n. 3, and p. 124, n. 2, supra, cf. De An. iii. 10, 433, a, 26: νοῦς μὲν οδν πῶς δρθός, but especially De An. i. 4, 408, b, 24: καὶ τὸ νοεῖν δὴ καὶ τὸ θεωρεῖν μαραίνεται ἄλλου τινὸς ἔσω φθειρομένου, αὐτὸ δὲ ἀπαθές ἐστιν (see p. 96, n. 2. supra). τὸ δὲ διανοεῖσθαι καὶ φιλεῖν ἡ μισεῖν οὐκ ἔστιν ἐκείνου πάθη, ἀλλὰ τουδὶ τοῦ ἔχοντος ἐκεῖνο, ἢ ἐκεῖνο ἔχει. διὸ καὶ τούτου φθειρρμένου οὕτε μνημογεύει οὕτε

individual is his reason,1 by which he understands, not thought alone, but every kind of intellectual apprehension.2 And if he refuses to acknowledge the soul as the subject of emotion, he is not likely to find it in the body.3 The most serious difficulty, however, arises in connection with his theory of the Will. Will cannot belong to Reason as such, for Reason taken in itself is not practical but theoretical. Even practical thought is sometimes regarded by Aristotle as a function of a different faculty from theoretic.4 Movement and action, in fact, come from desire, which in turn is excited by imagination.5 Desire, again, can cause movement, but not rational movement,6 for it belongs to animals as well

φιλεί ου γάρ ἐκείνου ήν, άλλὰ τοῦ ευργα. κοινοῦ, ὁ ἀπόλωλεν.

1 Eth. x. 7, 1178, a, 2: δόξειε δ' άν καὶ είναι έκαστος τοῦτο [i.e. νοῦς] είπερ το κύριον καλ άμεινον. ix. 4, 1166, α, 16, 22: τοῦ δια-νοητικοῦ χάριν ὅπερ ἕκαστος εἶναι δοκεῖ . . . δόξειε δ' ἃν τὸ νοοῦν ἔκαστος εἶναι ἡ μάλιστα. C. 8, 1168, b. 28: the good man might be said to be pre-eminently φίλ-auτos, seeing that love of the most essential (κυριώτατον) part of himself predominates in all he does. ωσπερ δὲ καὶ πόλις τὸ κυριώτατον μάλιστ' είναι δοκεί καλ πᾶν ἄλλο σύστημα, οῦτω καὶ ἄνθρωπος . . . καὶ ἐγκρατὴς δὲ καὶ άκρατης λέγεται τῷ κρατεῖν τὸν νοῦν ἢ μὴ, ὡς τούτου ἐκάστου ὄντος: καί πεπραγέναι δοκοῦσιν αὐτοί καί έκουσίως τὰ μετὰ λόγου μάλιστα,

² See p. 93, u. 5, supra.

 3 Eth. x. 2, 1173, b, 10: if pleasure is an ἀναπλήρωσις, the body must be that which feels pleasure, but this is not the case.

⁴ Eth. vi. 2; see p. 113, n. 2,

⁵ See the passages from Eth. vi. 2, 1139, a, 35, already employed, p. 113 sq.: διάνοια δ' αὐτὴ οὐθὲν κινεῖ, ἀλλ' ἡ ἔνεκά του καl πρακτική. De An. iii. 10, 433, a, 22: δ μέν νοῦς οὐ φαίνεται κινών άνευ ὀρέξεως. c. 9, 432, b, 26: άλλὰ μὴν οὐδὲ τὸ λογιστικὸν καὶ ὁ καλούμενος νοῦς ἐστίν ὁ κινῶν · ὁ μέν γάρ θεωρητικός οὐθέν νοεί πρακτον, οὐδὲ λέγει περί φευκτοῦ καί διωκτοῦ οὐθὲν, ή δὲ κίνησις ή φεύγοντός τι ή διώκοντός τί ἐστιν. άλλ' οὐδ' ὅταν θεωρῆ τι τοιοῦτον, ήδη κελεύει φεύγειν ἢ διώκειν . . . έτι καλ έπιτάττοντος τοῦ νοῦ καλ λεγούσης της διανοίας φεύγειν τι ή διώκειν οὺ κινείται άλλὰ κατὰ τὴν ἐπιθυμίαν πράττει, οίον δ ἀκρατής, και όλως δρώμεν ότι δ έχων την lατρικήν οὐκ lαται, ωs έτέρου τινός κυρίου όντος του ποιείν κατά την έπιστήμην, άλλ' οὐ τῆς ἐπιστή-

^e De An. iii. 9 fin., after the passage just quoted: ἀλλὰ μὴν οὐδ' ἡ ὄρεξις ταύτης κυρία της κινήas man, whereas the Will belongs to man alone.¹ Both Reason and Desire must therefore enter into Will as constituent parts.² But in which of these two the essence of the Will or the power of free self-determination resides, it is hard to say. On the one hand, the power of controlling desire is attributed to Reason, which is defined as the motive force, or more accurately the source from which the resolutions of the will proceed:³ and immorality is treated as a perversity of Reason.⁴ On the other hand, it is asserted that Reason initiates

σεως · οἱ γὰρ ἐγκρατεῖς ὀρεγόμενοι καὶ ἐπιθυμοῦντες οὐ πράττουσιν ὧν ἔχουσι τὴν ὕρεξιν, ἀλλ' ἀκολουθοῦσι τῶ νῶ.

¹ Cf. p. 114, n. 3, and p. 117, n. 3. ² See p. 114, n 3, and Eth. vi. 2, 1139, a, 33 : διδ οὕτ' ἄνευ νοῦ καὶ διανοίας οὕτ' ἄνευ ἡθικῆς έστιν έξεως ή προαίρεσις. b, 4: διδ ή δρεκτικός νους ή προαίρεσις ή ύρεξις διανοητική και ή τοιαύτη άρχη ἄνθρωπος. If, in opposition to the above view, it be said that the will belongs to ὅρεξις, which is regarded by Aristotle as a separate part of the soul (SCHRA-DER. Arist. de Volunt. Doctr. 12), this cannot be admitted. Aristotle himself states clearly enough that reason is an element of will, but reason is essentially different from the animal soul to which ὕρεξις belongs.

s Aristotle frequently says that the command in the soul belongs by nature to the reason. It is κόριον in it (Eth. x. 7, ix. 8; see p 126, n. 1, supra); it has no superior (De An. i. 5, 410, a, 12: τῆς δὲ ψυχῆς εἶναὶ τι κρεῖττον καὶ ἀρχον, ἀδύνατον · ἀδυνατώτερον δ' ἔτι τοῦ νοῦ). Desire, on the other

hand, must obey the reason (Polit. i. 5: δ δέ νοῦς [ἄρχει] τῆς ορέξεως πολιτικήν και βασιλικήν [\$\delta\rhat{\eta}\eta\rhat{\eta}\rhat{\psi}. De An. iii. 9, v. 598, 5 above : ἐπιτάττοντος τοῦ νοῦ. Eth. 13: the ὀρεκτικὸν partakes of λόγος, ή κατήκούν έστιν αὐτοῦ καί πειθαρχικόν, similarly Polit. vii. 14, v. p. 588; λόγος, however, resides only in the reason). and this obedience it is which constitutes the difference between the έγκρατης and the ακρατής (De An. iii. 9, see p. 126, n. 6). In Eth. iii. 5, 1113, a, 5 (παύεται γάρ εκαστος ζητών πώς πράξει, ὅταν εἶς αὑτὸν ἀναγάγη τὴν $d\rho \chi \eta \nu$ [sc. $\tau \eta s \pi \rho d\xi \epsilon \omega s$ when he is convinced that the action depends only on himself | καλ αὐτοῦ [this is the partitive genitive] είς τδ ήγούμενον' τοῦτο γὰρ τὸ προαιρούμενον). we must understand by to hyoung. vov the reason, not (as WALTER. Lehre v. d. prakt. Vernunft, 222 sqq. prefers to take it) 'the harmonious union of reason and endeavour,' 'the man as a whole. which could not be called the governing part of the man,

⁴ Eth. vii. 7, 1150, a, 1 sqq. c. 9, 1151, a, 17 sq.

no movement and is perfect and infallible.1 But it Reason cannot err, it cannot be the seat of the Will, to which belong the doing of good and the doing of evil. Where Aristotle actually supposes this to reside, it is impossible to say. He is clearly drawn in opposite directions by opposite considerations between which he is unable to take up any decided position. His high conception of the nature of the spiritual element in man forbids him to implicate Reason in the life of the body, or to attribute to it error and immorality; on the other hand, it is to Reason alone that the reins of government in the soul can be committed. But the two elements are in reality inseparable, and in deducing only what is good in our actions from Reason, while limiting to the lower faculties of the soul all that is faulty, every act which has for its object what is divisible and corporeal, all change in act or state, he breaks up human nature into two parts between which no living bond of connection can be discovered.² Similar difficulties would

¹ Cf. on the former head, p. 126, n. 5, on the second, De An. iii. 10 (p. 125, n. 4), and p. 197, n. 4, supra. Eth. i. 13, 1102, b, 14: τοῦ γὰρ έγκρατοῦς καὶ τοῦ ἀκρατοῦς τον λόγον καὶ τῆς ψυχῆς τὸ λόγον ἔχον ἐπαινοῦμεν ὀρθώς γὰρ καὶ ἐπὶ τὰ βέλτιστα παρακαλεῖ—so that in incontinence the mistake does not lie with the rational part of the soul; ibid. ix. 8, 1169, a, 17: πας γαρ νους αίρειται το βέλτιστον έαυτώ, ὁ δ' ἐπιεικής πειθυρχεί τῷ νφ, where virtue is said to consist in the subordination of the higher portions of the soul to the reason, which in its turn always chooses the right.

² The difficulty remains even although we assume with BRANDIS (iii. a, 105 sq. ii. b, 1042 sq.) that freedom, according to Aristotle. consists 'in the spirit's faculty of self-evolution in accordance with its own fundamental nature.' For we may ask to which part of the soul this evolution belongs? The active reason cannot certainly evolve itself, for it is unchangeable; nor can the appetitive and sensitive exhibit free selfevolution, being always determined by something else; only where there is reason do we find free activity. Lastly, the Passive Reason, which is the only other

have arisen in regard to self-consciousness had Aristotle gone deeper into this aspect of the question. But just his failure to do so or to raise the question in the form in which it now presents itself to us, as to what it is that constitutes the permanent self amid our changing acts and states, shows more clearly than anything else how imperfectly he grasped the problem of the unity of the personal life.

Now, if reason enters man from without, and if its union with the other faculties of his soul, and with the

alternative, is open to the same charge of indefiniteness contradiction: we cannot find any definite place for it between reason and sense. The above definition of freedom is more like Leibnitz's than Aristotle's. Here also. as in the case already discussed i. 413, supra, sq., BRANDIS seems too close a resemblance between Aristotelian and modern German doctrines. argument upon which he chiefly relies for the above view is that, if self-determination has its seat in the governing part of our nature, and therefore in the spirit, and if further the spirit is the essence of a man, we may conclude that it must develop by free self-determination according to its original character as individual essence. But spirit or reason constitutes, according to Aristotle, only one side of the will; its reference to sense is as essential an element. Will is not pure reason, but rational desire. And even were it not so, if will were exclusively an exercise of reason, we could only conclude that it is as incapable of evolu-

tion as of error, for according to Aristotle's expressed opinion change and evolution are confined to the sphere of sensation or even more strictly to the body. It is difficult, therefore, to say rhat Aristotle regarded as the seat of the freedom of the will.

1 He remarks, indeed, that we are conscious of every form of our activity as such, and therefore of our own existence. ix. 9, 1070, a, 29: δ δ' δρών. δτι δρα αἰσθάνεται καὶ δ ἀκούων ὅτι ἀκούει και ὁ βαδίζων ὅτι βαδίζει, και έπὶ τῶν ἄλλων ὁμοίως ἔστι τι τὸ αίσθανόμενον ότι ένεργούμεν, ώστε αλσθανοίμεθ' αν ότι αλσθανόμεθα καλ νοοίμεν ότι νοούμεν. τὸ δ' ότι αίσθανόμεθα ή νοούμεν, ὅτι ἐσμέν · τὸ γὰρ είναι ἢν αἰσθάνεσθαι ἢ νοεῖν) : This consciousness, however, he regards as immediately given with the activity in question. In perception it has its seat in the sensus communis (see p. 69, n. 3). How the identity of self-consciousness in the different activities which he refers to different parts and faculties of the soul is to be explained he does not inquire.

body, continues throughout to be merely an external one, we cannot but expect that a union which begins in time will also end in time. Upon this point, Aristotle holds with Plato that there is a mortal and also an immortal part in the soul. These unite together at the beginning of the earthly life, and separate from one another again at its close. In the further development, moreover, of this thought he at first closely followed Plato. In his earlier writings he enunciated the Platonic doctrines of the pre-existence of the soul, its incarceration in the body, and its return at death to a higher existence.2 He therefore assumed the continued personality and self-conscious existence of the individual after death, although he failed, like Plato, fully to investigate the question how far this doctrine was consistent with the presuppositions of the Platonic philosophy.3 With the independent development of his own system, however, he was necessarily led to question these assumptions. As he came to conceive of body and soul as essentially united, and to define the soul as the entelechy of the body, and as, further, he became convinced that every soul requires its own proper organ, and must remain wholly inoperative without it, he was necessarily led, not only to regard the pilgrimage of the soul in the other world as a myth. but also to question the doctrines of pre-existence and immortality as they were held by Plato.4 Inasmuch as

¹ Aristotle's doctrine of immortality is discussed by SCHRADER, Jahrb. f. Philologie, vol. 81 and 82 (1860), H. 2, p. 89-104; Leonh. SCHNEIDER, Unsterblichkeitslehre d. Aristot. (Passau, 1867), p. 100 sqq.

² The references on this subject have already been given. Cf. BERNAYS, *Dial. d. Arist.* 21 sqq. 143 sqq.

³ On which cf. Ph. d. Gr. i. 717 sq.

⁴ Cf. p. 10, supra.

the soul is dependent upon the body for its existence and activity, it must come into existence and perish with it. Only incorporeal spirit can precede and outlast the bodily life. But this, according to Aristotle, is to be found only in the reason and in that part of it which is without taint of the lower activities of the soul-namely, the Active Nous. Neither the sensitive nor the nutritive life can exist without the body. These come into existence in and with it, and can no more be conceived of apart from it than walking apart from feet.1 Even Passive Reason is transitory, like everything else which is subject to impression and change. The Active Reason alone is eternal and imperishable; it alone is not only separable, but in its very nature absolutely separated from the body.2 But what now is the active reason which thus alone outlives death? It is the universal as distinguished from the individual element in man. All personal forms of activity, on the other hand, are referred either to the lower faculties of the soul, or to the whole, which is made up of soul and body, and which at death ceases to be. If we think of reason as separate from the body, we must exclude from it love and hate, memory and intelligent thought; 3 likewise, of course, all

¹ See p. 6, n. 1, and p. 96, n. 1, supra.

² See p. 98, n. 1, supra, and Metaph. xii. 3, 1070, a, 24: εἰ δὲ καὶ ὅστερόν τι ὑπομένει [whether anything remains after the dissolution of the constituent parts of a composite substance] σκεπτέον ἐπ' ἐνίων γὰροὐθὲν κωλύει, οἶον εἰ ἡ ψυγὴ τοιοῦτον, μὴ πᾶσα ἀλλ'

δ νοῦς · πᾶσαν γὰρ ἀδύνατον ἴσως.

3 See on this point the passages cited on pp. 125, n. 4, and 101, n. 3, De An. i. 4, 408, a, 24 sqq. iii. 5, 430, a, 22. In the first of these passages διανοεῖσθαι, φιλεῖν, μισεῖν, μνημονεύειν are expressly denied of reason, and the statement that these belong in any sense to a rational being

affections, together with the feelings of pleasure and pain, all of which belong to the sphere of the sensitive life; and since even will depends for existence upon the union of Reason with Desire, it also must perish with the lower parts of the soul.1 Spirit or thought Aristotle doubtless conceived of as surviving death, and since it realises itself only in the activity of thought, this activity also must remain untouched by death, as it is held to be proof against old age.2 But of the way in which we are to think of this continuance of thought after its separation from the body and the lower faculties of the soul Aristotle gives us no hint whatever. Even thought is impossible without the aid of pictorial imagination,3 which cannot be said to exist in any intelligible sense after the death of the sentient soul. And when the body, which the soul as individual presupposes; 4 when perception, imagination, memory, reflexion; when the feelings of pleasure and pain, the

is qualified by the addition: διδ και τούτου φθειρομένου ούτε μνημονεύει ούτε φιλεῖ. οὐ γὰρ ἐκείνου ἢν, ἀλλὰ τοῦ κοινοῦ, δ ἀπόλωλεν. With regard to the second, it has already been remarked, p. 101, n. 2, sup., that the words οὐ μνημονεύομεν δè refer in the first instance, indeed, to the failure to remember the existence out of time of the Nousanterior to its life in time, but that what is true of the present life in relation to an anterior one must be equally true of the future life in relation to the present. Since memory (according to p. 70 sq.) is an attribute of the sensitive soul and depends upon the bodily organs, and since without the passive reason, which

perishes at death, no individual thought is possible (p. 101. n. 3), it is obvious that neither can survive death. Schlottmann's explanation (p. 50 of the work mentioned p. 123, n. 3, supra), according to which the words οὐ μνημονεύομεν, &c.refer to the continuous activity of the νοῦς ποιητικὸs in the present life as an unconscious one, is consistent neither with the connection in which they stand nor with the meaning which is constantly attached to μνημονεύειν in Aristotelian phraseology.

¹ Cf. p. 109, n. 1, 2, and p. 126 q.

See p. 96, n. 2. supra.
 See p. 108, n. 2, supra.
 Cf. i. 369 sq., supra.

emotions, the desires and the will; when, finally, the whole being compounded of the union of soul and body has ceased as a whole to be, we are at a loss to see where that solitary remnant which he calls spirit can still reside, and how we can still speak of any personal life at all. And, indeed, Aristotle himself in expressly rejecting the idea that the dead can be happy, and in comparing their state to the loss of all sense,

' Even BRENTANO'S Psychol. d. Arist. 128 sq. fails to find a satisfactory answer to this question; while maintaining that the soul must remain an individual entity after its separation from the body, he yet admits that it is no longer a 'complete substance,' repeating the statement, p. 196 sq. But how a man can be the same person when he is no longer the 'perfect substance' which he is in the present life, it is difficult to see: not to mention that the contradiction of an 'imperfect substance' finds no place in Aristotle's system.

² Eth. iii. 4, 1111, b, 22 (βούλησις δ' έστι των άδυνάτων, οΐον άθαvaolas) is not here in point, as άθανασία must be understood to mean here, not immortality after death, but immunity from death, deathlessness. Ibid. c. 11, 1115, a, 26: the discussion is merely of the common opinion. On the other hand, Eth. i. 11 is of importance for our question. Aristotle here asks whether the dead can be happy, and replies (1100, α, 13): ή τοῦτό γε παντελώς ἄτοπον άλλως τε καὶ τοῖς λέγουσιν ἡμῖν ένέργειάν τινα την εὐδαιμονίαν; εἰ δὲ μὴ λέγομεν τὸν τεθνεῶτα εὐδαίμονα μηδέ Σόλων τοῦτο βούλεται &c., obviously implying that the

dead are incapable of any activity. He says, indeed, in the passage that follows: δοκεί γάρ είναι τι τῷ τεθνεῶτι καὶ κακὸν καὶ άγαθον, είπερ και τῷ (ῶντι μ ἡ αίσθανομένω δέ, and p. 1101, b, 1: ἔσικε γὰρ ἐκ τούτων, εἰ καὶ διϊκνείται πρός αὐτοὺς ότιοῦν, εἴτ' άγάθον είτε τουναντίον, άφαυρόν τι καὶ μικρου ή άπλως ή ἐκείνοις είναι. εί δὲ μὴ, τοσοῦτόν γε καὶ τοιοῦτον ωστε μή ποιείν εὐδαίμονας τοὺς μή οντας [those who are not so] μηδέ τούς ύντας άφαιρεῖσθαι το μακάριον. His meaning, however, cannot here be that the dead have a feeling of happiness or unhappiness which is increased by the prosperity or misfortune of posterity (which is the subject under discussion). This is even expressly denied and would be wholly inconsistent with the rest of Aristotle's teaching. He is here speaking of the æsthetic estimate of human life, the question being how far the picture of happiness with which the life of a man presents us is altered by the light or shade cast upon it by the fortunes of his descendants, just as (1100, a, 20) by the honour or disgrace which follow himself after death. How remote is an actual, personal immortality Aristotle's thought

seems to deny the existence of any such remnant. Under these circumstances it is impossible to say that Aristotle taught a doctrine of personal immortality.1 He taught merely the continued existence of thinking spirit, denying to it all the attributes of personality, and never explaining nor apparently even raising the question, how far this spirit can still be regarded as belonging to an individual, as incorporeal reason, in spite of its eternity and impassivity, certainly is.2 In this omission we have only another instance of that defect which, taking its rise in the Platonic school, permeates the whole of Aristotle's Anthropology. Just as his Metaphysics gives us no clear and consistent account of Individuality, so his Psychology fails with regard to Personality. As he there left it undetermined whether the ground of individual existence lies in Matter or in Form, so here we are left in the dark as to whether Personality resides in the higher or in the lower faculties of the soul, in the immortal or in the mortal part of our nature. We are left to conclude that each of these alternatives involves difficulties which Aristotle has done nothing to remove, and which, there-

obvious also from Eth. ix. 8, 1169, a, 18. The good man, he there says, will do much for his friends and country, καν δέη ὑπεραποθνή ποκειν . . . ὀλίγον γάρ χρόνον ἡσθῆναι σφόδρα μᾶλλον ἔλοιτ' ἀν ἢ πολὺν ἡρέμα, καὶ βιῶσαι καλῶς ἐνιαυτὸν ἢ πόλλὸ ἔτη τυχόντως, καὶ μιαν πρᾶξιν καλὴν καὶ μεγάλην ἢ πολλὰς καὶ μικράς. τοῖς δ' ὑπεραποθνήσκουσι τοῦτ' ἴσως συμβαίνει. αἰροῦνται γὰρ μέγα καλὸν ἑαυτοῖς. Besides the inherent worth of the noble deed Plato would certainly

have referred in such a case to the recompense in the next life; in Aristotle there is no trace of any such conception. The same is true of E/h. iii. 12, 1117, b, 10: ὅσφ ὰν μᾶλλον τὴν ἀρετὴν ἔχη πᾶσαν καὶ εὐδαιμονέστερος ἢ, μᾶλλον ἐπὶ τῷ θανάτ φ λυπηθήσεται τῷ τοιούτφ γὰρ μάλιστα ζῆν ἄξιον, καὶ οὖτος μεγίστων ἀγαθῶν ἀποστερεῖται εἰδώς.

SCHRADER, ibid. 101 sq.

² See p. 99, n. 5, supra.

fore, we cannot doubt he failed himself to observe. Reason as such or Pure Spirit cannot, it would appear, be the seat of Personality, since it is the eternal, universal, and immutable element in man. It is untouched by birth and death, and by the changes of the temporal life. It abides immutably within the circle of its own life, without receiving impressions from without or passing any part of its activity beyond itself. To the sphere of sense, on the other hand, are assigned all multiplicity and movement, all interchange between the world and man, all mutation and evolution-in a word, all that is definite and living in personal existence. Yet the personality and free self-determination of a rational being cannot be said to reside in the sensitive part of his nature. Wherein does it, then, reside? To this question Aristotle has no answer; for just as Reason, on his view, enters the sensitive soul at birth from without and leaves it again at death, so during life also there is lacking any inner unity between the two. And what is said about the Passive Reason and the Will is wholly unfitted, on account of its vagueness and uncertainty, to afford any scientific principle that can mediate between the heterogeneous parts of the human soul.

CHAPTER XII

PRACTICAL PHILOSOPHY

A.—Ethics

HITHERTO we have had for our aim the investigation of the knowledge of reality as such. We have now to deal with an activity to which knowledge serves only as a means. This consists either in production or in action.\(^1\) The scientific investigation of the latter Aristotle embraces under the general name of Politics,\(^2\) distinguishing, however, between Politics proper, or the doctrine of the State, and Ethics,\(^3\) which naturally

[°] See i. 187, supra. Practical philosophy is also called ἡ περι τὰνθρώπινα φιλοσοφία, Eth. x. 10, 1181, b. 15.

¹ See i. 181, n. 3, supra, and upon the method of this science, i. 168, n. 2, supra. That it has not to do, however, merely with practical interests is obvious among other passages from Polit. iii. 8 init.: δεί δε μικρώ διά μακροτέρων είπείν τίς έκάστη τούτων τῶν πολιτειῶν έστίν και γάρ έχει τινάς ἀπορίας, τω δέ περί εκάστην μέθοδον φιλοσοφοῦντι καὶ μὴ μόνον ἀποβλέποντι πρός το πράττειν οἰκεῖόν ἐστι τὸ μὴ παρορᾶν μηδέ τι καταλείπειν, άλλὰ δηλοῦν τὴν περί εκαστον αλήθειαν. While, therefore, practical philosophy qua practical has to do with action, qua philosophy it has the scientific interest of pure knowledge.

The common view of the relation between them, which was adopted i 187, viz. that Ethics treats of the moral activity of the individual, Politics of the State, cannot, even in view of what NICKES, De polit. Arist. Libr. p. 5 sq., and BRANDIS, p. 1335, remark, be admitted to be wrong. Aristotle certainly distinguishes (Eth. x. 10) between the two parts of Politics on the ground that the second deals with the means by which the knowledge of virtue acquired in

precedes it. Turning to the latter, we must ask first how the End of all human action is defined by Aristotle. We shall then proceed to his account of the nature of Moral Activity and of the particular Virtues; passing thence with him to the discussion of Friendship, which forms the link between Ethics and Politics.¹

the first is applied to life, and he proves the necessity of this further investigation on the ground that discussions (or knowledge, λόγοι) are not able of themselves to make men virtuous. Accordingly, Ethics and Positics may be said to be related to one another as the pure and the applied part of one and the same science. But as those means are to be found, according to Aristotle, only in the life of the community, upon which the Ethics (as an account of moral activities as such) does not further enter, the above description corresponds to the actual relation in which the works stand to one another. Even Aristotle, moreover, distinguishes (Eth. vi. 8, 1141, b, 23) between two kinds of practical knowledge: that which refers to the individual, and that which refers to the community. ἔστι δè, he says, καὶ ή πολιτική καὶ ή φρόνησις ή αὐτή μὲν έξις, τὸ μέντοι είναι οὐ ταὐτὸν αὐταῖs, and after distinguishing the different departments of politics (τη̂s περλ πόλιν, sc. ἐπιστήμης) he continues: δοκεί δὲ καὶ φρόνησις μάλιστ' είναι ή περί αὐτὸν καί ένα. While, however, φρόνησις is knowledge in relation to moral conduct, ethics is simply the account of the principles which φρόνησις establishes. Eudemus (v. i. 186, n. 4, supra) accordingly calls it by this name.

-lt is not true that the Magna Moralia subordinates politics to ethics (BRANDIS, ibid.): the latter is there described at the very outset as a μέρος της πολιτικής, it being added that the subject as a whole should be called, not ethics, but politics. When NICKES. ibid., sees in the Ethics only a upon the treatise swmmumbonum, this description (in so far as it indicates merely the ascertainment and enumeration of the constituent parts of the summum bonum) is too narrow; the Ethics itself classifies its contents (x. 10 init.) under the four titles of the summum bonum, the virtues. friendship, and pleasure—so that it is apparent, even on the surface, that it is not a mere description of the summum bonum, but an account of moral action as a whole. If, on the other hand, we include in the discussion of the summum bonum the detailed investigation into all its conditions and constituent parts, the suggested description would be too wide, for its most important constituent, theoretic activity, is not fully discussed in the Ethics.

We have already discussed (p. 96 sq) the threefold revision of the *Ethics* of Aristotle, and shall confine ourselves in the following account to the *Nicomachem Ethics*, which alone is genuine, giving the parallel

1. The End of all human activity 1 is the Good, or, more accurately, that Good which is within the reach of human action, for Ethics has no concern with the abstract Idea of the Good.² The final aim of all action must be the highest Good: in other words, it must be something which is sought, not for the sake of anything else, but simply and solely for its own sake, and is sufficient of itself to invest life with the highest worth.³

passages from the other two only where they elucidate or deviate from it in any important respect.

¹ Cf. on this subject TEICH-MÜLLER ('Die Einheit der arist. Eudämonie,' Bulletin de la Classe d. Sci. hist.-philol. et polit. de l'Académie de St-Pétersbourg, t. xvi. N. 20 sqq. p. 305 sqq.), who rightly emphasises the distinction between the constituent elements and the external con-

ditions of happiness.

² Eth. i. 1 init. Πᾶσα τέχνη καλ πασα μέθοδος, δμοίως δὲ πραξίς τε καλ προαίρεσις, άγαθοῦ τινος έφίεσθαι δοκεί διό καλώς ἀπεφήναντο τάγαθὸν, οὖ πάντ' ἐφίεται. This good is called here (1094, a, 18), and c. 2, 1095, a, 16, πρακτόν and πρακτου άγαθόν. Aristotle next comes to speak more fully, c. 4, of the Platonic Idea of the Good (Ph. d. Gr. i. 591 sqq.), and after bringing forward several other arguments against says, ibid. 1096, b, 30: this discussion, however, properly belongs to another science; el γαρ και έστιν έν τι καί [so Rassow, Forsch. üb. die nikom. Eth. 53 sq., with three MSS., for τδ] κοινή κατηγορούμενον άγαθον ή χωριστόν τι αὐτό καθ' αὐτό, δῆλον ώς οδκ άν είη πρακτόν οδδε κτητόν άνθρώπω· νῦν δὲ τοιοῦτόν τι ζητεῖται.

Nor is it true that the idea of the good, at any rate as an ideal, furnishes the guiding principle in the pursuit of the κτητά καλ πρακτά των άγαθων. Inter alia, be says: ἄπορον δὲ καὶ τί ἀφεληθήσεται ύφάντης η τέκτων πρός την αύτοῦ τέχνην είδως αὐτό τάγαθόν. &c., as though moral philosophy were meant for the service of handicraft. This it certainly is not in Aristotle himself (as may herewith be expressly remarked in view of the remarks of TEICH-MÜLLER, loc. cit. 315 sq.), and vet it must be if he is justified in using against Plato an argument that with equal justice might be turned against himself; for it must be confessed that the advantage to be derived by the weaver or the carpenter in the pursuit of his calling from Aristotle's treatise upon happiness is not great.

3 Ēth. i. 1, 1094, a, 18: εἰ δή τι τέλος ἐστὶ τῶν προκτῶν δ δι' αὐτὰ βουλόμεθα, τἄλλα δὲ διὰ τοῦτο, καὶ μὴ πάντα δι' ἔτερον αἰρούμεθα (πρόεισι γὰρ οὕτω γ' εἰς ἄπειρον, ἄστ' εἶναι κενὴν καὶ ματαίαν τὴν ὄρεξιν) δῆλον ὡς τοῦτ' ὰν εἰη τὰγαθὸν [absolute good] καὶ τὰ ἄριστον. c. 5: in every form of activity the good is that οδ χάριν τὰ λοιπὰ πράττεται—the

This highest Good is admitted on all hands to be Happiness: 1 but when we ask in what Happiness itself

τέλος. ὥστ' εἴ τι τῶν πρακτῶν απάντων έστι τέλος, τοῦτ' αν είη τὸ πρακτὸν ἀγαθὸν, εἰ δὲ πλείω, ταῦτα . . . τὸ δ' ἄριστον τέλειόν τι φαίνεται . . . τελειότερον δὲ λέγομεν το καθ' αύτο διωκτον τοῦ δι' έτερον καὶ τὸ μηδέποτε δι' άλλο αίρετον των και καθ' αύτα και διά τοῦθ' αίρετῶν, καὶ ἁπλῶς δὴ τέλειον τὸ καθ' αύτὸ αίρετὸν ἀεὶ καὶ μηδέποτε δ' ἄλλο. And further on: τὸ γὰρ τέλειον ἀγαθὸν αὕταρκες εἶναι δοκεῖ . . . τὸ δ' αὕταρκες τίθεμεν δ μονούμενον αίρετον ποιεί τον βίον καὶ μηδενος ενδεά (similarly PLATO, Phileb. 22, B); x. 6, 1176, b, 3, 30. Cf. i. 12, where it is explained that happiness, as complete in itself, is not an έπαινετόν, but a τίμιον, something κρείττον των έπαινετων.

¹ Aristotle presupposes this, Eth. i. 2, 1095, a, 17; Rhet. i. 5 init., as something universally cf. x. 6, 1176, b, 3, 30, from the points of view indicated in the preceding note. In Eth. i. 5, however, the words, 1097, b, 16 sqq., make a difficulty: ἔτι δὲ, it is here said, πάντων αίρετωτάτην [sc. τὴν εὐδαιμονίαν οἰόμεθα εἶναι] μὴ συναριθμουμένην, συναριθμουμένην δὲ δῆλον ὡς αἱρετωτέραν μετὰ τοῦ έλαχίστου των άγαθων ύπεροχή γάρ άγαθων γίνεται τὸ προστιθέμενον, άγαθών δὲ τὸ μείζον αίρετώτερον αεί. The most obvious meaning of these words, viz. that happiness is in the highest degree desirable without the addition of anything else, and is increased by every addition although of ever so small a good

(Brandis, p. 1344; Münscher, Quæst. crit. in Eth. N. Marb. 1861, p. 9 sqq.), gives a wholly inadmissible sense to the passage: how could what is complete still grow? (as Teichmüller rightly asks, loc. cit. p. 312), or how can happiness, which contains all goods in itself, be increased by further additions? Moreover, it is expressly said. Eth. x. 2, 1172, b, 32, that nothing can be 'the good' δ μετά τινος τῶν καθ' αὑτὸ άγαθῶν αἰρετώτερον γίνεται. ΤΕΙCH-MÜLLER accordingly proposes to take the sentence as an apagoge: happiness is the most desirable thing, if we do not regard it as a sum, but if we do, then the addition of the smallest of goods must make it more desirable, and therefore we cannot regard it as a sum of particular goods. The same explanation is given acknowledged. He proves it more by Thilo, Zeitschr. f. exacte fully, Eth. i. 5, 1097, a, 34 sqq.; Phil. ii. 3, 284 sq., and LAAS (see infra). The question, however, in the passage is, not whether happiness is a sum of goods, but . whether it is the most desirable of things or not; nor does συναριθμούμενος mean 'regarded as a sum; ' συναριθμείν can only here have the meaning which it has in the kindred passage (explained by Top. iii. 2, 117, a, 16, and ALEXANDER in loco) Rhet. i. 7, 1363, b, 19; Polit. vi. 3, 1318, a, 35; Soph. El. 5, 167, a, 25; Eth. ii. 3, 1105, b, 1; i.e. it must mean either to 'count along with' or to 'count up;' when used with a singular subject it can of course only mean the former, and accordingly is explained, l. 14 of

consists, differences at once arise.¹ Some give the preference to pleasure, others to practical activity, a third class to the scientific life.² The first of these views seems to Aristotle hardly to deserve refutation.

the same passage, by μονούμενον and understood in this sense, M. Mor. i. 2, 1184, a, 15 sqq.; cf. RASSOW, Beitr. z. Erkl. d. nik. Ethik (Weimar, 1862, Gymn,-Progr.), p. 5 sqq., where the explanations of LAAS (Eùdamorla Arist. Berl. 1858, 7 sqq.), MÜN-SCHER, and others, are also discussed. Rassow's own explanation (p. 10: 'that happiness is not to be reckoned among goods nor regarded as a good beside other goods') is not easy to harmonise with the language of the passage. If the text is correct, we must explain it rather to mean: 'We regard happiness as the most desirable of all things, so far as it can be compared with them without itself being classed as one of the πάντα * fit is more desirable than anything else]; if we desire to class it as a good together with other goods, it would become more desirable still if its value were increased by the addition of ever so small another good.' But it is difficult to see the force of the latter remark, for the proof of the proposition that happiness is perfect good, is only weakened by this concession to a non-Aristotelian point of view. It is a question whether the words ὑπεροχη γὰρ . . . αίρετώτερον άελ, or perhaps the whole passage from συναριθμουμένην δέ to αίρετώτ. ἀεί may not be an insertion by a later hand. In

the former case, we may supply πάντων after αίρετωτέραν in the preceding words and explain them to mean: 'We hold that happiness is the most desirable of all things so far as it is not itself classed as one of them; or in so far as it is classed along with other things, combined with the smallest other good, that it is more desirable than all else be-The most recent editor sides.' and commentator on the Nicomachean Ethics, RAMSAUER, pays no regard either to the inherent difficulty of the passage or to the attempts of his predecessors to solve it.

¹ See Eth. i. 2, 1095, a, 20 sqq., c. 9 init.; Rhet. ibid. 1360, b, 14 sqq., where the things which are commonly regarded as happiness are enumerated and discussed in detail for the special necessities of the orator.

² Aristotle says previously, Eth. i. 2, 1095, a, 28, that he does not intend to investigate every view upon the nature of happiness, but only such as are the most commonly accepted and the most plausible. As such he names these three, c. 3 init .: τὸ γὰρ ἀγαθὸν καὶ τὴν εὐδαιμονίαν ούκ άλόγως ἐοίκασιν ἐκ τῶν βίων ύπολαμβάνειν οί μέν πολλοί καί φορτικώτατοι την ήδουην, διό καλ βίον άγαπωσι τον απολαυστικόν. τρείς γάρ είσι μάλιστα οί προύχοντες, δ τε νῦν εἰρημένος καὶ δ πολιτικός και τρίτος δ θεωρητικός.

Without denying that pleasure is a good, he has a most thorough contempt for the life which is dedicated to pleasure alone. Pleasure, he remarks, cannot be the highest Good, for these among other reasons: that it is not self-sufficing: that some pleasures are not desirable: that many things have an independent value of their own wholly apart from the pleasure that they bring: that pleasure and enjoyment are only a recreation, and only exist for the sake of action; that even the worst men, whom we cannot call in any sense happy, are capable of sensual enjoyment, whereas that alone is truly good which the virtuous man recognises as such.1 Just as little can honour or wealth be admitted to be the highest good. The former does not so much affect those to whom it is paid as those who pay it; its value, moreover, consists essentially in the fact that it produces consciousness of worth, which, therefore, is of more value than the honour itself.2 Wealth, again, is not desired on its own account, so that it wants the first characteristic of Good in the higher sense.3

The happiness of man can, in fact, consist only in his activity,⁴ or more accurately in that activity which is

See e.g. Eth. i. 3, 1095, b, 31, c. 6, 1098, a, 3; and the more definite statement, c. 9, 1098, b, 31: διαφέρει δὲ ἴσως οὐ μικρὸν ἐν κτήσει ἢ χρήσει τὸ ἄριστον ὑπολαμβάνειν καὶ ἐν ἔξει ἢ ἐνεργε ᾳ. τὴν μὲν γὰρ ἔξιν ἐνδέχεται μηδὲν ἀγαθὸν ἀποτελεῖν ὑπάρχουσαν, οἶον τῷ καθεύδοντι ἢ καὶ ἀλλως πως ἐξηργηκότι, τὴν δ' ἐνέργειαν οὐχ οἶόν τεπράξει γὰρ ἔξ ἀνάγκης καὶ εὖ πράξει. As at the Olympic games it is not sufficient to be strong and fair, in

¹ Eth. i. 3, 1095, b, 19, x. 2, 1172, b, 26, 1173, b, 28 to the end of the chap.; c. 6, 1176, b, 12–1177, a, 9.

² Eth. i. 3, 1095, b, 22 sqq. ³ Ibid. 1096, a, 5, cf. Rhet. i.

^{5, 1361,} a, 23.

⁴ Aristotle frequently repeats that happiness does not consist in the mere possession of certain advantages, in a mere εξις (on which see i. 285, n. 3, sup.) or κτησι, but in actual activity.

proper to him as man. What kind of activity is this? Not the general vital activity, which he shares even with plants; not the sensitive activity, which belongs to the lower animals as well as to man; but the activity of reason.2 Now the activity of reason, in so far as it is rightly performed, we call Virtue. The proper happiness of man consists, therefore, in virtuous activity, or, inasmuch as there are several such, in the noblest and most perfect of these.3 But this is the theoretic or pure activity of thought. For it belongs to the noblest faculty and directs itself to the highest object;

order to win the crown of victory, but one must engage in the contest for it-so in life we win the good and the fair by action alone. In reference to these passages, see x. 6, 1176, a, 33: είπομεν δ' ὅτι οὐκ ἔστιν ἕξις Γή εὐδαιμονία] · καὶ γὰρ τῷ καθεύδοντι διὰ βίου ὑπάρχοι ἄν . . . καὶ τῷ δυστυχοῦντι τὰ μέγιστα... ἀλλὰ μᾶλλον εἰς ἐνέργειάν τινα θετέον. ix. 9, 1169, b, 29: ἡ εὐδαιμονία ἐνέργειά τίς ἐστιν, ἡ δ' ἐνέργεια δηλον ότι γίνεται και ούχ ύπάρχει ώσπερ κτημά τι.

Eth. i. 6, 1097, b, 24: we shall discover wherein happiness consists, εί ληφθείη τὸ ἔργον τοῦ άνθρώπου. ώσπερ γάρ αὐλητή . . . καὶ παντὶ τεχνίτη, καὶ ὅλως ὧν ἐστὶν ἔργον τι καὶ πρᾶξις, ἐν τῷ έργω δοκεί τάγαθον είναι και το εδ, ούτω δόξειεν αν και ανθρώπω, είπερ

ξστι τι ξργον αὐτοῦ.

² Ibid. 1. 33 sqq.

³ Eth. i. 6, 1098, a, 7: εἰ δ' έστιν έργον άνθρώπου ψυχης ένέργεια κατά λόγον ή μη άνευ λόγου, τὸ δ' αὐτό φαμεν έργον είναι τώ γένει τοῦδε καὶ τοῦδε σπουδαίου . . . προστιθεμένης της κατ' άρετην ύπερ-

οχης πρός το έργου: κιθαριστοῦ μέν γάρ το κιθαρίζειν, σπουδαίου δέ τὸ εὖ εἰ δ' οὕτως, ἀνθρώπου δὲ τίθεμεν έργον ζωήν τινα, ταύτην δὲ ψυχης ενέργειαν και πράξεις μετά λόγου, σπουδαίου δ' ἀνδρὸς εὖ ταῦτα καὶ καλῶς, ἕκαστον δ' εὖ κατὰ τὴν οἰκείαν ἀρετὴν ἀποτελεῖται εἰ δ' ούτω το ανθοώπινον αγαθών ψυχης ένέργεια γίνεται κατ' άρετην, εί δὲ πλείους αι άρεται κατά την άριστην καὶ τελειοτάτην. x. 6, 1176, b, 2: activities are valued either for the sake of something else or for their own sake; the latter is the case when nothing is expected from them beyond the activity itself. Happiness (v. supra) must be an activity of the latter kind. τοιαθτα δ' εξναι δοκοθσιν αί κατ' άρετην πράξεις. τὰ γὰρ καλὰ καὶ σπουδαία πράττειν τῶν δι' αύτὰ αίρετῶν [sc. ἐστίν]. καὶ τῶν παιδιῶν δὲ αἱ ἡδεῖαι. Happiness, however, cannot consist in these (see p. 141, n. 1, sup.), but (1177, a, 9) έν ταῖς κατ' ἀρετην ένεργείαις; it is (i. 10, 1099, b, 26) ψυχης ενέργεια κατ' ἀρετὴν ποιά τις, or more accurately (i. 13, init.), ψυχης ἐνέργειά τις κατ' άρετην τελείαν.

it is exposed to the least interruption, and affords the highest pleasure; it is least dependent on foreign support and external expedients; it is its own aim and object, and is valued purely for its own sake; in it man arrives at rest and peace, while in the military and political, or in the practical life generally, he is ever restlessly pursuing ends which lie outside the activity itself. Reason is the Divine in us. It is the true essence of the man. The pure activity of reason can alone perfectly accord with his true nature. It alone can afford him unconditional satisfaction, and raise him above the limitations of humanity into the life of God.¹ Next to it comes moral activity, which

1 Eth. x. 7, init. : εἰ δ' ἐστὶν ή εύδαιμονία κατ' άρετην ένέργεια, , εύλογον κατά την κρατίστην αυτη δ' αν είη τοῦ αρίστου. είτε δη νοῦς τοῦτο είτε ἄλλο τι, . . . είτε θεῖον ον και αὐτο είτε των ἐν ἡμῖν το θειότατον, ή τούτου ἐνέργεια κατά την οἰκείαν ἀρετὴν εἴη ἃν ἡ τελεία εὐδαιμονία. ὅτι δ' ἐστὶ θεωρητική εἴρηται. After proving this as above, Aristotle continues, 1177, b, 16: εί δη των μέν κατά τάς άρετάς πράξεων αι πολιτικαί και πολεμικαί κάλλει καὶ μεγέθει προέχουσιν, αθται δ' άσγολοι και τέλους τινός έφίενται καί οὐ δι' αύτὰς αίρεταί είσιν, ή δε τοῦ νοῦ ενέργεια σπουδή τε διαφέρειν δοκεί θεωρητική οὖσα. και παρ' αύτην οὐδενος ἐφίεσθαι τέλους, έχειν τε ήδονην οἰκείαν, αύτη δε συναύξει την ενέργειαν, καί τὸ αὕταρκες δὴ καὶ σχολαστικὸν καὶ άτρυτον ώς ανθρώπω, καὶ δσα άλλα τῷ μακαρίφ ἀπονέμεται, κατὰ ταύτην την ενέργειαν φαίνεται όντα, ή τελεία δη εὐδαιμονία αὕτη αν εἴη ανθρώπου . . . δ δὲ τοιοῦτος αν είη βίος κρείττων ή κατ' άνθρωπον · οὐ

γαρ ή άνθρωπός έστιν ούτω βιώσεται. άλλ' ή θείόν τι έν αὐτῷ ὑπάρχει. ύσω δὲ διαφέρει τοῦτο τοῦ συνθέτου. τοσούτω καὶ ἡ ἐνέργεια τῆς κατὰ την ἄλλην ἀρετήν. εἰδη θεῖον &c. (see p. 164. Χ. 8, 1178, b, 1: we require many aids to action, τῶ δὲ θεωροῦντι οὐδενὸς τῶν τοιούτων πρός γε την ενέργειαν χρεία, αλλ' ώς είπεῖν καλ ἐμπόδιά έστι πρός γε την θεωρίαν· ή δ' άνθρωπός έστι και πλείοσι συζή. αίρειται τὰ κατ' ἀρετην πράττειν δεήσεται δ' οὖν τῶν τοιούτων πρὸς τὸ ἀνθρωπεύεσθαι. ἡ δὲ τελεία εὐδαιμονία ὅτι θεωρητική τίς ἐστιν ένέργεια καλ έντεῦθεν αν φανείη. The gods are pre-eminently considered happy; but what actions can we assign to them? Shall we suppose that they exhibit their justice by buying and selling, their valour by encountering danger, their liberality by gifts of money, their self-command by the conquest of evil desires? Nor will they sleep like Endymion. τω δη

thus constitutes the second essential element of happiness. Inasmuch, however, as it is the Divine in man which is called into exercise in thought, the latter may be regarded as a superhuman good; whereas moral virtue is in an especial sense the good of man.¹

While these are undoubtedly the essential and indispensable elements of Happiness, Aristotle does not exclude from that notion other gifts and advantages, some of which proceed from moral and rational activity, while others are independent of it.² Thus, for instance,

ζῶντι, &c. (see i. 397, n. 1, supra) . . τοις πέν γάρ θεοις άπας δ βίος μακάριος, τοῖς δ' ἀνθρώποις, ἐφ' δσον δμοίωμά τι της τοιαύτης ένεργείας ὑπάρχει τῶν δ' ἄλλων ζώων οὐδὲν εὐδαιμονεῖ, ἐπειδη οὐδαμή κοινωνεί θεωρίας. έφ' δσον δη διατείνει ή θεωρ'α, και ή εὐδαιμονία, και οίς μάλλον υπάρχει το θεωρείν, καὶ εὐδαιμονεῖν. [SC. μᾶλλον ὑπάρχει], οὐ κατὰ συμβεβηκίς, άλλὰ κατὰ την θεωρίαν αυτή γάρ καθ' αυτήν τιμ'α. ἄστ' εἰη των ἡ εὐδαιμονία θεωρία τις. Μεταρλ. κii. 7, 1072, b, 24: ἡ θεωρία τὸ ἡδιστον καὶ йріоточ. Сf. i. 398, n. 5, supra. The contradiction between these statements and Pol. vii 2, 1324, a, 25, c. 3, 1325, b, 14 sqq. is only apparent. In the latter passages. theoretic activity is not compared as such with practical, but the life of solitary devotion to science with the social life of the state; and while the practical life is declared to be the more excellent, the expression is used in its wider sense, and the theoretic activity which is self-sufficing and directed towards no external end is expressly said to be the most perfect form of \(\pi \rho \tilde{\xi} \) is. Cf. also

Pol. vii. 15, 1334, b, 14. Eth. x. 7 (see preceding n.); c. 8 init.: δευτέρως δ' [εὐδαίμων] δ κατά την άλλην άρετην [βίος]. αί γὰρ κατ' αὐτὴν ἐνέργειαι ἀνθρωπικαί . . . συνέζευκται δε καὶ ή φρόνησις τη τοῦ ήθους άρετη . . . συνηρτημέναι δ' αθται [the ethical virtues καλ τοῖς πάθεσι περὶ τὸ σύνθετον αν είεν αίδε τοῦ συνθέτου άρεταὶ ἀνθρωπικαί, καὶ ὁ βίος δη δ κατ' αὐτὰς καὶ ἡ εὐδαιμονία. Ibid. 1178, b, 5 (see preceding n.). As will be obvious from the preceding account, the distinction here is merely in the mode of expression, nor can we say with . RITTER (iii. 327) that, because Aristotle wavers in the mode of presenting his view, the theoretic understanding is intended to be left out of account in defining human happiness.

² The statement that such things deserve to be called advantages only in so far as they have a directly moral significance (TEICHMÜLLER, loc. cit. 337 sq.) is not Aristotle's; he calls them often enough goods, and that which is a good is presumably an advantage.

happiness necessarily presupposes a certain completeness of life. A child cannot be happy any more than it can be virtuous, for it is still incapable of any rational, Mere temporary happiness, moreover, moral action.1 is insufficient: one swallow does not make summer.2 Therefore, if we cannot say with Solon that no man is happy till he is dead, yet we must admit that happiness can, at any rate, only be looked for in a life which has reached a certain degree of maturity. Happiness, in fact, is the virtuous activity of the soul in a completed life.3 Again, man requires for perfect happiness certain external goods. Happiness, it is true, is something other than good fortune.4 Poverty, sickness, and misfortune may even serve the brave man as an occasion for noble conduct, and so far the really happy man can never be miserable. And yet, on the other hand, no one will call a man any longer happy if the fate of a Priam overtakes him; 5 and while the virtuous man can be content with few gifts of fortune,6 yet in many respects they are indispensable to him: without wealth. power, influence, little can be accomplished; noble

¹ Eth. i. 10, 1100, a, 1.

² Ibid. i. 6 fin.

³ Ιδιά. i. 11, 1191, a, 14: τί οδυ κωλύει λέγειν εὐδαίμονα τὸν κατ' ἀρετὴν τελείαν ἐνεργοῦντα καὶ τοῖς ἐκτὸς ἀγαθοῖς ἰκανῶς κεχορηγημένον, μὴ τὸν τυχόντα χρόνου ἀλλὰ τέλειον βίον; ἡ προσθετέον καὶ βιωσόμενον οὕτω καὶ τελευτήσοντα κατὰ λόγον; cf. p. 133, n. 2, x. 7, 1177, b, 24: ἡ τελεία δὴ εὐδαιμονία αὕτη ὰν εἴη ἀνθρώπου, λαβοῦσα μῆκος βίου τέλειον οὐδὲν γὰρ ἀτελές ἐστι τῶν τῆς εὐδαιμονίας. 4 Polit. vii. 1, 1323, b, 26;

Eth. vii. 14, 1153, b, 21.

⁵ Eth. i. 11, 1101, a, 6 (see p. 150, n. 2, infra); cf. vii. 14, 1153, b, 17; Polit. vii. 13, 1332, a, 19.

⁸ Eth. x. 9, 1179, a, 1: οὐ μὴν οἰητέον γε πολλῶν καὶ μεγάλων δεήσεσθαι τὸν εὐδαιμονήσοντα, εἰ μὴ ἐνδέχεται ἄνευ τῶν ἐκτός μακάριον εἰναι οὐ γὰρ ἐν τῆ ὅπερβολῆ τὸ αὕταρκες καὶ ἡ πρᾶξις, δυνατὸν δὲ καὶ μὴ ἄρχοντα γῆς καὶ θαλάττης πράττειν τὰ καλά. Private persons, it is remarked, are as a rule the happiest. Cf. Polit. vii. 1, 1323, a, 38 sqq.

birth, beauty, joy in one's children, are elements in perfect happiness; friendship is even more necessary to the happy than to the unhappy; health is invaluable to all; in a word, for complete satisfaction in life, besides spiritual good, a certain supply of material and external advantages (χορηγία, εὐετηρία, εὐημερία) is indispensable, and this it is a mistake to suppose is necessarily bestowed by the gods upon the virtuous man.2 The gifts of fortune taken in themselves, therefore, are certainly a good, although to the individual they may often turn out an evil.3

Even pleasure Aristotle reckoned an element in happiness, defending it against the reproaches cast upon it by Plato and Speusippus.4 For he takes a quite

¹ See Eth. i. 9, 1099, a. 31 sqq. c. 3, 1096, a, 1, c. 11, 1101, a, 14, 22, vii. 14, 1153, b, 17, viii. 1 init. ix. 9, 11 (to which I shall subsequently return), x. 8, 1178, a, 23 sq. c. 9 init.; Polit. vii. 1, 1323, a, 24, c. 13, 1331, b, 41, also Rhet. i. 5, 1360, b, 18 sqq.

² Aristotle says, indeed, Eth. x. 9 ad fin., c. 10 init., that he who lives according to reason is dear to the gods, who take pleasure in that which is akin to themselves; if the gods care for men, such a one will be the most highly favoured by them, and if anything is their gift it must be happiness. We have already seen that his system leaves no room for a special providence. care of the gods, therefore, if we transfer the expression from popular to scientific language, must coincide with the natural operation of the rational life. External goods, on the other hand, he consistently treats elsewhere as matter of chance; see Eth. x. 10, 1099, b, 20 sqq. vii. 14, 1173, b, 17; Polit. vii. 1, 1323, b, 27, c. 13, 1332, a, 29. * Eth. v. 2, 1129, b, 1 sqq.;

cf. c. 13 fin.

⁴ ZELL. Ph. d. Gr. i. pp. 506, 861,3. Whether Aristotle includes the Cynics is not clear; we might conclude so from Eth. x. 1; cf. ibid. i. 262, 2. For Aristotle's doctrine of pleasure see the full discussion, Eth. x. 1-5, vii. 12-It is sufficient to quote x. 2, 1173, a, 15: λέγουσι δέ τδ μεν άγαθον ώρίσθαι, την δ' ήδονην άδριστον είναι, δτι δέχεται τδ μάλλον καὶ τὸ ἦττον (PLATO, Phileb. 27, E sqq. 30, E sq. and other passages, see ZELL. Ph. d. Gr. i. 506); but the same is true of the virtues or of health. It is further asserted that pleasure is a motion and a becoming (cf. Ph. d. Gr. i. 506, 3): but if it were a different view of its nature. Plato had relegated pleasure to the sphere of indeterminate, motionless Being or Becoming; to Aristotle, on the other hand, it is rather the natural perfection of every activity, and as such the immediate outcome of the perfected activity in as true a sense as health and beauty are the immediate outcome of bodily perfection. It is not a movement and a becoming, but the goal in which every movement of life finds rest and completeness.¹ The

motion it must continue for a certain lapse of time, and therefore, like all motion, have a definite velocity; if a becoming, it must have a definite product; but neither of these is the case: pleasure is produced by a motion, but it is not itself a motion (ibid. 1. 29 sqq. c. 3, 1174, a, 19 sqq.). Furthermore, every pleasure involves a pain: it is a satisfaction, every satisfaction supposes a want but there are enjoyments which involve no pain, and do not consist in satisfaction of a want; these last, however, are merely causes of pleasure, not the pleasure itself (ibid. 1173, b, 7 sqq. vii. 15, 1154, b, 15). Lastly, there are evil pleasures; but it does not follow for this reason that all pleasure is evil (x. 2, 1173, b, 20 sqq. c. 5, 1175, b, 24 sqq. vii. 13 f. 1153, a, 17-35, b, 7-13).

1 Eth. x. 3 init.: pleasure is like intuitive perception, complete at every moment of time: δλον γὰρ τί ἐστι καὶ κατ' οὐδένα χρόνον λάβοι τις δν ἡδονὴν ἦς ἐπὶ πλείω χρόνον γινομένης τελειωθήσεται τὸ είδος. C. 4, 1174, α, 20: κατὰ πᾶσαν γὰρ αἴσθησίν ἐστιν ἡδονὴ, ὁμοίως δὲ διάνοιαν καὶ θεωρίαν . . . τελειοῖ δὲ τὴν ἐνέρ-

γειαν ἡ ἡδονή. 1174, b. 31: τελειοι δε την ενέργειαν ή ήδονή οὐχ ὡς ἡ ἔξις ἐνυπάρχουσα [as this particular form of activity itself, as, for instance, virtue], ἀλλ' ώς έπιγιγνόμενόν τι τέλος οίον τοίς ἀκμαίοις ή ώρα. It lasts, therefore, as long as the activity in question continues as it was, but changes and fades with the activity itself, which in man can never but be an intermittent one (cf. vii. 15, 1154, b, 20 sqq.), c. 5, 1075, a, 20: ἄνευ τε γάρ ένεργείας οὐ γίνεται ήδονή, πᾶσάν τε ενέργειαν τελειοί ή ήδονή . δθεν δοκουσι και τῷ εἴδει διαφέρειν· τὰ γὰρ ἔτερα τῷ εἴδει ὑφ' ἐτέρων οιόμεθα τελειούσθαι. This is further developed in the passage that follows, prominence being given to the fact that every activity obtains from the pleasure springing from it a heightened energy and power of endurance. whereas it is disturbed by that which proceeds from another; vii. 14, 1153, b, 14; see infra. The statement, Rhet. i. 11 init. is less accurate: ὑποκείσθω δ' ήμιν είναι την ήδονην κίνησίν τινα της ψυχης και κατάστασιν άθρόαν καὶ αἰσθητὴν εἰς τὴν ὑπάρχουσαν φύσιν, λύπην δέ τοὐναντίον. For on the one hand, strictly speaknobler an activity the higher the pleasure that accompanies it. Thought and moral action afford the purest pleasure. I and the blessedness of God is nothing but the pleasure which springs from the most perfect activity.2 The universal pursuit of pleasure, therefore, according to Aristotle is an absolute necessity, and is, indeed, nothing else than the instinct of life.3 Pleasure cannot, it is true, be the highest good itself; 4 and a distinction is made between the different kinds of pleasure, each of which has a value assigned to it in direct proportion to the value of the activity which produces it: only the pleasure of the virtuous man is declared to be true and truly human.⁵ Nevertheless, Aristotle is far from excluding pleasure in general from the conception of happiness, or assigning to it the subordinate place which Plato had marked out for it.

We have now to consider in what relation these different conditions of happiness stand to one another. That the most indispensable element of it—the one in which the essence of happiness must primarily be sought-can only be the scientific and moral activity of the soul, is often enough asserted by Aristotle. In treating, for instance, of the relation between activity

ing, Aristotle does not regard the soul as moved at all, and, on the other, pleasure, according to the passage just quoted, is not a motion, but the consequence of a motion. This definition is again referred to, M. Mor. ii. 7, 1205, b, 6.

1153, a, 20.

¹ Metaph. xii. 7, 1072, b, 16, 24; Eth. x. 2, 1174, a, 4, c. 4, 1174, b, 20, c. 7, 1177, a, 22, b, 20, i. 9, 1099, a, 7-29, vii. 13,

² Metaph. ibid.; Eth. vii, 15, 1154, b, 25; see p. 398, n. 5, sup.

s vii. 14, 1153, b, 25-32 x. 2, 1172, b, 35 sqq. c. 4 sq. 1175, a, 10-21, ix. 9, 1170, a, 19.

⁴ See p. 140, supra. ⁵ x. 2, 1173, b, 20 sqq. c. 4 init. c. 5, 1175, a, 21 sqq. b, 24, 36 sqq. 1176, a, 17, c. 7, 1177, a, 23, i. 9, 1099, a, 11, vii. 14, 1153, b, 29 sqq. and n. 1, supra.

and pleasure, he asserts the unconditioned superiority of the former as definitely as could be desired. A life devoted to enjoyment seems to him unworthy of man.. The only activity which he admits to be properly human, is the practical: the only one that is more than human is the theoretic.1 Pleasure is not the end and motive \of our actions, but only a necessary concomitant of activity according to nature. If the two could be separated, a good man would unconditionally prefer activity without pleasure to pleasure without activity; 2 but as a matter of fact it is of the very essence of virtue that we cannot separate pleasure from it, and that we find immediate satisfaction in virtuous activity without any addition of pleasure from without.3 From this point of view the purity of Aristotle's ethics and the distinctness of his utterances are beyond suspicion. account of external goods might with more reason be accused of making man too dependent upon merely natural and accidental advantages. Yet even these he

¹ See p. 140 sqq. supra.

3 Ilid. i. 9, 1099, a, 7: ἔστι δὲ καὶ ὁ βίος αὐτῶν καθ' αὐτὸν ἡδύς . . . τοῖς δὲ φιλοκάλοις ἐστὶν ἡδέα

τὰ φύσει ἡδέα. τοιαῦτα δ' αί κατ' άρετην πράξεις, ώστε και τούτοις είσιν ήδείαι και καθ' αύτάς. οὐδὲν δὴ προσδείται τῆς ήδονῆς ὁ βίος αὐτῶν ὥσπερ περιάπτου τινδς, ἀλλ΄ έχει την ήδονην έν έαυτώ. πρός τοις είρημένοις γάρ οὐδ' έστιν άγαθὸς δ μη χαίρων ταις καλαις πράξεσιν . . . εἰ δ' οὕτω, καθ' αὑτὰς ἃν εἶεν αί κατ' ἀρετὴν πράξεις ἡδεῖαι . . . άριστον άρα καὶ κάλλιστον καὶ ήδιστον ή εὐδαιμονία, καὶ οὐ διώρισται ταῦτα . . ἄπαντα γὰρ ύπάρχει ταίτα ταίς αρίσταις ένεργείαις. Polit. vii. 13, 1332, a, 22: τοιοῦτός έστιν δ σπουδαίος \$ διὰ την άρετην τα άγαθά έστι τα άπλως àγαθά.

² Ετλ χ. 2 fm.: οὐδείς τ' ὰν ἔλοιτο ζῆν παιδίου διάνοιαν ἔχων διὰ βίου, ἡδόμενος ἐφ' οἶς τὰ παιδία δες οἶόν τε μάλιστα, οὐδὲ χαίρεις ποιῶν τι τῶν αἰσχίστων, μηδέποτε μέλλων λυπηθῆναι. περὶ πολλά τε σπουδὴν ποιησαίμεθ' ὰν καὶ εἰ μηδεμίαν ἐπιφέροι ἡδονήν, οἶον ὁρᾶν, μνημονεύειν, εἰδέναι, τὰς ἀρετὰς ἔχειν. εἰ δ' ἐξ ἀνάγκης ἕπονται τούτοις ἡδοναὶ, οὐδὲν διαφέρει ἐλοίμεθα γὰρ ὰν ταῦτα καὶ εἰ μὴ γίνοιτ' ἀπ' αὐτῶν ἡδονή. c. 6, see p. 142, p. 3, supra.

only recognises in so much and in so far as they are the indispensable conditions of a perfect life and the instruments of moral activity; and in this he is undoubtedly right. On the other hand, he is far from wishing to represent man as the sport of fortune. He is convinced that man's happiness and misery depend upon his spiritual and moral condition; that here alone we can look for the foundation of lasting satisfaction; that the happiness of the virtuous man cannot easily be shaken by external fortune or changed into misery by the hardest lot. Aristotle declares as unhesitatingly as Plato that the true goods are those of the soul: external and physical goods, on the other hand, are

¹ Eth. vii. 14, 1153, b, 16: οὐδεμ'α γὰρ ἐνέργεια τέλειος ἐμ-ποδιζομένη, ἡ δ' εὐδαιμονία τῶν τελείων διό προσδείται δ εὐδαιμων τῶν ἐν σώματι ἀγαθῶν καὶ τῶν έκτδς και της τύχης, όπως μη έμποδίζηται ταῦτα, οἱ δὲ τὸν τροχιζόμενον και τον δυστυχίαις μεγάλαις περιπίπτοντα εὐδαίμονα φάσκοντεs είναι, εαν η αγαθός [the Cynics: cf. Ph. d. Gr. i. 258, 3, 267, 4; but perhaps also PLATO: see ibid. 743 sq.], ή έκόντες ή άκοντες οὐδέν λέγουσιν. 1154, b, 11: How far have certain bodily enjoyments any value? ή οῦτως ἀγαθαὶ αί ἀναγκαῖαι, ὅτι καὶ τὸ μὴ κακὸν άγαθόν έστιν; ή μέχρι του άγαθαί; ibid. i. 9 sq. 1099, a, 32. ἀδύνατον γὰρ ἡ οὐ ράδιον τὰ καλὰ πράττειν άχορήγητον ύντα. πολλά γάρ · πράττεται, καθάπερ δι' οργάνων διὰ φίλων και πλούτου &c. b, 27: των δέ λοιπῶν ἀγαθῶν [besides virtue] τὰ μὲν ὑπάρχειν ἆναγκαῖον, τὰ δέ συνεργά καί χρήσιμα πέφυκεν δργανικώς. Polit. vii. 1, 1323, b,

έκάστφ καὶ κοινῆ ταῖς πόλεσιν, δ μετὰ ἀρετῆς κεχορηγημένης ἐπὶ τοσοῦτον ἄστε μετέχειν τῶν. κατ' ἀρετὴν πράξεων. Cf. p. 144 sq.; Eth. Eud. 1. 2 fm.

² Eth. i. 11, 1100, b, 7: τδ μèν ταις τύχαις έπακολουθείν οὐδαμώς όρθόν οὐ γὰρ ἐν ταύταις τὸ εὖ ἢ κακώς, άλλα προσδείται τούτων δ άνθρώπινος βίος, καθάπερ είπαμεν, κύριαι δ' είσλυ αι κατ' άρετην ένέργειαι της εὐδαιμονίας, αί δ' ἐναντίαι τοῦ ἐναντίου . . . περὶ οὐδὲν γὰρ ούτως ὑπάρχει τῶν ἀνθρωπίνων έργων βεβαιότης ώς περί τὰς ένεργείας τὰς κατ' ἀρετήν μονιμώτεραι γάρ και των έπιστημών αθται δοκουσιν είναι. 1101, a, 5: άθλιος μέν οὐδέποτε γένοιτ' αν δ εὐδαίμων. οὐ μὴν μακάριός γε, ἄν Πριαμικαῖς τύχαις περιπέση. οὐδὲ ποικίλος γε καί εὐμετάβολος: his happiness will be disturbed only by many grievous misfortunes, from which he will again recover only with difficulty.

όργανικῶς. Polit. vii. 1, 1323, b, * Lans, v. 743, Ε; Gorg. 508, 40: βίος μὲν ἄριστος, καὶ χωρὶς D sqq.; cf. Ph. d. Gr. i. p. 505 sq.

valuable only as means to the former.¹ He even expressly says that since true self-love consists in the effort after higher goods, it does not hesitate for the sake of friends and country to sacrifice all outward advantage and even life itself. Yet in all such cases the highest reward—that of the morally beautiful action—is reaped by the doer of it, since a great and beautiful action is of more value and affords a higher happiness than a long life which has accomplished nothing great.² Similarly, he holds that it is better to suffer than to do wrong, for in the former case it is only our body

1 Eth. i. 8, 1098, b, 12: νενεμημένων δη των άγαθων τριχή, καί τῶν μὲν ἐκτὸς λεγομένων, τῶν δὲ περί ψυχὴν καὶ σῶμα, τὰ περὶ ψυχὴν κυριώτατα λέγομεν καὶ μάλιστα άγαθά. Polit. vii. 1, 1323. a, 24: the happy man must possess all three classes of goods; the only question is, in what degree and proportion. In respect of virtue, most people are very easily contented (της άρετης έχειν ίκανδυ είναι νομίζουσιν όποσονοῦν); with riches, power, and honour, on the other hand, there is no satisfying them. We must point out to them, δτι κτώνται καὶ φυλάττουσιν οὐ τὰς ἀρετὰς τοῖς έκτδς, άλλ' έκείνα ταύταις, καί τδ ζην εὐδαιμόνως . . ὅτι μᾶλλον ύπάρχει τοῖς τὸ ἦθος μὲν καὶ τὴν διάνδιαν κεκοσμημένοις είς ύπερβολην, ή τοις έκεινα μέν κεκτημένοις πλείω τῶν χρησίμων, ἐν δὲ τούτοις έλλείπουσιν. Material possessions, like every instrument. have a natural limit imposed by the purpose for which they are used; increased beyond this limit they are useless or mischievous;

spiritual goods, on the other hand, are valuable in proportion to their greatness. If the soul is of more value than the body and external things, the goods of the soul must be of more value than bodily and external goods. έτι δὲ τῆς ψυχῆς ἔνεκεν ταῦτα πέφυκεν αίρετὰ καὶ δεῖ πάντας αίρεῖσθαι τοὺς εὖ φρονοῦντας, ἀλλ' ούκ ἐκείνων ἕνεκεν την ψυχήν. The blessedness of the gods shows that happiness depends for its amount upon the degree of virtue and insight, δε εὐδαίμων μέν ἐστι καὶ μακάριος, δι' οὐθὲν δὲ τῶν έξωτερικών άγαθών άλλά δι' αύτον αὖτὸς καὶ τῷ ποιός τις εἶναι τὴν φύσιν, and accordingly we distinguish εὐδαιμονία from εὐτυχία.

2 Eth. ix. 8, 1169, a, 6 sqq., where, among other things (see especially the passage cited, p. 132). it is said, 9: τὰ κάλλιστα πράττειν κοινῆ τ' ὰν πάντ' εἰη τὰ δέοντα [?] καὶ ἰδία ἐκάστφ τὰ μέγιστα τῶν ἀγαθῶν, εἴπερ ῆ ἀρετὴ τοιοῦτόν ἐστιν. 31: εἰκότως δὴ δοκεῖ σπουδαῖος εἶναι, ἀντὶ πάντων αἰρούμενος τὸ καλόν.

or property that suffers, in the latter it is our character.1 Aristotle thus keeps fast hold throughout of the principle with which he started in the investigation of the highest good—namely, that happiness consists primarily and essentially in acting according to reason, or in the exercise of a perfected virtue. Other goods can claim to be considered as good only sub modo: in so far as they are a natural product of this activity, like pleasure, or a means to its attainment, like outward and physical goods. Should, however, a case occur in which a choice must be made between the different goods, all others must give way before the moral and spiritual, since they alone are absolutely and unconditionally good.2

If, then, virtue is the essential condition of happiness, the problem of Ethics is to investigate the nature of virtue and to exhibit its constituent parts; 3 the question being of course confined to spiritual perfection.4 Now this, like spiritual activity itself, is of a

¹ Eth. v. 15, 1138, a, 28: it is an evil both to suffer injustice wrong and to do it, the former being an ἔλαττον, the latter a πλέον έχειν τοῦ μέσου, but to do injustice is worse, as it alone is

μετά κακίας.

8 Eth. i. 13: ἐπεὶ δ' ἐστὶν ἡ

εὐδαιμονία ψυχης ἐνέργειά τις κατ' άρετην τελείαν, περί άρετης έπισκεπτέον τάχα γὰροῦτως αν βέλτιον καί περί της εὐδαιμονίας θεωρή. σαιμεν.

4 By the word dρετή the Greek meant, as is well known, not only moral excellence but every accomplishment or perfection that belonged to person or thing. In this sense it is used by Aristotle, e.g. Mrtaph. v. 16, 1021, b, 20 sqq.; Eth. ii. 5 init. and passim. Here, however, where we are dealing with human happiness it can only be a question of spiritual excellences; Eth. ibid. 1102, a, 13: περί άρετης δὲ ἐπισκεπτέον ἀνθρωπίνης δῆλον ότι. και γάρ τάγαθον άνθρώπινον

² We have already seen this (p. 149), and shall find further in his theory of virtue that Aristotle admits only those as genuine virtues which seek their end in the moral activity itself; Eth. iv 2 init.: αί δὲ κατ' ἀρετήν πράξεις καλαί και τοῦ καλοῦ ἕνεκα . . . δ δὲ διδούς . . . μη τοῦ καλοῦ ἔνεκα ἀλλὰ διά τιν' ἄλλην αἴτιαν, οὺκ ἐλευθέριος ἀλλ' ἄλλος τις δηθή-

twofold nature: intellectual ($\delta \iota a \nu o \eta \tau \iota \kappa \dot{\eta}$) and moral ($\dot{\eta} \theta \iota \kappa \dot{\eta}$). The former relates to the activity of reason as such, the latter to the control of the irrational elements of the soul by the rational. The one has its seat in thought, the other in will.\(^1\) Ethics has to do with the latter.\(^2\)

2. Moral Virtue.

To aid us in the investigation of the nature of Moral Virtue, Aristotle begins by indicating where we must look for virtue in general. It is not an emotion or a mere faculty, but a definite quality of mind ("\(\xi \xi \xi \xi \xi \xi \xi \xi\). Emotions as such are not the object of

έζητοῦμεν καὶ τὴν εὖδαιμονίαν ἀνθρωπίνην. ἀρετὴν δὲ λέγομεν ἀνθρωπίνην οὖ τὴν τοῦ σώματος, ἀλλὰ τὴν τῆς ψυχῆς : καὶ τὴν εὐδαιμονίαν δὲ

ψυχης ένέργειαν λέγομεν.

After discussing (Eth. i. 13) the difference between the rational and the irrational element in the soul, and distinguishing two kinds of the rational, that to which rationality attaches in a primitive, and that to which it attaches in a derivative, sense, thought and desire (see p. 114, n. 4, supra), Aristotle continues, 1103, α, 3: διορίζεται δέ και ή άρετη κατά την διαφοράν ταύτην · λέγομεν γάρ αὐτῶν τὰς μέν διανοητικάς τὰς δὲ ἡθικὰς, σοφίαν μὲν καὶ σύνεσιν καί φρόνησιν διανοητικάς, έλευθεριότητα δè καὶ σωφροσύνην ήθικάς. He returns to this distinction at the beginning of Eth. ii. 1, and Ethical virtue is thus regarded as the product of desire ruled by reason, i.e. of will (see p. 114, supra), a view of it

which is consistently maintained throughout.

² This is obvious, not only from the name of this science and from isolated statements which describe πρᾶξιs as its subject, e.g. those referred to p. 181, n. 3, and Eth. ii. 2, 1104, 2, 1, but from the plan of the Nicomachean Ethics as a whole, which must have been different had the object been the proportionate treatment of dianoëtic and ethical virtue. On this point and on the discussion of the dianoëtic virtues in the sixth book, see infra.

3 The relation of these three to one another is explained Ετλ. is 4 επτι. επελ οδυ τὰ εν τῆ ψυχῆ γινόμενα τρία έστλ, πάθη δυνάμεις εξεις, τούτων ὰν τι είη ἡ ὰρετή· λέγω δὲ πάθη μὲν ἐπιθυμίαν, ὀργὴν, φόβον, θράτος, φθόνον. Χαρὰν, φιλίαν, μῖσος, πόθον, ἐῆλον, ἔλεον, ὅλως οἰς ἔπεται ἡδονὴ ἡ λύπη, δυνάμεις δὲ καθ' ὰς παθητικοὶ τούτων λεγόμεθα,

praise or blame. In themselves they cannot make us either good or bad. They are involuntary, whereas virtue presupposes an activity of the will. They indicate certain movements: virtue and vice, on the other hand, are permanent states. Nor can a mere faculty be the object of moral judgment. Faculty is innate; virtue and vice are acquired.1 These differ finally from a mere faculty as well as from science (and art) in this, that while the latter embrace both of two opposites, the former refer exclusively to one:2 the man who has the power and knowledge of good has the power and knowledge of evil also, but he who wills the good cannot also at the same time will the evil. equally necessary, on the other hand, to distinguish virtue from mere external action as such. He who would act morally must not only do the right, but he must do it in the right frame of mind.3 It is this, and not the outward effect, that gives to the action its moral worth.4 It is just this which makes virtue and moral

οδον καθ' ας δυνατοι δργισθήναι ή λυπηθήναι ή έλεήσαι, έξεις δε καθ' ας προς τὰ πάθη ἔχυμεν εὖ ή κακως On ἕξις cf. p. 285, n. 3, supra.

Jbid. 1105, b, 28 sqq, ending with the words: δ τι μεν οδν έστι τῶ γένει ἡ ἀρετὴ, εἴρηται. Cf. c.

1, 1103, b, 21 sq.

2 Eth. v. 1, 1129, a, 11: οὐδὲ γὰρ τὸν αὐπὸν ἔχει τρόπον ἐπί τε τῶν ἐπιστημῶν καὶ δυνάμεων καὶ ἐπὶ τῶν ἔξεων. δὐναμις μὲν γὰρ καὶ ἐπιστήμη δοκεῖ τῶν ἐναντίων ἡ αὐτἡ εἶναι (see p. 224, n. 3, supra), ἐξις δ' ἡ ἐναὐπία τῶν ἐναντίων οὸ, οἶον ἀπὸ τῆς ὑγιείας οὐ πράττεται τὰ ἐναντία, ἀλλὰ τὰ ὑγιείας μόνον.

³ Eth. ii. 3, 1105, a, 28: τὰ δὲ κατὰ τὰς ἀρετὰς γινόμενα οὐκ ἐὰν αὐτά πως ἔχη, δικαίως ἢ σωφρόνως πράττεται, ἀλλὰ καὶ ἐὰν δ πράττων πως ἔχων πράττη. b, 5: τὰ μὲν οὖν πράγματα δίκαια καὶ σώφρονα λέγεται, ὅταν ἢ τοιαῦτα οἶα ἄν δ δίκαιος ἢ ὁ σώφρων πράξειεν δίκαιος δὲ καὶ σώφρων ἐστὶν οὐχ ὁ ταῦτα πράττων, ἀλλὰ καὶ ὁ σύτω πράττων ώς οἱ δίκαιοι καὶ οἱ σώφρονες πράττουσιν. vi. 13, 1144, a, 13 sqq. Aristotle accordingly distinguishes between the just character and the just act, ibid. vi. 10, init. et al. (see below).

⁴ Ibid. iv. 2, 1120, b, 7: οὐ γὰρ ἐν τῷ πλήθει τῶν διδομένων τὸ ἐλευθέριον. ἀλλ' ἐν τῆ τοῦ διδόντος ἔξει, αὕτη δὲ κατὰ τὴν οὐσίαν

δίδωσιν.

insight so hard: that we are dealing here, not with particular actions, but with the general character of the actor.1

Aristotle defines this character more accurately as a character of the will. In so doing he defines the limits of the moral sphere in both directions, distinguishing moral virtue, which has to do with action, from mere natural and therefore non-moral disposition on the one hand, and from mere knowledge which has no reference to human action on the other. The foundation and presupposition of morality lies in certain natural qualities. In order to be able to act morally, one must first be a man with a certain psychological and physical constitution 2 and with a natural capacity for virtue; 3 for every virtue presupposes certain natural qualities (φυσικαὶ έξεις), definite impulses and inclinations in which the moral qualities already to a certain extent reside.4 This natural disposition, how-

¹ Ibid. v. 13 init.: οἱ δ' ἄνθρωποι ἐφ' ἑαυτοῖς οἴονται εἶναι τὸ ἀδικεῖν, διὸ καὶ τὸ δίκαιον εἶναι δάδιον, τὸ δ' οὐκ ἔστιν συγγενέσθαι μέν γὰρ τῆ τοῦ γείτονος καὶ πατάξαι τον πλησίον και δοῦναι τῆ χειρί το άργύριον ράδιον και έπ' αὐτοῖς, ἀλλὰ τὸ ὠδὶ ἔχοντας ταῦτα ποιείν ούτε ράδιον ούτ' ἐπ' αὐτοίς. ομοίως δὲ καὶ τὸ γνῶναι τὰ δίκαια καλ τὰ ἄδικα οὐδὲν οἴονται σοφὸν είναι, ότι περί ὧν οί νόμοι λέγουσιν οὐ χαλεπὸν ξυνιέναι, άλλ' οὐ ταῦτ' έστι τὰ δίκαια άλλ' ή κατά συμβεβηκός, άλλὰ πῶς πραττόμενα καί πως νεμόμενα δίκαια. Το know this is not an easy matter. On the same ground Aristotle adds that the just man cannot act unjustly. Particular outward acts

he might indeed perform, αλλά το δειλαίνειν και το αδικείν ου το ταῦτα ποιείν ἐστὶ, πλην κατὰ συμβεβηκός, άλλὰ τὸ ώδὶ ἔχοντα ταῦτα ποιείν. Cf. p. 116.
² Polit. vii. 13, 1332, a, 38.

³ Eth. ii. 1, 1103, a, 23: ουτ' άρα φύσει ούτε παρά φύσιν έγγίνονται αί ἀρεταλ, άλλὰ πεφυκόσι μέν ήμιν δέξασθαι αὐτὰς, τελειουμένοις δè διὰ τοῦ ἔθους. Polit. ibid. : αγαθοί γε και σπουδαίοι γίγνονται διά τριών. τὰ τρία δὲ ταῦτά ἐστι φύσις έθος λόγος.

⁴ Eth. vi. 13, 1144, b, 4: πᾶσι γαρ δοκεί εκαστα των ήθων υπάρχειν φύσει πως καὶ γὰρ δίκαιοι καὶ σωφρονικοί και άνδρεῖοι και τάλλα ἔχομεν εὐθὺς ἐκ γενετῆς. (Μ. Mor. i. 35, 1197, b, 38, ii. 3, 1199, ever, is not yet moral. It is found, not only in children, but even in the lower animals.' When, therefore, Aristotle speaks of physical virtues, he expressly distinguishes these from virtue in the proper sense of the word,2 which consists in the union of natural impulse with rational insight and its subordination to it.3 Natural disposition and the operation of natural impulses do not depend upon ourselves, whereas virtue is in our own power. The former are innate in us; the latter is gradually acquired by practice.4 Aristotle carries this principle of excluding all involuntary moods and inclinations from the moral sphere so far as to extend it to the earlier stages of the moral life itself. He not only excludes emotions such as fear, anger. pity, &c., from the sphere of praise and blame,5 but he

b, 38, c. 7, 1206, b, 9.) Cf. Polit. vii. 7, on the unequal distribution of moral and intellectual capacity in the different nations.

¹ H. An. i. 1, 488, b, 12, viii. 1, ix. 1; see p. 38, n. 1, supra; Eth. ibid.: see n. 3.

² τὸ κυρίως ἀγαθὸν — ἡ κυρία

άρετη, Eth. ibid.

³ Ibid. 1144, b, 8: καὶ γὰρ παισί καὶ θηρίοις αἱ φυσικαὶ ὑπάρχουσιν έξεις, άλλ' άνευ νοῦ βλαβεραλ φαίνονται οὖσαι . . . ώσπερ σώματι ίσχυρώ άνευ ύψεως κινουμένω συμβαίνει σφάλλεσθαι ίσχυρως διά τδ μη έχειν ζψιν, οδτω και ένταθθα. έὰν δὲ λάβη νοῦν, ἐν τῷ πράττειν διαφέρει. ἡ δ' ἕξις όμοία οὖσα τότ' έσται κυρίως άρετή.

⁴ Eth. ii. 1, 1103, a, 17: ή δ' ήθική άρετη έξ έθους περιγίνεται, δθεν και τούνομα έσχηκε μικρον παρεκκλίνον άπο του έθους, έξ οδ καλ δήλον ὅτι οὐδεμία τῶν ἡθικῶν άρετων φύσει ήμιν έγγίνεται · οὐθὲν

γὰρ τῶν φύσει ὅντων ἄλλως ἐθίζεται . . . ἔτι ὅσα μὲν Φύσει ἡμῖν παραγίνεται, τὰς δυνάμεις τούτων πρότερον κομιζόμεθα, υστερον δε τας ένεργείας ἀποδίδομεν. Sight, for example, we do not receive by perception: it is the antecedent condition of perception, Tas 8' άρετὰς λαμβάνομεν ἐνεργήσαντες πρότερον: we become virtuous by moral, vicious by immoral, action. x. 10, 1179, b, 20 (referring, doubtless, as also does i. 10 init... to PLATO'S Meno, 70, A, 99, E): γίνεσθαι δ' άγαθούς οἴονται οἱ μέν Φύσει, οί δ' έθει, οί δὲ διδαχῆ. τὸ μέν οὖν τῆς φύσεως δῆλον ώς οὐκ έφ' ἡμῖν ὑπάρχει, ἀλλὰ διά τινας θε ας αίτίας τοῖς ὡς ἀληθῶς εὐτυχέσιν ὑπάρχει. On voluntariness as characteristic of moral virtue. ibid. ii. 4, 1106, a, 2, iii. 1 init.; c. 4 init. and p. 115 sq., supra.

⁵ Eth. ii. 4, 1105, b, 28; see p. 154, n. 1, supra.

draws a distinction between continence (ἐγκράτεια) and virtue, incontinence and vice in the stricter sense.¹ In like manner he regards modesty rather as an emotion than as a virtue.² In all these states of mind Aristotle fails to find the universality of consciousness—action proceeding from a principle. He holds that nothing is moral which is not done with rational insight, nothing immoral which is not done in defiance of it. ✓

While virtue is impossible without insight, insight and morality are not identical. As will in general consists of the union of reason and desire,³ the moral quality of the will must be treated under the same category. Moral virtue is concerned with pleasure and pain, since it has to do with actions and emotions which cause these feelings: pleasure and pain are the primary source of desire,⁴ and the criterion of all our actions,⁵

' Ibid. vii. 1, 1145, a, 17, 35; ibid. c. 9, 1150, b, 35, 1151, a, 27. Moderation, according to these passages, is a σπουδαία έξις, but not an ἀρετή.

² Ibid. iv. 15, ii. 7, 1108, a, 30: it is praiseworthy, indeed, but not a virtue; it is a μ εσότης $\dot{\epsilon}\nu$ τοῖς πάθεσι.

³ On the will, see pp. 113 sq. and p. 126.

4 On this cf. also pp. 107 sqq. 5 Eth. ii. 2, 1104, b, 8: περὶ ἡδονὰς γὰρ καὶ λύπας ἐστὶν ἡ ἡθικὰ ἀρετή· διὰ μὲν γὰρ τὴν ἡδουὴν τὰ φαῦλα πράττομεν διὰ δὲ τὴν λύπην τῶν καλῶν ἀπεχόμεθα . . ἔτι δ' εἰ ἀρεταί εἰσι περὶ πράξεις καὶ πάθη, παντὶ δὲπάθει καὶ πάση πράξει ἔπται ἡδονὰ καὶ λύπη, καὶ διὰ τοῦτ' ἀν εἰη ἡ ἀρετὴ περὶ ἡδονὰς καὶ λύπας. All moral failings spring from desire for pleasure and dislike of

pain, and for this very reason are to be counteracted by punishments; ιατρείαι γάρ τινές είσιν, αί δὲ ἰατρεῖαι διὰ τῶν ἐναντίων πεφύκασι γίνεσθαι . . . ὑπόκειται ἄρα ἡ ἡδονὴ είναι ή τοιαύτη περί ήδονας καί λύπας των βελτίστων πρακτική, ή δὲ κακία τοὐναντίον . . . τριῶν γὰρ ύντων των είς τὰς αίρέσεις καὶ τοιών τῶν εἰς τὰς φυγὰς, καλοῦ συμφέροντος ήδέος, καὶ τριῶν τῶν ἐναντίων, αίσχροῦ βλαβεροῦ λυπηροῦ, περί πάντα μέν ταθτα δ άγαθος κατορθωτικός έστιν ό δὲ κακὸς άμαρτητικός, μάλιστα δὲ περὶ τὴν ἡδονήν · κοινή τε γάρ αὕτη τοῖς ζώοις καὶ πᾶσι τοις ύπο την αίρεσιν παρακολουθεί. και γάρ το καλον και το συμφέρον ήδὺ φαίνεται . . κανονίζομεν δὲ και τας πράξεις, οί μεν μαλλον οί δ' ήττον, ήδονή και λύπη . . . ώστε . . . περί ήδονας και λύπας πασα ή πραγματεία και τη άρετη και τη

to which we refer in a certain sense even the motives of utility and right.1 Aristotle, therefore, controverts the Socratic doctrine that virtue consists in knowledge.2 His objection to this view is, broadly speaking, that it neglects the irrational element of the soul, the pathological side of virtue.3 When he proceeds to a closer investigation of its fundamental principle, he shows that it rests on false presuppositions. Socrates had maintained that it was impossible to do evil knowing that it was evil and hurtful; 4 Aristotle shows, on the contrary, that to say this is to overlook the distinction between purely theoretic and practical knowledge. For, in the first place, he remarks, we must distinguish between the possession of knowledge as mere skill, and knowledge as an activity. I may know that a certain action is good or bad, but this knowledge may in the particular case remain latent, and in this way I may do evil without being conscious at the moment that it is evil. But,

πολιτική: ὁ μὲν γὰρ εὖ τούτοις χρώμενος ἀγαθὸς ἔσται, ὁ δὲ κακῶς κακός. ΙΙ. 5, 1106, b, 16: λέγω δὲ τὴν ἠθικὴν [ἀρετήν]· αὕτη γάρ ἐστι περὶ πάθη καὶ πράξεις. Ibid. 1. 24, iii. 1 init. (see p. 117, n. 2, sup.), vii. 12, 1152, b, 4, 1172, b, 21; x. 7; see p. 143, n. 1, supra. Phys. vii. 3, 247, a, 23: καὶ τὸ ὅλον την ήθικην άρετην έν ήδοναις και λύπαις είναι συμβέβηκεν ή γάρ κατ' ένέργειαν το της ήδονης η δια μνήμην η από της έλπίδος. Pol. viii. 5, 1340, a, 14.

¹ This statement (Eth. ii. 2: see preced. n.) might seem surprising, as Aristotle draws a very clear distinction between pleasure and the good (v, p, 140 sq.).

It must be taken, however, in the light of what is said above. p. 149, n. 3. The thought of the good operates upon the will through the medium of feeling, the good presenting it as something desirable affording pleasure and satisfaction.

² Eth. vi. 13, 1144, b, 17 sqq. vii. 5, 1146, b, 31 sqq. cf. c. 3 init. x. 10, 1179, b, 23; Eud. i. 5, 1216, b, vii. 13 fin.; M. Mor. i. 1, 1182, a, 15, c. 35, 1198, a, 10.

As may be concluded from the statements in Eth. vi. 13, c, 2, 1139, a, 31, and especially M. M. i. 1. Cf. p. 157, n. 5, supra.

See Ph. d. Gr. i. p. 118 sq.

in the second place, concerning the content of this knowledge, we have to distinguish between the general principle and its practical application. For if every action consists in bringing a particular case under a general law,1 it is quite conceivable that the agent, while he knows and presents to himself the moral law in its universality, yet may neglect the application of it to the particular case and permit himself to be here determined by sensual desire instead of by moral principle.2 While, therefore, Socrates had asserted that no one is voluntarily wicked, Aristotle maintains, on the contrary. that man is master of his actions, and even makes this voluntariness of action the distinguishing mark of the practical as opposed to the theoretic life.3 manner practical activity is distinguished from artistic. In art the chief thing is knowledge or skill to produce certain works: in conduct, it is will. In the former the object is that the production should be of a certain character; in the latter the essential thing is that the agent himself should be so. There the man who errs intentionally is the better man; here it is the man who errs unintentionally.4

Moral activity, then, according to Aristotle,⁵ consists in the union of the merely natural activity of impulse with the rational activity of insight, or, more

¹ Cf. p. 110, n. 1, supra.

² Eth. vii. 5, which deals primarily with excess. Another characteristic of action as distinguished from knowledge—

characteristic of action as distinguished from knowledge which, however, Aristotle does not mention in this connection has Aready been mentioned, p.

^{183,} n. 2, and p. 107, n. 2, supra.

* See pp. 115 sqq. supra.

⁴ Eth. ii. 3 (see i. 6), vi. 5, 1140, b, 22; Metaph. vi. 1, 1025, b, 22.

⁵ Eth. vi. 5, 1140, b, 22 cf. v. i. 1129, a, 83 Metaph. v. 29 fin.

accurately, in the subordination to reason of that part of the soul which while itself irrational is yet susceptible of rational determination—namely, desire.1 The ultimate source of moral action is the rational desire or will, and the most essential property of will is the freedom with which it decides between sensual and rational impulses.2 Morality, however, is only perfect when freedom itself has become a second nature. Virtue is a permanent quality of the will, a habit acquired by free activity: morality has its roots in custom, $\tilde{\eta}\theta os$ in $\tilde{\epsilon}\theta os$.³ If we ask, therefore, what is the origin of virtue, the answer is that it comes neither by nature nor by instruction, but by practice. For while natural disposition is the necessary condition, and ethical knowledge the natural fruit of virtue, yet for its essential character as a definite bent of the will virtue is wholly dependent on continued moral activity,4,

αιρούμενος δι' αὐτὰ, τὸ δὲ τρίτον καὶ έὰν βεβαίως καὶ ἀμετακινήτως έχων πράττη . . . πρδς δέ το τας άρετὰς [sc. ἔχειν] τὸ μὲν εἰδέναι μικρον ή οὐδὲν ἰσχύει, τὰ δ' ἄλλα ού μικρόν άλλα το παν δύναται, άπερ έκ τοῦ πολλάκις πράττειν τὰ δίκαια καὶ σώφρονα περιγίνεται. Χ. 10, 1179, b, 23 (after the words quoted p. 156. n. 4): ο δε λόγος καὶ ή διδαχή μήποτ' οὐκ ἐν ἄπασιν ίσχύη, άλλὰ δέη προδιειργάσθαι τοῖς ἔθεσι την τοῦ ἀκροατοῦ ψυχην πρός το καλώς χαίρειν και μισείν, ώσπερ γην την θρέψουσαν τὸ σπέρμα οὐ γὰρ αν ακούσειε λόγου αποτρέποντος οὐδ' αὖ συνείη ὁ κατὰ πάθος ζών τὸν δ' οὕτως ἔχοντα πῶς οδόν τε μεταπείσαι; ὅλως τ' οὐ δοκεί λόγφ ύπείκειν το πάθος άλλα βία δεί δη το ήθος προυπάρχειν πως

¹ Eth. i. 13 ad fin.

² See also what is said on this subject p. 115 sq.

See p. 153 and p.156, n. 4, sup. After showing that one becomes moral only by doing moral actions, Eth. ii. 1 (see p. 56, n. 4). Aristotle asks whether we do not in making this assertion involve ourselves in a circle, since in order to do moral actions we must apparently be already moral: and answers that it is not so: in a work of art it is sufficient that it should itself be of a certain character, τὰ δὲ κατὰ τὰς ἀρετὰς γινόμενα οὐκ ἐὰν αὐτά πως έχη δικαίως ή σωφρόνως πράττεται, άλλὰ καὶ ἐὰν ὁ πράττων πως έχων πράττη, πρώτον μέν έὰν είδὼς, ἔπειτ' έὰν προαιρούμενος, καὶ ποο-

by which that which was at first matter of free resolve becomes an unfailing certainty of character.¹ Even the comprehension of ethical doctrine is conditioned, according to Aristotle, by practice in virtuous action: he who would listen to a moral discourse must be already well practised in virtue. The moral will must precede the knowledge of morals.² Virtue, therefore, always presupposes a certain degree of spiritual maturity. Children and slaves have no virtue in the strict sense of the word, for they have no will, or as yet only an imperfect one, and young men are unfit for moral philosophy, because they still lack stability.³

Hitherto we have been concerned merely with the form of moral conduct: we as yet know nothing of its contents. Virtue we have found to be a moral quality of the will. We have now to ask what quality of the will is moral? To this Aristotle answers first quite generally: the quality, by means of which man not only becomes himself good, but rightly performs his proper activity.⁴ Right activity he further defines as

οἰκεῖον τῆς ἀρετῆς, στέργον τὸ καλὸν και δυσχεραίνον το αισχρόν. Somewhat more is conceded to instruction Polit. vii. 13, 1338, a, 38 sqq. Here also φύσις έθος λόγος are mentioned as the three sources of virtue; of the last, however, it is remarked: πολλά γάρ παρά τους έθισμους και την φύσιν πράττουσι διὰ τὸν λόγον, ἐὰν πεισθῶσιν άλλως έχειν βέλτιον. The divergence, however, is unimportant.—Plato, of whose language we are forcibly reminded in the above passages, had taught that moral habit must precede insight (see Ph.d. Gr.i.pp. 532 sd.); Aristotle differs from him merely in distinguishing the higher virtue of the philosopher from that of habit, while Plato limits moral virtue to this source.

1 Ibid. ii. 3 (see preced. n.): it is a property of virtue βεβαίως και αμετακινήτως ἔχειν. Cf. De Mem. c. 2, 452, a, 27: ἄσπερ γὰρ φύσις ἤδη τὸ ἔθος, and p. 116, n. 3, ευργα.

² Fth. i. 1, 2, 1094, b, 27 sqq. 1095, a, 4, vi. 13, 1144, b, 30.
³ Ibid. i. 1 with the words:

S Ibid. 1.1 with the words:
 διαφέρει δ' οὐθὲν νέος τὴν ἡλικίαν ἢ τὸ ἦθος νεαρός:
 c. 10, 1100, a, 1,
 Polit. i. 13, 1260, a, 12 sqq. 31.
 Ibid. ii. 5: ρητέον οῦν ὅτι

that which avoids the extremes of excess and defect, and thus preserves the proper mean: ¹ and conversely, wrong activity is that which deviates on one side or the • other from this boundary line.² In further determining the nature and position of the 'proper mean,' we have to take into account, not merely the object of our action, but, what is much more important, our own personal nature.³ The problem of morality is to strike the proper mean relating to ourselves: in feeling and action neither to overstep or fall short of the limit set by the character of the agent, the object and the circumstances.⁴ Aristotle admits, indeed, that this description

πᾶσα ἀρετὴ, οῦ ἀν ἢ ἀρετὴ, αὐτό τε εὖ ἔχον ἀποτελεῖ καὶ τὸ ἔργον αὐτοῦ εὖ ἀποδίδωσιν... εἰ δὴ τοῦτ ἐπὶ πάντων οὕτως ἔχει, καὶ ἡ τοῦ ἀνθρώπου ἀρετὴ εἴη ὰν ἔξις ἀρ' ἦς ἀγαθὸς ἄνθρωπος γίνεται καὶ ἀφ' ἦς εἶ τὸ ἐδι ἀναθος ἀναθος ἀναθος ἀνομοπος γίνεται καὶ ἀφ' ἦς εἶ τὸ ἑαυτοῦ ἔργον ἀποδώσει.

1 Ibid. 1106, b, 8: εὶ δὴ πῶσα ἐπιστήμη οῦτω τὸ ἔργον εὖ ἐπιτελεῖ, πρὸς τὸ μέσον βλέπουσα καὶ εἶς τοῦτο ἄγουσα τὰ ἔργα (... ὡς τῆς μὲν ὑπερβολῆς καὶ τῆς ἐλλείψως φθειρούσης τὸ εὖ, τῆς δὲ μεσότητος σωζούσης) ... ἡ δ' ἀρετὴ πάσης τέχυης ἀκριβεστέρα καὶ ἀμείνων ἐστὶν, ὥσπερ καὶ ἡ ψύσις, τοῦ μέσου ὰν εἴη στοχαστική.

² Aristotle remarks that either the virtue or the vice have not unfrequently no name to designate them in common language; Eth. ii. 7, 1107, b, 1, 7, 30, 1108, a, 5, 16, iii. 10, 1115, b, 25, c. 14, 1119, a, 10, iv. 1, 1119, b, 34, c. 10 sq., 1125, b, 17, 26, c. 12, 1126, b, 19, c. 13, 1127, a, 14.

³ Ibid. 1106, a, 26: ἐν παντὶ δὴ συνεχεῖ καὶ διαιρετῷ ἔστι λαβεῖν τὸ μὲν πλεῖον τὸ δ' ἔλαττον τὸ δ' ἴσον, καὶ ταῦτα ἡ κατ' αὐτὸ τὸ πράγμα ή πρός ήμας το δ' ίσον μέσον τι ύπερβολής και έλλείψεως. λέγω δὲ τοῦ μὲν πράγματος μέσον το ίσον απέχον αφ' έκατέρου των άκρων, ὅπερ ἐστὶν ἐν καὶ ταὐτὸν πασι, πρὸς ἡμας δὲ ὁ μήτε πλεονά(ει μήτε έλλείπει. τοῦτο δ' οὺχ έν οὐδέ ταὐτὸν πᾶσιν. If, for example, two cutlets are too little food, while ten are too much, the μέσον κατά τὸ πρᾶγμα would be six: this amount, however, might be too much for one, too little for another: ούτω δη πας επιστήμων τὴν ὑπερβολὴν μὲν καὶ τὴν ἔλλειψιν φεύγει, τὸ δὲ μέσον ζητεῖ καὶ τοῦθ' αίρεῖται, μέσον δὲ οὖ τὸ τοῦ πράγματος άλλὰ τὸ πρὸς ἡμᾶς.

4 Ibid. 1106, b, 16 (after the words quoted inn. 1, supra): λέγω δὲ τὴν ἢθικήν [ἀρετήν]· αὅτη γἀρ ἐστι περὶ πάθη καὶ πράξεις, ἐν δὲ τούτοις ἐστὶν ὑπερβολλ καὶ ἔλλειψις καὶ τὸ μέσον. οἶον καὶ φοβηθῆναι καὶ θαρρῆσαι καὶ ἐπιθυμῆσαι καὶ ὀργισθῆναι καὶ ἐλεῆσαι καὶ ὅλως ἡσθῆναι καὶ λυπηθῆναι ἔστι καὶ μᾶλλον καὶ ἦττον, καὶ ἀμφότερα οὐκ εδ· τὸ δ΄ ὅτε δεῖ καὶ ἐφ' οἶς καὶ πρὸς οὖς καὶ σὸς καὶ οῦ ἔνεκα καὶ ὧς δεῖ,

is still a very general one, and that we have to look closer if we would discover the proper mean, and with it the right criterion of action (the $\partial\rho\theta$ $\partial \lambda$ $\partial \gamma os$); but he can only here refer us to practical insight, whose business it is to mark out what is right in particular cases; and he therefore defines virtue as 'that quality of the will which preserves the mean suitably to our nature, conformably to a reasonable definition, such as the man of insight would give.'

From this point of view Aristotle goes on to deal with the particular virtues, without any attempt to deduce them from any one definite principle. Even the suggestions towards such a deduction which were to be found in his own theory as above stated, he left on one side. Seeing that he had investigated the idea of 'Happiness,' and had found in 'Virtue' the essential means thereto, he might have made an attempt to define the various kinds of activity which enable us to reach this end, and so have sought to arrive at the main kinds of 'Virtue.' He does, however, nothing of the kind. Even where he gives us certain indications of the points of view from which he deals with the order of the

μέσον τε καὶ ἄριστον, ὅπερ ἐστὶ τῆς ἀρετῆς. ὁμοίως δὲ καὶ περὶ τὰς πράξεις ἐστὶν ὑπερβολὴ καὶ ἔλλειψις καὶ τὸ μέσον μεσότης τις ἄρα ἐστὶν ἡ ἀρετὴ, στοχαστική γε οὖσα τοῦ μέσου. Uf. foll. n.

 μεσοτήτων, ας μεταξύ φαμεν είναι της ύπερβολης και της έλλείψεως, οὔσας κατὰ τὸν ὀρθὸν λόγον. ἔστι δὲ τὸ μὲν εἰπεῖν οὕτως ἀληθὲν μὲν, οὐθὲν δὲ σαφές . . . διὸ δεῖ και περί τὰς τῆς ψυχης ἔξεις μὴ μόνον ἀληθὲς εἰναι τοῦτ' εἰρημένον, ἀλλὰ καὶ διωρισμένον τίς τ' ἐστιν ὁ ὀρθὸς λόγος καὶ τούτου τίς ὅρος.

² Ibid. ii. 6 init.: ἔστιν ἄρα ἡ ἀρετὴ ἔξις προαιρετικὴ ἐν μεσότητ οὖσα τῆ πρὸς ἡμῶς, ὡρισμένη λόγῳ καὶ ὡς ἀν ὁ φρόνιμος ὁρίσειεν.

ethical virtues in his treatment of them, these points of view are themselves in no way based on any principle.¹

1 After defining virtue as μεσότης. Aristotle continues. Eth. ii. 7: from the general statement we must turn to particular instances of the principle. περί μέν οὖν Φόβους καὶ θάρρη ἀνδρεία μεσότης..., περί ήδονας δέ καί λύπας [those, i.e., as is here hinted, and definitely stated in iii. 13, 1117, b, 27 sqg, of ἀφη and $\gamma \in \hat{v}\sigma is$ $\sigma \omega \phi \rho o \sigma \dot{v} v \eta \dots \pi \in \rho \lambda \delta \dot{\epsilon}$ δόσιν χρημάτων καὶ ληψιν . . . έλευθριότης; to these belongs also μεγαλοπρέπεια • περί δὲ τιμὴν καί άτιμίαν . . . μεγαλοψυχία, and the corresponding anonymous virtue the ὑπερβολη of which is ambition. ἔστιδὲ καὶ περὶ ὀργῆν . . . μεσότης, which he calls πραότης. Furthermore, there are three μεσότητες which relate to κοινωνία λόγων καὶ πράξεων, one to τὸ ἀληθές in these (ἀλήθεια), the two others to τὸ ἡδὺ, the one (p. 169, n. 6, infra), ἐν παιδιᾶ, the other (p. 169, n. 4, infra), έν πασι τοῦς κατά τον βίον. Of bravery and σωφροσύνη it is further remarked, iii. 13: δοκοῦσι γὰρ τῶν ἀλόγων μερῶν αῧται εἶναι αί ἀρεταί. This classification. however, is a loose one, nor is any clearly defined principle discoverable in it. HÄCKER'S attempt in his interesting essay (Das Eintheilungs- und Anordnungsprincip der moralischen Tugendreihe in der nikomachischen Ethik, Berl. 1863) to show that Aristotle is guided by such a principle imports, apparently, more into his account than is admissible. According to this view, Aristotle intended to indicate in the first place those

virtues which consist in the subordination of the lower instincts that are concerned with the mere defence and maintenance of life: bravery the virtue of θυμός, temperance the virtue of ἐπιθυμία. The second group of virtues (liberality, love of honour, gentleness, and justice, which is placed last for special reasons) have for the sphere of their exercise political life in time of peace, and the part which the individual takes in affairs of state, as well as the positions he occupies in it; the third the amenity of life, $\tau \delta \in \hat{\delta} \zeta \hat{\eta} \nu$. But it is impossible to show that Aristotle founds his classification of the virtues upon this scheme. In the first place, the reason which he himself gives for connecting bravery andcommand with one another is that they stand for the virtues of the irrational parts of a man; this is only to say (unless, with RAMSAUER, we reject the words altogether) that it is suitable to discuss self-command along with bravery because it has been customary since the time of Plato to name these two together as the virtues of θυμός and $\tau \delta = \epsilon \pi \iota \theta \upsilon \mu \eta \tau \iota \kappa \delta \nu$ respectively. Had he been governed by those principles of classification which Häcker ascribes to him, he must have classed πραότης along with bravery. If the latter is the subordination of the instinct of self, the former is (iv. 11) the μεσότης περί δργάς: but ánger springs from the instinct of revenge, which, like bravery, has

165

There is therefore nothing for us to do but to set out, without reference to any exact logical connection, what Aristotle has himself said as to those virtues which he enumerates.

The preliminary proposition, that there are more

its seat in θυμδs (iv. 11, 1126, a, 19 sqq.; Rhet. ii. 2 init. 12, 1389, α, 26: καλ ανδρειότεροι [οί νέοι]. θυμώδεις γάρ . . . ούτε γάρ όργιζόμενος οὐδείς φοβείται, cf. p. 583, 2), and which, like it (Eth. iii. 11, 1116, b, 23 sqg.), we share with the brutes. Anger and bravery, therefore, are so closely related that it is often difficult to distinguish them from one another (Eth. ii. 9, 1109, b, 16 sqq., iv. 11, 1126, b, 1, cf. Rhet. ii. 5, 1383, b, 7), and in Rhet. ii. 8, 1385, b, 30, anger is even called a πάθος ανδρίας. If. notwithstanding this relationship, the μεσότης περί τὰς ὀργὰς is said to belong to a different group of virtues from bravery, on the ground that the latter springs only from the instinct 'to preserve the vegetative life,' while anger is concerned chiefly with injuries inflicted upon honour of a citizen (HÄCKER, p. 15, 18), this is scarcely consistent with the statements of Aristotle. Eth. iv. 11, 1125, b, 30, he says expressly of anger: τὰ δὲ ἐμποιοῦντα πολλὰ καὶ διαφέpovra, and, on the other hand, of bravery, that it does not consist in not fearing death under any circumstances, but in not fearing death έν τοις καλλίστοις, especially in war (iii. 9, 1115, a, 28), which has a much more direct relation to political life than the loss of merely personal honour. So far

indeed, is Aristotle from seeing in bravery only the $\mu\epsilon\sigma\delta\tau\eta s$ of an animal instinct, in anger that is properly directed and controlled that of a higher instinct which is concerned with civil life, that he declares (Eth. iii, 11, 1116, b, 23-1117, a, 9): when men despise danger from anger or desire for revenge (δργιζόμενοι, τιμωρούμενοι) they can no more be called brave than an animal when it rushes in rage [διὰ τον θυμον. which here hardly differs from οργή upon the huntsman who has wounded it. Nor does the position assigned to the virtues which are concerned with the use of money admit of being explained on the ground that riches always secure a certain social station to its possessor (HÄCKER, p. 16), for there is no allusion in Aristotle to this point of view, although in the case of μεγαλοπρέπεια (not, however, of έλευθερίστης) mention is made. among other things, of expenditure for public purposes. If, on the other hand, this had been the principle of classification.bravery in war would have found a place in this group. Finally, it cannot be said that the third group concerns τὸ εὖ ζην any more closely than the other two; for ed (n) in the Aristotelian sense, command, liberality and justice. are certainly more important than τὸ ἡδὺ ἐν παιδιᾶ.

virtues than one, is established by Aristotle, against the position of Socrates, who had reduced them all to 'Insight.' Aristotle himself admits that all completed Virtue is in its essence and principle one and the same, and that with Insight all other virtues are given.1 Yet at the same time he shows that the natural basis of virtue—the moral circumstances—must be different in different cases. The will of the slave, for example, is different from the will of the freeman: the will of the woman and the child is not the same as the will of the adult man. Therefore he holds that the moral activity of different individuals must be different. Not only will one individual possess a particular virtue which others do not possess, but it is also true that different demands must be made on each particular class of men.² Aristotle says very little (and that not in his Ethics, but in his Œconomics) of the virtues of the

1 Eth. vi. 13, 1144, b, 31: οὐχ οἶόν τε ἀγαθὸν εἶναι κυρίως ἄνευ φρονήσεως, οὐδὲ φρόνιμον ἄνευ τῆς ἡθικῆς ἀρετῆς. It appears, indeed, as though the virtues could be separated from one another; οὐ γὰρ ὁ αὐτὸς εὐφυέστατος πρὸς ἀπάσας, ὥστε τὴν μὲν ἤδη τὴν δ' οὕπω εἰληφὰς ἔσται. This is not really so: τοῦτο γὰρ κατὰ μὲν τὰς φυσικὰς ἀρετὰς ἐνδέχεται, καθ' ὰς δὲ ἀπλῶς λέγεται ἀγαθὸς, οὐκ ἐνδέχεται ἄμα γὰρ τῆ φρονήσει μιᾶ οὕση πὰσαι ὑπάρξουσιν.

² See preceding n. and Pulit. vi. 13, 1260, a, 10: πᾶσιν ἐνυπάρχει μὲν τὰ μόρια τῆς ψυχῆς, ἀλλ' ἐνυπάρχει διαφερόντως . . . ὁμοίως τοίνυν ἀναγκαῖον ἔχειν καὶ περὶ τὰς ἡθικὰς ἀρετάς ὑποληπτέον δεῖν μὲν μετέχειν πάντας, ἀλλ' οὐ τὸν

αὐτὸν τρόπον, ἀλλ' ὅσον ἐκάστφ πρὸς τὸ αὐτοῦ ἔργον. διὸ τὸν μὲν άρχοντα τελίαν έχειν δεῖ τὴν ἡθικὴν ἀρετὴν, . τῶν δ' ἄλλων ἕκαστον ὅσον ἐπιβάλλει αὐτοῖς. ώστε φανερον ότι έστιν ήθική άρετή τῶν εἰρημένων πάντων, καὶ οὐχ ἡ αὐτὴ σωφροσύνη γυναικὸς καὶ ἀνδρός, &c. Although it is not here said that one virtue can exist without the others, and although on the other hand, this is admitted Eth. vi. 13 to be the case only with the physical virtues, yet the imperfect virtue of slaves or women must be regarded as an incomplete and partial possession, which excludes the comprehensive virtue of insight, and therefore extends to some and not to others.

several classes. In the *Ethics* he treats of Virtue in its perfected form, which it assumes in man, whom alone he elsewhere regards as the perfect type of humanity, and it is of this alone that he describes the constituent parts.

Bravery¹ stands at the head of the list of the virtues. He is brave who does not fear a glorious death or the near danger of death, or more generally he who endures, dares or fears what he ought to, for the right object, in the right way and at the right time.² The extremes between which Bravery stands as the mean are: on the one side Insensibility and Foolhardiness, and on the other Cowardice.³ Nearly related to Bravery, but not to be identified with it, are Civil Courage and the courage which springs from compulsion, or anger, or the wish to escape from a pain,⁴ or which is founded upon familiarity with the apparently terrible or upon the hope of a favourable result.⁵ Self-control to follows as the second virtue, which, however, Aristotle limits to the preserva-

δρεία most closely resembles true bravery (1116, a, 27), ὅτι δι' άρετὴν γίνεται δι' αἰδῶ γὰρ καὶ διὰ καλοῦ ὅρεξιν (τιμῆς γὰρ) καὶ φνγὴν ὀνείδους αἰσχροῦ ὅντος. Nevertheless Aristotie distinguishes between them, πολιτικὴ ἀνδρεία being heteronomous to the extent that the brave deed is not done for its own sake.

⁶ Σωφροσύνη, c. 13-15, in contrast to ἀκολασία and to a species of insensibility for which there is no name, as it is not found among men (c. 14, 1119, a, 9; cf. vii. 11 init.: Aristotle would perhaps have ascribed this failing, of which he says, εἰ δέτω μηθέν ἐστιν ἡδὺ μηδὲ διαφέρει ἔτερον ἐτέρου, πόρρω ὰν εἴη τοῦ

Eth. iii. 9-12.

² C. 9, 1115, a, 33: δ περὶ τὸν καλὸν θάνατον ἀδεὴς καὶ δσα θάνατον ἐπιφέρει ὑπόγυια ὅντα. c. 10, 1115, b, 17: δ μὲν οδν ἃ δεῖ καὶ οδ ἕνεκα ὑπομένων καὶ φοβούμενος, καὶ ὡς δεῖ καὶ ὅτε, ὁμοίως δὲ καὶ θαρρῶν, ἀνδρεῖος κατ' ἀξίαν γὰρ, καὶ ὡς ὰν ὁ λόγος, πάσχει καὶ πράττει ὁ ἀνδρεῖος . . . καλοῦ δὴ ἔνεκα ὁ ἀνδρεῖος ὑπομένει καὶ πράττει τὰ κατὰ τὴν ἀνδρείαν. Cf. Rhet. i. 9, 1366, b, 11.

³ C. 10, 1115, b, 24 sqq.

⁴ As in suicide, which Aristotle therefore regards as a mark of cowardice; iii. 11, 1116, a, 12, cf. ix. 4, 1166, b, 11.

⁵ C.88 (where, however, 1117, a, 20, the words η και must be omitted). Of these, πολιτική ἀν-

tion of the proper mean in the pleasures of touch and in the satisfaction of the merely animal and sexual impulses. Next comes Generosity, 1 as the proper mean between Avarice and Extravagance, 2 the attitude in giving and taking external goods which is at once moral and worthy of a free man, 3 and the kindred virtue of Munificence in expenditure. 4 Magnanimity 5 (in his

ἄνθρωπος είναι, to the Ascetics of a later time); cf. vii. 8, 1150, a, 19 sqq. and the passages referred to below from book vii. upon εγκράτεια and ακρασία; Rhet. ibid 1, 13. In the words with which he opens this discussion. μετὰ δὲ ταύτην [bravery] περί σωφροσύνης λέγωμεν · δοκοῦσι γάρ των άλόγων μερών αὖται εἶναι ai ἀρεταί, Aristotle is referring to Plato's doctrine; he himself has no reason to ascribe bravery, any more than moral virtue as a whole, to the irrational element in the soul.

Or, more correctly, libera-

lity, ελευθεριότης.

² 'Ανελευθερία and ἀσωτία. The worse and more incurable of these faults is avarice. Eth. iv.

3, 1121, a, 19 sqq.

⁸ Eth. iv. 1-3. The noble spirit in which Aristotle handles this subject may be seen, among other passages, in c. 2 init.: ai δέ κατ' άρετην πράξεις καλαί και τοῦ καλοῦ ἕνεκα. καὶ ὁ ἐλευθέριος οὖν δώσει τοῦ καλοῦ ἕνεκα καὶ ὀρθῶς . . . καὶ ταῦτα ἡδέως ἡ ἀλύπως ΄ τὸ γὰρ κατ' ἀρετὴν ἡδὺ ἡ ἄλυπον, ήκιστα δὲ λυπηρόν ὁ δὲ διδοὺς οἶς μη δεῦ, ή μη τοῦ καλοῦ ἔνεκα ἀλλὰ διά τιν' άλλην αἰτίαν, οὐκ ἐλευθέριος άλλ' άλλος τίς βηθήσεται. οὐδ' δ λυπηρώς μαλλον γάρ έλοιτ' αν τά χρήματα της καλης πράξεως, τοῦτο

δ' οὐκ ἐλευθερίου.

4 Μεγαλοπρέπεια, ibid. 4-6, which is defined, 1122, a, 23, by the words έν μεγέθει πρέπουσα δαπάνη: it stands midway between μικροπρέπεια, on the one hand, and βαναυσία and ἀπειροκαλία on the other. It differs from elevθεριότης in having to do, not only with the right and proper, but with the sumptuous expenditure of money (iv. 4, 1122, b, 10 sqq., where, however, l. 18, we shall have to read, with Cod. Lb Mb. καὶ ἔστιν ἔργου μεγαλοπρέπεια άρετη έν μεγέθει: 'μεγαλοπρέπεια is excellence of work in great matters,' and explain 1. 12 as meaning either 'the magnitude here is contributed by the meyaλοπρεπήs, being a sort of greatness of liberality in respect to the same objects,' or 'it is the magnitude here which constitutes, so to speak, the greatness in the munificence, &c.;' unless we prefer the surmise of RASSOW, Forsch. üb. d. nikom. Ethik. 82, who inserts 'λαβούσης' after μέγεθος, which might easily have fallen out owing to the ovons which follows, so that the meaning is 'liberality which is directed to the same object attaining a sort of grandeur'). Rhet. i. 9, 1366, b, 18.

5 Μεγαλοψυχία as midway be-

description of which Aristotle has, perhaps, before his mind the example of his great pupil), honourable ambition, Gentleness, the social virtues of Amiability, Simplicity, Geniality in company follow: and to these are added the graces of temperament, Modesty, and righteous Indignation.

tween meanness of spirit (μικροψυχία) and vanity (χαυνότης), iv. 7-9; Rhet. ibid. Μεγαλόψυχος is (1123, b, 2) ὁ μεγάλων αὐτὸν ἀξιῶν ἄξιος ἄν: this virtue, therefore, always presupposes actual excellence.

This virtue is described, Eth. iv. 10, as the mean between φιλοτιμία and ἀφιλοτιμία, which is related to μεγαλοψυχία as ἐλευθεριότηs is to μεγαλοπρέπεια, but for which there is no proper word.

² The μεσότης περὶ ὀργάς, iv. 11. Aristotle calls this virtue πραότης, the corresponding vices ὀργιλότης and ἀοργησία, remarking, however, that all these names are coined by him for the purpose. The πρᾶος is accordingly defined as ὁ ἐφ' οἶς δεῖ καὶ οἷς δεῖ καὶ ὁς οῖς ικὶ ὅσον χρόνον. Ιδὶᾶ. on the ἀκρόχολος and the χαλεπός.

³ Which Aristotle himself, iv. 14 fin., comprises under this title.

⁴ Using the word to designate the nameless virtue which, Eth. iv. 12, is opposed on the one side to complaisance and flattery, on the other to unsociableness and moroseness, and described as the social tact which knows $\delta \mu \iota \lambda \epsilon \hat{\iota} \nu$ as $\delta \epsilon \hat{\iota}$. Aristotle there remarks that it closely resembles $\phi \iota \lambda \hat{\iota} a$, but differs from it in not resting upon inclination or dislike to-

wards particular persons. *Eud.* iii. 7, 1233, b, 29, it is simply called φιλία.

5 The likewise nameless mean between vain-boasting (ἀλαζονεία) and self-depreciation (είρωνεία, of which the extreme is seen in the βανκοπανούργοs), iv 13.

6 Εὐτραπελία or ἐπιδεξιότης (iv. 14), the opposites being βωμολοχία and ἀγριότης. Here also it is a question of social tact (cf. 1128, b, 31: ὁ δὴ χαρίεις καὶ ἐλευθέριος οὐτως ἔξει, οἶον νόμος ῶν ἑαυτῷ), with especial reference, however, to the entertainment of society.

 7 Μεσότητες ἐν τοῖς πάθεσι καὶ ἐν τοῖς περὶ τὰ πάθη (ii. 7, 1108, a, 30), called μεσότητες παθητικαὶ, Eud. iii. 7 init. Among these, Eud. iii. 7 classes also φιλία, σεμνότης, ἀληθεια, and ἀπλότης, εὐτραπελία.

8 Alδώs. See Eth. iv. 15, ii. 7 (p. 157, n. 2, supra). The modest man, according to these passages, is the mean between the shameless and the bashful man (καταπλήξ). Modesty, however, is not so much a virtue in the proper sense as a praiseworthy affection suitable only for youth, as the adult should do nothing of which he requires to be ashamed.

9 Only in ii. 7, 1108, a, 35 sqq., where it is described as μεσότης φθόνου καὶ ἐπιχαιρεκακίας;

Justice, however, claims the fullest treatment, and Aristotle has devoted to it the whole of the fifth book of his Ethics.\(^1\) Considering the close connection between the Ethics and the Politics, it was necessary that special attention should be paid to the virtue upon which the maintenance of the commonwealth most directly depends. Justice, however, is not here to be understood in the wider sense in which it is equivalent to social virtue as a whole,\(^2\) but in its narrower meaning, as that virtue which has to do with the distribution of goods, the preservation, namely, of the proper mean\(^3\) or proportion in assigning advantages or disadvantages.\(^4\)

it concerns joy and sorrow at the fortunes of others, and consists in το λυπεῖσθαι ἐπὶ τοῖς ἀναξίως εὖ πράττουσιν. Similarly Rhet. ii. 9 init.

1 Cf. on this subject: H. FECHNER, Ueber den Gerechtigkeitsbegriff d. Arist. (Lpz. 1855), pp. 27-56; HILDENBRAND, Gesch. u. System d. Rechts- und Staatsphilosophie, i. 281-331, who also cites other literature; Prantl in Bluntschli's Staatswörterbuch, i. 351 sqq.; Trendelen, Hist. Beitr. iii. 349 sqq.

² Τὰ ποιητικὰ καὶ φυλακτικὰ τῆς εὐδαιμονίας καὶ τῶν μορίων αὐτῆς τῆ πολιτικῆ κοινωνία—the ἀρετὴ τελεία, ἀλλ' οὐχ ἀπλῶς ἀλλὰ πρὸς ἔτερον, ο τ which it is said that it is οὐ μέρος ἀρετῆς ἀλλ' ὅλη ἀρετὴ, οὐδ' ἡ ἐναντία ἀδικία μέρος κακίας ἀλλ' ὅλη κακία ... ἡ μὲν τῆς ὅλης ἀρετῆς οὄσα χρῆσις πρὸς ἄλλον, ἡ δὲ τῆς κακιας (Eth. v. 3, 1129, b, 17, 25 sqq. 1130, a, 8, c. 5, 1130, b, 18).

For 'the mean,' as in the case of every other virtue, is here the

highest criterion; cf. Eth. v. 6 init.: ἐπεὶ δ' δ τ' ἄδικος ἄνισος καὶ τὸ ἄδικον ἄνισον, δῆλον ὅτι καὶ μέσον τί ἐστι τοῦ ἀνίσον τοῦτο δ' ἐστὶ τὸ ἴσον . . . εἰ οὖν τὸ ἄδικον ἀνισον, τὸ δίκαιον ἴσον. . . 9 init.

As the distinguishing mark of ἀδικία in this narrower sense. πλεονεκτείν is mentioned (c. 4) περί τιμήν ή χρήματα ή σωτηρίαν, ή εξ τινι έχοιμεν ένὶ ὀνόματι περιλαβείν ταῦτα πάντα, καὶ δι' ἡδονὴν την από τοῦ κέρδους; it consists (c. 10, 1134, a, 33) in τδ πλέον αύτῷ νέμειν τῶν ἀπλῶς ἀγαθῶν, ἔλαττον δὲ τῶν ἀπλῶς κακῶν. Of justice, on the other hand, it is said, c. 9, 1134, a, 1: καὶ ἡ μὲν δικαιοσύνη έστὶ καθ' ην δ δίκαιος λέγεται πρακτικός κατά προαίρεσιν τοῦ δικαίου, καὶ διανεμητικός καὶ αύτῷ πρὸς άλλον καὶ ἐτέρω πρὸς έτερον, οὐχ οὕτως ὥστε τοῦ μὲν αίρετοῦ πλέον αύτῷ ἔλαττον δὲ τῶ πλησίου, τοῦ βλαβεροῦ δ' ἀνάπαλιν. άλλὰ τοῦ ἴσου τοῦ κατ' ἀναλογίαν. δμοίως δὲ καὶ άλλω πρὸς άλλον. It 18 (Rhet. i. 9, 1366, b. 9) ἀρετη

But this proportion will be different according as we are dealing with the distribution of civil advantages and the common property, which is the function of distributive justice, or with the removal and prevention of wrongs, which is the function of corrective justice.1 In both cases the distribution of goods according to the law of quality must be the aim.2 But this law demands in the former case that each should receive, not an equal amount, but an amount proportionate to his deserts. The distribution, therefore, is here made in a geometrical proportion: as the merits of A are to those of B, so is the honour or advantage which A receives to that which B receives.3 In the other case, which relates to the correction of inequalities produced by wrong, and to contracts, there is no question of the merits of the individual. Everyone who has done wrong must suffer loss in proportion to the unjust profit which he has appropriated; there is subtracted from his gains an amount equivalent to the loss of the man who has suffered the wrong.4 In like manner, in buying and

δι' ην τὰ αύτῶν ἕκαστοι ἔχουσιν. Right and justice, therefore, find a place only among beings who, like man, may possess too much or too little-not among those who, like the gods, are confined to no limit in this respect, or who, like the incurably bad, are incompetent to possess anything at all; Eth. v. 13, 1137, a, 26.

We should speak rather of

public and private right.

² $\Delta (\kappa \alpha \iota \sigma \nu)$ in this sense = $\iota \sigma \sigma \nu$, αδικον = ανισον: in the wider sense. on the other hand, the former = νόμιμον, the latter = παράνομον (v. 5: cf. TRENDELENBURG, Hist.

Beitr. ii. 357 sqq.; Brandis, p. 1421 sq.; RASSOW, Forsch. üb. d.

nikom. Eth. 17, 93).

* This is referred to Polit. iii. 9, 1280, a, 16. Conversely of public burdens, each would have to take his share according to his capacity for discharging them. Aristotle, however, does not touch upon this point, although he must have had it in view, Eth. v. 7, 1131, b, 20, where he speaks of the έλαττον and μείζον κακόν.

⁴ By κέρδος (advantage or gain) and (ημία (disadvantage or loss) Aristotle means in this connection, as he remarks, Eth. v

selling, renting, letting, &c., it is a question merely of the value of the article. Here, therefore, the rule is that of arithmetical equality: from him who has too much an amount is taken which will render both sides equal.\(^1\) In matters of exchange this equality consists in equality of value.\(^2\) The universal measure of value is

7, 1132, a, 10, not merely what is commonly understood by them. As he comprehends under corrective justice not only penal but also civil law, as well as the law of contract, he has greatly to extend the customary signification of the words in order to include these different conceptions under a common form of expression. Accordingly he classes every injustice which anyone commits as $\kappa \epsilon \rho \delta os$, every injustice which anyone suffers as $\zeta \eta \mu la$.

1 Ibid. c. 5-7, especially c. 5, 1130, b, 30: της δέ κατά μέρος δικαιοσύνης καὶ τοῦ κατ' αὐτὴν δικαίου εν μέν έστιν είδος το έν ταις διανομαίς τιμής ή χρημάτων ή των άλλων όσα μεριστά τοίς κοινωνούσι της πολιτείας, . έν δὲ τὸ ἐν τοῖς συναλλάγμασι διορθωτικόν. τούτου δὲ μέρη δύο τῶν γὰρ συναλλαγμάτων τὰ μὲν ἑκούσιά έστι τὰ δ' ἀκούσια, ἐκούσια μὲν τὰ τοιάδε οίον πρασις, ώνη, δανεισμός, έγγύη, χρησις, παρακαταθήκη, μίσθωσις έκούσια δὲ λέγεται, ὅτι ἡ άρχη τῶν συναλλαγμάτων τούτων έκούσιος. των δ' ακουσίων τα μέν λαθραΐα, οΐον κλοπη, μοιχεία, φαρμακεία, προαγωγεία, δυυλαπατία, δολοφονία, ψευδομαρτυρία, τὰ δὲ βίαια, οἷον αἰκία, δεσμὸς, θάνατος, άρπαγη, πήρωσις, κακηγορία, προπηλακισμός. c. 6, 1131, b, 27: τὸ μέν γὰρ διανεμητικόν δίκαιον των κοινών άει κατά την άναλογίαν

έστι την είρημένην και γάρ από χρημάτων κοινών έὰν γίγνηται ή διανομή, έσται κατά τον λόγον τον αὐτὸν ὅνπερ ἔχουσι πρὸς ἄλληλα τὰ είσενεχθέντα και το άδικον το αντικείμενον τω δικαίω τούτω παρά τὸ ἀνάλογόν ἐστιν. τὸ δ' ἐν τοῖs συναλλάγμασι δίκαιον ἐστὶ μὲν ἴσον τι, καὶ τὸ ἄδικον ἄνισον, ἀλλ' οὐ κατά την άναλογίαν ἐκείνην άλλά κατά την αριθμητικήν, οὐθέν γαρ διαφέρει, εί έπιεικης φαῦλον ἀπεστέρησεν ή φαῦλος ἐπιεική . . . άλλὰ πρὸς τοῦ βλάβους την διαφοράν μόνον βλέπει δ νόμος &c. PLATO (Gorg. 508, A) had opposed io6της γεωμετρική το πλεονεξία.

² After discussing, in the above passage, both distributive and corrective justice, Aristotle comes (c. 8) to the view that justice consists in retribution, tò $d\nu \tau \iota \pi \epsilon \pi o \nu \theta \delta s$ (on which see Ph. d.Gr. i. 360, 2). This he rejects as a valid definition of justice in general, since it is applicable neither to distributive nor even. strictly speaking, to punitive justice. Only κοινωνίαι άλλακτικαί rest upon το άντιπεπουθός, which, however, is here, not κατ' ἰσότητα. but κατ' ἀναλογίαν: τῷ ἀντιποιείν γάρ ἀνάλογον συμμένει ή πόλις (1132, b, 31 sqq.): it is not the same, but different, though equivalent things are exchanged for one another, the norm for each exchange being condemand, which is the source of all exchange; and the symbol which represents demand is money.¹ Now

tained in the formula: as are the goods of the one to those of the other, so must that which the former obtains be to that which the latter obtains. ix. 1 init. It is thus obvious that the previous assertion, that corrective justice proceeds according to arithmetical proportion, is inapplicable to this whole class of transactions. But it does not even apply to penal justice. Even here the proportion is geometrical: as A's act is to B's. so is the treatment which A receives to that which B receives. Only indemnification for injury determined according arithmetical proportion, and even here it is merely an analogy, as it is only an equivalent that is granted (it is an obvious defect in Aristotle's theory that it makes no distinction between indemnification and punishment, and here treats punishment, which certainly has other aims as well, merely as a loss inflicted upon the transgressor for the purpose of rectifying his unjust gain). When, however, TRENDELEN-BURG (ibid. 405 sqq.) distinguishes the justice in payment and repayment, upon the basis of which contracts are concluded, from corrective justice, and assigns it to distributive, so that the latter embraces the mutual justice of exchange as well as the distributive justice of the state, while corrective justice is confined to the action of the judge, either in inflicting penalties or in deciding cases of disputed ownership, he cannot

find much support for this view. From the passages quoted in the preceding note, it is obvious that by distributive justice, Aristotle means that which has to do with the distribution of Kowa, whether these are honour or other advantages; by corrective justice, on the other hand, so far as it relates to έκούσια συναλλάγματα, in the first instance, fair dealing in commercial life, and not the legal justice of litigation, as the expression έκούσια συναλλάγματα indicates, since it is a name given to them (c. 5) because they rest upon voluntary contract. Even in these there are redress and correction: the loss which, e.g., the seller suffers on the deliverance of his goods is compensated by the payment for the same, so that neither party loses or gains (c. 7, 1332, a, 18), and only when no agreement can be arrived at is the judge called in to undertake the settlement. They belong, therefore, not to διανεμητικόν, but to διορθωτικόν δίκαιον. On some other defects in Aristotle's theory of justice, among which the chief is his failure clearly to grasp the general conception of right, and to deduce a scientific scheme of natural rights, see HILDENBRAND, ibid. p. 293 sqq.

1 I bid. 1133, a, 19: πάντα συμβλητὰ δεῖ πως εἶναι, ὧν ἐστὶν ἀλλαγή · ἐφ' δ τὸ νόμισμ' ἐλήλυθε καὶ γίνεται πως μέσον · πάντα γὰρ μετρεῖ. . δεῖ ἄρα ἐνί τινι πάντα μετρεῖσθαι, ὥσπερ ἐλέχθη πρότερον. τοῦτο δ' ἐστὶ τῆ μὲν ἀληθείᾳ ἡ χρεία, ἡ πάντα συνέχει . . ο ῖον δ'

justice consists in right dealing with reference to these relations: injustice in the opposite. Justice requires that a man should not assign to himself greater profit or less loss, to the other party greater loss or less profit, than rightfully belongs to each: injustice consists in doing so. A just or an unjust man, again, may be defined as one whose will identifies itself with one or the other mode of action. These two, injustice in the act and in the agent, do not absolutely coincide. A man-may do injustice without acting unjustly, and one may act unjustly without therefore being unjust; and accordingly Aristotle makes a distinction between hurt, wrong, and injustice.

ύπάλλαγμα τῆς χρείας τὸ νόμισμα γέγονε κατὰ συνθήκην, whence the name νόμισμα, from νόμος. Cf. b, 10 sqq. ix. 1,1164, a, 1. See the further treatment of money, Polit. i. 9, 1257, a, 31 sqq.

1 See p. 170, n. 4, supra, and ibid. c. 9, 1134, a, 6. As justice thus consists in respect for the rights of others, it is called an αλλότριον ἀγαθὸν, c. 3, 1130, a, 3,

c. 10, 1134, b, 2.

 2 Eth. v. 10, 1135, a, 15: ὅντων δὲ τῶν δικαίων καὶ ἀδίκων τῶν εἰρημένων, ἀδικεῖ μὲν καὶ δικαιοπραγεῖ, ὅταν ἐκών τις αὐτὰ πράττη ταν δ' ἄκων, οὕτ' ἀδικεῖ οὕτε δικαιοπραγεῖ ἀλλ' ἢ κατὰ συμβεβηκός . . . ἀδίκημα δὲ καὶ δικαιοπράγημα ὥρισται τῷ ἑκουσίῳ καὶ ἀκουσίῳ ὥστ' ἔσται τι ἄδικον μὲν ἀδίκημα δὶ οὕπω ἐὰν μὴ τὸ ἑκούσιον προσῆ.

s C. 9 (see p. 170, n. 4, supra), the δίκαιος had been defined as πρακτικός κατὰ προαίρεσιν τοῦ δικαίου: c. 10 init. the ques-

tion is asked: ἐπεὶ δ' ἔστιν ὰδικουντα μήπω ἄδικον εἶναι, ὁ ποῖα ὰδικήματα ἀδικάν ήδη ἄδικός ἔστιν ἐκάστην ἀδικίαν, οἶον κλέπτης ἡ μοιχὸς ἡ ληστής; the reply is, that if one, e.g., commits adultery from passion, not διὰ προαιρέσεως ἀρχὴν, we must say: ἀδικεῖ μὲν οὖν, ἄδικος δ' οὖκ ἔστιν, οἶον οὖδὲ κλέπτης, ἔκλεψε δὲ, οὖδὲ μοιχὸς, ἐμοίχευσε δέ. Cf. following note, and p. 116, n. 3.

4 Ibid. 1135, b, 11, all actions are divided into voluntary and involuntary, and the former again into intentional and unintentional (see p. 116 sqq. supra): τριῶν δη οὐσῶν βλαβῶν τῶν ἐν ταῖς κοινωνίαις [in a passage which Aristotle has here, perhaps, in view, Lans, ix. 861, E, Plato had distinguished βλάβη from ἀδίκημα, cf. Ph. d. Gr. i. 719, 3 fm.] τὰ μὲν μετ' ἀγνοίας ἀμαρτήματα ἀστιν [or more accurately, l. 16, either ἀτυχήματα οτ ἀμαρτήματα, ἀμαρτάνει μὲν γὰρ ὅταν ἡ ἀρχὴ ἐν αὐτῷ ἢ τῆς αἰτίας,

In discussing the nature of justice we must further take account of the difference between complete and incomplete natural and legal right. Rights in the fullest sense exist only between those who are free and equal; hence the distinction between political and paternal, domestic or proprietary right. Political right, again, is divided into natural and legal right; the former of which is binding upon all men in like manner, while the latter rests on arbitrary statute, or refers to particular cases and relations; for however dissimilar

ἀτυχεῖ δ' ὅταν ἔξωθεν]... ὅταν δὲ εἰδῶς μὲν, μὴ προβουλεύσας δὲ, ἀδίκημα [wrong done in passion: e.g. anger]... ὅταν δ' ἐκ προαιρέσεως, ἄδικος καὶ μοχθηρός... ὁμοίως δὲ καὶ δίκαιος, ὅταν προελώμενος δικαιοπραγῆ δικαιοπραγεῖδὲ, ἀν μόνον ἐκῶν πράττη. But even involuntariness can only excuse ὅσα μὴ μόνον ἀγνοούντες ἀλλὰ καὶ δί' ἄγνοιαν ἀμαρτάνουσι, not wrong committed in thoughtlessness which is caused by culpable passion.

¹ C. 10, 1134, a, 25: τὸ ζητούμενόν έστι καὶ τὸ ἁπλῶς δίκαιον καί το πολιτικον δίκαιον. τοῦτο δέ έστιν έπλ κοινωνών βίου πρός το είναι αυτάρκειαν, έλευθέρων και ίσων ή κατ' ἀναλογίαν ή κατ' ἀριθμόν. Where these conditions are absent, we have not τὸ πολιτικὸν δ'καιον, άλλὰ τὶ δίκαιον [a particular kind of justice, as distinguished from τὸ ἀπλῶς δίκαιον] καὶ καθ' όμοιότητα. The former (b, 13) is always κατά νόμον καί έν οίς επεφύκει είναι νόμος · ούτοι δ' ήσαν έν οίς ύπαρχει ίσότης τοῦ άρχειν και άρχεσθαι.

² Ibid. 1134, b, 8: τὸ δὲ δεσποτικὸν δίκαιον καὶ τὸ πατρικὸν οὐ ταὐτὸν τούτοις ἀλλ' ὅμοιον · οὐ γὰρ ἐστιν ἀδικία πρὸς τὰ αὐτοῦ ἀπλῶς · τὸ δὲ κτῆμα καὶ τὸ τέκνον, ἕως ἀν ἢ πηλίκον καὶ μὴ χωρισθῆ, ὅσπερ μέρος αὐτοῦ . . . διὸ μᾶλλον πρὸς γυναῖκά ἐστι δίκαιον ἢ πρὸς τέκνα καὶ κτήματα · τοῦτο γάρ ἔστι τὸ οἰκονομικὸν δίκαιον · ἔτερον δὲ καὶ τοῦτο τοῦ πολιτικοῦ.

3 Ibid. 1134, b, 18: τοῦ δὲ πολιτικοῦ δικαίου το μέν φυσικόν έστι τὸ δὲ νομικόν, φυσικόν μὲν τὸ πανταχοῦ τὴν αὐτὴν ἔχον δύναμιν, καὶ οὐ τῷ δοκεῖν ἡ μἡ, νομικὸν δὲ δ έξ άρχης μέν οὐθέν διαφέρει οὕτως ή άλλως, όταν δὲ θῶνται διαφέρει . . ἔτι ὅσα ἐπὶ τῶν καθέκαστα νομοθετοῦσιν. Cf. c. 12, 1136, b, 33. Natural right is universal unwritten law [νόμος κοινδς άγραφος]; positive right [νόμος ίδιος], on the other hand, is described as written law (Rhet. i. 10, 1368, b, 7; cf. c. 14, 1375, a, 16, c. 15, 1375, a, 27, 1376, b, 23; Eth. viii. 15, 1162, b, 21): but even here there is a distinction between the written and the unwritten (or that part which belongs to custom and habit), Rhet. i. 13, 1373, b, 4; cf. Eth. x. 10, 1180, a. 35.

and changeable human laws and institutions may be, we cannot deny that there is a natural right, nor is the existence of a natural standard disproved by the possibility of divergence from it. Indeed, such natural right is the only means of supplementing the defects which, seeing that it is a mere general rule and cannot by its very nature take account of exceptions, attach even to the best law. When such an exception occurs it is necessary to sacrifice legal in order to save natural right. This rectification of positive by natural right constitutes Equity. Several other questions, which Aristotle takes occasion to discuss in the course of his researches into the nature of justice, we may here pass

1 Eth. v. 10, 1134, b, 24 sqq.; cf. Rhet. i. 13, 1373, b, 6 sqq., where Aristotle appeals for the φύσει κοινὸν δίκαιον to well-known verses in Sophocles and Empedocles, and to the universal agreement of men.

² Similarly PLATO, Ph. d. Gr.

i. 763, 1.

³ Eth. v. 14, especially 1137, b. 11: τὸ ἐπιεικès δίκαιον μέν ἐστιν, οὐ τὸ κατὰ νόμον δὲ, ἀλλ' ἐπανόρθωμα νομίμου δικαίου. And after proving the above, l. 24: διδ δίκαιον μέν ἐστι καὶ βέλτιον τοῦ τινός δικαίου [on which see p. 175, n. 1, supra], οὐ τοῦ ἀπλῶς δὲ [which here as Polit.iii. 6, 1279, a, 18, and Eth. v. 10, 1134, a, $25 = \phi \upsilon \sigma \iota \kappa \partial \nu$ δίκαιον] αλλά τοῦ διά τὸ ἄπλῶς [for which παρά το άπλ, might be conjectured: the words, however, may be explained by supplying after διά τὸ άπλῶs, not δίκαιον, but δρίσασθαι, or a similar αθτή ή φύσις ή τοῦ ἐπιεικοῦς, ἐπανόρθωμα νόμου η έλλείπει διά τὸ

καθόλου. The ἐπιεικὴs is therefore (l. 35) ὁ τῶν τοιούτων προαιρετικὸς καὶ πρακτικὸς, καὶ ὁ μὴ ἀκριβοδίκαιος &c., and ἐπιείκεια is δικαιοσύνη τις καὶ οὐχ ἑτέρα τις ἔξις.

4 Whether it is possible voluntarily to suffer injury and to do oneself an injury, and whether in an unequal distribution the distributor or the receiver commits the wrong. Aristotle deals with these questions, Eth. v. c. 11, 12 and 15. He is prevented from finding any satisfactory solution of them, partly by the limitation of injustice to πλεονεξία, partly by the failure which is connected with it clearly to distinguish between alienable rights, of which it is true volenti non fit injuria, and inalienable, and similarly between civil and penal wrongs. Doubts have been entertained as to the genuineness of one part of these discussions. Chap. 15 is connected with the discussion of justice in over, especially as he arrives at no definite conclusions with regard to them.

The discussion of the principal virtues serves to confirm the truth of the general definition of virtue previously given. In all of them the question is one of the preservation of the proper mean between two extremes of error. But how are we to discover the proper mean? Neither in the previous general discussion nor in his account of the individual virtues has Aristotle provided us with any reliable criterion of judgment upon this head. In the former, he refers us to insight as the guide to the discovery of the right; in the latter, it is the opposition between two vicious and one-sided extremes that reveals the proper mean. But when we ask what kind of conduct is vicious there

a manner which is certainly not Aristotle's. Spengel (Abh. d. Bair. Akad. philos.-philol. Kl. iii. 470) proposes therefore to transpose c. 10 and c. 14, but this does not get over the difficulty, as c. 13 would still disturb the connection between c. 12 and Fischer (De Eth. Nicom. &c. p. 13 sqq.) and FRITZSCHE (Ethica Eudemi, 117, 120 sqq.) regard c. 15 as a fragment from the fourth book of the Eudemian Ethics. Brandis, p. 1438 sq., leaves the choice open between these and other possible explanations (e.g. that it is a preliminary note to a larger discussion). The difficulties seem to disappear if we place c. 15, with the exception of the last sentence, between c. 12 and 13. It is not true that the question which it discusses has already been

settled: in c. 11 it was asked whether what one suffers voluntarily, here whether what one inflicts on oneself, is a wrong. This investigation is expressly said to be still in prospect at the beginning of c. 12, and while it is certainly not more, it is also not less satisfactory than the kindred investigations, c. 11 and 12. TRENDELENBURG declares himself, ibid. 423, satisfied with this transposition, in support of which he appeals to M. Mor. i. 34, 1196, a, 28, compared with Eth. N. v. 15, 1138, b, 8. On the other hand, RAMSAUER has not a word in allusion to the difficulty of the position of c. 15. In the text of c. 15 itself, however, the order is certainly defective; cf. RAM-SAUER, in loco, RASSOW, Forsch. über die nikom. Eth. 42, 77, 96 ¹ See p. 163, n. 2, supra.

is none to enlighten us but 'the man of insight,' no ultimate criterion but the notion which he may have formed of the proper mean. All moral judgment, and with i all moral insight, is thus conditioned by 'Insight.' If then, we would understand the true nature of mora virtue we must next face the question of the nature o Insight, and accordingly Aristotle devotes the sixth book of the *Ethics* to its discussion, illustrating it by comparison with kindred qualities, and explaining its practical import.\(^1\)

' It is usual to assign a more independent position to the sec-' tion upon the dianoëtic virtues. The Ethics is thought to be a general account of all the virtues which are partly moral and partly intellectual; the former are treated of B. ii.-v., the latter B. vi. But while Eudemus (according to Eth. Eud. ii. 1, 1220, a, 4-15) may have treated his subject in this way, Aristotle's intention seems to have been different. Ethics, according to Aristotle, is merely a part of Politics (see p. 135 sq.) from which Eudemus (i. 8, 1218, b, 13) is careful to distinguish it as a separate science. Its aim is not (see p. 181, n. 3, supra) γνωσις, but πράξις (Eth. Eud. i. 1, 1214, a, 10, represents it as 'not only knowledge, but also action'), and accordingly it requires experience and character to understand it (Eth. N. i. 1095, a, 2 sqq., see p. 161, n. 2, 3, supra). It would be inconsistent with this practical aim (an objection which, according to M. Mor. i. 35, 1197, b, 27, was already urged by the older Peripatetics, and wh 's is there

inadequately met), if the Ethic. were to deal with intellectua activity for its own sake, and without relation to human action in the sense in which vi. 7, 1141 a, 28 declares that Politics has nothing to do with it. treatment, moreover, in the sixth book, as it stands, if it professes to give a complete account of dianoëtic virtue, is very unsatisfactory. The highest modes of intellectual activity are precisely those which are disposed of most briefly. This, on the other hand, becomes perfectly intelligible if we suppose the true ain to be the investigation of φρόνη σιs, the other dianoëtic virtues being only mentioned here ir order to mark off the province of φρόνησιε from theirs and clearly to exhibit its peculiarities by the antithesis. Aristotle has to speal of φρόνησις, because, as he him self says, c. 1 (p. 163, 2, supra) he has defined moral virtue as conduct according to δρθός λόγος or as the pporimos would define it and because the discussion form: a necessary part of a complete account of moral virtue. Cf. or

as we have already seen, a two-fold activity of reason, the theoretic and the practical: that which deals with necessary truth, and that which deals with what is matter of choice.1 Inquiring further how reason, knowledge, wisdom, insight and art 2 are related to one another, he answers that knowledge deals with necessary truth, which is perceived by an indirect process of

this head also vi. 13 (p. 166, n. 1, supra), x. 8, 1178, a, 16: συνέζευκται δὲ καὶ ἡ φρόνησις τῆ τοῦ ήθους άρετη, και αυτη τη φρονήσει, είπερ αι μέν της φρονήσεως άρχαλ κατά τὰς ἡθικάς είσιν ἀρετὰς, τὸ δ' όρθον των ήθικων κατά την φρόνησιν.

See p. 113, n. 1, supra.

² Eth. vi. 3 init.: ἔστω δη οίs άληθεύει ή ψυχή τῷ καταφάναι ή αποφάναι πέντε τον αριθμόν ταῦτα δ' έστι πέχνη, ἐπιστήμη, φρόνησις [which we have to translate by 'insight' for lack of a better word], σοφία, νοῦς, ὑπολήψει γὰρ καὶ δόξη ἐνδέχεται διαψεύδεσθαι. Whether Aristotle intends to treat all five or only some of those virtues is, on our view of the aim of this discussion, not very important. At the same time we cannot agree with PRANTL (Ueber die dianoët. Tug. d. nikom. Eth. Münch. 1852) in regarding, σοφία and φρόνησις as the only dianoëtic virtues: the former, that of the λόγον έχον, so far as it has for its object $\tau \delta \mu \dot{\eta} \dot{\epsilon} \nu$ - $\delta \epsilon \chi \delta \mu \epsilon \nu o \nu \ \tilde{a} \lambda \lambda \omega s \ \tilde{\epsilon} \chi \epsilon \iota \nu$; the latter with the qualities which are subordinate to it (εὐβουλία, σύνεσις, γνώμη, δεινότης), in so far as it refers to τὸ ἐνδεχόμενον ἄλλως έχειν: of νοῦς, on the other hand, he says that as immediate it cannot be regarded as a virtue, of επιστήμη and τέχνη that they are not virtues, but that there is

an ἀρετή ἐπιστήμης, σοφία, and an άρετη τέχνης, likewise in the last instance σοφία. Aristotle certainly speaks of σοφία, c. 7, 1141. a, 12, as ἀρετή τέχνης, but only in the popular sense; as σοφία has to do only with the necessary, it cannot in this sense be ἀρετή τέχνης, whose sphere is τὸ ἐνδεχόμενον άλλως έχειν. But, apart from this inaccuracy, Prantl's view is untenable, for in the first place Aristotle expressly says, c. 2 init., that the dianoëtic virtues are the subject of the discussion that follows, and nowhere hints that there is any difference in this respect among the five which he enumerates c. 3, and in the second place Aristotle's definition of virtue applies to all If every praiseworthy quality is a virtue ($\hat{E}th$. i. 13 fin.: των δε εξεων τας επαινετας άρετας λέγομεν) έπιστήμη and τέχνη are undoubtedly έξεις ἐπαινεταί (as example of έξις, ἐπιστήμη is the one which is given in Categ. c. 8, 8, a, 29, 11, a, 24); if, on the other hand, we accept the definition of virtue elsewhere (Top. v. 3, 131, b, 1), δ τον έχοντα ποιεί σπουδαίον. this also is applicable to both. The same is true of vovs when conceived of, not as a special part of the soul, but as a special quality of that part, as it must be when clt ed along with επιστήμη,

thought—in other words, by inference; 'that necessary truth is also the object of reason $(vo\hat{v}s)$ in that narrower sense in which it means the power of grasping in an act of immediate cognition those highest and most universal truths which are the presuppositions of all knowledge; ²

&c.; c. 12 init., moreover, it is expressly described as a έξις, but if it is a έξις it must be a έξις έπαινετή: in other words, an ἀρετή.

1 Ibid. c. 3; cf. p. 243,

вирта. ² *Ibid.* c. 6, and frequently, v. p. 244, sqq. From reason this sense ขอบิร πρακτικός is distinguished. The difference, according to De An. iii. 10, Eth. vi. 2, 12 (p. 113, n. 2, cf. 118, n. 1, supra), is that the object of the practical reason is action, and therefore $\tau \delta$ $\epsilon \nu \delta \epsilon \chi$. $\delta \lambda \lambda \omega s \epsilon \chi \epsilon \nu$, whereas the theoretic reason is concerned with all δσων αί άρχαλ μη ενδέχονται άλλως έχειν. In his further treatment of the practical reason Aristotle is hardly consistent. In the passages cited, p. 113, n. 2, its function is described as βουλεύεσθαι or λογίζεσθαι, while it is itself called τὸ λογιστικόν; it is of less import (according to p. 106, n. 2, supra) that for νοῦς πρακτικός standalso διάνοια πρακτική, πρακτικόν και διανοητικόν. On the other hand we read, Eth. vi. 12, 1143, a, 35: καλ δ νοῦς τῶν ἐσχάτων ἐπ' ἀμφότερα. και γάρ τῶν πρώτων ὅρων καὶ τῶν ἐσχάτων νοῦς ἐστι καὶ οὐ λόγος, καὶ δ μέν κατά τάς ἀποδείξεις των ακινήτων δρων και πρώτων, δ δ' έν ταις πρακτικαις [sc. επιστήμαις, not ἀποδείξεσι, as the species πρακτικαλ άποδείξεις cannot stand as the antithesis to the genus ἀποδείξις; moreover, the former phrase in-

volves a self-contradiction, ἀπό- $\delta \epsilon i \xi i s$ according to p. 243 sq. being conclusion from necessary premises, whereas deliberation has to do with τὸ ἐνδεχ, ἄλλως έχειν) τοῦ ἐσχάτου καὶ ἐνδεχομέιου και της έτέρας προτάσεως, άρχαι γαρ του οδ ένεκα αδται έκ γαρ τῶν καθ' ἕκαστα τὸ καθόλου [the last clause, ἐκ γὰρ, &c., has hitherto baffled the commentators, and ought perhaps to be struck out]. τούτων οδν έχειν δεί αἴσθησιν, αὖτη δ' ἐστὶ νοῦς. According to this passage also there is, besides the reason which knows the unchangeable principles of demonstrations, second whose object is έσχατον, τὸ ἐνδεχόμενον, ἡ ἐτέρα πρότασις, and which, therefore, is described as an alognous of these (τούτων can only refer to these άρχαλ τοῦ οδ ἕνεκα). Βy ἔσχατον can only be meant the same as iii. 5, 1112, b, 23 (cf. vi. 9, 1142, a, 24 and p. 118, n. 3, supra) where it is said, τὸ ἔσχατον ἐν τῆ ἀναλύσει πρώτον είναι έν τη γενέσει, the primary condition (πρῶτον αίτιον, 1112, b, 19) for the attainment of a certain end, with the discovery of which deliberation ceases and action begins, as set forth, iii. 5, 1112, b, 11 sqq.; De An. iii. 10 (see p. 113, n. 2, supra). As it lies in our own power to make this condition actual or not, it is described as ενδεχόμενον. But it does not coincide in meanthat wisdom consists in the union of reason and know-

ing, as WALTER, Lehre v. d. prakt. Vern. 222, assumes, with the έτέρα πρότασις, 'the second premise.' The latter is the minor premise of the practical syllogism: in the example adduced, Eth. vi. 5 (see p. 110, n. 1, supra), 'παντός γλυκέος γεύεσθαι δεί, τουτί δε γλυκύ, &c., it is the clause 'this is sweet'; the ἔσχατον, on the other hand, which leads immediately to action is the conclusion (in the given case: τούτου γεύεσθαι δεί), which is called, De An. iii. 10 (see p. 113, n. 2, supra), Eth. vi. 8, 1141, b, 12, άρχη της πράξεως, πρακτον άγαθόν; as, then, τδ πρακτδν is described as τδ ἔσχατον, vi. 8, 1141, b. 27, c. 8, 1142, a, 24 also, and only this can be meant by $\tau \delta \in \mathcal{L}(X)$ in the passage before us, the minor premise ('this is sweet,' 'this is shameful') does not refer to a mere possibility but to an unalterable reality. It is certainly surprising to be told that both of these are not known by a Adyos. but by Nous, seeing that the minor premise of the practical syllogism is matter of perception, not of Nous, while the conclusion, τὸ ἔσχατον, being deduced from the premises, is matter, not of νοῦς, but of λόγος, not of immediate but of mediate knowledge. Nevertheless, although in many cases (as in the above. τουτί γλυκύ) the minor premise of the practical syllogism is a real perception, there are other cases in which it transcends mere perception: as, for instance, when the major premise is 'we must do what is just,' the minor 'this action is just.' In such cases we can only speak of alσθησιs in the

improper sense described p, 250, n. 1, supra (for another example, v. Eth. ii. 9, 1109, b. 20), and Aristotle himself remarks (r. p. 183, n. 4, infra) that what he here calls alσθησιs it would be better to call φρόνησις. But even the ἔσχατον, i.e. the πρακτὸν. must be object of alothous, as it is a particular, and all particulars are so (cf. p. 183, infra). What is more remarkable is that the passage before us places the function of the practical reason. not in βουλεύεσθαι (on which v. p. 182, n, 5, infra), but in the cognition of the έτέρα πρότασις and the ἔσχατον. It is wholly say, inadmissible to WALTER, ibid. 76 sqq., that it is speaking of the theoretic reason and not of the practical at all. It is impossible to understand the words δ μέν κατά τὰς ἀποδείξεις, &c., to mean that one and the same Nous knows both. we examine c. 2 of this book (see p. 113, n. 2, supra) where, consistently with other passages, 7à ένδεχ. άλλως έχειν are expressly assigned to the νους πρακτικός as the sphere of its action, while the θεωρητικόs is confined to the sphere of necessary truth, and if we consider how important a place the latter doctrine has in Aristotle's philosophy (cf. p. 197, n. 4, supra; Anal. Post. i. 33 init.: of the ἐνδεχ, ἄλλως ἔχειν there is neither an έπιστήμη nor a νοῦς). we must regard it as more than improbable that what in all other passages is in the distinctest terms denied of this reason is here expressly affirmed of it. Such an explanation is unnecessary: Aristotle says of φρόνησις,

ledge in the cognition of the highest and worthiest objects.¹ These three, therefore, constitute the purely theoretic side of reason. They are the processes by which we know the actual and its laws. What they deal with cannot be otherwise than as it is, and therefore cannot be matter of human effort. On the other hand, art and insight ² deal with human action: in the one case as it concerns production, in the other as it is conduct.³ Insight alone, therefore, of all the cognitive activities can be our guide in matters of conduct. It is not, however, the only element in the determination of conduct. The ultimate aims of action are determined, according to Aristotle,⁴ not by deliberation, but by the character of the will:⁵ or, as he would

the virtue of the practical reason, both that practical deliberation, and that the immediate knowledge of the $\xi\sigma\chi\alpha\tau\nu\nu$ and $\pi\rho\kappa\tau\dot{\nu}\nu$, is the sphere of its operation (see p. 182, n. 3, $inf\gamma\alpha$). He attributes, therefore, to it the knowledge both of the actual, which is the starting-point of deliberation, and of the purpose which is its goal.

1 C. 7, 1141, a, 16 (after rejecting the common and inaccurate use of the word σοφία): ὅστε δῆλον ὅτι ἡ ἀκριβεστάτη ἃν τῶν ἐπιστημῶν εἰη ἡ σοφία. δεῖ ἄρα τὰν σοφόν μὴ μόνον τὰ ἐκ τῶν ἀρχῶν εἰδέναι, ἀλλὰ καὶ περὶ τὰς ἀρχὰς ἀληθεύειν. ὥστ' εἰη ἃν ἡ σοφία νοῦς καὶ ἐπιστήμη, ὥσπερ κεφαλὴν ἔχουσα ἐπιστήμη τῶν τιμιωτάτων. Cf. p. 290, u. 2, κυρτα.

² It would be preposterous, Aristotle continues, c. 7, 1141, a, 20, to regard φρόνησε and πολιτική as the highest knowledge; in that case we should

have to regard man as the noblest of all beings. The former is concerned with what is best for man: on the other hand $\hat{\sigma}$ σοφία ἐστὶ καὶ ἐπιστήμη καὶ νοῦς τῶν τιμιωτάτων τῆ φύσει. c. 8 init.: ἡ δὲ φρόνησις περὶ τὰ ἀνθρώπινα καὶ περὶ ῶν ἔστι βουλεύσασθαι τοῦ γὰρ φρονίμου μάλιστα τοῦτ' ἔργον εἶναί φαμεν, τὸ εῷ βουλεύεσθαι, βουλεύεται δ' οὐθεὶς περὶ τῶν ἀδυνάτων ἄλλως ἔχειν, οὐδ' ὅσων μὴ τέλος τί ἐστι καὶ τοῦτο πρακτὸν ἀγαθόν. See also p. 183, n. 2, supra.

³ See p. 107, n. 2, supra.

⁴ As was rightly pointed out by Walter, Lehre v. d. prakt. Vern. 44, 78, and Hartenstein in opposition to Trendelenburg (Hist. Beitr. ii. 378), and the earlier view of the present treatise.

 5 Eth. iii. 5, 1112, b, 11: βουλευόμεθα δὲ οὐ περὶ τῶν τελῶν ἀλλὰ περὶ τῶν πρὸς τὰ τέλη. So the physician, the orator, the

explain it, while all aim at happiness,¹ it depends upon the moral character of each individual wherein he seeks it. Practical deliberation is the only sphere of the exercise of insight;² and since this has to do, not with universal propositions, but with their application to given cases, knowledge of the particular is more indispensable to it than knowledge of the universal.³ It is this application to practical aims and to particular given cases that distinguishes insight both from science and from theoretic reason.⁴ On the other hand, it is

legislator: θέμενοι τέλος τι πῶς και διὰ τίνων ἔσται σκοποῦσι. νὶ. 13, 1144, α, 8: τὸ ἔργον ἀποτελεῖται κατὰ τὴν φρόνησιν καὶ τὴν ἡθικὴν ἀρετὴν· ἡ μὲν γὰρ ἀρετὴ τὸν σκοπὸν ποιεῖ ὀρθὸν, ἡ δὲ φρόνησις τὰ πρὸς τοῦτον. L. 20: τὴν μὲν οὖν προαίρεσιν ὀρθὴν ποιεῖ ἡ ἀρετὴ, τὸ δ' ὅσα ἐκείνης ἔνεκα πέφυκε πράττεσαι οὐκ ἔστι τῆς ἀρετῆς ἀλλ' ἐτέρας δυνάμεως. See further, p. 186, n. 5, ἐnfra.

¹ See p. 139, n. 1, supra.
² C. 8 init.; see p. 118, n. 3,

upra.

3 Eth. vi. 8, 1141, b, 14 (with reference to the words quoted n. 2 preced. p.): οὐδ' ἐστίν ἡ φρόνησις τῶν καθόλου μόνον, ἀλλὰ δεῖ καὶ τὰ καθέκαστα γνωρίζειν · πρακτική γάρ, ή δὲ πράξις περί τὰ καθέκαστα, And accordingly (as is remarked also Metaph. i. 881, a, 12 sqq.) experience without knowledge (i.e. without apprehension of the universal) is as a rule of greater practical use than knowledge without experience. ή δε φρόνησις πρακτική δοτε δεί άμφω έχειν ή ταύτην [the apprehension of the particular μαλλον. For the same reason young people lack φρόνησις

(c. 9, 1142, a, 11), being without experience.

⁴ Eth. vi. 9, 1142, a, 23: δτι δ' ή Φρόνησις οὐκ ἐπιστήμη, φανερόν ' τοῦ γὰρ ἐσχάτου ἐστίν, ὥσπερ εἴρηται· [in the passage quoted, p. 182, n. 2, sup., where it was shown to be concerned with the πρακτόν αγαθόν; cf. c. 8, 1141, h, 27: τδ γάρ ψήφισμα πρακτόν ώς έσχατον] το γὰρ πρακτον τοιοῦτον [sc. ἔσχατον]. ἀντίκειται μèν δη τῷ νῷ δ μέν γὰρ νοῦς τῶν βρων, ὧν οὐκ ἔστι λόγος, ή δὲ τοῦ ἐσχάτου, οδ οὐκ ἔστιν ἐπιστήμη, ἀλλ αἴσθησις, οὐχ ή τῶν ἰδίων, ἀλλ' οἵα αἰσθανόμεθα ότι τὸ ἐν τοῖς μαθηματικοῖς ἔσγατον τρίγαιον στήσεται γάρ κάκεῖ. άλλ' αύτη μαλλον αΐσθησις ή φρόνησις, εκείνης δ' άλλο είδος. This passage has been discussed in recent times by TRENDELEN-BURG (Hist. Beitr. ii. 380 sq.), TEICHMÜLLER (Arist. Forsch. i. 253-262), and more exhaustively by WALTER (Lehr. v. d. prakt. Vern. 361-433). The best view of Aristotle's meaning and the grounds on which rests be shortly stated follows: Φρόνησις is here distinguished from ἐπιστήμη by marks

seen in both these respects to be a manifestation of practical reason, the essential characteristics of which it

which are already familiar to us. When it is further opposed to Nous, which is described as concerned with indemonstrable principles, we can obviously understand by Nous in this sense only the theoretic, not that reason which Aristotle calls practical and distinguishes from the former as a different faculty of the soul on no other ground than that it (like φρόνησις, according to the passage before us) has to do with the $\pi \rho \alpha \kappa \tau \delta \nu$, the $\epsilon \nu \delta \epsilon \chi \delta \mu \epsilon \nu o \nu$, the ἔσχατον (see p. 180, n. 2, supra). Finally, it cannot surprise us that the ἔσχατον, with which insight is concerned, is said to be the object not of επιστήμη but of alσθησις. For this έσγατον. which is found in the conclusion of the practical syllogism, is that in the fulfilment of which action consists, and is always therefore a definite and particular result; the ἔσχατον is the source of the resolution to undertake this journey, to assist this one who is in need, &c. (cf. p. 180, But the particular is not the object of scientific knowledge but of perception; cf. p. 163 sq. While this is so. we have to deal in the conclusion of the practical syllogism (often also, as was shown, p. 180 sq., in its minor premise), not only with the apprehension of an actual fact, but at the same time with its subsumption under a universal concept (as in the conclusion: 'I wish a good teacher -Socrates is a good teacher-Socrates must be my teacher'); accordingly, not with a simple perception but with a perceptive judgment. The αἴσθησις, therefore, which is concerned with the ἔσχατον of practical deliberation is not αἴσθησις τῶν ἰδίων, i.e. the apprehension of the sensible qualities of objects which are present to particular senses (as was shown, p. 69 sq. sup., this is always accompanied by particular sensations), but an αἴσθησις of another kind. What that kind is is not expressly said, but merely indicated by an example: it is like that which informs us δτι τδ έν τοῖς μαθηματικοῖς ἔσχατον τρίγωνον, that in the analysis of a figure the last term which resists all analysis is a triangle. (For only so can the words be understood, as is almost universally recognised; RAMSAUER'S explanation, which takes the general proposition to mean primam vel simplicissimam omnium figuram esse triangulum, is contradicted by the circumstance noted by himself that such a proposition is not known by alσθησις.) In other words. this alothous involves a judgment upon the quality of its object. But such propositions as 'this must be done' differ even from the given instance, 'this is a triangle,' in that they refer to something in the picture and not merely to something present to the senses. They are therefore still further removed from perception in the proper sense than it is. Hence he adds: they are more of the nature of φρόνησις; it is more akin to alσθησις. The passage, therefore, gives good sense, and there is no reason to reject the so perfectly reproduces that we have no difficulty in recognising in it 'the virtue of practical reason'—in other words, practical reason educated to a virtue.¹ Its object is on the one hand the individual and his good, on the other the commonwealth: in the former case it is Insight in the narrower sense, in the latter Politics, which again is further divided into Œconomics, and the sciences of Legislation and Government.² In the sure discovery of the proper means to the ends indicated by Insight consists Prudence;³ in right judgment on the matters with which practical Insight has to deal, Understanding;⁴ in so far as a man judges equitably on these

words from ὅτι τὸ ἐν τοῖς μαθ. to the end, in which case we should have to suppose that the actual conclusion of the chapter has been lost.

Aristotle does not, indeed, expressly say so, but he attributes to νοῦς πρακτικός (see p. 180, n. 2) precisely those activities in which φρόνησιs expresses itself, viz. βουλεύεσθαι and occupation with the ἐνδεχόμενον, the πρακτόν ἀγαθόν, the έσχατον, and remarks of both that they are concerned with matters of alognous, not of knowledge (p. 183, n. 4, supra). These statements are consistent only on the supposition that they refer to one and the same subject, and that insight is merely the right state of the practical reason. PRANTL'S view (ibid. p. 15), that it is the virtue of τδ δοξαστικών, is refuted even by the passage which he quotes on its behalf, c. 10, 1142, b, 8 sqq., not to speak of c. 3, 1139, b, 15 sqq. ² C. 8 sq. 1141, b, 23-1142,

a. 10: cf. p. 136.

³ Εὐβουλία, ibid. c. 10; cf. p. 118, n. 3, supra. According to this account of it, εὐβουλία must not be confounded with knowledge into which inquiry and deliberation do not enter as elements, nor with εὐστοχία and άγχίνοια, which discover what is right without much deliberation, nor with δόξα, which also is not an inquiry; but it is a definite quality of the understanding (διάνοια, see p. 106, n. 2), viz. δοθότης βουλής ή κατά το ωφέλιμον, και οδ δεί και ως και ότε. And we must further here distinguish between τὸ ἀπλῶς εὖ βεβουλεῦσθαι and τὸ πρός τι τέλος εὖ βεβουλεῦσθαι. Only the former deserves unconditionally to be called εὐβουλία, which is therefore defined as ὀρθότης ή κατὰ τὸ συμφέρον πρός τι τέλος, οδ ή φρόνησις άληθης ύπόληψίς ἐστιν.

⁴ Σύνεσις, ibid. c. 11. Its relation to φρόνησις is described 1143, a, 6: περὶ τὰ αὐτὰ μὲν τῆ φρονήσει ἐστὶν, οὐκ ἔστι δὲ ταὐτὸν matters towards others, we call him Right-minded.¹ Just, therefore, as all perfection of theoretic reason is included in Wisdom, so all the virtues of the practical reason are traced back to Insight.² The natural basis of insight is the intellectual acuteness which enables us to find and apply the proper means to a given end.³ If this is turned to good ends it becomes a virtue, in the opposite case a vice; so that the root from which spring the insight of the virtuous man and the cunning of the knave is one and the same.⁴ The character of our ends, however, depends in the first instance upon our will, and the character of our will upon our virtue; and in that sense insight may be said to be conditioned by virtue.⁵

σύνεσις καὶ φρόνησις ἡ μὲν γὰρ φρόνησις ἐπιτακτική ἐστιν τί γὰρ δεῖ πράττειν ἡ μὴ, τὸ τέλος αὐτῆς ἐστίν ἡ δὲ σύνεσις κριτική μόνον. It consists ἐν τῷ χρῆσθαι τῆ δόξη ἐπὶ τὸ κρίνειν περὶ τούτων περὶ ἀν ἡ φρόνησίς ἐστιν, ἄλλου λέγοντος, καὶ κρίνειν καλῶς.

Γνώμη, καθ ἡν εὐγνώμονας καὶ ἔχειν φαμὲν γνώμην, is according to c. 11, 1143, a, 19 sqq. ή τοῦ ἐπιεικοῦς κρίσις ὁρθὴ, similarly συγγνώμη = γνώμη κριτικὴ τοῦ ἐπιεκοῦς ὀρθή. All right conduct towards others, however, has to do with equity (c. 12, 1143, a, 31).

² Aristotle accordingly concludes the discussion of the dianoëtic virtues with the words: τι μèν οδν ἐστιν ἡ φρόνησις καὶ ἡ σοφία..., εἴρηται, so that he himself appears to regard these as representative of the two chief classes of the dianoëtic virtues. There is this difference, moreover, between them and most of the others (c. 12, 1143, b, 6 sq. c. 9.

1142, a, 11 sqq.) that while νοῦς, σύνεσις and γνώμη are to a certain extent natural gifts, σοφία and φούνησις are not.

3 Ibid. c. 13, 1144, a, 23: ἔστι δή τις δύναμις ήν καλούσι δεινότητα. αυτη δ' ἐστὶ τοιαύτη ὤστε τὰ πρὸς τὸν ὑποτεθέντα σκοπὸν συντείνοντα δύνασθαι ταῦτα πράττειν καὶ τυγχάνειν αὐτῶν.

1 Ibid. 1. 26: ἃν μὲν οὖν ὁ σκοπὸς ἢ καλὸς, ἐπαινετή ἐστιν, ἃν δὲ φαῦλος, πανοθργία. VII. 11, 1152, α, 11: διὰ τὸ τὴν δεινότητα διαφέρειν τῆς φρονήσεως τὸν εἰρημ-ένον τρόπον . καὶ κατὰ μὲν τὸν λόγον ἐγγὸς εἶναι, διαφέρειν δὲ κατὰ τὴν προαίρεσιν. See above. Plato had already remarked (Rep. vi. 491 €) that the same natural gift which rightly guided produces great virtue, under wrong guidance is the source of great vice.

5 Eth. vi. 13, 1144,a, 8, 20 (see p. 182, n. 5, sup). Ibid. 1. 28 (after the words quoted n. 3, 4): ἔστι δ' ἡ φρόνησις οὐχ ἡ δεινότης, ἀλλ' οὐκ ἄνευ τῆς δυνάμεως ταύτης. ἡ

But, conversely, virtue may also be said to be conditioned by insight; 1 for just as virtue directs the will to good objects, insight teaches it the proper means to employ in the pursuit of them.2 Moral virtue, therefore, and insight reciprocally condition one another: the former gives the will a bent in the direction of the good, while the latter tells us what actions are good.3 The circle in which we seem here to be involved is not really resolved by saying 4 that virtue and insight come into existence and grow up together by a gradual process of habituation; that every single virtuous action presupposes insight, every instance of true practical insight virtue; 5 but that if we are in search of the primal germ from which both of these are evolved, we must look for it in education, by which the insight of the older generation produces the virtue of the younger. This solution might suffice if we were dealing merely with the moral development of individuals,

vi. 13, 1145, a, 4: οὺκ ἔσται ἡ προαίρεσις ὀρθὴ ἄνευ φρονήσεως οὺδ' ἄνευ ἀρετῆς· ἡ μὲν γὰρ τὸ τέλος, ἡ δὲ τὰ πρὸς τὸ τέλος ποιεῖ πράττειν.

δ' έξις [which here, as p. 153, n. 3, κυρτα, indicates a permanent quality] τῷ ὅμματι τούτῳ γίνεται τῆς ψυχῆς [insight is compared to the eye also] οὐκ ἄνευ ἀρεῆςς... διαστρέφει γὰρ ἡ μοχθηρία καὶ διαψεύδεσθαι ποιεῖ περὶ τὰς πρακτικὰς ἀρχάς. ὅστε φανερὸν ὅτι ἀδύνατον φρόνιμον εἶναι μὴ ὅντα ἀγαθόν. Cf. c. 5, 1140, b, 17: τῷ δὲ διεφθαρμένῳ δι' ἡδονὴν καὶ λύπην εὐθὺς οὐ φαίνεται ἡ ἀρχὴ, οὐδὲ [sc. φαίνεται αὐτῷ] δεῖν τούτου ἐνεκεν καὶ διὰ τοῦθ' αἰρεῖσθαι πάντα καὶ πράττειν. VII. 9, 1151, a, 14 sqq.

¹ Eth. vi. 13, 1144, b, 1-32. Cf. preceding note and p. 156, n. 3, supra.

² See p. 182, n. 5, supra. Eth.

^{3 1144,} h, 30: δήλον οδν ἐκ τῶν εἰρημένων ὅτι οὐχ οῖόν τε ἀγαθὸν εἶναι κυρίως ἄνευ φρονήσεως οὐδὲ φρόνιμον ἄνευ τῆς ἡθικῆς ἀρετῆς. Χ. 8; see p. 178, n. 1 fin. κυντα.

⁴ TRENDELENBURG, Histor. Beitr. ii. 385 sq.

⁵ TRENDELÊNBURG refers on this point to M. Mor. ii. 3, 1200, a, 8; οὔτε γὰρ ἄνευ τῆς φρονήσεως αἱ ἄλλαι ἀρεταὶ γίνοντα:, οὔθ' ἡ φρόνησις τελεία ἄνευ τῶν ἄλλων ἀρετῶν, ἀλλὰ συνεργοῦσί πως μετ' ἀλλλων.

and with the question whether in time virtue here precedes insight or vice versa. But the chief difficulty lies in the fact that they condition one another absolutely. Virtue consists in preserving the proper mean, which can only be determined by 'the man of insight.' But, if this be so, insight cannot be limited to the mere discovery of means for the attainment of moral ends: the determination of the true ends themselves is impossible without it; while, on the other hand, prudence merits the name of insight only when it is consecrated to the accomplishment of moral ends.

As insight is the limit of moral virtue in one direction, those activities which spring, not from the will, but from natural impulse (without, however, on that account being wholly withdrawn from the control of the will) stand at the other extreme. To this class belong the passions. After the discussion, therefore, of insight, follows a section of the Ethics which treats of the right and wrong attitude towards the passions. calls the former temperance, the latter intemperance distinguishing them from the moral qualities of selfcontrol $(\sigma\omega\phi\rho\sigma\sigma\dot{\nu}\nu\eta)$ and licentiousness,² by pointing out that while in the case of the latter the control or tyranny of the desires rests upon a bent of the will founded on principle, in the case of the former it rests merely upon the strength or weakness of the will. For if all morality centres in the relation of reason to desire, and is concerned with pleasure and pain; 3 if further there is in this respect always a wrong as opposed to

¹ Cf. p. 163.

² P. 167 n. 6, supra.

³ See p. 156 sq. supra.

the right, a bad as opposed to the good—still this opposition may be of three different degrees and kinds. we suppose on the one hand a perfected virtue, free alike from all weakness and vice, and on the other a total absence of conscience, we have in the former case a divine and heroic perfection which hardly exists among men, in the latter a state of brutal insensibility which is equally rare.1 If the character of the will, without being so completely and immutably good or bad as in the cases just supposed, yet exhibits in fact either of these qualities, we have moral virtue or vice.2 Finally, if we allow ourselves to be carried away by passion, without actually willing the evil, this is defined as intemperance or effeminacy; if we resist the seductions of passion, it is temperance or constancy. Temperance and intemperance have to do with the same object as self-control and licentiousness—namely, bodily pain and pleasure. The difference lies in this, that while in the case of the former wrong conduct springs only from passion, in the case of the latter it springs from the character of the will. If in the pursuit of bodily pleasure or in the avoidance of bodily pain, a man transgresses the proper limit from weakness and not from an evil will.

Aristotle speaks further c. 6, 114, 8, b, 19, 1149, a, 20, c. 7, 1149, b, 27 sqq. Among bestial desires he reckons ἀφροδίσια τοῖς ἄρρεσι, by which, however, as the context shows, he means only passive not active παιδεραστία.

² See preceding note and the remarks which follow upon the relation of σωφροσύνη and ἀκολασία to ἐγκράτεια and ἀκρασία, besides p. 160 sq.

¹ Eth. vii. 8 init.: τῶν περὶ τὰ ἤθη φευκτῶν τρία ἐστὶν εἴδη, κακία ἀκρασία θηριότης. τὰ δ' ἐναντία τοῖς μὲν δυσὶ δῆλα· τὸ μὲν γὰρ ἀρετὴν τὸ δ' ἐγκράπεὶαν καλοῦμεν· πρὸς δὲ τὴν θηριότητα μάλιστ' ἄν ἀρμόττοι λέγειν τὴν ὑπὲρ ἡμᾶς ἀρετὴν, ἡρωϊκήν τινα καὶ θείαν . . . καὶ γὰρ ἄσπερ οὐδὲ θηρίου ἐστὶ κακία οὐδ' ἀρετὴ, οὕτως οὐδὲ θεοῦ, ἀλλ' ἡ μὲν τιμιώτερον ἀρετῆς, ἡ δ' ἔτερόν τι γένος κακίας, &c. Οἱ θηριότης

in the former case he is intemperate, in the latter effeminate; if he preserves the proper limit, he is temperate or constant.¹ The latter type of man still differs from

1 Ibid. c. 6: ὅτι μὲν οὖν περὶ ήδονας και λύπας είσιν οί τ' έγκρατείς καλ καρτερικολ καλ οἱ ἀκρατεῖς καλ μαλακοί, φανερόν. More accurately. these qualities, like σωφροσύνη and άκολασία, refer to bodily pain and pleasure; only in an improper sense can we speak of χρημάτων άκρατεῖς καὶ κέρδους καὶ τιμῆς καὶ θυμοῦ, τῶν δὲ περί τὰς σωματικάς ἀπολαύσεις, περί åς λέγομεν τον σώφρονα καὶ ἀκόλαστον, ὁ μὴ τῷ προαιρείσθαι των ήδονων διώκων τας ύπερβολάς και των λυπηρών Φεύγων . . . άλλὰ παρὰ προαίρεσιν καὶ τὴν διάνοιαν, ακρατής λέγεται, οὐ κατά πρόσθεσιν, καθάπερ δργης, άλλ' άπλως μόνον. Μαλακία refers to the same objects. The akparns, therefore, and the $\dot{\alpha}\kappa\delta\lambda\alpha\sigma\tau\sigma\sigma$, the $\dot{\epsilon}\gamma\kappa\rho\alpha\tau\dot{\gamma}\sigma$ and the σώφρων, είσι μέν περί ταὐτὰ, ἀλλ' οὐχ ὡσαύτως εἰσίν. άλλ' οἱ μέν προαιροῦνται οἱ δ' οὁ προαιρούνται, διό μαλλον ακόλαστον αν είποιμεν, δστις μη ἐπιθυμῶν ή ηρέμα διώκει τας ύπερβολάς καί φεύγει μετρίας λύπας, ή τοῦτον βστις διά τὸ ἐπιθυμεῖν σφόδρα. C. 8 init.: in reference to the said objects, ἔστι μὲν οῦτως ἔχειν ωστε ήττασθαι καὶ ὧν οἱ πολλοὶ κρείττους, έστι δὲ κρατεῖν καὶ ὧν οί πολλοί ήττους τούτων δ' δ μέν περί ήδονας ακρατής δ δ' έγκρατής. δ δὲ περί λύπας μαλακὸς ὁ δὲ καρτερικός . . . δ μέν τας ύπερβολας διώκων των ήδέων ή καθ' ύπερβολάς ή διά προαίρεσιν, δι' αύτας και μηδέν δι' έτερον αποβαίνον. άκόλαστος . . . δ δ' έλκείπων δ αντικείμενος, δ δε μέσος σώφρων. δμίοως δε και δ φεύγων τάς σωματικάς λύπας μη δι' ήτταν άλλα δια προαίρεσιν. The μαλακός, on the

other hand (who is defined 1150, b. 1 as έλλείπων ποδς & οί πολλοί καί αντιτείνουσι καὶ δύνανται), avoids undesignedly. ἀντίκειται δε τῷ μεν ἀκρατεῖ ὁ ἐγκρατὴς, τῷ δὲ μαλακώ δ καρτερικός. c. 9. 1151. a. 11: the ακόλαστος desires immoderate bodily enjoyments on principle (διὰ τὸ πεπείσθαι), this desire having its roots in his moral character as a whole (διά τὸ τοιοῦτος είναι οίος διώκειν αὐτάς) . . . ἔστι δέ τις διὰ πάθος ἐκστατικός παρά του όρθου λόγου, ου ώστε μέν μη πράττειν κατά τον δρθον λόγον κρατεί τὸ πάθος, ώστε δ' είναι τοιούτον οίον πεπείσθαι διώκειν άνέδην δείν τὰς τοιαύτας ήδονὰς οὐ κρατεί οδτός έστιν δ ακρατής βελτίων τοῦ ἀκολάστου, οὐδὲ φαῦλος άπλῶς σώζεται γὰρ τὸ βέλτιστον, ή ἀρχή. ἄλλος δ' ἐναντίος, ὁ ἐμμενετικός καλ οὐκ ἐκστατικὸς διά γε τὸ wáθos (and so, previously, c. 4. 1146, b, 22). C. 11, 1152, a, 15: the intemperate man acts indeed έκων, πονηρός δ' ού ή γαρ προαίρεσις έπιεικής· ώσθ' ήμιπόνηρος. resembles a state which has good laws but which does not observe them; the movnods one in which the laws are observed, but are bad. He differs, therefore, from the ἀκόλαστος in that he feels remorse for his actions (cf. Eth. iii. 2, p. 590 mid. above) and is therefore not so incurable as the latter. Accordingly, Aristotle compares excess with epilepsy, ακολασία with dropsy and consumption (c. 8, 1150, a, 21, c. 9 init.). Two kinds of intemperance are further distinguished, ασθένεια and προπέτεια.

ETHICS • 191

the man who is virtuous in the proper sense $(\sigma \dot{\omega} \phi \rho \omega \nu)$, in that he is still struggling with evil desires, from which the other is free. The general question of how and how far it is possible to act from intemperance, and to let our better knowledge be overpowered by desire, has been already discussed.

3. Friendship

Upon the account of all that relates to the virtue of the individual, there follows, as already mentioned, a treatise upon Friendship. So morally beautiful is the conception of this relationship which we find here unfolded, so deep the feeling of its indispensableness, so pure and disinterested the character assigned to it, so kindly the disposition that is indicated, so profuse the wealth of refined and happy thoughts, that Aristotle could have left us no more splendid memorial of his own heart and character. Aristotle justifies himself for admitting a discussion upon Friendship into the Ethics partly by the remark that it also belongs to the account of virtue, but the sum of the ground of the

which is deliberately pursued and that which, springing from violence of temper, is thoughtlessly pursued; of these the latter is described as more curable (c. 8, 1150, b. 19 sqq. c. 11, 1152, a, 18, 27). The inconstancy of the intemperate man finds its opposite extreme in the headstrong and self-willed man (iσχυρογυάμων, iδιογυάμων, c. 10, 1151, b, 4). The excesses of anger are less to be blamed than those of intemperance (c. 7, c. 8, 1150, a, 25 sqq.; cf. v. 10, 1135, b, 20-29 and p. 113, n. 1); still more

excusable are exaggerations of noble impulses (c. 6, 1148, a, 22 sqq.). On anger, fear, compassion, envy, &c. see also *Rhet*. ii. 2, 5-11.

C. 11, 1151, b, 34: ὅ τε γὰρ ἐγκρατὴς οἶος μηδὲν παρὰ τὸν λόγον διὰ τὰς σωματικὰς ἡδονὰς ποιεῖν καὶ ὁ σώφρων, ἀλλ' ὁ μὲν ἔχων ὁ δ' οἰος ἔχων φαύλας ἐπιθυμίας, παὶ ὁ μὲν τοιοῦτος οἶος μὴ ἡδεσθαι παρὰ τὸν λόγον, ὁ δ' οἶος ἡδεσθαι ἀλλὰ μὴ ἄγεσθαι.

P. 155 (Eth. vii. 5.)
 ξστι γὰρ ἀρετή τις ἡ μετ' ἀρετῆς: viii. 1 init.

significance it has for human life. Everyone requires friends: 1 the happy man, that he may keep his happiness and enjoy it by sharing it with others; 2 the afflicted, for comfort and support; youth, for advice; manhood, for united action; old age, for assistance. Friendship is a law of nature: it unites parents and children by a natural bond, citizen with citizen. man with man.3 What justice demands is supplied in the highest degree by friendship, for it produces a unanimity in which there no longer occurs any violation of mutual rights.4 It is, therefore, not only outwardly but morally necessary.⁵ The social impulses of man find in it their most immediate expression and satisfaction; and just for this reason it constitutes in Aristotle's view an essential part of Ethics. For as Ethics is conceived by him in general as Politics, and the moral life as life in society,6 so no account of moral activity can be to him complete which does not represent it as

¹ For what follows see *Eth.* viii. 1, 1155, a, 4-16.

² Ibid. άνευ γὰρ φίλων οὐδεὶς ἔλοιτ' ἀν ζῆν, ἔχων τὰ λοιπὰ ἀγαθὰ πάντα . τί γὰρ ὅφελος τῆς τοιαύτης εὐετηρίας ἀφαιρεθείσης εὐεργεσίας, ἡ γίγνεται μάλιστα καὶ ἐπαινετωτάτη πρὸς φίλους.

8 Ibid. c. 16-26, where inter alia: ίδοι δ' άν τις καὶ ἐν ταῖς πλάναις [wanderings] ὡς οἰκεῖον ἄπας ἀνθρωπος ἀνθρώπως καὶ φίλον. Cf. ἰχ. 9, 1169, b, 17: ἄτοπον δ' ἴσως καὶ τὸ μονώτην ποιεῖν τὸν μακάριον οὐθεὶς γὰρ ἔλοιτ' ὰν καθ' αὐτὸν τὰ πάντ' ἔχειν ἀγαθά πολιτικὸν γὰρ ὁ ἄνθρωπος καὶ συζῆν πεφυκός. On this see further infra.

4 Ibid. l. 24 sqq.; hence, φίλων μὲν ὅντων οὐδὲν δεῖ δικαιοσύνης, δίκαιοι δ' ὅντες προσδέονται φιλίας, καὶ τῶν δικαίων τὸ μάλιστα φιλικὸν εἶναι δοκεῖ [the highest justice is the justice of friends].

5 I.. 28 ; οὖ μόνον δ' ὰναγκαῖόν ἔστιν ἀλλὰ καὶ καλόν.

⁶ See on this line p. 186, n. 1. Eth. x. 7, 1177, a, 30: δ μεν δικαιος δείται προς οὐς δικαιοπραγήσει καὶ μεθ΄ ὧν, δμοίως δὲ καὶ δ σώφρων καὶ δ ἀνδρεῖος καὶ τῶν ἄλλων ἕκαστος, only theoretic virtue is self-sufficient; c. 8, 1178, b, 5: ħ δ' ἄνθρωπός ἐστι καὶ πλείοσι συζῆ αἰρεῖται τὰ κατ' ἀρετὴν πράττειν. Cf. p. 144, 11. 1, supra.

socially constructive. The examination, therefore, of Friendship, while completing the study of Ethics, constitutes at the same time the link which unites it with the doctrine of the State.¹

By friendship Aristotle understands in general every relationship of mutual good will of which both parties are conscious.2 This relationship, however, will assume a different character according to the nature of the basis upon which it rests. The objects of our attachment are in general three: the good, the pleasurable, and the useful; 3 and in our friends it will be sometimes one of these, sometimes another, which We seek their friendship either on attracts us. account of the advantages which we expect from them. or on account of the pleasure which they give us, or on account of the good that we find in them. A true friendship, however, can be based only upon the last of these three motives. He who loves his friend only for the sake of the profit or the pleasure which he obtains from him, does not truly love him, but only his own advantage and enjoyment; with these accordingly his friendship changes.4 True friendship exists

Aristotle inserts, however, two sections upon pleasure and happiness between them, in the tenth book—thus connecting the end of the *Ethios* with the beginning, where the end of human effort had been defined as happiness.

ship only when each knows that the other wishes him well. The definition of the $\phi(\lambda)$ os, Rhet. i. 5, 1361, b. 36, as one $\delta \sigma \tau$ is δt of $\delta \tau$ is δt of $\delta \tau$ is δt of δt is a superficial one for rhetorical purposes.

⁸ Ibid. 1155. b, 18: δοκεῖ γὰρ οὐ πῶν φιλεῖσθαι ἀλλὰ τὸ φιλητὸν, τοῦτο δ' εἶναι ἀγαθὸν ἡ ἡδὸ ἡ χρήσιμον.

⁴ *Ibid.* c. 3, 5. Friendships for the sake of profit are formed for the most part among older

² VIII. 2, 1155, b, 31 sqq. (where, however, l. 33, μη must be omitted after ἐdν). Friendship is here defined as εὐνοια ἐν ἀντιπεπουθόσι μη λανθάνουσα, as mutual good will becomes friend-

between those alone who have spiritual affinities with one another, and is founded upon virtue and esteem. In such a friendship each loves the other for what he is in himself. He seeks his personal advantage and pleasure in that which is good absolutely and in itself. Such a friendship cannot be formed quickly, for the friend must be tried by long intercourse before he can be trusted; 1 nor can it be extended to many, for an inner relationship and a close acquaintance is only possible with a few at the same time. 2 It is, moreover, no mere matter of feeling and inclination, however indispensable these may be to it, but of character, 3 of which it is as lasting an element as the virtue to which it is

people; those that are for the sake of pleasure, among the young. Only the latter require that the friends should live together, and they are least durable when the parties are unlike one another and pursue different ends: the one, for instance (as in unworthy love affairs), his own pleasure, the other his advantage. Cf. c. 10, 1159, b, 15, ix. 1, 1164, a, 3 sqq.

1 VIII. 4 init.: τελεία δ' ἐστίν ή τῶν ἀγαθῶν φιλία καὶ κατ' ἀρετην όμοίων ούτοι γάρ τάγαθά δμοίως βούλονται άλλήλοις ή άγαθοί · άναθολ δ' είσλ καθ' αύτούς, οί δὲ βουλόμενοι τὰγαθὰ τοῖς φίλοις έκείνων ένεκα, μάλιστα φίλοι δι' αύτοὺς γὰρ οὕτως ἐχουσι καὶ οὐ κατὰ συμβεβηκόs [they are friends for the sake of one another and not of merely accidental object? διαμένει οὖν ή τούτων φιλία έως αν άγαθοὶ ὧσιν, ἡ δ' ἀρετὴ μόνιμον. Ibid. c. 6 init.: οί μεν φαῦλοι έσονται φίλοι δι' ήδονην ή το χρήσιμον, ταύτη δμοιοι δντες, οί δ' άγαθοί δι' αύτους φίλοι ή γάρ

ἀγαθοί [for they are so in so far as they are good]. οὖτοι μὲν οὖν ἁπλῶς φίλοι, ἐκεἶνοι δὲ κατὰ συμβεβηκὸς καὶ τῷ ὡμοιῶσθαι τούτοις. Cf. n. 2 on following page.

² VIII. 7, 1158, a, 10 sqq., and still more fully ix. 10.

³ VIII. 7, 1157, b, 28: е́оіке δ' ή μέν φίλησις πάθει, ή δὲ φιλία έξει (on έξις, see p. 285, n. 3, and p. 153, n. 3, supra) h γαρ φίλησις οὐχ ήττον πρὸς τὰ άψυχά ἐστιν, ἀντιφιλοῦσι δὲ μετὰ προαιρέσεως, ή δὲ προαίρεσις ἀφ' ἔξεως, καὶ τὰγαθὰ βούλονται τοῖς φιλουμένοις έκείνων ένεκα, οὐ κατά πάθος ἀλλὰ καθ' εξιν. But on the other hand, as is further remarked, mutual pleasure in one another's society is an element in friendship; of morose persons it is said, ibid. 1158, a, 7: οἱ τοιοῦτοι εὖνοι μέν εἰσιν ἀλλήλοις · βούλονται γάρ τάγαθά και άπαντώσιν είς τὰς χρείας φίλοι δ' οὐ πάνυ είσι διά το μη συνημερεύειν μηδέ χαίρειν άλλήλοις, & δή μάλιστ' είναι δοκεί φιλικά.

equivalent. Every other kind, attaching as it does to what is external and unessential, is merely an imperfect copy of this true friendship.\(^1\) This requires that friends should love only the good in one another, that they should receive only good from one another and return only good.\(^2\) Virtuous men, on the other hand, neither demand nor perform any unworthy service to one another, nor even permit it to be done for them.\(^3\) But just as true friendship rests on likeness and equality of character and spiritual gifts, all friendship may be said to rest upon equality.\(^4\) The equality is

1 See n. 1 on preceding page, and viii. 8, 1158, b, 4 sqq. c. 10,

1159, b, 2 sqq.

² C. 4, 1156, b, 12: ἔστιν έκάτερος ἀπλῶς ἀγαθὸς καὶ τῷ Φίλφ Teach is not only per se good, but a good to his friend]. οί γὰρ άγαθοί και άπλως άγαθοί και άλλήλοις ἀφέλιμοι. όμοίως δε καὶ ήδεῖς. καὶ γὰρ ἀπλώς οἱ ἀγαθοὶ ἡδεῖς καὶ άλλήλοις · έκάστω γάρ καθ' ήδονήν είσιν αί οίκεῖαι πράξεις καὶ αί τοιαῦται, τῶν ἀγαθῶν δὲ αἱ αὐταὶ ἢ δμοιαι. c. 7, 1157, b, 33: φιλοῦντες τὸν φίλον τὸ αύτοῖς ἀγαθὺν φιλοῦσιν · ὁ γὰρ ἀγαθὸς φίλος γενόμενος άγαθον γίνεται ῷ φίλος · έκάτερος οὖν φιλεῖ τε τὸ αὐτῷ ἀγαθὸν. καὶ τὸ ἴσον ἀνταποδίδωσι τῆ Βουλήσει καὶ τῷ ἡδεῖ λέγεται γὰρ φιλότης ἡ ἰσότης [or with Cod. Kb omit ἡ, so that the same proverb is here cited as ix. 8, 1168, b, 8: λέγεται γάρ : φιλότης Ισότης] : μάλιστα δη τη των άγαθων ταῦθ' ύπάρχει.

³C. 10, 1159, b, 4.

4 See n. 3 on preceding page, and viii. 10, 1159, a, 34: μάλλον δὲ τῆς φιλίας οὕσης ἐν τῷ φιλεῖν καὶ τῶν φιλοφίλων ἐπαινουμένων, φίλων

αρετή τὸ φιλείν ἔοικεν [which we cannot explain with BRANDIS, p. 1476, as 'the love of friends is like the love of their virtue,' for the words preceding forbid this translation; the meaning is: 'inasmuch as love is a praiseworthy thing, it is a kind of perfection in the friends, or is based upon perfection; as, therefore, the friendship that rests upon actual merits is lasting, that which rests upon true love must be so tool. ώστ' εν οίς τοῦτο γίνεται κατ' ἀξίαν, οδτοι μόνιμοι φίλοι και ή τούτων φιλία. οὕτω δ' ἃν καὶ οἱ ἄνισοι μάλιστ' εἶεν φίλοι ἰσάζοιντο γὰρ ἄν. ἡ δ' ἰσότης καὶ ὁμοιότης φιλότης, καὶ μάλιστα μὲν ἡ τῶν κατ' άρετην δμοιότης . . . ἐξ ἐναντίων δὲ μάλιστα μὲν δοκεῖ ἡ διὰ τὸ χρήσιμον γίγνεσθαι φιλία, οἶον πένης πλουσίφ, αμαθής είδότι οδ γαρ τυγχάνει τις ένδεης ών, τούτου εφιέμενος αντιδωρείται άλλφ. This is so even in the case of lovers. ίσως δὲ οὐδ' ἐφίεται τὸ ἐναντίον τοῦ έναντίου καθ' αύτὸ, ἀλλὰ κατὰ συμβεβηκός, ή δ' δρεξις τοῦ μέσου έστίν. τοῦτο γὰρ ἀγαθόν. n. 2, supra.

perfect when both parties, besides having like objects in view, are like one another in respect of worth. When, on the other hand, the object of each is different, or when one of the parties is superior to the other, we have proportional instead of perfect equality or analogy: each lays claim to love and service from the other, proportionate to his worth to him. Friendship is thus akin to justice, in which also the question is one of the establishment of equality in the relations of human society; but law and right take

As in the case of the lover and his beloved, or the artist and his pupil, in which the one party seeks pleasure, the other advantage; or of the sophist and his disciple, in which the former teaches and the latter pays; ix. 1, 1164, a, 2-32: cf. p. 193, n. 4, sup.

² E.g. the relation of parents and children, elders and youths, man and wife, ruler and ruled, viii. 8, 1158, a, 8, and elsewhere.

3 VIII. 8 init.: εἰσὶ δ' οὖν αί είρημέναι φιλίαι έν ἰσότητι τὰ γὰρ αὐτὰ γίγνεται ἀπ' ἀμφοῖν καὶ βούλονται άλλήλοις ή ξτερον άνθ' ξτέρου αντικαταλλάττονται, οΐον ηδονην άντ' ώφελείας. c. 15 init. . τριττῶν δ' οὐσῶν φιλιῶν . . καὶ καθ' έκαστην των μέν έν ισότητι φίλων όντων τῶν δὲ καθ' ὑπεροχὴν (καὶ γαρ δμυίως αγαθοί φίλοι γίνονται καί άμεινων χείρονι, όμοίως δε καὶ ήδεις, και διὰ τὸ χρήσιμον ἐσάζοντες ταῖς ώφελείαις καὶ διαφέροντες) τους ίσους μὲν κατ' ἰσότητα δεῖ τῷ φιλεῖν καὶ τοῖς λοιποῖς ἐσά(ειν, τοὺς δ' ανίσους τῷ ἀνάλογον ταῖς ὑπεροχαις ἀποδιδόναι. c. 8, 1158, b. 17 (after citing examples of friendship in unlike relations): έτ έρα γὰρ ξκάστου τούτων άρετη και το έργον, έτερα δὲ καὶ δι' ἀ φιλοῦσιν · ἔτεραι οὖν καὶ αί φιλήσεις και αί φιλίαι. Parents perform a different service for children from that which children perform for parents; so long as each party does the duty that belongs to it they are in a right and enduring relation to each other. ἀνάλογον δ' ἐν πάσαις ταίς καθ' ύπεροχην ούσαις φιλίαις και την φίλησιν δεί γίνεσθαι, οΐον τον αμείνω μαλλον φιλείσθαι ή φιλείν, και τον ώφελιμώτερον, και τῶν ἄλλων ἕκαστον ὁμο'ως' ὅταν γάρ κατ' άξίαν ἡ φίλησις γίγνηται, τότε γίγνεταί πως ἰσότης ο δη της φιλίας είναι δοκεί. Cf. c. 13, 1161, a, 21, c. 16, 1163, b, 11: τὸ κατ' άξίαν γὰρ ἐπανισοῖ καὶ σώζει τὴν ix. 1 init.: ἐν πάσαις δέ ταις ανομοειδέσι φιλίαις [those in which the two parties pursue different ends] τὸ ἀνάλογον ἰσάζει σώζει την φιλίαν, καθάπερ είρηται, οἷον καὶ ἐν τῆ πολιτικῆ τῷ σκυτοτόμφ αντί των υποδημάτων άμοιβή γίνεται κατ' άξίαν. &c.

account in the first instance of relations of inequality, in which individuals are treated in proportion to their worth, and only secondarily of relations of equality, whereas in friendship the reverse is the case: that which is primary and perfect is the friendship between equals, while that which exists between those who are not equals is only secondary.1

Aristotle next discusses those connections which are analogous to friendship in the narrower sense. remarks that every community, even such as exists for a special purpose, involves a kind of friendship, and he shows especially with regard to that form of community which embraces all others—namely, the political—what personal relations correspond to its principal forms, that is, to the various kinds of constitution.2 From these, which are more of the nature of contracts, he then proceeds to separate the relationships of kindred and pure

1 VIII. 9 init, : οὐχ ὁμο'ως δὲ τὸ ἴσον ἔν τε τοῖς δικαίοις καὶ ἐν τῆ φιλία φαίνεται ἔχειν: ἔστι γὰρ έν μέν τοις δικαίοις ίσον πρώτως τὸ κατ' άξίαν [i.e. διανεμητικόν δίκαιον, which is based upon analogy; see p. 171 sqq.], τὸ δὲ κατὰ ποσὸν [i.e. διορθωτικόν, which proceeds upon the principle of arithmetical equality δευτέρως, εν δε τη φιλία τδ μέν κατά ποσόν πρώτως [since perfect friendship, of which all other forms are imperfect imitations, is that which is concluded between persons equally worthy for the sake of their worth; see p. 194, n. 1, and 195, n. 2, supra], τδ δὲ κατ' ἀξίαν δευτέρως; in support of which Aristotle points to the fact that where the inequality is very great, as in the case of men and gods or (c. 13, 1161, a, 32 sqq.)

master and slave, no friendship is possible; but in such cases there are not even rights (c. 18. ibid.; cf. x. 8, 1178, b, 10). The distinction, as a whole, is rather a trifling one, and it is obvious from the quotations on p. 196, n. 4, and p. 192, n. 4, supra, that it was not accepted even by Aristotle himself as exhaustive of the subject. The reason is to be found in the obscurity caused by his failure clearly to separate between the legal and the moral side of iustice.

² On the special relations of travelling companions, comrades in war, members of clans, guilds, &c., cf. viii. 11; on the State and the various forms of constitution, c. 12 sq., and p. 196, n. 4, supra.

friendship.1 On the same principle he distinguishes later on 2 two kinds of the friendship which rests on mutual advantage, which are related to one another as written to unwritten law: the legal, in which the mutual obligations are definitely fixed, and which therefore is merely a form of contract; and the moral, in which the services to be rendered are left to the good will of the Aristotle further examines the occasions individual. which give rise to discord and separation between friends. He remarks that it is chiefly in friendship for the sake of advantage that mutual recriminations arise, for where friendship is cherished for the sake of virtue there is a rivalry in mutual service, which successfully excludes any sense of unfairness on either side: where it is founded merely upon pleasure it is likewise impossible for either party to complain of unfairness, if he fails to find what he seeks. On the other hand, the man who performs a friendly service in the hope of obtaining a like return, too often finds himself disappointed in his expectations.3 The same may be said of friendships between unequals. Here also unfair claims are frequently made, whereas justice demands that the more worthy should be recompensed for that which cannot be repaid to him in kind by a corresponding measure of honour.4 Finally, misunderstandings easily

¹ VIII. 14 init.: ἐν κοινωνία μεν οδυ πασα φιλία έστιν, καθάπερ είρηται : άφορίσειε δ' άν τις την τε συγγενικήν και την έταιρικήν, αί δὲ πολιτικαί και φυλετικαί και συμπλοϊκαλ, καλ δσαι τοιαθται, κοινωνικαίς ξοίκασι μάλλον οίον γάρ καθ' δμολογίαν τινά φαίνονται είναι. είς ταύτας δε τάξειεν άν τις και την ξενικήν. Relationships of kindred

are discussed in c. 14, partly also c. 12 sq. We shall return to these in the section upon the Family.

² VIII. 15, 1162, b, 21 sqq. 3 See the interesting discussion in viii. 15. Cf. also what is said on the relation of teacher and scholar, ix. 1, 1164, a, 32 sqq. 4 VIII. 16.

arise where each party has a different object in view in entering upon the alliance.1 Aristotle further discusses the cases where a man's duty towards his friend conflicts with his duty towards others, and he lays down the wise principle that in each case we must consider the peculiar obligations which the circumstances involve.2 He asks whether a friendly alliance should be dissolved if one of the parties to it changes, and he answers that separation is unavoidable in cases where the change is one in the essential conditions of the connection.3 He surveys the relation between love of self and love of friends, recognising in the latter a reflection of the attitude which the virtuous man maintains towards himself; 4 and he connects with this the question whether one should love oneself or one's friend more, deciding it by pointing out that it is impossible that there should be any real opposition

¹ For the fuller discussion of this case see ix. 1; cf. p. 193, n. 4, supra.

² IX. 2, especially 1165, a, 16, 30: ἐπεὶ δ' ἔτερα γονεῦσι καὶ ἀδελφοῖς καὶ ἐταίροις καὶ τὰ ἀρμόττοντα ἀπονεμητέον . . . καὶ συγγενεόσι δὴ καὶ φυλέταις καὶ πολίταις καὶ τοῖς λοιποῖς ἄπασιν ἀεὶ πειρατέον τὸ οἰκεῖον ἀπονέμειν, καὶ συγκρίνειν τὰ ἐκάστοις ὑπάρχοντα κατ οἰκείστητα καὶ ἀρετὴν ἢ χρῆσιν. When the relation is homogeneous this comparison is easier: when heterogeneous, it is more difficult to make; but even in the latter case it cannot be neglected.

³ IX. 3: this is, of course, the case where the friendship is based upon pleasure or advantage; or, again, when one has

been deceived in a friend, supposing oneself to have been loved disinterestedly (διά τὸ ἦθος), while with the other it was only a matter of pleasure or profit. If a friend degenerates morally, the first duty is to aid him in recovering himself, but if he proves incurable, separation is the only resource, for one cannot and ought not to love a bad man. If, lastly, as is often the case in youthful companionships, the one outruns the other in moral and intellectual development, true fellowship becomes henceforth impossible; nevertheless, the early connection should be honoured as much as it can be.

4 IX. 4, ibid. 1166, b, 6-29, where the discord in the soul of

between the claims of those two, since true self-love consists in coveting for ourselves what is best—i.e. the morally beautiful and great; but we participate in this only the more fully in proportion to the sacrifice we make for a friend. In the same spirit Aristotle expresses himself (to pass over other points 2) upon the view that the happy man can dispense with friends. He denies this on many grounds.3 The happy man, he says, needs friends whom he may benefit; the contemplation of their excellence affords a high sense of enjoyment akin to the consciousness of one's own: it is easier to energise in company with others than alone; one gains moral invigoration for oneself from intercourse with good men. Above all, man is by nature formed for association with others, and the happy man can least afford to lead a solitary life; 4 for just as to each man his own life and activity is a good, and his consciousness of that life and activity a pleasure, so also the existence of a friend, in whom his own existence is doubled, and the consciousness of this existence, which he enjoys in intercourse with him, must be a joy and a good.5

the wicked is depicted with remarkable truth, and the moral is drawn consistently with the practical aim of the Ethios: εἰ δὴ τὸ οὕτως ἔχειν λίαν ἐστὶν ἄθλιον, φευκτέον τὴν μοχθηρίαν διατεταμένως &c.

¹ IX. 8, see p. 133, n. 2, supra, ad fin., p. 151, n. 2, supra.

² The relation of $\epsilon \delta \nu o i \alpha$ (ix. 5) and $\delta \mu \delta \nu o i \alpha$ (c. 6) to $\phi i \lambda \delta (\alpha)$; the apparent fact that the benefactor usually loves the benefited more than the latter the former, every one loving his own production, as the mother does her

children (c. 8); the number of one's friends, which ought to be neither too small nor too great, but ought to include so many $\delta \sigma o \iota \epsilon i s \ \tau b . \sigma \nu \xi \hat{\eta} \nu \ i \kappa a \nu o i$, seeing that a close relationship is possible only between few, the closest ($\xi \rho w s$ as $\delta \pi \epsilon \rho \beta o \lambda \eta \ \phi \iota \lambda (a s)$, only between two; although of political friends (members of the same party) one can have a great number.

- ⁸ IX. 9, cf. viii. 1, 1155, a, 5.
 ⁴ IX, 9, 1169, b, 17; see p. 192,
- n. 3, supra.
 5 Ibid. 1170, a, 13 sqq. where,

if we ask further whether we require friends more in prosperity or adversity, the answer is,1 that it is more necessary to possess them in adversity, nobler in prosperity.2 In the former case we are more in need of their help; manly natures, which know how to bear pain alone, have more need of friendly sympathy in the other case. A man ought to be eager to invite his friends to share his joys, loath to have recourse to them in sorrow; on the other hand, he ought to be more ready to hasten to them when they are in trouble than in joy. True friendship, however, demands both.3 Friendship is an association and community of life, an extension of self-love to embrace others. Each takes the same delight in the existence and activity of his friend as he does in his own, and imparts to his friend what he most values himself.⁴ Friendship, therefore,

after first referring to αἰσθάνεσθαι and voeiv as constituents of human life, Aristotle proceeds, l. 19: τὸ δὲ ζῆν τῷν καθ' αὐτὸ ἀγαθῶν καὶ ἡδέων . . . διόπερ ἔοικε πασιν ήδὺ εἶναι. b, 1: τὸ δ' αἰσ-θάνεσθαι ὅτι ζῆ τῶν ἡδέων καθ' αύτό · φύσει γὰρ ἀγαθὸν ζωή, τὸ δ' αγαθον ύπαρχον έν έαυτώ αἰσθάν- $\epsilon \sigma \theta a i \dot{\eta} \delta \dot{\psi}$. [In being conscious of perception and thought we are conscious of life: τὸ γὰρ εἶναι ἦν αἰσθάνεσθαι καὶ νοεῖν, a, 32.] . . . ώς δὲ πρὸς ἐαυτὸν ἔχει ὁ σπουδαίος, καὶ πρός τὸν φίλον έτερος γὰρ αὐτός δ φίλος ἐστίν. καθάπερ οὖν τὸ αὐτὸν έἶναι αίρετόν ἐστιν ἑκάστω, οὕτω καὶ τὸ τὸν φίλον ἡ παραπλησίως, τὸ δ' είναι δν αίρετον διά το αίσθάνεσθαι αύτοῦ ἀγαθοῦ ὄντος. ἡ δὲ τοιαύτη αίσθησις ήδεῖα καθ' έαυτήν, συναισθάνεσθαι άρα δεί καὶ τοῦ φίλου ὅτι ἔστιν, τοῦτο δὲ γίνοιτ' αν ἐν τώ

συζήν και κοινωνείν λόγων και διανοίας · ούτω γὰρ ἃν δόξειε τὸ συζήν
ἐπὶ τῶν ἀνθρώπων λέγεσθαι, και οὐχ
ἄσπερ ἐπὶ τῶν βοσκημάτων τὸ ἐν
τῷ αὐτῷ νέμεσθαι.
¹ ΙΧ, 11.

A similar distinction between ἀναγκαῖον and ἀγαθὸν or καλὸν has already come before us, p. 165, n. 1 (from Metaph. i. 2), 192, n. 5, supra. Cf. Polit. vii. 14, 1333, a, 36: τὰ δ' ἀναγκαῖα καὶ χρήσιμα τῶν καλῶν ἕνεκεν.

⁸ ή παρουσία δη τῶν φίλων, c. J1 concludes, ἐν ἄπασιν αἰρετη φαίνεται.

4 See n. 5 above, and ix. 12 (at the end of the section upon friendship): ἀρ' οδυ, ὥσπερ τοῖς ἐρῶσι τὸ ὁρῷν ἀγαπητότατόν ἐστι, ... οὕτω καὶ τοῖς φίλοις αἰρετώτατόν ἐστι τὸ συζῆν; κοινωνία γὰρ ἡ φιλία. καὶ ὡς πρὸς ἑαυτὸν ἔχει, οὕτω καὶ πρὸς

is the most conspicuous example of the natural sociableness and solidarity of mankind. It is the bond that unites men to one another, not in any merely outward manner, as by a community of legal rights, but by the deepest instincts of their nature. In friendship individual morality expands into a spiritual communion. But this communion is still limited and dependent on the accidental circumstances of personal relations. It is in the State that it first receives a wider scope and a more solid foundation in fixed laws and permanent institutions.

τὸν φίλον. περὶ αὕτὸν δ' ἡ αἴσθησις δή· ἡ δ' ἐνέργεια γίνεται αὐτοῖς ὅτι ἔστιν αἰρετή· καὶ περὶ τὸν φίλον έν τῷ συζῆν, &c.

CHAPTER XIII

PRACTICAL PHILOSOPHY-(CONTINUED)

B.—Politics 1

1. Necessity, Nature and Function of the State

OF Aristotle's theory of the State it may be said, as of some other portions of his philosophy, that there are several points in it on which it is difficult for us to obtain certainty or completeness of view, owing to the state in which his treatise on Politics has come down to us. So rare is the union, so unequal, where they exist, the distribution, of the powers and qualities which we here find combined in equal proportions, that the eight books of the Politics of Aristotle form, indeed, one of the most remarkable works that antiquity has bequeathed to us. With the most comprehensive knowledge of the facts of history and the completest insight into the actual conditions of social life. Aristotle here combines the subtlest power of marshalling in the service of scientific thought the materials which are so supplied. But the completion of the work was

On the more recent literature which treats of Aristotle's UEBERWEG, Grundriss, i. 203 sq.; theory of the State as a whole and in its several parts, see HILDENBRAND, Gesch. u. Syst. der Rechts- und Staatsphilosophie (E74, p. 592 sq. 1877, p. 372 sqq.)

probably prevented by the death of the author; ¹ and when the sketches which he had left came to be put together, ² it was impossible to avoid *lacunæ*, and these must

1 See Appendix.

² Here, as in the case of the Metaphysics (see p. 76 sq. supra), the notes left by Aristotle seem to have been simply put together without revision or alteration. Tradition does not tell us who undertook this task: but as Theophrastus is named as the editor of the *Metaphysics* (p. 79), it may have been he; which would explain the fact that the Politics seems to have been in circulation also under his name. It is alluded to by Diog. v. 24, in the curious words: πολιτικής άκροάσεως ώς ή Θεοφράσ- $\tau \circ \nu \not a - \not n$. As they stand, these words give no conceivable sense. as it could not have been intended to explain the nature of Aristotle's Politics by comparing them with Theophrastus's as the better known. The question. therefore, rises whether the words $\pi \circ \lambda$. $\mathring{a} \kappa \rho \circ \mathring{a} \sigma \in \omega s \not = -\mathring{\eta}$ are not alone original, η Θεοφράστου having been first placed in the margin by another band, and then incorporated in the text as ή Θεοφρ. with ωs taken from ἀκροάσεωs preceding it. KROHN (ibid. 51) supposes that the conjunction of the works of Theophrastus and Aristotle in the cellar at Scepsis may partly explain why much that belongs to Theophrastus should have found its way into the Politics of Aristotle, and why it finally came to be thought that Theophrastus was its author; but the indications given, p. 150, supra, of the use of the work up to the time of

Cicero, make it impossible to accept this view, even were we to grant that the note, ώς ή Θεοφρ., did not find a place in Hermippus's enumeration until after Apellicon's discovery of the books, and to treat Krohn's elimination of the supposed Theophrastian passages from our text as less arbitrary than it is .- The same arguments hold good also against HILDENBRAND'S (Gesch. d. Rechts- u. Staatsphil. i. 360) and ONCKEN'S (Staatsl. d. Arist. i. 65 sq.) supposition that the Politics at the death of the author existed only in the original MS., and that between the death of Theophrastus and Apellicon's discovery it had disappeared. It may, indeed, appear strange that during this period we find such meagre traces of it, but this finds sufficient explanation in the feebleness of the interest taken at this time in political investigations, and the poverty of the philosophical remains that have survived to us from it. Even in the later ages, this most important account of Aristotle's political doctrines is seldom mentioned (see the passages cited by SusEp. xlv. who follows SPENGEL, Ueb. d. Pol. d. Arist. $[Abh.d.M\"{u}inchn.Akad.v.44]$, and Heitz, Verl. Schr. d. Ar. 242hardly a dozen in fifteen centuries), and, apart from the extract in STOBÆUS (see p. 203, supra), is not discussed with any fullness except by the Platonist EUBULUS (Part iii. a, 719, b, 408, 1, PORPH. V. Plot. 15, 20), a part of whose

always remain a serious hindrance to the student of the *Politics*, even although the leading thoughts and fundamental features of the treatise are hardly affected by them.

However valuable individual virtue and the knowledge which instructs us in it may be, Aristotle yet finds, as was to be expected in a Greek, that both are inadequate so long as they are confined to individuals. Morality finds its first perfect realisation in the State. In itself, the moral activity of a community is greater, more perfect, nobler, and more divine than that of individuals.1 But even the continuous production and maintenance of virtue is dependent wholly upon the Mere instruction is insufficient in the vast majority of cases: he who is a slave to desire neither listens to admonition nor understands it. It is fear of punishment, not aversion to evil, that moves him. He knows nothing of joy in what is noble for its own sake. How is it possible, then, to correct inveterate tendencies by mere exhortation? Habit and education alone are of any avail, not only with children, but with adults as well, for these also are for the most part amenable only to legal constraint. But a good education and ~ stringent laws are possible only in the State.2 Only in the State can man attain his proper good.3 Life in the State is the natural vocation of man. His nature has

Ἐπίσκεψις τῶν ὑπ' ᾿Αριστοτέλους ἐν δευτέρφ τῶν Πολιτικῶν πρὸς τὴν Πλάτωνος Πολιτείαν ἀντειρημένων has been made public by MAI, Collect. Vatic. ii. 671 sqq. σώζειν· ἀγαπητὸν μὲν γὰρ καὶ ενὶ μόνῳ, κάλλιον δὲ καὶ θειότερον ἔθνει καὶ πόλεσιν.

½ Eth. i. 1, 1094, b, 7: εἰ γὰρ καὶ ταὐτόν ἐστιν [τὸ τέλος] ἐνὶ καὶ πόλει, μεῖζόν γε καὶ τελεώτερον τὸ τῆς πόλεως φαίνεται καὶ λαβεῖν καὶ

² Ibid. x. 10.

³ Polit. i. 1 init. Every society aims at some good, μάλιστα δὲ καὶ τοῦ κυριωτάτου πάντων [sc. στοχάζεται] ἡ πασῶν κυριωτάτη καὶ πάσας περιέχουσα τὰς ἄλλας · αὕτη

destined him for society, as is clear from the fact that he alone of all creatures possesses the power of speech. In the State moral activity finds at once its condition and completion. The State is the moral whole, and is therefore prior in itself to the individual and the family: only in the order of its origin in time and of human need does it come after them. Only a being who is more or who is less than human can live apart from the community of the State. To man it is indispensable. For as with moral culture he is the noblest of all creatures, so without law and right he is the worst—and the adjustment of rights is the function of the community at large. The morality, therefore,

δ' έστιν ἡ καλουμένη πόλις καὶ ἡ κοινωνία ἡ πολιτική. Εἰλ. ὶ, 1, 1094, b, 6: τ ταύτης [τῆς πολιτικής] τέλος περιέχοι ἃν τὰ τῶν ἄλλων, ὤστε τοῦτ' ἃν εἴη τὰνθρώπινον ἀγαθόν. How far this is consistent with the higher place assigned to θεωρία has been already discussed, p. 143 sq. supra.

¹ Polit. i. 2, 1253, ā, 2: 8τι τῶν φύσει ἡ πόλις ἐστὶ, καὶ ὅτι ἄν-θρωπος φύσει πολιτικὸν ζῷον. With a reference to this passage, iii. 6, 1278, b, 19: φύσει μέν ἐστιν ἄν-θρωπος ζῷον πολιτικὸν, διὸ καὶ μηδὲν δεόμενοι τῆς παρ' ἀλλήλων βοηθείας οὐκ ἔλαττον ὀρέγονται τοῦ συζῆν. Ετλ. ix. 9; see p. 192, μ. 3, supra; cf. preceding note.

² Polit. i. 2, 1253, a, 7 sqq.

³ Polit. i. 2, 1253, a, 19: πρότερον δη τῆ φύσει πόλις η οἰκία και ἔκαστος ἡμῶν ἐστιν. τὸ γὰρ ὅλον πρότερον ἀναγκαῖον εἶναί τοῦ μέρους. . . εἰ γὰρ μὴ αὐτάρκης ἔκαστος χωρισθεὶς, ὁμοίως τοῖς ἄλλοις μέρεσιν ἕξει πρὸς τὸ ὅλον.

1252, b, 30: διδ πᾶσα πόλις φύσει ἐστὶν, εἴπερ καὶ αἱ πρῶται κοινωνίαι τέλος γὰρ αδται ἐκείνων, ἡ δὲ φύσις τέλος ἐστίν.

4 Only in this sense is it said, Eth. viii. 14, 1162, a, 17: ἄνθρωπος γὰρ τῆ φύσει συνδυαστικόν μᾶλλον ή πολιτικόν, δοω πρότερον και άνανκαιότερον οικία πόλεως. That is avaykaîov which serves to satisfy a physical need, and is therefore definitely distinct from τδ καλόν; see p. 201, μ. 2, supra. But this does not prejudice the subordination of every other social bond to the political. On the other hand, the State and the household seem rather to be regarded by Eudemus as parallel institutions (see Eud. vii. 10, 1242, a, 22: δ γάρ ἄνθρωπος οὐ μόνον πολιτικόν άλλὰ καὶ οἰκονομικόν (φον), economics being also separated by him from politics: see p. 186, n. 4, supra.

5 Polit. i. 2, 1253, a, 27: δ δὲ μη δυνάμενος κοινωνείν, η μηθὲν

of individuals has its indispensable complement in the State: Ethics is fulfilled in Politics.

It follows from what has just been said, that the function of the State cannot, according to Aristotle, be limited to that which even then, it would seem, was held by some, as it has been held by a much larger number in modern times, to be its only one-namely, the protection of person and property. The State certainly owes its origin, as Aristotle admits, primarily to a human need. Families unite in communities for purposes of intercourse; communities again into States. But the conception of the State is not thereby exhausted. Its function does not stop with care for the physical wellbeing of its members, since this care is extended to slaves and domestic animals as well as to citizens; nor even with the common protection against external enemies and security of intercourse. Such a community is an alliance and not a commonwealth, nor is it less so because the allies form a geographical unit. While it is indispensable to the existence of a political community that all these objects should be secured. yet a State, in the proper sense of the word, first arises from the effort of the citizens to realise a perfect and

δεόμενος δι' αὐτάρκειαν, οὐθὲν μέρος πόλεως, ὥστε ἡ θηρίον ἡ θεός (as he has said already at line 3 of the same page:— ὁ ἄπολις διὰ φύσιν καὶ οὐ διὰ τύχην ήτοι φαῦλός ἐστιν ἡ κρείττων ἡ ἄνθρωπος). φύσει μὲν οὖν ἡ ὁρμὴ ἐν πὰσιν ἐπὶ τὴν τοιαύτην κοινωνίαν 'ὁ δὲ πρῶτος συστήσας μεγίστων ἀγαθῶν αἴτιος. ὥσπερ γὰρ καὶ τελεωθὲν βέλτιστον τῶν ζώων ἄνθρωπός ἐστιν, οὕτω καὶ

χωρισθέν νόμου καὶ δίκης χείριστον πάντων. χαλεπωτάτη γὰρ ἀδικία ἔχουσα ὅπλα ὁ δο ἄνθρωπος ὅπλα ἐχων φύεται φρονήσει καὶ ἀρετῆ, οἶς ἐπὶ πὰναντία ἔστι χρῆσθαι μάλιστα. διὸ ἀνροιώτατον καὶ ἀγριώτατον ἄνευ ἀρετῆς . . . ἡ δὲ δικαιοσύνη πολιτικόν ἡ γὰρ δίκη πολιτικῆς κοινωνίας τάξις ἐστίν ἡ δὲ δίκη τοῦ δικαίου κρίσις.

self-sufficing social life.¹ The aim of the State is, in a word, the happiness of the citizens.² Happiness, however, consists in the unimpeded exercise of virtue.³ The happiness of a whole people cannot differ from that of individuals. Accordingly, the highest function of the State and of statecraft is to form and educate citizens,

¹ Polit. i. 2, 1252, b, 12: ή μέν οδν είς πασαν ήμέραν συνεστηκυῖα κοινωνία κατὰ Φύσιν οἶκός έστιν. . ή δ' έκ πλειώνων οἰκιῶν κοινωνία πρώτη χρήσεως ένεκεν μή έφημέρου κώμη. μάλιστα δὲ κατὰ φύσιν ξοικεν ή κώμη ἀποικία οἰκίας είναι. From the extension of the family springs the village community, which in the earliest times is ruled by the head of the family . . . ή δ' έκ πλειόνων κωμών κοινωνία τέλειος πόλις, ή δή πάσης ἔχουσα πέρας τῆς αὐταρκείας ώς έπος είπειν, γινομένη μέν οδν τοῦ (ἢν ἕνεκεν, οδσα δὲ τοῦ εδ (ἢν. διό πᾶσα πόλις φύσει ἐστίν, εἴπερ καλ αί πρώται κοινωνίαι τέλος γάρ αύτη ἐκείνων, ἡ δὲ φύσις τέλος ἐστίν. iii. 9, 1280, a, 25: Civil society exists not merely for the protection of property, nor yet τοῦ (ἢν μόνον ἔνεκεν, ἀλλὰ μᾶλλον τοῦ εὖ ζῆν (καὶ γὰρ ἄν δούλων καὶ τῶν ἄλλων ζώων ἦν πόλις · νῦν δ' ούκ έστι διά τὸ μὴ μετέχειν εὐδαιμονίας μηδέ τοῦ (ῆν κατά προαίρεσιν). μήτε συμμαχίας ένεκεν, δπως ύπδ μηδενός άδικώνται, μήτε διά τάς άλλαγάς καὶ τὴν χρῆσιν τὴν πρὸς άλλήλους. Being merely confederates, such partners are neither under any common authority ούτε τοῦ ποίους τινάς εἶναι δεί φροντίζουσιν άτεροι τους έτέρους. ούδ' όπως μηδείς άδικος έσται των ύπὸ τὰς συνθήκας μηδ' ἄλλην μοχθηρίαν έξει μηδεμίαν, άλλα μόνον όπως μηδέν άδικήσουσιν άλλήλους.

πεοί δ' ἀρετής και κακίας πολιτικής διασκοπούσιν δσοι Φροντίζουσιν εὐνομίας. ή και φανερόν ότι δεί περί άρετης έπιμελές είναι τη γ' ώς άληθως δνομαζομένη πόλει, μη λόγου χάριν. Every other combination is an alliance, not a State; every law which does not aim at making the citizens just and good is a συνθήκη, not a νόμος. Nor does it alter matters if the parties in question inhabit the same place. φανερόν τοίνυν, ὅτι η πόλις οὐκ ἔστι κοινωνία τόπου καὶ τοῦ μη άδικεῖν σφας αὐτοὺς καὶ τῆς μεταδόσεως χάριν . άλλα ταῦτα μέν άναγκαῖον ὑπάρχειν, εἴπερ ἔσται πόλις, οὐ μὴν οὐδ' ὑπαρχόντων τούτων απάντων ήδη πόλις, άλλ' ή τοῦ εἶ (ῆν κοινωνία καὶ ταῖς οἰκίαις,καλ τοίς γένεσι, ζωής τελείας χάριν καλ αὐτάρκους.

2 Polit. iii. 9, 1280, b, 39: τέλος μὲν οδν πόλεως τὸ εễ ζῆν . . . πόλις δὲ ἡ γενῶν καὶ κωμῶν κοινωνία ζωῆς τελείας καὶ αὐτάρκους. τοῦτο δ' ἐστὶν, ὡς φαμὲν, τὸ ζῆν ἐὐδαιμόνως καὶ καλῶς. τῶν καλῶν ἄρα πράξεων χάριν θετέον εἶναι τὴν πολιτικὴν κοινωνίαν, ἀλλ' οὐ τοῦ συζῆν. vii. 8, 1328, a, 35: ἡ δὲ πόλις κοινωνία τίς ἐστι τῶν ὁμοίων, ἔγεκεν δὲ ζωῆς τῆς ἐνδεχομένης ἀρίστης. ἐπεὶ δ' ἐστὶν εὐδαιμονία τὸ ἄριστον, αὕτη δὲ ἀρετῆς ἐνέργεια καὶ χρῆσίς τις τέλειος &c.

³ See p. 137 sqq. supra.

to cherish in them all moral and spiritual fitness, and to furnish the impulse to an inherently noble and satisfying activity. The qualities which make a good citizen and a brave man are thus seen to be the same: the completed virtue of a citizen is not α virtue, but virtue in its application to civic life. Virtue, however,

¹ See p. 208, n. 1, supra; Eth. i. 13, 1102, a, 7, ii. 1, 1103, b, 3; Polit. vii. 2 init., c. 15 init.

² Polit. iii. 4: Is the virtue of the ανηρ αγαθδs identical with that of the πολίτης σπουδαίος or not? Absolutely identical they certainly are not (as has already been remarked, Eth. v. 5, 1130, b, 28), for not only does each different form of State make peculiar demands upon its members (civil virtue, therefore, will have a different character under different forms of constitution), but the State itself consists of heterogeneous elements, and not merely of men of mature virtue. In so far, on the other hand, as the State may be regarded as a free community, as being the government of freemen and equals (πολιτική άρχη, άρχη των δμοίων και έλευθέρων, 1277, b, 7 sqq.), they coincide, for no one is qualified to be a member of such a State who does not know both how to command and how to obey-in other words, who is not an ἀνηρ ἀγαθός. Hence, c. 18, 1288, a, 37, with reference to c. 4: ἐν δὲ τοῖς πρώτοις ἐδείχθη λόγοις ότι την αυτην άναγκαΐον άνδρὸς άρετὴν είναι καὶ πολίτου τῆς πόλεως της αρίστης. vii. 1, 1323, b, 33: ανδρία δε πόλεως καί δικαιοσύνη και φρόνησις την αὐτην έχει δύναμιν καί μορφήν, ὧν μετασχων έκαστος των άνθρώπων λέγεται

δίκαιος καὶ φρόνιμος καὶ σώφρων. c. 9, 1328, b, 37: ἐν τῆ κάλλιστα πολιτευομένη πόλει και τῆ κεκτημένη δικαίους άνδρας άπλως, άλλὰ μή πρός την υπόθεσιν (in reference to a given State; the πρὸς την ύπόθεσιν δίκαιος is he who, while he sides with existing laws and institutions, defends even what is severe and unjust in them). c. 13, 1332, a, 36: καὶ γὰρ εἰ πάντας ενδέχεται σπουδαίους είναι. μή καθ' έκαστον δὲ τῶν πολιτῶν [even although it be possible for the community as a whole to be excellent while each of the individuals is not, the imperfections of the members being compensated for by the perfection of the whole; we shall have to allude to this further on in referring to Polit. iii. 11, 13, 15], ούτως αίρετώτερον [yet the latter. viz. that all the individuals should be virtuous, is the more desirable]; ἀκολουθεῖ γὰρ τῷ καθ' έκαστον και το πάντας. c. 14. 1332, a, 11: As the virtue of the ἄρχων and the best man is one and the same, but in the best State all are fitted to govern, the legislation must aim at making all the citizens in it good men. c. 15 init.: ἐπεὶ δὲ . . . τὸν αὐτὸν δρον άναγκαῖον εἶναι τῷ τε ἀρίστω άνδρὶ καὶ τῆ ἀρίστη πολιτεία. Αςcording to these explanations, the words (iii. 4, 1277, a, 4) εί μη πάντας ἀναγκαῖον ἀγαθοὺς εἶναι τοὺς

is twofold—theoretic and practical. To ask which of these is superior is equivalent here to asking whether peace or war is to be the ultimate aim of civil life; since the proper occupation for times of peace is, according Aristotle, Science, whereas in war the main object is the acquisition of the greatest possible power of action.1 But we have already seen that Aristotle places the theoretic life much higher than the practical, and accordingly we are not surprised to find him sharply criticising those constitutions which, like the Spartan and the Cretan, are adapted rather for war than for peace. Such States, he says, have only conquests in view, as if every kind of dominion over others, upon whomsoever it may be forced and by whatsoever means achieved, were permissible; and on this account they nourish in individuals the spirit of violence and ambition, and estrange them from the arts of peace, and so when their dominion is secured and the martial activity should give place to the peaceful, such States forthwith fall into decay. Aristotle himself regards the peaceful occupations as the true object of social life; war he permits only as a means to peace, only, therefore, in so far

ἐν τῆ σπουδαία πόλει πολίτας, occurring, moreover, as they do in a dialectical discussion (an ἀπορία), are not to be understood as though Aristotle himself intended to deny that necessity. He means them merely as a preliminary affirmation of the condition under which alone civil and individual virtue absolutely coincide. Whether and under what circumstances this condition is present, is the subject of

the discussion that follows.

¹ This paradel, however, is only partially relevant. Aristotle tells us himself (Polit. vii. 15, 1334, a, 22 sqq.) that even moral virtues, such as justice and self-command, are especially indispensable in time of peace. Moreover, while scientific activity certainly needs peace most, yet it can only at best be practised by a small minority of the citizens.

as it is necessary for self-defence or for the subjugation of those whom Nature has destined to serve. He demands, accordingly, that besides brayery and constancy, which are necessary in order that the State may assert its independence, the virtues of peace-namely, justice, temperance, and scientific culture (φιλοσοφία)—should also be cultivated. It cannot be denied that the aim of the State is thus placed sufficiently high. It is not, indeed, to Aristotle the absolutely highest, as it was to the Greeks of an earlier age. To him as to his teacher the highest is that scientific activity which in itself can dispense with the society of others. This alone it is in v which man attains the highest perfection permitted him by his nature, in which he transcends the limits of humanity and lives the life of God. Only as man does he require practical virtue and the community in which it manifests itself.2 As man, however, these are wholly indispensable to him. But the highest form of community, embracing and completing every other, is the State. Its aim comprehends every other moral aim, while its institutions not only give security and stability to the moral life by means of law and education, but extend it over a whole people. We thus arrive at a definition of the highest function of the State as that of making the citizens happy by means of virtue. is essentially the same view of civil life that we have already met with in Plato. In only a single feature do the two philosophers differ from one another, but it

Polit. vii. 2, 3, c. 14, 15; 1256, b, 23.
 Eth. x. 7, 1177, b, 4. Cf. also p.
 Cf. the citations from Eth.
 143, n. 1, and on war for the x. 8, and other passages, p. 143, acquisition of slaves, Polit. i. 8, n. 1.

is a fundamental one. In Plate the State, like everything else upon earth, is essentially related to the other world, whence all truth and reality spring. This is the ultimate source of his political idealism. Just as the Ideas belong to that supersensible world, so the philosophical rulers to whom he entrusts the realisation of these Ideas in the State have their home there also, and only unwillingly descend to take part in earthly affairs. The State, therefore, serves not only for moral education, but also as a preparation for that higher life of the disembodied spirit into which a beautiful glimpse is opened to us at the end of the Republic. Of this view of the State and of human life in general, we find no trace in Aristotle. We have simply and solely here to do with the present life and with that happiness which is the immediate outcome of moral and spiritual perfection. It is not the aim of the State to represent an ideal world beyond or to prepare for another life, but to satisfy the wants of the present. And just as he does not require philosophy to be the ruling principle in politics, as we shall see immediately, so, on the other hand, he sees no opposition between these two, such as might make the political activity of the philosopher appear as a painful sacrifice. He holds that human nature has two equally essential sides which find their satisfaction in the practical activity of the statesman and the theoretic activity of the philosopher respectively. None but God can live in contemplation alone. as man cannot renounce practical life in a community. It is no mere compulsion, but a moral need, which makes the State and the life which it offers a necessity for him.

It is the aim of the *Politics* to investigate the means by which the State fulfils its functions, the various more or less perfect conceptions of the nature of these functions, and the institutions that correspond to them. But before applying himself to this investigation, Aristotle in the first book of his political treatise discusses the Family and the Household; for he holds that in order perfectly to understand the nature of the State, it is necessary to analyse it into its simplest constituents.¹

2. The Household as a Constituent Element of the State

The State is the most perfect form of human society, and as such is prior to every other in order of thought. But just as elsewhere in Aristotle that which is first in essence is last in origin, the primordial principle the last result, so the first natural form of society—namely, the Family—precedes the political as the condition of its origin in time.²

The family is constituted by means of the three relations of husband and wife, parents and children, master and servant.³

1 Polit. i. 1, 1252, a, 17 (after touching upon the distinction between political and household economy): δηλον δ΄ ἔσται τὸ λεγόμενον ἐπιτκοποῦσι κατὰ τὴν ὑφηγημένην μέθυδον [by which he means not so much his method, as the plan which he intends to follow in the investigation, and which he had indicated at the end of the Ethics]. ὅσπερ γὰρ ἐν τοῖς ἄλλοις τὸ σύνθετον μέχρι τῶν ἀσυνθέτων ἀνάγκη διαιρεῖν (ταῦτα γὰρ ἐλάχιστα μόρια τοῦ παντὸς),

ούτω καὶ πόλιν ἐξ ὧν σύγκειται σκοποῦντες ἀψόμεθα καὶ περὶ τούτων μᾶλλον, τί τε διαφέρουσιν ἀλλήλων καὶ εἴ τι τεχνικὸν ἐνδέχεται λαβεῖν περὶ ἕκαστον τῶν ῥηθεντων. Cf. c. 3 ὑπὶτ.

² Polit. i. 2.

³ Ibid. c. 2, c. 3, c. 12 init. Aristotle describes, in c.2, the relations of man and wife, slave and freeman, as the two fundamental ones. He begins with the discussion of the latter c. 3 sqq., and connects with it that of the

The relation of husband and wife Aristotle treats as an essentially moral one. A natural instinct forms, indeed, its basis, but the union must assume the higher forms of friendship, good will, and mutual service.1 The reason of this is that the moral capacities of each are partly similar and partly different, and that therefore a free relation between them is not only possible, but is demanded by the need of both to find their complement. They stand, in one sense, upon equal terms. The wife as well as the husband has a will of her own and a virtue proper to herself. She, too, must be treated as a free person. Where the women are slaves, this is a proof to Aristotle that the men also are slaves by nature, since a free man can unite himself only with a free woman.2 On the other hand, it is also true that the moral capacities of the woman differ in kind and in degree - from those of the man: her will is weak (ἄκυρος), her virtue less perfect and self-sufficient, her vocation, as a whole, is not independent production but quiet retirement and domesticity.3 The true relation, accordingly,

different kinds of property—reserving the two remaining relations, c. 13, 1260, b, 8, for subsequent treatment, on the ground that the education of women and children and all household arrangements must depend upon the character and aim of the State. The discussion of these, however, is not resumed in the Politics as we have it, what is said in lib. vii. and viii. on education being without special reference to family life. For the purpose of exposition, it is best to take the order which is more

natural to us, i.e. to discuss the family before slavery and property.

¹ Polit. i. 2 init.; Eth. viii. 14, 1162, a, 16 sqq.; cf. Œc. i. 3 sq. c. ² Polit. i. 2, 1252, a, 1 sqq. c. 13, 1260, a, 12 sqq.; Eth. ibid.

13, 1260, a, 12 sqq.; Eth. ibid.

³ Polit. i. 5, 1254, b, 13, c. 13, 1260, a, 12, 20 sqq. iii. 4, 1277, b, 20 sqq.; Ec. i. 3, ad fm.; cf. Hist. An. ix. 1, where differences of character and disposition are discussed in so far as they proceed from difference of sex. See esp. 608, a, 35: τὰ θήλεα μαλακώτερα καὶ κακουργότερα καὶ ἦπτου

of woman to man can only exist where the man, as the superior, bears rule, while the woman is treated as a free partner in the household, and as such is not only protected from every kind of injustice, but also has her own proper sphere, with which the man does not interfere. It is an association of free members with unequal rights—in other words, it is, as Aristotle frequently describes it, an aristocracy.

Less free is the relation between Parent and Child, in discussing which, however, Aristotle confines himself characteristically enough almost solely to the relation between father and son.² In spite of the advanced views just quoted, mother and daughter have no further attention paid to them. As Aristotle had compared the married relation to an aristocracy, he compares that of father and son to a monarchy.³ The child has, strictly speaking, no rights as against his

άπλα καλ προπετέστερα καλ περλ την τῶν τέκνων τροφὴν φροντιστικώτερα. τὰ δ' ἄρρενα ἐναντίως θυμωδέστερα, καὶ ἀγριώτερα καὶ ἀπλούστερα καὶ ηττον ἐπίβουλα . . . γυνη ἀνδρὸς έλεημονέστερον και αρίδακου μαλλον, έτι δὲ φθονερώτερον καὶ μεμψιμοιρότερον, και φιλολοίδορον μάλλον και πληκτικώτερον. ἔστιδὲ καὶδύσθυμον μάλλον το θήλυ τοῦ ἄρρενος καί δύσελπι, καὶ ἀναιδέστερον καὶ ψευδέστερον, εὐαπατητότερον δὲ καὶ μνημονικώτερον, έτι δὲ ἀγρυπνότερον και δκυπρότερου και δλως ακινητότερον τὸ θῆλυ τοῦ ἄρρενος, καὶ τροφης ελάττονός έστιν. βοηθητικώτερον δέ, ώσπερ ελέχθη, και ανδρειότερον το άρρεν τοῦ θήλεός εστιν. We may contrast the careful observation upon which this comparison is based with

the levity with which Plato (Rep. v. 452 E sqq.; cf. Ph. d. Gr. i. p. 775) denies that there is any inherent difference between the sexes beyond that of their natural functions.

1 Eth. N. viii. 12, 1160, b, 32 sqq. c. 13, 1161, a, 22; cf. v. 10, 1134, b, 15; Eud. vii. 9, 1241, b, 29; Polit. i. 13, 1260, a, 9; Ec. i. 4, where details and practical directions are given upon this head. Cf. further, p. 222 sq. infra.

² Such passages as *Eth.* viii. 14, 1161, b, 26, ix. 7, 1168, a, 24, can hardly be regarded as relevant.

Eth. N. viii. 12, 1160, b, 26,
c. 13 init. (Eud. vii. 9, 1241, b, 28.)

father, being still only a part of his parent, but the father has a duty to his child—the duty, namely, of providing for its highest interests. The reason of this is that the child has a will and a virtue of its own, although both are imperfect. They are both perfect in his father, and we may therefore describe the right relation between father and son as one in which the former imparts his more perfect virtue to the latter, while the son by his obedience appropriates the virtue of his father.

The position, lastly, of the Slave is one of complete dependence. To the institution of slavery Aristotle has devoted special attention, partly with the view of investigating its necessity and justice, and partly of laying down the proper method of treating slaves. That slavery is, in the first place, a necessity, follows, according to Aristotle, from the very nature of the household, whose requirements demand not only lifeless but also living and rational utensils. But utensils are the property of him who uses them. Hence to complete the accommodations of the household, human

constitutes a bond of union, and partly upon community of life and education; and that friendship between brothers resembles that between those of the same age. &c. He compares their relationship to a timocracy in so far as the parties in it are naturally upon an equality, and difference in age is the only ground of superiority; and ends by tracing the bond of connection between more distant relatives in a similar analysis; viii. 12-14, 1161, a, 3, 25, b, 30 sqq. 1162, a, 9 sqq.

¹ *Ibid.* v. 10, 1134, b, 8; cf. viii. 16, 1163, b, 18.

² Polit. iii. 6, 1278, b, 37. ³ Polit. i. 13, 1260, a, 12, 31; cf. iii. 5, 1278, a, 4. A complete discussion of the family would include that of the fraternal bond, but upon this Aristotle does not enter in the Politics; only in the Ethics does he touch upon the relation existing between brothers, in treating of friendship. He remarks that brotherly love rests partly upon common parentage, which of itself

beings are required who shall be the property of their master 1—in other words, slaves.2 That, in the second place, slavery is just, that it rests not upon legal enactments merely, as some even then affirmed,3 but also upon the laws of nature. Aristotle tries to prove from the difference in the natural condition of men. Those who are by nature fitted only for physical employments justly come under the power of those who are capable of intellectual activity, since these are their superiors, just as the gods are the superiors of men or men of the beasts, and since generally the intellect must rule the body. Aristotle even goes the length of affirming that nature has willed a physical distinction between them. and that it is only a lusus naturæ when the soul of a freeman finds its way into the body of a slave.5 And since this in general is actually the relation of Barbarians to Greeks, the former are held to be the natural slaves of the latter.6 Aristotle therefore regards

¹ Polit. i. 4; Œc. i. 5 init.

* A slave being (Polit. i. 4 fm.) δε ἃν κτῆμα ἢ ἄνθρωπος ὢν (κτῆμα δὲ ὅργανον πρακτικὸν [see ibid. 1254, a, 1 sqq.] καὶ χωριστόν), α φύσει δοῦλος is ὁ μὴ αὐτοῦ φύσει ἀλλ' ἄλλου, ἄνθρωπος δέ.

³ Polit. i. 3, 1253, b, 18 sqq. c. 6, 1255, a, 7; cf. Ph. d. Gr. i. 1007, 2, 4th edit.; ONCKEN, Staatsl. d. Arist. ii. 32 sq.

⁴ Ibid. c. 5, 1254, b, 16, 34, vii. 3, 1325, a, 28. Plato had already expressed this idea; cf. Ph. d. Gr. 1, 755, 2.

⁵ Polit. i. 5, 1254, b, 27, where he adds: if one portion of the human race were physically as superior to the rest as the gods are represented to be, no one

would refuse them unconditional submission. The remark is characteristic of a Greek. As in his view the spiritual character naturally and necessarily expresses itself in a harmonious external form, he finds in the acknowledged beauty of his own race a direct proof of its absolute superiority to barbarian peoples. How much more from this point of view would the slavery of black and coloured races have seemed to him to be justified.

⁶ Polit. i. 2, 1252, b, 5, c. 6, 1255, a, 28; cf. vii. 7. Aristotle certainly admits exceptions to this assertion; Nature, he remarks, i. 6, 1255, b, 1, intends, indeed, that just as man springs

ont only slavery itself as justifiable, but also war for the acquisition of slaves, provided only the slavery be strictly limited to those who are by nature destined to it. It is unjust only when it is inflicted on those whom nature has destined to rule. The practice, , accordingly, of treating prisoners of war indiscriminately as slaves, is condemned by Aristotle on the ground that captivity may overtake even the best and those who have been unjustly attacked.2 The nature of the relation of master and slave must of course be ruled by these principles. A wife has a weak will and a bov an imperfect one, but a slave has none at all. His will resides in his master; obedience and usefulness in service are the only virtues which he is capable of exercising.3 That the slave, being a man, must also possess a virtue proper to him as man is, indeed, admitted by Aristotle, but he immediately adds that the slave can only possess a minimum of this virtue.4 Similarly he recommends a mild and humane treatment of slaves. He makes it the duty of the master to

to be slaves, as is presupposed c. 2, ibid., and must be assumed if war for the capture of slaves is to be justified. Thurdor, Etudes s. Arist. 10, proposes instead of 'ode elo'v ol uèv,' ode elo'v el uèv,' which, however, would yield the awkward meaning that all slaves are so by nature.

Polit. i. 8, 1256, b. 23 sqq.
 Ibid. c. 6, 1255, a, 21 sqq.

³ Polit. i. 13, 1259, a, 21 sqq. 1260, a, 12-24, 33; Poet. 15, 1454, a, 20,

⁴ Polit. ibid.

educate them in the virtue that is possible to them; ¹ he commends the practice of promising them freedom as the reward of good conduct.² And yet he holds that the power of the master as a whole is despotic, and that love on his part towards a slave is as impossible as love of the gods towards man.³ That Aristotle holds this to be true of the slave qua slave and not qua man,⁴ we can only regard as an inconsistency which does him honour. Greek morals and Greek ways of thought were too powerful within him to permit him to draw the more logical inference⁵ that man qua man cannot be a slave.

To the investigation of slavery, Aristotle appends more general discussions upon property and modes of

¹ Polit. i. 7, c. 13, 1260, b, 3: φανερδν τοίννν ὅτι τῆς τοιαύτης ἀρετῆς ἀτιον εἶναι δεῖ τῷ δούλῳ τὸν δεσπότην . διὸ λέγουσιν οὐ καλῶς οἱ λόγου τοὺς δούλους ἀποστεροῦντες καὶ φάσκοντες ἐπιτάξει χρῆσθαι μόνον νουθετητέον γὰρ μᾶλλον τοὺς δούλους ἢ τοὺς παΐδας. On the treatment of slaves see further in Ge. i. 5.

² Polit. vii. 10 fin., upon which HILDENBRAND. Rechts-u. Staatsphil. i. 400, pertinently remarks that this is inconsistent with Aristotle's principles: for he whom nature condemns to slavery ought not to be set free; he whom nature has not so condemned ought not to be held in slavery.

³ *Eth.* viii. 12, 1160, b, 29, c. 13, 1160, a, 30 sqq.; cf. viii. 9 (see i. 3, 8, n. 1, supra).

ee 1. 3.8, n. 1, supra,

* Eth. viii. 13 fin.

in spite of FECHNER's objection (Gerechtigkeitsbegr. d. Arist. p. 119) that according to Aristotle there are differences even within the sphere of human reason. Aristotle certainly assumes such differences and even asserts, as we have just seen, that they go so deep as to render a portion of mankind incapable of freedom. But the real question is whether this assertion still holds true if we are at the same time compelled to admit that even one who belongs to this portion of mankind is δυνάμενος κοινωνήσαι νόμου και συνθήκης, και φιλίας δη, καθ' δσον άνθρωπος, and that there is a δίκαιον παντί άνθρώπω πρός πάντα. To a thing, a possession, no rights can belong. To a man who has no will and either no virtue at all or only that of a slave friendship, on Aristotle's principles, is impossible.

⁵ As RITTER (iii. 361) showed it to be, and as it continues to be,

acquisition 1 somewhat loosely, with the remark that slaves being a part of a man's property, the subject of property here finds a natural place.² He distinguishes two kinds of production: 'natural,' and 'artificial.' ³ The former embraces all those modes of activity by which the necessities of life are obtained—the rearing of cattle, hunting, agriculture, &c.⁴ From the barter of the products of these arises, in the first place, exchange, which is likewise regarded as a natural mode of production, since it immediately serves the satisfaction of natural wants.⁵ But the introduction, for the sake of

¹ Polit. i. 8-11. cf. Œc. i. 6. ² See Polit. i. 8. Slaves had been previously described (c. 4 init.) as a part of κτησις, and κτητική as a part of οἰκονομία; nevertheless one cannot accept TEICHMÜLLER'Sstatement (p. 338 of the treatise cited 137, n. 2, sup.) hat this section is here quite in place. For in c. 3 only the three relations of master and slave, husband and wife, father and children were adduced as the proper subjects of economics, and in 1253, b, 12, the theory of property is only touched upon in a few words: έστι δέ τι μέρος [? now also rejected by SUSE-MIHL] δ δοκεί τοις μέν είναι οἰκονομία, τοῖς δὲ μέγιστον μέρος αὐτῆs, viz. χρηματιστική, which is thus here regarded as merely supplementary to the study of economics. TEICHMÜLLER suggests that the remark in the text upon the way in which the theory of production is connected with the discussion of slavery, only betrays a confusion with regard to the meaning of external goods in Aristotle:

but his ingenuity has here discovered a connection which is not to be found in Aristotle, and has no existence but in the commentator's own mind.

3 c. 8 fin.: ὅτι μὲν τοίνυν ἔστι τις κτητική κατὰ φύσιν τοῖς οἰκονόμοις καὶ τοῖς πολιτικοῖς, καὶ δι' ἡν αἰτίαν, δῆλον. c. 9 init.: ἔστι δὲ γένος ἄλλο κτητικῆς, ἡν μάλιστα καλοῦσι καὶ δίκαιον αὐτὸ καλεῖν χρηματιστικήν . . . ἔστι δ' ἡ μὲν φύσει ἡ δ' οὐ φύσει αὐτῶν, ἀλλὰ δ' ἐμπειρίας τινὸς καὶ τέχνης γίνεται μᾶλλον,

⁴ After enumerating the various kinds of natural production, and among them, strangely enough (1256, a, 36, b, 5), ληστεία, which is neither natural to a moral being nor a productive activity at all, he says of them (1256, b, 26): Εν μὲν οὖν εἶδος κτητικῆς κατὰ φύσιν τῆς οἰκονομικῆς μέρος ἐστὶν ὧν [a 'constructio ad sensum,' referring to the different activities comprehended under this class] ἐστὶ θησαυρισμὸς χρηματων πρὸς ζωὴν ἀναγκαίων καὶ χρησιμων εἰς κοινωνίαν πόλεως ἢ οἰκίας.

⁵ c. 9, 1257, a, 28, after the

commerce, of money as the universal standard of value 1 was followed by the development of artificial production, which has in view, not the requirements of life, but the possession of money.² Only the former of these kinds of production is an indispensable part of domestic economy.3 It has to do with real wealth, which may be defined as the stock of household necessaries, and for this reason it is strictly limited by household needs.4 Money-getting, on the other hand, is wholly unlimited, herein showing itself to be naturally bad and opposed to the true art of life, inasmuch as it serves, not to purify and exalt it, but only to provide the means of material existence and enjoyment.⁵ Production as a whole is, accordingly, held by Aristotle in small esteem, and the more so, the more exclusively it is occupied with mere money-making business, since of all unnatural modes of production he believes money-lending to be

the most unnatural of all.⁶ He confines himself, accordingly, in what remains of this discussion, to a divi-

account of barter: ἡ μεν οὖν τοιαύτη μεταβλητικὴ οὕτε παρὰ φύσιν οὕτε χρηματιστικῆς ἐστὶν εἶδος οὐδέν εἰς ἀναπλήρωσιν γὰρ τῆς κατὰ φύσιν αὐταρκείας ῆν.

¹ See p. 173, supra.

" c. 9, 1257, a, 30 sqq.

8 C. 9 fin.. περί μὲν οδν τῆς τε μὴ ἀναγκαίας χρηματιστικῆς ... εἴρηται καὶ περί τῆς ἀναγκαίας, ὅτι ἐτέρα μὲν αὐτῆς οἰκονομικὴ δὲ κατὰ φύσιν ἡ περὶ τὴν τροφήν.

4 c. S, 1256, b, 30 (following the passage cited p. 220, n. 4, sup.): και ξοικεν ό γ' άληθινδε πλοῦτος έκ τούτων είναι. ή γὰρ τῆς τοιαύτης κτήσεως αὐτάρκεια πρὸς ἀγαθην ζωὴν οὐκ ἄπειρός ἐστιν....οὐδὲν

γὰρ ὄργανον ἄπειρον οὐδεμιᾶς ἐστὶ τέχνης οὕτε πλήθει οὕτε μεγέθει, δ δὲ πλοῦτος ὀργάνων πλῆθός ἐστιν οἰκονομικῶν καὶ πολιτικῶν,

οικονομικών και πολιτικών. 5 c 9, 1257, b. 28-1258, a,

6 c. 10, 1258, a, 40: τῆς δὲ μεταβλητικῆς ψεγομένης δικαίως (οὐ γὰρ κατὰ φύσιν ἀλλ' ἀπ' ἀλλήλων ἐστὶν), εὐλογώτατα μισεῖται ἡ ὀβολοστατικὴ διὰ τὸ ἀπ' αὐτοῦ τοῦ νομίσματος εἶναι τὴν κτῆσιν καὶ οὐκ ἐφ' ὅπερ ἐπορίσθη [not from the proper use of gold]. μετα-βολῆς γὰρ ἐγένετο χάριν, ὁ δὲ τόκος αὐτὸ ποιεῖ πλέον . . . ὥστε καὶ μάλιστα παρὰ φύσιν οὖτος τῶν χρηματισμῶν ἔστίν.

R.

sion of it into its various kinds,¹ and to a few remarks upon the art of obtaining a monopoly of a commodity.² He places, however, a different estimate upon the scientific treatment of these matters and upon the conduct of them in actual practice.³ Sharing as he does to the fullest extent the Greek contempt for manual labour,⁴ he naturally assigns to the latter a lower place in proportion as it makes less claim upon the moral and intellectual qualities, consists more exclusively of physical occupations, and stamps the body more deeply with the marks of toil.⁵

Plato had demanded in his Republic that the family and household should be absorbed in the State. A community of wives, children, and goods had appeared to him to be the arrangement which was most desirable and alone suited to the perfect State. Aristotle rejects this view. Plato desired that all things should be held

1 He enumerates in c. 11 three kinds of χρηματιστική: (1) agriculture, cattle-rearing, &c.—οἰκειστάτη χρηματιστική; (2) μεταβλητική, with its three branches, ἐμπορία, τοκισμὸς, μισθαρνία, the last of which includes all mechanical industries; (3) occupying an intermediate position — ὑλοτομία, μεταλλουργία, &c.

² He desires that a collection of these and similar artifices should be made (1259, a, 3), such as is actually attempted afterwards in the second book of the *Economics*. He adduces himself only two examples. As a rule, he refers to earlier writers upon husbandry, &c. (1258, b, 59). He will not himself linger

over such subjects, as it is χρήσιμον μὲν πρὸς τὰς ἐργασίας, φορτικὸν δὲ τὸ ἐνδιατρίβειν.
³ c. 11 init: πάντα δὲ τὰ

τοιαῦτα τὴν μὲν θεωρίαν ἐλεύθερον ἔχει, τὴν δ' ἐμπειρίαν ἀναγκαίαν.

4 Further proofs of this will meet us in the section upon the constitution of the State.

 5 Ibid. 1258, b, 35: εἶσὶ δὲ τεχνικώταται μὲν τῶν ἐργασιῶν ὅπου ἐλάχιστον τῆς τύχης, βαναυσόταται δὶ ἐν αῗς τὰ σώματα λωβῶνται μάλιστα, δουλικώταται δὲ ὅπου τοῦ σώματος πλεῖσται χρήσεις, ἀγεννέσταται δὲ ὅπου ἐλάχιστον προσδεῖ ἀρετῆς. With the definition of τὸ βάναυσον cf. c 5, 1254, b, 24 sqq. Plato, Rep. vi. 495 d (Ph. d. Gr. i. 754, 3).

⁶ He expresses his views on

in common in order that the State might be the most perfect unity possible. But a State is not merely a unity; it is a whole composed of many and various parts. If perfect unity without multiplicity were the highest, then must the State shrink into the Household. and the Household into the Individual. But even if we granted that unity is the best thing for a State, yet the arrangements which Plato proposes would not, he thinks, be the proper means for its attainment. Not to speak of the difficulties which such proposals would involve in their application,2 Plato had said3 that the unity of the State will be the most complete when all call the same thing mine and thine. But this assertion, as Aristotle acutely remarks, is ambiguous. If all could treat the same things as their own private property, unity might perhaps be thus promoted. That however, is not possible, If, on the other hand, children and goods are to be the common property of all, the desired result will not follow.4 On the contrary, with the exclusiveness of these relationships, all their worth and all that gives them real significance would be destroyed: one who had the thousandth part of a claim upon each of a thousand sons, and was not even quite sure of that, would not

this subject, not in the first book, which treats of the family, but in the second, which treats of earlier ideal States. This discussion is, however, mentioned here out of its order for convenience of exposition.

¹ Polit. ii. 2, 1261, a, 9 sqq. (cf. c. 5, 1263, b, 29 sqq.) where, inter alia, he says: καίτοι φανερόν έστιν ώς προϊούσα καί γινομένη μία μάλλον οὐδὲ πόλις ἔσται· πλῆθος

γάρ τι τὴν φύσιν ἐστὶν ἡ πόλις . . . οὐ μόνον δ' ἐκ πλειόνων ἀνθρώπων ἐστὶν ἡ πόλις ἀλλὰ καὶ ἐξ εἴδει διαφερόντων · οὐ γὰρ γίνεται πόλις ἐξ ὁμοίων. This is the basis, moreover, of the self-sufficiency of the State; ibid. b, 10 sqq.

² For a fuller discussion of which, see c. 3 sq. 1262, a, 14-40, b, 24 sqq.

³ Rep. v. 462 c. ² c. 3, 1261, b, 16-32.

feel as a father towards any one.1 The same is true of property. Here, also, so far from leading to unitv. community of possession would be an inexhaustible source of strife.2 What is required is the just distribution of property and the voluntary surrender of it to a common use.3 Community of goods, on the other hand, along with the desire of private possession, destroys also the joy of benevolence and generosity; and just as community of women annihilates the virtue of temperance in the relations of the sexes, so community of goods renders impossible that virtue 4 which consists in the right attitude towards property.⁵ In this opposition to the Platonic socialism we shall not only recognise Aristotle's practical sense, his clear insight into the laws and conditions of actual life, his aversion to all ethical onesidedness and his deep knowledge of human nature and of social life, but we shall not fail to observe that here, as in Plato, the political views are closely connected with the principles of the metaphysical system. Plato had demanded the abolition of all private possession and the suppression of all individual interests, because it is only in the Idea or Universal that he acknowledges any title to true reality.6 Aristotle refuses to follow him here. To him the Individual is the primary reality,

¹ *Ibid.* 1261, b, 32 sqq. c. 4, 1262, a, 40 sqq.

² c. 5, 1262, b, 37–1263, a, 27.

³ Ibid. 1263, a, 21-40, where fin.: φανερον τοίννυ ὅτι βέλτιον εἶναι μὲν ἰδ ας τὰς κτήσεις τῆ δὲ χρήσει ποιεῖν κοινάς. This is repeated vii. 10, 1329, b, 41.

i.e., ἐλευθεριότης, as to which, see supra.

⁵ *Ibid.* 1263, a, 40-b, 14. The

reproach with regard to $\sigma\omega\phi\rho\sigma\sigma\nu\eta$ is certainly unjust, for according to Plato, each has to refrain from all women who are not assigned to him by the government. The Platonic community of women is certainly not meant to be licence of desire (see the further discussion of this in Zeller's Vortr. u. Abh. i. 76).

⁶ See *Ph. d. Gr.* i. p. 780.

and has the first claim to recognition. In his metaphysics individual things are regarded, not as the mere shadows of the idea, but as independent realities; universal conceptions not as independent substances; = but as the expression for the common peculiarity of a number of individuals. Similarly in his moral philosophy he transfers the ultimate end of human action and social institutions from the State to the individual, and looks for its attainment in his free self-development. The highest aim of the State consists in the happiness of its citizens. The good of the whole rests upon the good of the individuals who compose it.1 In like manner must the action by which it is to be attained Ji proceed from the individual of his own free will. only from within through culture and education, and not by compulsory institutions, that the unity of the State can be secured.2 In politics as in metaphysics

1 Plato had met the objection (Rep. iv. 420 B sqq.) that he had failed to make his 'guardians' happy, with the remark that the question is of the happiness, not of a part, but of the whole; Aristotle replies (Polit. ii. 5, 1264, b, 17): ἀδύνατον δὲ εὐδαιμονείν όλην, μή των πλείστων ή μή Γwe should omit this μη, or read εί μη instead of ħ μὴ] πάντων μερῶν ħ τινών έχόντων την ευδαιμονίαν. [Similarly, vii. 9, 1329, a, 23: evδαίμονα δε πόλιν οὐκ εἰς μέρος τι βλέψαντας δεί λέγειν αὐτῆς, ἀλλ' els πάντας τοὺς πολίτας.] οὐ γὰρ τῶν αὐτῶν τὸ εὐδαιμονεῖν ὧνπερ τὸ άρτιον· τοῦτο γὰρ ἐνδέχεται τῶ δλω υπάρχειν των δε μερών μηδετέρφ, τὸ δὲ εὐδαιμονεῖν ἀδύνατον. In these remarks we have only the other side of the truth; nor is it any solution of the difficulty here raised to represent the life of the guardians, as Plato himself does in a subsequent passage (Rep. v. 465 E), as the happiest. Plato in principle denies what Aristotle asserts, viz. that the happiness of the individuals as such must be the test and criteterion of all political institutions; and for that very reason he in the same passage demands that the individuals should seek their highest happiness in unselfish devotion.

² Polit. ii. 5, 1263, b, 36: the true nature of the State must not be sacrificed to an exaggerated conception of unity (see p. 223, n. 1, sup.); ἀλλὰ δεῖ πλήθος by διὰ

the central point with Plato is the Universal, with Aristotle the Individual. The former demands that the whole should realise its ends without regard to the interests of individuals: the latter that it be reared upon the satisfaction of all individual interests that have a true title to be regarded.

These remarks form a natural introduction to the discussion of the various forms of political constitution. To this, after criticising earlier political sketches and theories,¹ Aristotle applies himself in the third book of the *Politics*. The link which we should look for between the family and the State, viz. the conception of 'Society,' was not yet an object of inquiry. A science of Sociology belongs to modern, indeed to quite recent times. Even the idea of 'the community,' to which there then existed nearer analogies, is not a special subject of discussion. To Aristotle as a Greek the State is coincident with the City; the community, therefore, so far as it is different from the State, can only be the Village; this, however, is a merely transitional form which is lost in the City or Nation so soon as a comprehensive social union takes

την παιδείαν κοινην και μίαν ποιείν [SC την πόλιν] και τόν γε μέλλοντα παιδείαν εἰσάγειν, και νομίζοντα διὰ ταύτης ἔσεσθαι την πόλιν σπουδαίαν, ἄτοπον τοις τοιούτοις [community of women and goods] οἴεσθαι διορθούν, ἀλλὰ μὴ τοις ἔθεσι και τῆ φιλοσοφία και τοις νόμοις.

1 One cannot here enter into the details of this criticism as they are to be found in the second book of the *Politics*. After a lively polemic (c. 1-5) against the community of women, children, and goods, and other pro-

posals of the Republic, Aristotle proceeds to discuss (c. 6) PLATO'S Laws [on these and other assertions with regard to Plato's political philosophy see ZELLER, Platon. Stud. 288 sqq. 203-207]; the proposals of Phaleas and Hippodamus (c. 7 sq.); the Spartan (c. 9), the Cretan (c. 10), and the Carthaginian (c. 11) constitutions; and, finally (c. 12: see, however, Ph. d. Gr. i. 676), the laws of Solon, Zaleucus, Charondas, and other ancient legislators.

the place of mere local association limited to the needs of trade.¹

But the particular institutions by means of which this social union has to realise its end, and the forms which it must take, will depend essentially upon the character of the individuals whom it includes. It is with these, therefore, that Aristotle next deals.

3. The State and the Citizens

The State is the composite whole, and the constituent parts of it—the subjects whose relations to one another are determined by the character of the constitution—are the citizens.2 What, then, constitutes a citizen or citizenship? One can live in a city without being a citizen of it. Foreigners may even be admitted to its courts of law. On the other hand, it is not necessary that the citizen should be born of citizen parents, for in that case neither the first founders of a State nor those who at any time have the franchise conferred on them would be citizens.3 A citizen in the proper sense of the word is one who is entitled to take part in the government of the State and in the administration of justice. A State is an aggregate of such persons, which must be sufficient of itself to satisfy all the demands of their common life.4 It is true that as the essence of a thing consists

¹ See p. 208, n. 1, supra.
" Polit. iii. 1, 1274, b, 36 sqq.: the πολιτεία is τῶν τὴν πόλιν οἰκούντων τάξις τις; the πόλις, on the other hand, is a composite whole consisting of many parts—πολιτῶν τι πλῆθος.

³ *Polit*. iii. 1 sq. 1275, a, 7 sqq.

⁴ Ibid. c. 1, 1275, a, 22: πολίτης δ' ἀπλῶς οὐδὲν τῶν ἄλλων ὀρίζεται μᾶλλον ἡ τῷ μετέχειν κρίσεως καὶ ἀρχῆς (similarly, c. 13, 1283, b, 42). After some further

in general not in its matter but in its form, the essence of the State must be sought for in its form or constitution. A State remains the same so long as its constitution remains unaltered, even although the individuals who are the People should change; on the other hand, the State changes when its constitution is changed, even although the citizens remain the same.1 Yet it is equally true that the constitution has to adapt itself to the character and condition of the men for whom it is designed. The members of the State are not equal to one another in every respect, but neither are they unequal in every respect.2 Now all constitutional law is concerned with the distribution of political rights and benefits. An equal distribution is just only on condition that the persons amongst whom they are distributed are themselves equal to one another. If, on

explanations, in the course of which it is pointed out that under λρχλ we must include the business of the popular assembly, Aristotle concludes, ibid. b, 18: ¾ γλρ εξουσία κοινωνεῖν ἀρχῆς βουλευτικῆς ħ κριτικῆς, πολίτην ἤδη λέγομεν εἶναι ταύτης τῆς πόλεως, πόλιν δὲ τὸ τῶν τοιούτων πλῆθος ἰκανὸν πρὸς ἀυτάρκειαν ζωῆς. With the last clause, cf. p. 208, nn. 1 and 2.

το 3, 1276, a, 34: How long may the $\pi \delta \lambda is$ be said to be one and the same? So long, it might be answered, as it is inhabited by the same race. But this is wrong: είπερ γάρ ἐστι δὲ κοινωνία τις ἡ πόλις, ἔστι δὲ κοινωνία πολιτῶν, πολιτείας γιγνομένης ἐτέρας τῷ είδει καὶ διαφερούσης τῆς πολιτείας ἀναγκαῖον είγαι δόξειεν ὰν καὶ τὴν πόλιν είναι μὴ τὴν αὐτὴν μάλιστα λεκτέον τὴν αὐτὴν

πόλιν εἰς τὴν πολιτείαν βλέποντας ὅνομα δὲ καλεῖν ἔτερον ἢ ταὐτὸν ἔξεστι καὶ τῶν αὐτῶν κατοικούντων αὐτὴν καὶ πάμπαν ἑτέρων ἀνθρώπων. By πολιτεία, however, we must here understand, not merely the constitution in the narrower sense, but the whole social organisation.

² Cf. on the one hand p. 223, n. 1, and on the other Pol. iv. 11, 1295, b, 25: βούλεται δέ γε η πόλις ἐξ ἴσων εἶναι καὶ ὁμοίων ὅτι μάλιστα, for only between such is φιλία and κοινωνία πολιτική possible. Cf. vii. 8, 1328, a, 35. The citizens, as we shall find, will be equal in freedom, in common political rights and to a certain degree also in common social virtue; they will be unlike in property, avocation, descent, and individual capacity.

the other hand, the persons are unequal, justice requires an unequal distribution. In order, therefore, rightly to judge of the character of State institutions, we must know wherein consists this equality and inequality with which the State has to deal.

Of essential importance in this regard are, first of all, the occupations and manner of life of the citizens.2 Parallel to the distinction which we noted in the Household between freemen and slaves, we have among citizens themselves those who are exempt from menial labour, and those who have to devote themselves to it. One * who performs menial offices for an individual is a slave: one who does so for the community is a day-labourer $(\theta \dot{\eta} s)$ or artisan $(\beta \dot{\alpha} \nu a \nu \sigma o s)^3$ The importance of this \leq distinction appears from the statement 4 that the rights of citizenship belong to persons of this class only in imperfect States, but not in the best. The object of the latter is the happiness of the entire people; and so, as happiness is only attainable through virtue, no one who is incapable of true virtue can be a citizen in a State of which virtue is at once the basis and the end.

¹ Polit. iii. 9 init.: Both oligarchy and democracy rest upon right: but neither upon perfect right. οἶον δοκεῖ ἴσον τὸ δίκαιον εἶναι, καὶ ἔστιν, ἀλλὶ' οὐ πᾶσιν ἀλλὰ τοῖς ἴσοις. καὶ τὸ ἄνισον δοκεῖ δίκαιον εἶναι: καὶ γάρ ἐστιν, ἀλλὶ οὐ πᾶσιν ἀλλὰ τοῖς ἀνίσοις. c. 12, 1282, b, 16: ἔστι δὲ πολιτικὸν ἀγαθὸν τὸ δίκαιον, τοῦτο δὶ ἐστὶ τὸ κοινῆ συμφέρον, δοκεῖ δὲ πᾶσιν ἴσον τι τὸ δίκαιον εἶναι, as is explained in the ethical discussions (see p. 171, ευρτα). τὶ γὰρ καὶ τισὶ τὸ δίκαιον, καὶ δεῦν τοῖς ἴσοις ἵσον

είναι φασιν. ποίων δ' ισότης έστι και ποίων άνισότης, δεί μη λανθάνειν έχει γάρ τοῦτ' ἀπορίαν και φιλοσοφίαν πολιτικήν. c. 13, 1283, a, 26 sqq.

² *Polit*. iii, 5, vii. 9. ³ iii. 5, 1278, a, 11.

iii. 5, 1278, a, 15 sqq. vii. 9, 1328, b, 27 sqq. 1329, a, 19 sqq. On this conception, which will often meet us again, especially in treating of the best State, see further viii. 2, 1337, b, 8 sqq. c. 4, 1338, b, 33, c. 5, 1339, b, 9, c. 6, 1340, b, 40, 1341, a, 5, b, 14.

Birth and property are two further important points for consideration. While freemen as such are all equal, the nobly born claim to have inherited higher ability and rank from their ancestors; the rich, on the other hand, demand a greater share in the government. on the ground that the greater part of the national property is in their hands, and that propertied men in all matters of business are more reliable than unpropertied. Aristotle does not, indeed, admit these claims unconditionally, but he does not regard them as wholly unjustified, for although political privileges cannot be claimed on the ground of each and every /superiority, but only of such as are of political importance, yet it cannot be denied that the advantages in question are 'political.' Thus while in speaking of property distinctions he rejects the oligarchical demand for a plutocracy with the pertinent observation that it would be justifiable only on the supposition that the State is nothing but a mercantile company,2 yet he cannot conceal from himself that distinctions of wealth are of the highest significance for the State. Riches and poverty both involve many kinds of moral evil: the rich commit outrage through arrogance, the poor through dishonesty; the former know neither how to obey nor how to rule over freemen, the latter neither how to rule nor how to obey as freemen; and where a State has fallen asunder into rich and poor, it has lost the inner bond of its communal life, in the equality, unanimity, and social sympathy of the citizens. The well-to-do middle class, being the mean, is the best: it

¹ iii. 12 sq. 1282, b, 21–1283, a, 37. ² iii. 9, 1280, a, 22 sqq.

is best secured against excesses of its own and attacks of an enemy; it is the least anxious to put itself forward in political life; when the centre of gravity lies in it we have the most orderly and enduring form of government.1 Whosoever would give stability to his political institutions must secure the support of this class, seeing that it holds the balance between the two contending parties of the rich and the poor.² More important still, however, is the political capacity of the citizens. The essential aim of the State is the happiness and moral perfection of the citizens; he who is able to contribute most to this will have the best claim to influence in the State. But that which more than any other quality fits a man to do so is virtue, especially justice and military ability, since, while the latter is indispensable for the preservation of the State, the former is that which lies at the foundation of all society and involves all other virtues.3 There are thus different principles upon which political rights may be apportioned.4 According as one or other of these is adopted,

iv. 11, 1295, b, 1—1296, a, 21, where it is further shown that great cities are more exempt from disquiet than small ones, because they have a more numerous middle class; that democracies are more stable than oligarchies, because the middle class finds itself more at home in them—only, however, on condition that it does so—and that the best lawgivers, e.g. Solon, Lycurgus, Charondas, have belonged to the middle class.

² iv. 12, 1296, a, 34 sqq. ³ iii. 9, 1281. a, 2 sqq. c. 12 sq. 1283, a, 19-26, 37.

⁴ The character and geographical position of the country. and similar external circumstances might also be here adduced. To the political importance of these, as may be seen from Polit. vii. 6, c. 11, 1330, b, 17, vi. 7, 1321, a, 8 sqq., Aristotle was keenly alive. He admits that a maritime situation favours the rise of a numerous nautical population and thereby promotes democratic institutions. He remarks that an acropolis is favourable to monarchy and oligarchy, a flat country to democracy, a number of fastnesses

or as several of them are combined in a definite manner, will be the character of the resulting constitution. For while the differences in the general character of States depend upon the view taken of their end and of the means by which it is pursued, the differences in the particular form of their constitution depend upon the share assigned to the different classes of the citizens in the public benefits and in the activities by which these are acquired. The decisive question here, however, is:

1 vii. 8, 1328, a, 35: ή δὲ πόλις κοινωνία τίς ἐστι τῶν ὁμοίων, ἐνεκεν δὲ ζωῆς τῆς ἐνδεχομένης ἀρίστης. ἐπεὶ δ' ἐστὶν εὐδαιμονία τὸ ἄριστον, αὕτη δὲ ἀρετῆς ἐνέργεια καὶ χρῆσίς τις τέλειος, συμβέβηκε δὲ οῦτως ὅστε τοὺς μὲν ἐνδέχεσθαι μετέχειν αὐτῆς, τοὺς δὲ μικρὸν ἡ μηδὲν, δῆλον ὡς τοῦτ αἴτιον τοῦ γίγνεσθαι πόλεως εἴδη καὶ διαφορὰς καὶ πολιτείας πλείους ἄλλον γὰρ τρόπον καὶ δι' ἄλλων ἕκαστοί τοῦτο θηρεύοντες τούς τε βίους ἐτέρους ποιοῦνται καὶ τὰς πολιτείας.

² After enumerating the forms of activity which are indispensable to the existence of society, and the corresponding

(farmers, proprietors, artisans, soldiers, priests, judges and administrators) Aristotle proceeds ibid. c. 9 init.: διωρισμένων δὲ τούτων λοιπὸν σκέψασθαι πότερον πᾶσι κοινωνητέον πάντων τούτων . . . ή καθ **ἕκαστον ἔργον τῶν εἰρημένων ἄλλους** ύποθετέον, ή τὰ μεν ίδια τὰ δε κοινὰ τούτων έξ ανάγκης έστίν. (Cf. ii. 1, 1260, b, 37.) ταύτα γάρ καί ποιεί τὰς πολιτείας έτέρας έν μὲν γάρ ταις δημοκρατίαις μετέχουσι πάντες πάντων, έν δὲ ταῖς ὀλιγαρχίαις τοὐναντίον. Similarly, and with express reference to this passage, iv. 3, 1289, a, 27 sqq.: τοῦ μέν οὖν εἶναι πλείους πολιτείας αἴτιον ότι πάσης έστὶ μέρη πλείω πόλεως τον ἀριθμον. A State consists of an aggregation of households, of people of large, small and average means, of warlike and unwarlike, of farmers, merchants and artisans; further, there are differences of birth and capacity (ἀρετή). Of these classes sometimes fewer, sometimes more, sometimes all, share in government (πολιτεία). τοίνυν ότι πλείους άναγκαῖον εἶναι πολιτείας είδει διαφερούσας άλλήλων και γάρ ταῦτ' εἴδει διαφέρει τὰ μέρη σφῶν αὐτῶν. πολιτεία μὲν Who possesses the supreme power—who is sovereign? The different possible ways of adjusting the relations of the various classes to one another are therefore enumerated by Aristotle with a view to preparing the way for an investigation into the comparative value of particular forms of constitution, the conditions of their rise and continuance, and the institutions which correspond to them.

4. Forms of Constitution

We are accustomed to understand by the term 'Constitution' only the general form of government of a particular State—the sum of the arrangements which regulate the distribution within it of political functions.²

γαρ ή τῶν ἀρχῶν τάξις ἐστὶ, ταύτην δε διανέμονται πάντες ή κατά την δύναμιν τῶν μετεχόντων ή κατὰ τιν' αὐτῶν ἰσότητα κοινήν . . ἀναγκαῖον ἄρα πολιτείας εἶναι τοσαύτας δσαιπερ τάξεις κατά τὰς ὑπεροχάς είσι και κατά τὰς διαφορὰς τῶν μορίων. With the same view of explaining the different forms of constitution, the different classes in a community are then again $\langle \text{enumerated (c. 4, 1290, b. 21 sqg.)} \rangle$ as follows: farmers, artisans, traders, day-labourers, soldiers, rich (εὔποροι) who serve the state with their money, magistrates, judges, and members of the supreme administration. (In this enumeration, the words εβδομον and δγδοον, 1291, a, 33 sq., cause a difficulty, to avoid which NICKES, De Arist. Polit. libr. 110, proposes to read error and εβδομον, while SUSEMIHL, in loco, with CONRING, supposes a lacuna before εβδομον, in which he sup-

poses the sixth class was mentioned.)

1 iii. 6 init.: We must ask how many and what constitutions there are? ἔστι δὲ πολιτεία πόλεως τάξις τῶν τε ἄλλων ἀρχῶν καὶ μάλιστα τῆς κυρίας πάντων. κύριον μὲν γὰρ πανταχοῦ τὸ πολίτευμα τῆς πόλεως, πολίτευμα δὲ ἐστὶν ἡ πολιτεία. (Cf. c. 7, 1279, a, 25.) In democracies the people is sovereign (κύριος); in oligarchies only a minority of the people: hence the difference in these forms of constitution.

² This is at least the scientific conception of the constitution; the written documents which define the constitution certainly neither contain all that according to this conception is included under it, nor do they confine themselves to it, but generally they contain all those laws which, as fundamental to the State, seem to require special sanction.

Aristotle meant far more by it. He comprehends under the corresponding word 'Polity,' not only all this, but also the substantial character of the community in question, as that expresses itself in the accepted theory of the State and in the spirit of its government. He has thus the advantage of exhibiting more clearly than is commonly done by modern writers the connection of the political institutions of a people with its life as a whole, and is less exposed to the danger of treating these as something independent and equally applicable to all communities. Here as elsewhere in the Politics the leading characteristic of his method is the care he takes scientifically to trace everything back to its real source, and to find the principle of its explanation in its own peculiar nature. On the other hand, it cannot be denied that the treatment of political constitutions suffers in simplicity when it does not confine itself to deducing them as the forms of an organised civil life from the spirit and mutual relations of the citizens, but mixes itself up with the discussion of the legal details of that life itself. Aristotle is not free from this confusion,2

πολιτείαν, καθ' οὖς δεῖ τοὖς ἄρχοντας ἄρχειν καὶ φυλάττειν τοὖς παραβαίνοντας αὐτοὖς. So also vii. 13 init., and throughout the whole discussion of the different forms of constitution, the question as to the nature of the πολιτεία is taken to involve that of the ultimate aim of the State, and the investigation into the ἀρίστη πολιτεία (see infra) is more concerned with the laws upon education and the like than with questions properly constitutional in our sense.

¹ As is obvious, inter alia, from p. 232, n. 1, with which cf. p. 232, n. 2, and p. 233, n. 1, supra.
2 Besides the passage just referred to above, see esp. Polit. iv. 1, 1289, a, 13: πρὸς γὰρ τὰς πολιτείας τοὺς νόμους δεῖ τίθεσθαι καὶ τίθενται πάντες, ἀλλ' οὐ τὰς πολιτείας πρὸς τοὺς νόμους. πολιτεία μὲν γάρ ἐστι τάξις ταῖς πόλεσιν ἡ περὶ τὰς ἀρχὰς, τίνα τρόπον νενέμηνται, καὶ τί τὸ κύριον τῆς πολιτείας καὶ τί τὸ τέλος ἑκάστης τῆς κοινωνίας ἐστίν· νόμοι δὲ κεχωρισμένοι τῶν δηλούντων τὴν

although in general he has clearly distinguished between questions of law and constitution.

In investigating political constitutions Aristotle complains 2 that previous writers had contented themselves with representing an ideal State, or else with eulogising the Spartan or some other historical constitution. Aristotle himself aims at a more exhaustive treatment of his subject. Political science cannot, he says, any more than any other, limit itself to the description of an ideal. It must also show what form of State is the best attainable under certain given circumstances; it must further take account of actually existing constitutions and of the conditions of their rise and maintenance; and it must be able, finally, to declare what institutions are best adapted for the majority of States.³ The description of the political ideal must

' See preced. n. and Polit. ii. 6, 1265, a, 1; Eth. x. 10, 1181, b, 12: as his predecessors have not (sufficiently) investigated the question of legislation, he will himself treat generally of this as well as of the State (πολιτεία). L. 21: ποία πολιτεία ὰρίστη, και πῶς ἐκάστη ταχθεῖσα, καὶ τίσι νόμοις καὶ ἔθεσι γρωμένη.

² Polit. iv. 1, 1288, b, 33 sqq. This complaint, however, is not altogether just in respect of Plato, who not only in the Laws had placed a second State beside his ideal republic, but in the Rep. itself had fully discussed the imperfect forms of constitution. It is true, however, that none of these investigations satisfies Aristotle's requirements.

3 Polit. iv. 1. Aristotle here

sets before Politics a fourfold problem: (1) πολιτείαν την ἀρίστην θεωρήσαι τίς έστι και ποία τις άν οὖσα μάλιστ' εἴη κατ' εὐχὴν, μηδενὸς έμποδίζουτος των έκτός; (2) besides the απλως κρατ'στη to discuss also την έκ των υποκειμένων αρίστην: similarly (3), την έξ ὑποθέσεως, and (4) την μάλιστα πάσαις ταῖς πόλεσιν άρμόττουσαν (on which see c. 11 init.). Of these four questions the third has not infrequently been very strangely misunderstood, e.g. by BARTHÉLEMY ST-HILAIRE, but also by GÖTTLING in loco. Aristotle himself, however, states (1288, b, 28) his meaning quite unambiguously. ἔτι δὲ τρίτην, he says, την έξ ύποθέσεως · δεί γαρ καί την δοθείσαν δύνασθαι θεωρείν, έξ ἀρχής τε πῶς ἃν γένοιτο, καὶ γενομένη τίνα τρόπον ἃν σώζοιτο therefore be supplemented by a comprehensive survey of actual facts. Aristotle does not renounce such an ideal, but desires at the same time to investigate all other possible forms of State, the conditions under which they naturally rise, the laws which they adopt, and the institutions by which they are maintained. He examines States with the keen sense of the scientific investigator, who pays equal regard to the small and the great, to the normal and the abnormal, as well as with the practical eye of the statesman, who desires to do justice to the actual circumstances and adapt his ideal to the given conditions. He possesses, moreover,

πλεῖστον χρόνον: λέγω δ' οἷον εἴ τινι πόλει συμβέβηκε μήτε την αρίστην πολιτεύεσθαι πολιτείαν άχορήγητόν τε είναι και τῶν άναγκαίων [the necessary requisites for the best], μήτε την ενδεχομένην $\epsilon \kappa$ των ύπαρχόντων, ἀλλά τινα φαυλοτέραν. (Cf. iv. 11, 1296, b, 9: λέγω δὲ τὸ πρὸς ὑπόθεσιν, ὅτι πολλάκις ούσης άλλης πολιτείας αίρετωτέρας ένίοις οὐθέν κωλύσει συμφέρειν έτέραν μᾶλλον είναι πολιτείαν; also v. 11, 1314, a, 38.) The πολιτεία έξ ὑποθέσεωs is, according to this statement, identical with ή δοθείσα πολιτεία, $\dot{\upsilon}\pi\dot{\delta}\theta\epsilon\sigma\iota s$ indicating the given case, the particular circumstances that are actually present, and having, therefore, essentially the same meaning as on p. 247, n. 2, and Ph.d. Gr. i. 1015 med., where it is distinguished from θέσις. With the above passage PLAT. Laws, v. 739, A sqq., has been compared. The resemblance, however, is a remote one; for (1) Plato speaks not of four but only of three States to be depicted; (2) he

enters into no details with reference to the third of these (the first is that of the Rep., the second that of the Laws), but he can hardly have been thinking of actually existing States; (3) even the second State, that of the Laws, does not correspond with Aristotle's πολιτεία ἐκ τῶν ὑποκειμένων ἀρίστη, for Plato does not show in this work what is the best that can be evolved from existing circumstances, but, just as in the Rep., sketches the outline of an ideal State, which only differs from that in the Rev. in bearing a closer resemblance to reality. Still less can the State in the Laws be identified with Aristotle's πολιτεία έξ ὑποθέσεως ἀρίστη, nor would Grote have done so (Plato, iii. 357 sq.) had he not wrongly explained ὑπόθεσις to mean an 'assumed principle.'

¹ See his complaint against his predecessors, ibid. 1238, b, 35: ων οἱ πλεῖστοι τῶν ἀποφαινομένων περὶ πολιτείαν, καὶ εἰ τᾶλλα the philosophic spirit, which traces political institutions back to their inner sources, looks past individual facts to universal conceptions, and while engaged in the investigation of existing realities keeps an eye steadily fixed on the ideal. It is just this combination of dissimilar and rarely united qualities that makes Aristotle's political philosophy so unique and unrivalled in its kind.

Two points of view have emerged in the preceding discussion, from which we may distinguish and estimate the different forms of political constitutionviz. the recognised aim of government, and the distribution of political power. In the former respect the contrast is between those States in which the common good and those in which the advantage of the rulers is pursued as the highest end. In treating, on the other hand, of the distribution of political power, Aristotle retains at first the customary arithmetical division of States according as they are governed by one, by some, or by all of the citizens. Combining these two principles, he enumerates six forms of constitution, three of which are good and three bad, setting down all those as unjust and despotic in which the aim is not the common good, but the advantage of the rulers.2 Where the

λέγουσι καλώς, τών γε χρησίμων διαμαρτάνουσιν. aims primarily at the good of the governed, but in a secondary way also at that of the head of the house in so far as he is himself a member of the family—so in the State we must distinguish the two above-mentioned kinds of government.

² iii. 6 fin.: φανερον τοίνυν ως δσαι μεν πολιτεῖαι το κοινῆ συμφέρον

¹ iii. 6. 1278. a, 30 sqq.: As in the household the government of the slaves aims at securing in the first instance the advantage of the master, and only secondarily that of the slaves as a means to the former, and as the government of the family, on the other hand,

administration has for its object the common good, if one is the sovereign, we have a monarchy; if a minority, an aristocracy; if the whole body of the citizens, a polity; where it has for its object the advantage of the sovereign, monarchy degenerates into tyranny, aristocracy into oligarchy, polity into democracy. This

σκοπουσιν, αθται μέν όρθαι τυγχάνουσιν οὖσαι κατὰ τὸ ἀπλῶς δίκαιον. δσαι δὲ τὸ σφέτερον μόνον τῶν αρχόντων, ήμαρτημέναι πασαι καλ παρεκβάσεις των δρθών πολιτειών. δεσποτικαί γάρ, ή δὲ πόλις κοινωνία τῶν ἐλευθέρων ἐστίν. Hence iii 17 init .: ἔστι γάρ τι Φύσει δεσποστὸν καὶ ἄλλο βασιλευτὸν κοὰ ἄλλο πολιτικόν και δίκαιον και συμφέρον: τυραννικόν δ' οὐκ ἔστι κατά Φύσιν, οὐδὲ τῶν ἄλλων πολιτειῶν ὅσαι παρεκβάσεις εἰσίν: ταῦτα γάρ γίγνεται παρά φύσιν.

¹ Polit. iii. 7, iv. 2, 1289, a, 26, b, 9; Eth. viii. 12. Aristotle's account is here essentially that of Plato in the Politicus (cf. Ph. d. Gr. i. p. 784), of which he himself, (Polit. iv. 2, 1289, b, 5, reminds us, while at the same time he differs from it in a single respect. There is, indeed, between the Ethics and the Politics this divergency, that while in the latter the third of the three true forms of constitution is called simply 'polity,' it is said in the Ethics: τρίτη δ' ή από τιμημάτων, ην τιμοκρατικήν λέγειν οἰκεῖον Φαίνεται, πολιτείαν δ' αὐτὴν εἰώθασιν This disοί πλείστοι καλείν. crepancy, however, is not so important that we may infer from it a change in Aristotle's political views, or that to permit time for its occurrence we may place the Ethics on this ground considerably earlier than the Politics. For as a matter of fact the latter also describes its polity as a timocracy (see Ph. d. Gr. i. p. 745 sq.), so that the difference resolves itself finally into this: that in the Ethics, brevitatis causa, Aristotle calls it timocracy, whereas in the Politics he appropriates to it the common term πολιτεία, as he has room here to describe more accurately what he means by it. ISOCR. Panath, 131, has been taken to refer to the passage just cited from the Ethics (ONCKEN, Staatsl. d. Arist. ii. 160), and the conclusion drawn that the Ethics cannot have been composed later than ann. 342-339 B.C. (HENKEL, Stud. zür Gesch. d. griech. Lehre vom Staat, 46; Oncken takes another view). But it seems more probable that the passage refers to Plato, who in the Politicus (302 D sq.) adduces legal democracy, and in the Republic (viii. 545 B, C) timocracy, as peculiar forms of constitution; for Isocrates does not say that the writer upon whom his attack is made identifies these two (as Aristotle does). If, however, we are to find here a reference to the followers of Plato as well, and especially to Aristotle, it would probably be better to suppose that the rhetorician has in view one of his dia-

principle of arrangement, however, is not consistently preserved throughout; for while it might appear from the above statement that aristocracy and polity differ from monarchy only in the number of the rulers, we learn in another passage that this itself depends upon the character of the people. So the government by one is natural where in a people one family has a preeminent faculty for government; aristocracy, where a community of free citizens is content to submit to the government of the fittest; polity, where the population is a military one which, having distributed the offices of State among the propertied classes according to the standard of merit, knows both how to command and how to obey. Referring further to the distinction between democracy and oligarchy, Aristotle criticises those who look for it in the fact that in the former the whole body, in the latter a minority, of the citizens hold the sovereignty. This numerical distinction, he = holds, is merely accidental and derivative: the essential opposition of these two forms of constitution consists in the fact that in the one the rich, in the other the poor, bear rule.² In like manner that polity which stands between them is distinguished by the preponderance of the middle class.3 Elsewhere he finds the characteristic =

logues (such as that mentioned in *Politi*. iii 6; see i. p. 119, n. 1, *supra*). That the *Ethics* cannot have been composed so early as Henkel believes, has already been shown, i. p. 154 sq.

¹ iii. 17, 1288, â, 1: βασιλευτόν μεν οδν το τοιοῦτόν ἐστι πλῆθος δ πέφυκε φέρειν γένος ὑπερέχον κατ' ἀρετὴν πρός ἡγεμονίας πολιτικὴν, ἀριστοκρατικὸν δὲ πλῆθος δ πέφυκε φέρειν πλήθος ἄρχεσθαι δυνάμενον τήν τῶν ἐλευθέρων ἀρχήν ὑπὸ τῶν κατ' ἀρετήν ἡγεμονικῶν πρὸς πολιτικήν ἀρχήν, πολιτικὸν δὲ πλήθος ἐν ῷ πέφυκεν ἐγγίνεσθαι πλήθος πολεμικὸν, δυνάμενον ἄρχεσθαι καὶ ἄρχειν κατὰ νόμον τὸν κατ' ἀξίαν διανέμοντα τοῖς εὐπόροις τὰς ἀρχάς.

² Polit. iii. 8, cf. c. 7 fin. iv. 11, 12, 1296, a, 1, b, 24 sqq.

³ iv. 12, 1296, b, 38.

peculiarity of democracy in freedom and equality, in the fact that all free men have an equal share in the government; and then combining this principle with the two others, he says that in democracy the majority of the poor and the free, in oligarchy conversely the minority of the rich and the noble, are the rulers; ¹ for since in a State where all are equal the majority of votes decides, and the poor always form a majority, these have necessarily the power in their own hands. ² Following up the same line of thought, he indicates virtue, wealth, and freedom as severally characteristic of different forms of constitution: virtue of aristocracy, wealth of oligarchy, freedom of democracy. ³ In a third

1 iv. 4, where it is first said (1290, b, 1): δήμος μέν ἐστιν ὅταν οἱ ἐλεύθεροι κύριοι ὧσιν, ὀλιγαρχία δ' ὅταν οἱ πλούσιοι, but afterwards at the end (1. 17): ἀλλ' ἔστι ὅημοκρατία μὲν ὅταν οἱ ἐλεύθεροι καὶ ἄποροι πλείους ὄντες κύριοι τῆς ἀρχῆς ὧσιν, ὀλιγαρχία δ' ὅταν οἱ πλούσιοι καὶ εὐγενέστεροι ὀλίγοι ὄντες. Ibid. 1291, b, 34: εἴπερ γὰρ ἐλευθερία μάλιστ' ἐστὶν ἐν ὅημοκρατία καθάπερ ὑπολαμβάνουσί τινες καὶ ἰσότης.

 έν ταῖς δημοκρατίαις συμβαίνει κυριωτέρους είναι τοὺς ἀπόρους τῶν εὐπόρων· πλείους γάρ εἰσι, κύριον δὲ τὸ τοῖς πλείοσι δόξαν. The equality of all citizens is thus seen to be the fundamental point from which government by majority follows as an inference (συμβαίνει) and from that again government by the poor.

³ iv. 8, 1294. a, 10: ἀριστοκρατίας μέν γάρ δρος άρετη. όλιγαρχίας δὲ πλοῦτος, δήμου δ΄ έλευθερία. L. 19: τρία έστι τὰ άμφισβητούντα της Ισότη-ος της πολιτείας, έλευθερία πλοῦτος άρετή (τὸ γὰρ τέταρτον, δ καλοῦσιν εὐγένειαν, ἀκολουθεί τοίς δυσίν ή γάρ εὐγένειά ἐστιν ἀρχαῖος πλοῦτος каl аретh). Cf. iii. 12, 1283, a. 16 sqq. (see p. 229, supra); v. 9. 1310, a, 28; Rhet. i. 8, 1366, a, 4: ἔστι δὲ δημοκρατίας μὲν τέλος έλευθερία, όλιγαρχίας δὲ πλοῦτος. αριστοκρατίας δέ τα πρός παιδείαν καὶ τὰ νόμιμα, τυραννίδος δὲ φυλακή.

passage 1 he enumerates four constitutions: democracy, = oligarchy, aristocracy, and government by one. democracy, he says, the offices of government are distributed according to lot, in an oligarchy according to property, in an aristocracy according to education.2 The government of one is a monarchy if it is founded upon law and order; otherwise it is a tyranny. These statements are not altogether consistent with one another; but a still greater difficulty arises from the circumstance that in the further development of his argument Aristotle diverges widely from the order of arrangement which is naturally suggested by the previous survey of the different forms of constitution. Thus we should have expected from Book III. 14 onwards a discussion first of the three good kinds of State, and then of the Instead of this, Aristotle follows up the introductory dissertations which occupy chaps. 9-13 of the third book with a discussion of monarchy (III. 14-17); he next proposes to investigate (III. 18) the best form of State, which, however, he only partially does in the books (VII. and VIII.) which ought to follow here; he next turns, in the fourth book (chap. 2), to the remaining forms of constitution, with the remark that of the six previously enumerated forms monarchy and aristocracy have been disposed of, as these coincide with the best State, and that it therefore remains to discuss polity, oligarchy, democracy, and

Rhet. i. 8, 1365, b, 29.

political capacity and attachment to the existing constitution which spring from it: οἱ γὰρ ἐμμεμενηκότες ἐν τοῖς νομίμοις ἐν τῆ αριστοκρατία αρχουσιν, ibid, 1, 35.

² Παιδεία ὑπὸ τοῦ νόμου κειμένη, by which we are to understand not so much intellectual culture as an education in accordance with law and morality and the

tyranny; he accordingly now proceeds to investigate, in the first place (chap. 4, 1291, b, 14-chap. 6, end), the different forms of democracy and oligarchy; then (chap. 8 sq.) polity as the proper blending of these two constitutions, along with several kindred forms (chap. 7); and, lastly, tyranny (chap. 10). This divergence from the previous account is much too fundamental to permit of its being accounted for by the incomplete character of the Politics alone, and too indispensable to permit of its being explained away.1 We are forced to admit that just as Aristotle in his account of the distinguishing characteristics of democracy and oligarchy unites several different points of view which he fails completely to harmonise with one another, so also in his treatment of polity he is not free from a certain vacillation. On the one hand, he reckons it among the good States, on the ground that it is based upon the virtue of the citizens and aims at the common good. On the other hand, he is unable to

may point out: (1) that the perfect State described in vii. and viii. is never referred to (not even iii. 7, 1279, a, 39, vii. 14, 1332, a, 34) as polity (πολιτεία simply), but as aristrocacy or αρίστη πολιτεία (e.g. iv. 7, 1293, b, 1, c. 2, 1289, a, 31), and that polity stands only third among true constitutions: (2) that in passages such as Polit. iv. 2 init. c. 8 init. we are expressly forbidden to make any distrinction between the polity of iv. and of the Ethics, and the polity previously mentioned among the true forms of constitution.

¹ E. g. in the manner proposed by FECHNER (üb. d. Gerechtigkeitsbegriff d. Arist. p. 71 sq. n., cf. p. 92, 1), who assumes that by the polity of Eth. viii. 12 and Polit. iv. we must understand something different from the 'true polity' which appears in Polit. vii. as the ideal State. Setting aside the unlikelihood of Aristotle's describing two different forms of constitution by the same name without qualifying addition, and of his totally omitting in his subsequent discussion all further mention of the 'true polity' described in iii., we

place it on a level with true monarchy and aristocracy. For it is still government by the many, and a majority can never atttain to so high a degree of virtue and insight as is possible to one or to few. The one field in which a polity can win distinction is the military, and accordingly the sovereign in it will naturally be the collective body of those capable of bearing arms.2 The virtue, therefore, upon which the State is here founded is an imperfect one. The natural antagonisms between the citizens are not removed, as in an aristocracy, by a comprehensive and uniform education of all and an equal freedom from meaner employments. The problem, therefore, must be to devise for it such institutions that antagonistic forces will be held in equilibrium, the excesses alike of democracy and of oligarchy avoided. and the foundation laid for that predominance of the middle classes which constitutes in Aristotle's opinion, as we shall see, the chief advantage of polity. While it is possible in this way to explain the place which this form of constitution occupies in Aristotle's account, the ambiguity of its position remains a permanent defect in his theory of the State. The fundamental mistake,

Cf. Eth. viii. 12, 1160, a, 35: τούτων δὲ [of the true forms of State] βελτίστη μὲν ἡ βασιλεία, χειρίστη δὶ ἡ τμοκρατία (which here = πολιτεία; cf. p. 238, n. 1, sup.) b, 16: democracy is chiefly related to timocracy, the majority of the citizens ruling in both with equal right, and springs from it almost imperceptibly.

2 iii. 7, 1279, a, 39 : ένα μεν γὰρ διαφέρειν κατ' ἀρετὴν ἡ ὀλίγους ἐνδέχεται, πλείους δ' ήδη χαλεπον ηκριβώσθαι πρὸς πᾶσαν ἀρετ ἡν ἀλλὰ μάλιστα τὴν πολεμικήν · αὔτη γὰρ ἐν πλήθει γίγνεται. διόπερ κατὰ ταὐτην τὴν πολιτείαν κυριωτατον τὸ προπολεμοῦν καὶ μετέχουσιν αὐτῆς οἱ κεκτημένοι τὰ ὅπλα. In accordance with this passage and c. 17 (see 239, n. 1, supra) we should read in 1. 37 (differently from Spengel, Abh. d. Münchn. Akad. philos.-philol. Kl. v. 23), instead of τὸ πλῆθος, τὸ πολεμικὸν πλῆθος.

however, which is the cause of this ambiguity, consists in the crude division of political constitutions into good and bad, with which he starts. In polity and that improper form of aristocracy which is akin to it, there obtrudes itself between these two alternatives a third kind, which has no clear place assigned to it, unless we give up this division and supplement the qualitative opposition between good and bad by a quantitative difference in degrees of perfection.¹

Inquiring next into the respective titles of these different forms of constitution, we must first recal what was said above—viz. that in each and all of them the question is of a distribution of rights and privileges which can only be determined according to the principles of distributive justice. These demand that equals receive an equal portion; unequals, on the contrary, in proportion to their inequality an unequal portion.² It is not, however, each and every superiority that entitles to political privileges, but only those which, like birth, freedom, wealth, virtue, stand in intimate relation to the qualities which are essential to a citizen, and are the indispensable elements in a full and satisfy-

1 Aristotle himself takes occasion (iv. 8 init.) to justify the place he assigns to polity. Έταξαμεν δ' ούτως, he says, οὐκ οδσαν ούτε ταύτην [polity] παρέκβασιν ούτε τὰς ἄρτι ἡηθείσας ἀριστοκρατίας, ὅτι τὸ μὲν ἀληθὲς πῶσαι διημαρτήκασι τῆς ὀρθοτάτης πολιτείας, ἀc. But this only serves to corroborate the above remarks. For if polity is neither the best nor a vicious form of constitution, it is obvious that ponstitutions cannot be divided

simply into good and bad, seeing that what differentiates polity from the best State is a mere want, so that one and the same constitution presents itself in comparison with the best as a defective one (διημαρτήκασι), in comparison with all others as a true one. Even in respect of the other forms Aristotle admits that they may be relatively good; cf. e.g. v. 9, 1309, b, 18-35.

² See p. 228 sq. supra.

ing social life.1 But even any one of such advantages as these confers no title to rule in the State. Those who demand to stand on a footing of equality with others in everything because they are equal in something, or who assert pre-eminence in all respects on the ground of pre-eminence in some, put forward an unfounded claim.2 The problem therefore is, to determine the relative worth of those qualities upon which a title to political privileges can be based, and thus to estimate the value of the claims of the various classes to the sovereignty, as these express themselves in the various forms of constitution.3 The highest of these qualities, and that which in the perfect State is alone of importance, Aristotle declares, as we have already seen,4 to be virtue; although he does not deny to the others their importance. But besides the character of individuals, we must also take into account their numerical proportion. It does not follow because an individual or the members of a minority are superior to all the rest individually in virtue, insight and property, that they must therefore be superior to the whole body taken together. A majority of individuals, each of whom taken by himself is inferior to the minority, may as a whole possess an advantage over them, as each member finds his complement in the other, and all thus attain a higher perfection. The individual contribution to the

¹ iii. 12, 1282, b, 21-1283, a, 23; cf. p. 229 sq. supra.
² iii. 9, 1280, a, 22, c. 13,

² III. 9, 1280, a, 22, c. 13, 1283, a, 26, v. 1, 1301, a, 25 sqq. b, 35.

³ Aristotle does not himself formulate the problem precisely

thus, but the above statement of it corresponds to what he says iii. 13, 1283, a, 29-b, 9 upon the ἀμφισβήτησιs and the κρίσιs τίνας ἀρχειν δεί.

⁴ P. 230 sq. supra.

State in this case is less, but the sum of the contributions is greater than in the case of the others.1 this does not hold of every body of people without distinction, yet there may be peoples of whom it is true.2 In such cases, while it would certainly be wrong to entrust to individual members of the majority offices of State which require special personal qualifications, yet it must be the people as a whole who in the public assemblies and law courts pass decisions, elect magistrates, and supervise their administration,3 all the more as it would be in the highest degree dangerous for the State to convert the majority of the citizens into enemies by completely excluding them from a share in / the government.4 In answer to the objection that this is to set the incapable in judgment over the capable, to place the more important function (viz. the highest

¹ Aristotle frequently returns to this acute remark, which is of so much importance in estimating democratic institutions; see iii. 11 init.: ὅτι δὲ δεῖ κύριον εἶναι μάλλον τὸ πληθος ή τοὺς ἀρίστους μέν όλίγους δέ, δόξειεν αν λύεσθαι καί τιν' έχειν άπορίαν, τάχα δὲ κᾶν άλήθειαν, τοὺς γάρ πολλοὺς, ὧν έκαστός έστιν ού σπουδαίος άνηρ, δμως ενδέχεται συνελθόντας είναι βελτίους έκείνων, ούχ ώς έκαστον άλλ' ώς σύμπαντας, οΐον τὰ συμφορητά δείπνα των έκ μιας δαπάνης χορηγηθέντων [similarly c. 15, 1286, a, 25]· πολλών γάρ ὄντων εκαστον μόριον έχειν ἀρετῆς καὶ φρονήσεως, και γίνεσθαι συνελθόντας ώσπερ ένα άνθρωπον το πληθος πολύποδα καὶ πολύχειρα καὶ πολλάς έχοντ' αἰσθήσεις, ούτω καὶ περὶ τὰ ήθη και την διάνοιαν. c. 13, 1283, a, 40: ἀλλὰ μὴν καὶ οί

πλείους πρὸς τοὺς ἐλάττους [ες. ἀμφισβητήσειαν ἃν περὶ τῆς ἀρχῆς] · καὶ γὰρ κρείττους καὶ πλουσιώτεροι καὶ βελτίους εἰσὶν, ὡς λαμβανομένων τῶν πλειόνων πρὸς τοὺς ἐλάττους. 1283, b, 33 : οὐδὲν γὰρ κωλύει ποτὲ τὸ πλήθος εἶναι βέλτιον τῶν ὀλίγων καὶ πλουσιώτερον, οὐχ ὡς καθ' ἔκαστον ἀλλ' ὡς ἀθρόους.

² iii. 11, 1282, b, 15.

⁸ By the public scrutiny $(\epsilon i \theta i \nu \eta)$, c. 11, 1281, b, 33, 1282, a, 26.

4 c. 11, 1281, b, 21 sqq., especially l. 34: πάντες μὲν γὰρ ἔχουσι συνελθόντες ἰκανὴν αἴσθησιν, και μιγνύμενοι τοῖς βελτίοσι τὰς πόλεις ἀφελοῦσιν, καθάπερ ἡ μὴ καθαρὰ τροφἡ μετὰ τῆς καθαρᾶς τὴν πᾶσαν ποιεῖ χρησιματέραν τῆς ὁλίγης χωρίς δ' ἔκαστος ἀτελὴς περὶ τὸ κρίνειν ἐστίν.

authority in the State) in the hands of those who are excluded from the less important (viz. the individual offices), Aristotle adds to the above exposition 1 the further pertinent observation that there are many things of which the user can judge as well as or better than the specialist who makes them: 2 in other words, that the people, although it may not understand much about the details of State and government, may yet know well enough whether or not a government is advancing its interests. The smaller capacity, therefore, of the individuals may be counterbalanced and even outweighed by their greater numbers; and vice versa, their greater capacity by their smaller number. The more capable have no claim to the possession of power if there are too few of them to govern or to form of themselves a State.3 The first condition of the survival of any constitution is that its supporters should be superior to its enemies. But this is a question, not of quality alone, but of numbers. It is only by taking both of these elements into account that we can properly estimate the balance of political power. The stronger party is the one which is superior to the other, either in both these respects or so decisively in one of them that the deficiency in

πλεῖον τὸ πάντων τούτων ἡ τῶν καθ' ένα καὶ κατ' ολίγους μεγάλας άρχὰς ἀρχόντων.

¹ Cf. further c. 11, 1282, a, 14: ἔσται γὰρ ἕκαστος μὲν χείρων κριτής των είδότων, απαντες δέ συνελθόντες ή βελτίους ή οὐ χείρους. L. 34: οὐ γὰρ ὁ δικαστής οὐδ' ὁ έκκλησιαστής άρχων έστιν, άλλὰ τὸ δικαστήριον καὶ ἡ βουλὴ καὶ ὁ δῆμος· τῶν δὲ ἡηθέντων ἕκαστος μόριόν έστι τούτων . . . ώστε δικαίως κύριον μειζόνων τὸ πληθος · ἐκ γὰρ πολλῶν ὁ δημος καὶ ἡ βουλὴ καὶ τὸ δικαστήριον. καὶ τὸ τίμημα δὲ

² Ibid. 1282, a, 17. ⁸ iii. 13, 1283, b, 9: εἰ δὴ τὸν άριθμον είεν ολίγοι πάμπαν οί την αρετήν έχοντες, τίνα δεί διελείν τον τρόπον; ή τὸ ἀλίγοι πρὸς τὸ ἔργον δεί σκοπείν, εί δυνατοί διοικείν την πόλιν ή τοσούτοι το πλήθος ώστ' είναι πόλιν έξ αὐτῶν.

the other is more than counterbalanced.¹ The influence of individuals or classes will be in proportion to the amount which they severally contribute to the stability of the State and the attainment of its end. The end, however, must always be the good of the whole, and not the advantage of any particular class.² And since this object is more certainly attained under the rule of law than under that of men, who are continually subject to all kinds of weakness and passion, Aristotle differs from Plato³ in concluding that it is better that good laws hold sway, and that magistrates be left to the freedom of their own will only in cases which laws fail to cover, owing to their necessary universality and the impossibility of taking account of every individual case that may occur. If it be objected that the law may

1 iv. 12, 1296, b, 15: δεῖ γὰρ κρείττον είναι το βουλόμενον μέρος της πόλεως του μη βουλομένου μένειν την πολιτείαν. [So v. 9, 1309, b, 16.] ἔστι δὲ πᾶσα πόλις έκ τε τοῦ ποιοῦ καὶ τοῦ ποσοῦ. λέγω δὲ ποιὸν μὲν ἐλευθερίαν πλοῦτον παιδείαν εὐγένειαν, ποσόν δὲ την τοῦ πλήθους ὑπεροχήν. ἐνδέχεται δὲ τὸ μὲν ποιὸν ὑπάρχειν ἐτέρφ μέρει τῆς πόλεως, . . . ἄλλφ δε μέρει το ποσον, οίον πλείους τον άριθμον είναι των γενναίων τους άγεννείς ή των πλουσίων τοὺς ἀπόρους, μη μέντοι τοσοῦτον ὑπερέχειν τῶ ποσῶ ὅσον λείπεσθαι τῶ ποιῷ. διό ταῦτα πρός άλληλα συγκριτέον. δπου μέν οδν ύπερέχει το των ἀπόρων πληθος την είρημένην ἀναλογίαν, ένταθθα πέφυκεν είναι δημοκρατίαν, καὶ ἔκαστον εἶδος δημοκρατίας [organised or lawless, &c. κατά την ύπεροχην τοῦ δήμου έκαστου [according as farmers or labourers, &c., preponderate] ... ὅπου δὲ τὸ τῶν εὐπόρων καὶ γνωρίμων μᾶλλον ὑπερτείνει τῷ ποιῷ ἢ λείπεται τῷ ποσῷ, ἐνταῦθα δὲ ὀλιγαρχ΄αν, καὶ τῆς ὀλιγαρχίας τὸν αὐτὸν τρόπου ἔκαστον εἶδος κατὰ τὴν ὑπεροχὴν τοῦ ὀλιγαρχικοῦ πλήθους ... ὅπου δὲ τὸ τῶν μέσων ὑπερτείνει πλῆθος ἢ συναμφοτέρων τῶν ἄκρων ἢ καὶ θατέρου μόνον, ἐνταῦθ' ἐνδέχεται πολιτείαν εἶναι μόνιμον.

² iii. 13, 1283, b, 36: Ought the legislator to look to the advantage of the better or of the greater number? τὸ δ' ὀρθυ ληπτέον ἴσως τὸ δ' ἴσως ὀρθυ πρὸς τὸ τῆς πόλεως ὅλης συμφέρον καὶ πρὸς τὸ κοινὸν τὸ τῶν πολιτῶν, Hence all forms of constitution which do not aim at the general welfare are resolutely regarded as bad.

³ Cf. Ph. d. Gr. i. p. 762 sq.

Itself be partial. Aristotle admits that it is true; the law will be good or bad, just or unjust, according as the constitution is so, since laws everywhere correspond to the existing constitution. But the conclusion which he draws is, not that persons instead of laws should adjudicate, but that constitutions should be good.1 The final result of all these considerations is, therefore, the demand for an order founded upon law, and aiming at the common good of all, in which influence and privilege should be assigned to individuals and classes according to their importance for the life of the whole.

We have next to consider the case in which an individual or a minority possesses personal qualities so outstanding as wholly to outweigh all the others put together in ability and political importance. Would it not be unjust to place such persons on an equal footing

iii. 10: In whom shall the sovereignty reside? In the masses, the rich, the best, in some distinguished citizen, or in a tyrant? After recounting all these different views, and dismissing the third and fourth with the remark that in that case the majority of the citizens would be excluded from all political rights, Aristotle continues, 1281. a, 34: ἀλλ' ἴσως φαίη τις ὰν τὸ κύριον ὅλως ἄνθρωπον εἶναι άλλὰ μὴ νόμον φαῦλον, ἔχοντά γε τὰ συμβαίνοντα πάθη περί τὴν ψυχήν. He suggests, indeed, an objection: αν οδν ή νόμος μέν όλιγαρχικός δέ ή δημοκρατικός, τί διοίσει περί τῶν ἡπορημένων; συμβήσεται γαρ δμοίως [i.e. as in the case of the personal rule of the see p. 252, infra.

rich or of the people τὰ λεχθέντα πρότερον. Nevertheless he arrives finally at the conclusion (1282, b, 1): ή δε πρώτη λεχθείσα απυρία ποιεί φανερον ουδέν ούτως έτερον ώς ότι δεί τους νόμους είναι κυρίους κειμένους ὀρθώς, τὸν ἄρχοντα δὲ, ἄν τε είς άν τε πλείους ὧσι, περλ τούτων είναι κυρίους περλ ὅσων έξαδυνατοῦσιν οἱ νόμοι λέγειν ἀκριβως διά τὸ μὴ ράδιον είναι καθόλου δηλώσαι περί πάντων. But the character of the laws depends upon the constitution (πολιτεία in the wider sense explained p. 232 sq.): ἀλλὰ μὴν εἰ τοῦτο, δῆλον ύτι τους μέν κατά τὰς ὀρθὰς πολιτείας άναγκαῖον είναι δικαίους. τους δε κατά τας παρεκβεβηκυίας ου δικαίους. On the supremacy of law

with the others, whom in every respect they so far excel? Would it not be as ridiculous as to ask the lion to enter on an alliance of equal rights with the hare? If a State will suffer no political inequality, nothing is left for it but to exclude from its pale members who thus excel the common mass. In that sense, the institution of the Ostracism is not without a certain justification: it may, under certain circumstances, be indispensable to the safety of the democracy. In itself, however, it is wholly unjust, and, as a matter of fact, was abused for party ends. The true solution is to regard men of decisive superiority, not as mere members, but as the destined rulers of the State, not as under the law, but as themselves the law. They dwell among men like gods-you can as little rule over them or divide the power with them as you can divide the sovereignty of Jove. Only one attitude is possible towards them—namely, voluntary subjection. They are the natural, born kings; 1 they

1 iii. 13, 1284, a, 3: εἰ δέ τις έστιν είς τοσούτον διαφέρων κατ' άρετης ύπερβολ'ν, ή πλείους μέν ένδς μη μέντοι δυνατοί πλήρωμα παρασχέσθαι πόλεως, ώστε μη συμβλητην είναι την των άλλων άρετην πάντων μηδέ την δύναμιν αὐτῶν την πολιτικήν πρός την έκείνων, εί πλείους, είδ' είς, την εκείνου μόνον, ουκέτι θετέον τούτους μέρος πόλεως. άδικήσονται γάρ άξιούμενοι των ζσων, άνισοι τοσούτον κατ' άρετην ύντες και την πολιτικήν δύναμιν. ώσπερ γάρ θεδν έν άνθρώποις είκδς είναι τον τοιούτον . όθεν δήλον ότι καλ την νομοθεσίαν άναγκαῖον είναι περί τους ίσους και τώ γένει και τή δυνάμει. κατὰ δὲ τῶν τοιούτων οὐκ ἔστι νόμος αὐτοὶ γὰρ εἰσι

voμos. And then follows the discussion in the text above, after which Aristotle continues, 1284. b, 25 : ἀλλ' ἐπὶ τῆς ἀρίστης πο-λιτείας ἔχει πολλὴν ἀπορίαν, οὐ κατὰ τῶν ἄλλων ἀγαθῶν τὴν ύπεροχην, οίον ίσχύος και πλούτου καί πολυφιλίας, άλλ' άν τις γένηται διαφέρων κατ' άρετην, τί χρη ποιείν: ου γάρ δη φαίεν αν δείν εκβάλλειν καὶ μεθιστάναι τὸν τοιοῦτον. ἀλλὰ μην ουδ' ἄρχειν γε τοῦ τοιούτου · παραπλήσιον γὰρ κὰν εὶ τοῦ Διὸς άρχειν άξιοῖεν, μερίζοντες τὰς ἀρχάς. λείπεται τοίνυν, δπερ ξοικε πεφυκέναι, πείθεσθαι τῷ τοιούτφ πάντας ασμένως, ώστε βασιλέας είναι τοὺς τοιούτους αιδίους έν ταις πόλεσιν. Similarly c. 17, 1288, a, 15 sqq.

alone have a true and unconditional title to monarchy. Such a monarchy Aristotle calls the best of all constitutions, believing as he does that under it the well-being of the people is best secured; for he alone is king in this high sense who is endowed with every excellence and free from every mortal defect; nor will such a one seek his own advantage at the cost of his subjects, but, like a god, will lavish upon them benefits out of his own abundance. In general, however, Aristotle is no eulogist of monarchy. The different kinds of it which he enumerates, he regards as mere varieties of two fundamental forms—namely, military command

¹ Cf. iii. 17, 1281, b, 41 sqq.

Eth. viii. 12, 1160, a, 35: τούτων δὲ [of the true forms of constitution] βελτίστη μὲν ἡ βασιλεία χειρίστη δ' ἡ τιμοκρατία.

\$ Ιδιά. b, 2: ὁ μὲν γὰρ τύραννος τὸ ἐαυτῷ συμφέρον σκοπεῖ, ὁ δὲ βασιλεὺς τὸ τῶν ἀρχομένων. οὐ γὰρ ἐστι βασιλεὺς ὁ μὴ αὐτάρκης καὶ πᾶσι τοῖς ἀγαθοῖς ὑπερέχων. ὁ δὲ τοιοῦτος οὐδενὸς προσδεῖται τὰ ἀφέλιμα οῦν αὐτῷ μὲν οὐκ ἄν σκοποίη τοῖς δ' ἀρχομένοις · ὁ γὰρ μὴ τοιοῦτος κληρωτὸς ἄν τις εἴη βασιλεύς. Cf. p. 250, n. 1, κυρτω,

⁴ In the section $\pi\epsilon\rho$ l βασιλείαs, which Aristotle inserts iii. 14–17, and which, as it is closely connected with the preceding discussion, we must here notice. Besides true monarchy he there enumerates five kinds of monarchical rule: (1) that of the heroic age; (2) that which is common among barbarians; (3) the rule of the so-called Æsymnetæ or elective princes; (4) the Spartan; (6) unlimited monarchy $(\pi\alpha\mu\beta\alpha\sigma\iota\lambda\epsilon i\alpha, c, 16, 1287)$

a, 8). The first of these kinds. he remarks (c. 14, 1285, b, 3 sqq., 20 sqq., a, 7, 14), was rather a union of certain offices, judicial, priestly, military; similarly, the Spartan was an hereditary com-The monarchy of the mand. barbarians, on the other hand, hereditary mastership (ἀρχὴ δεσποτική...but the government of slaves is despotic, that of freemen political; Polit. iii. 4, 1277, a, 33, b, 7, c. 6, 1278, b, 32, 1279, a, 8), to which, however, the subjects voluntarily submit, and which is limited by traditional usage (iii. 14, 1285, a, 16, b, 23). Elective monarchy is a dictatorship either for life or for a definite time or object. (On the aiρετή τυραννίς v. ibid. a, 29 sqq. b, 25.) Only in an irresponsible monarchy is an individual actually master of a whole people; it is a kind of magnified domestic rule : ωσπερ γαρ ή οἰκονομική βασιλεία τις οἰκίας έστιν, ούτως ή βασιλεία πόλεως και έθνους ένδς ή πλειόνων οἰκονομία (ibid.b. 29 sqq.).

for life and irresponsible sovereignty. The former, however, is applicable to the most diverse forms of constitution, and cannot, therefore, be the fundamental characteristic of any one of them. By a monarchical constitution, therefore, in the present inquiry, we can only mean irresponsible monarchy. But against this form of government there are, according to Aristotle, many objections. That it may, under certain circumstances, be natural and justifiable he does not, indeed, -deny. A people which is incapable of governing itself must needs have a governor. In such a case government by one is just and salutary.2 If, on the other / hand, the case be one of a people consisting of freemen who stand to one another in a relation of essential equality, personal rule contradicts the natural law, which assigns equal rights to equals; in such States the only just arrangement is that power should alternate; but where this is the case it is law, and not the will of a monarch, that rules.3 If, further, it be said that government by the best man is better than government by the best laws, because the latter issue only universal decrees without regard to the peculiarities of particular cases, we must remember, in the first place, that even the individual must be guided by universal principles

limited among some barbarian peoples as tyrannical. Nevertheless it is legitimate (κατὰ νόμον και πατρική); διὰ γὰρ τὸ δουλικώτεροι εἶναι τὰ ήθη φύσει οἱ μὲν βάρβαροι τῶν Ἑλλήνων, οἱ δὲ περὶ τὴν ᾿Ασίαν τῶν περὶ τὴν Εὐρώπην, ὑπομένουσι τὴν δεσποτικήν ἀρχὴν οὐδὲν δυσχεραίνοντες. Cf. p. 239, n. 1, sup.

⁸ iii. 16, 1287, a, 8 sqq. cf. c. 17, 1288, a, 12, c. 15, 1286, a, 36.

¹ iii. 15, 1286, b, 33-1287, a, 7, c. 16 *init*.

^{1,} c. 10 δπω.
2 iii. 17 init., after stating the objections to monarchy Aristotle continues: ἀλλ' ἴσως ταῦτ' ἐπὶ μέν τινων ἔχει τὸν τρόπον τοῦτον, ἐπὶ δέ τινων οὐχ οὕτως. ἔστι γάρ τι φύσει δεσποστὸν καὶ ἄλλο βασιλευτὸν καὶ ἄλλο πολιτικὸν καὶ δίκαιον καὶ συμφέρον. c. 14, 1285, a, 19: monarchical power is as un-

of government, and that it is better that these should be administered in their purity than that they should be obscured by distorting influences. Law is free from such influences, whereas every human soul is exposed to the disturbing influence of passion; law is reason without desire. Where law reigns, God reigns incarnate; where the individual, the beast reigns as well.1 this advantage seems to be again outweighed by the inability of law to take account of particular cases as the individual governor can, this is not decisive. follows, indeed, from it that the constitution must admit of an improvement upon the laws 2—that the cases which the law does not take account of must be submitted to authoritative judges and magistrates, and that provision should be made by means of a special education for a constant supply of men, to whom these

¹ iii. 15, 1286, a, 7-20, c. 16, 1287, α, 28: ὁ μὲν οὖν τὸν νόμον κελεύων άρχειν δοκεί κελεύειν άρχειν του θεόν και τον νοῦν μόνους, δ δ' ἄνθρωπον κελεύων προστίθησι καλ θηρίου. ή τε γάρ ἐπιθυμία τοιοῦτον [perhaps better: τοιοῦτον ον και δθυμός άρχοντας διαστρέφει καὶ τοὺς ἀρίστους ἄνδρας. διόπερ ἄνευ ὀρέξεως νοῦς ὁ νόμος ἐστίν. Cf. p. 248 sq. vi. 4, 1318, b, 39: ή γὰρ ἐξουσία τοῦ πράττειν ὅ τι ἄν έθέλη τις οὐ δύναται Φυλάττειν τὸ έν έκάστφ των ανθρώπων φαῦλον. Eth. v. 10, 1134, a, 35: διδ οὐκ έωμεν άρχειν άνθρωπον, άλλά τον λόγον [al. νόμον], ὅτι ἐαυτῷ τοῦτο ποιεί και γίνεται τύραννος.

² Aristotle touches on this point, ii. 8, 1268, b, 31 sqq. He there says that neither the written nor the unwritten laws can be unchangeable. Govern-

ment, like all other arts and sciences, reaches perfection gradually. From the earliest inhabitants of a country, whether they be autochthonous or a remnant of a more ancient population, little insight is to be expected: it would be absurd, therefore, to be bound by their precedents; written laws, moreover, cannot embrace every individual case. Nevertheless great prudence is required in changing the laws; the authority of the law rests entirely on use and wont, and this ought not to be infringed unnecessarily; men ought to put up with small anomalies rather than injure the authority of the law and the government and accustom the citizens to regard legislative changes lightly.

functions may be entrusted; but it does not by any means follow that the highest authority in the State should reside in an individual. On the contrary, the more undeniable it is that many are superior to one, that the latter is more liable to be fooled by passion and corrupted by desire than a multitude, and that even the monarch cannot dispense with a multitude of servants and assistants, the wiser it is to commit this authority into the hands of the whole people and cause it to be exercised by them, rather than by an individual 1 -assuming always that the people consist of free and capable men.² Furthermore, we cannot overlook the fact that use and custom are more powerful than written laws, and that government by these at any rate has the advantage over government by 'a man, even although we deny this of written law.3 A monarch, finally (and this argument weighs heavily with Aristotle), will almost inevitably desire to make his sovereignty hereditary in his family; and what guarantee have we in such a case

¹ C. 15, 1286, a, 20-b, 1, c. 16, 1287, a, 20-b, 35; cf. p. 246, n. 2, supra. Rhet. i. 1, 1354, a, 31 : it is best that as much as possible cases should be decided by law and withdrawn from judicial consideration; for (1) true insight is more likely to be found in the individual or the select few who make a law than in the many who have to apply it; (2) laws are the product of mature deliberation, judicial decisions of the moment; (3) the most important consideration of all: the legislator establishes universal principles for the future, law courts and popular assemblies decide

upon a special case, in which inclination, aversion and private advantage not unfrequently play a part. To these, therefore, we must leave, when possible, only such questions as refer to matters of fact—past or future.

 2 Ibid. 1286, a, 35: ἔστω δὲ τὸ πλῆθος οἱ ἐλεύθεροι, μηδὲν παρὰ τὸν νόμον πράττοντες, ἀλλ' ἢ περὶ ὧν ἐκλείπειν ἀναγκαῖον αὐτόν. We are dealing with ἀγαθοὶ καὶ ἄνδρες καὶ πολῖται. Το the further objection that in large masses factions commonly arise, the reply is made: ὅτι σπουδαῖοι τὴν ψυχὴν, ὥσπερ κἀκεῖνος ὁ εἶς.

³ c. 16, 1287, b, 5.

that it will not pass into the most unworthy hands, to the ruin of the whole people? On all these grounds Aristotle declares it to be better that the State be ruled by a capable body of citizens than by an individual: in other words, he gives 'aristocracy' the preference over 'monarchy.' Only in two cases does he regard the latter, as we have seen, as justified: when a people stands so low as to be incapable of self-government, or when an individual stands so pre-eminently out over all others that they are forced to revere him as their natural ruler. Of the former, he could not fail to find many = instances in actual experience; he himself, for instance, explains the Asiatic despotisms on this principle. the latter, neither his own time nor the whole history of his nation afforded him any example corresponding even remotely to the description, except that of his own pupil Alexander.3 The thought naturally suggests itself that he had him in his mind when he describes the prince whose personal superiority makes him a born ruler.4 Conversely, we can imagine that he used his ideal of the true king (if he had sketched it at so early a period as his residence in Macedonia 5) as a means of directing to beneficial ends a power which would endure

¹ c. 15, 1286, b, 22.

² c. 15, 1286, b, 3: εὶ δὴ τὴν μὲν τῶν πλειόνων ἀρχὴν ἀγαθῶν δ ἀνδρῶν πάντων ἀριστοκρατίαν ἐετέον, τὴν δὲ τοῦ ἐνδε βασιλείαν, αἰρετωτερον ἀν εἴη πόλεσιν ἀριστοκρατία βασιλείαs. Accordingly early monarchies have changed into republics as the number of capable people in the cities has increased.

³ Pericles alone might per-

haps have been mentioned alongside of him; he was, however, not a monarch, but a popular leader, and in *Polit*. ii. 12, 1274, a, 5 sqq. is treated merely as a demagogue.

⁴ See Oncken, Staatsl. d. Arist. ii. 268 sq.

⁵ He dedicated a treatise to Alexander περί βασιλείας; see p. 60, n. 1.

no opposition and no limitation, and of saying to a prince whose egotism would admit no title by the side of his own that absolute monarchy can only be merited by an equally absolute moral greatness. These speculations, however, are delusive. Aristotle himself remarks that no one any longer exists so far superior to all others as the true king must needs be. Moreover, throughout the *Politics* he accepts the presuppositions of Greek national and political life, and it is not likely that in his theory of monarchy he should have had the Macedonian Empire, whose origin, like that of other peoples, he elsewhere traces to definite historical sources, present to his thought. It is better to explain

1 v. 10, 1313, a, 3: οὐ γίγνονται δ' έτι βασιλείαι νῦν, ἀλλ' ἄνπερ γίγνωνται, μοναρχίαι και τυραννίδες μαλλον, διά τὸ τὴν βασιλείαν έκούσιον μέν άρχην είναι, μειζόνων δέ κυρίαν, πολλούς δ' είναι τοὺς όμοίους, καλ μηδένα διαφέροντα τοσούτον ώστε άπαρτίζειν πρός το μέγεθος και το άξίωμα της άρχης, ώστε διά μέν τοίτο έκόντες οὐχ ὑπομένουσιν: άν δὲ δι' ἀπάτης ἄρξη τις ή βίας, ήδη δοκεί τούτο είναι τυραννίς. This does not, indeed, primarily refer to the appearance in a state previously monarchical of prince whose personality corresponds to that of the ideal king, but to the introduction of monarchy in states which hitherto have had another form of constitution; the words μηδένα ... ἀρχης seem, however, to show that Aristotle in depicting the true king was not thinking of contemporary examples. Had he desired historical illustrations he would have preferred to look for them in

mythical times—perhaps in a Theseus—seeing that in iii. 15, 1286, a, 8 he supposes that monarchy is the oldest form of constitution, perhaps because the few capable people in antiquity stood more prominently out above the common man than in later times.

² Polit. v. 10, 1310, b, 39, where the Macedonian kings are mentioned along with the Spartan and Molossian as owing their position to their services as founders of states.

3 Even although the passage vii. 7 (see infra) were taken to mean that the Greek nation now that it has become politically united (strictly speaking it had not received μίαν πολιτείαν even from Philip and Alexander) is able to rule the world, and not merely that 'it would be able to rule the world if it were politically united,' it could not be quoted in proof of the view that Aristotle (as ONCKEN, Staatsl. d.

his views on this subject upon purely scientific principles. Among the different possible cases in which virtue may be the basis of political life, he had to take account of that in which the virtue resides primarily in the prince, and in which his spirit, passing into the community. confers upon it that prowess which he himself possesses. It would certainly not be difficult to prove from Aristotle's own statements about the weakness of human nature and the defects of absolute monarchy that such a case can never actually occur, that even the greatest and ablest man differs from a god, and that no personal greatness in a ruler can compensate for the legally organised co-operation of a free people, or can constitute a claim to unlimited command over free men. mined, however, though Aristotle usually is in his hostility to all false idealism, and careful though he is in the Politics to keep clearly in view the conditions of reality, he has here been unable wholly to rid himself of idealistic bias. He admits that the advent of a man who has a natural claim to sole supremacy is a rare exception; but he does not regard it as an impossibility, and accordingly considers it his duty not to overlook this case in the development of his theory.1

After thus discussing the principles of his division of states into their various kinds, Aristotle next proceeds to investigate the separate forms themselves, beginning with the best, and passing from it to the

Henkel, Studien, &c., p. 97.

¹ Susemihl, Jahresber. über class. Alterthumsw., 1875, p. 377, takes the same view.

Arist. i. 21, supposes) saw in its unity under the Macedonian sway the fulfilment of his people's destiny. Cf. SUSEMIHL, Jahrb. f. Philol. ciii. 134 sq.

less perfect examples. The examination of the Best State, however, as already observed, is incomplete. We must therefore be content to notice the section of it which we have before us.

5. The Best State 1

For a perfect society certain natural conditions are in the first place necessary; for just as each art requires a suitable material to work upon, so also does political science. A community cannot, any more than an individual, dispense with external equipment as the condition of complete happiness.² A State, in the first

¹ It has been frequently denied that Aristotle intended to depict an Ideal State (see HIL-DENBRAND, ibid. p. 427 sqq. HENKEL, ibid. 74); his own declarations, however, as is gradually coming to be generally admitted, leave no doubt on this head. Cf. e.g. iii. 18 fin. vii. 1 init. c. 2, 1324, a, 18, 23, c. 4 init. c. 9, 1328, b, 33, c. 13 init. c. 15 init. iv. 2, 1289, a, 30. The subject of the discussion in Polit. vii, and viii, is described by all these passages without exception as the ἀρίστη πολιτεία, the πόλις μέλλουσα κατ' εὐχὴν συνεστάναι, and Aristotle expressly says that in depicting such a State many assumptions must be made, but these ought not to transcend the limits of possibility. This, however, is precisely what Plato also had asserted of the presuppositions of his ideal state (Rep. v. 473, c. vi. 499 C, D,502 C; see Ph. d.Gr. i. p. 776), and so small is the difference in this respect between

them that, while Plato declares μη παντάπασιν ήμας εὐχας εἰρηκέναι, άλλὰ χαλεπὰ μέν δυνατὰ δέ πη (Rep. vii, 540 D), Aristotle says, conversely (vii. 4, 1325, b, 38, and almost in the same words ii. 6, 1265, a,17): δεί πολλά προϋποτεθείσθαι καθάπερ εὐχομένους, είναι μέντοι μηθέν τούτων άδύνατον. Aristotle certainly declares the most peculiar of Plato's proposals to be unsuitable and impracticable; he is moreover not • o entranced with his Ideal State as to deny, as Plato does, to any other the name of State and to permit to the philosopher alone a share in its administration: he demands of political science that it should study also the less perfect conditions of actuality and ascertain what is best in the circumstances; but at the same time he doubted as little as Plato that Politics ought also to sketch the ideal of a perfect State.

² Polit. vii. 4 init.

place, must be neither too small nor too great: since if it is too small it will lack independence; if too great. unity. The true measure of its proportions is that the number of the citizens should, on the one hand, suffice for all wants, and, on the other, be sufficiently within a compass to keep the individual members intimately acquainted with one another and with the government.1 Aristotle further desires a fruitful country of sufficient extent, which itself supplies all the necessities of life without leading to luxury, and which is easily defended and suitable for purposes of commerce. In this last respect he defends, as against Plato,2 a maritime situation, prescribing at the same time means of avoiding the inconveniences which it may bring with it.3 More important still, however, is the natural character of the people. A healthy community can only exist where the people combine the complementary qualities of spirit and intellect. Aristotle agrees with Plato in holding that this is so among the Greeks alone. The Northern barbarians, on the other hand, with their un-

1 Ibid. 1326, b, 5 sqq. where at the end Aristotle says: δηλον τοίνυν ώς οὖτός ἐστι πόλεως δρος ἄριστος, ἡ μεγίστη τοῦ πλήθους ὑπερβολὴ πρὸς αὐτάρκειαν ζωῆς εὐσύνοπτος. At the same time he maintains that the general criterion of the size of a state is, not the πλήθος, but the δύναμις of its population, that the greatest is that which is best capable of answering the peculiar ends of the state, and that accordingly we have to take into account the number, not of the population, but of the citizens proper: οὐ γὰρ ταὐτὸν μεγάλη τε πόλις καὶ

πολυάνθρωπος. Cf. Eth. ix. 10, 1170, b, 31: οὕτε γὰρ ἐκ δέκα ἀνθρώπων γένοιτ' ὰν πόλις οῦτ' ἐκ δέκα μυριάδων ἔτι πόλις ἐστίν—we shall not consider the latter too low an estimate if we have in view the Greek states in which all full citizens share directly in the government (cf. Polit. ibid. 1326, b, 6).

² Lans, iv. init.; this passage is, undoubtedly present to Aristotle's mind, although he makes no mention either of it or of its author.

³ Polit. vii. 5.

tamed spirit, may attain to freedom, but not to political existence; while the Asiatics, with all their art and talent, are cowards, and destined by nature to be slaves.\(^1\) The Greeks alone are capable of political activity, for they alone are endowed with that sense of moral proportion which fortifies them on all sides from extremes of excess or defect. The conditions of all civil and moral life Aristotle, in a true Greek spirit, finds to exist only in his own people. Here, also, where it is more justifiable in view of the intellectual state of the world at that time, we have the same national pride which has already presented itself in a more repulsive aspect in the discussion upon Slavery.

So far we have spoken only of such things as depend upon chance. The most important of all, however, and that which constitutes the essential element in the happiness of the state, is the virtue of the citizens, which is no longer a matter of chance, but of free will and insight.² Here, therefore, we must call upon political science to be our guide. In the first place we shall have to determine by its aid how best to take advantage of the external circumstances. Under this head comes all that Aristotle says of the division of the land, and of the site and structure of the city. With

of which passages Aristotle himself refers.

¹ Polit. vii. 7, where he says of the Greeks (1327, b, 29): το δὲ τῶν Ἑλλήνων γένος ὅσπερ μεσεύει κατὰ τοὺς τόπους, οὕπως ἀμφοῖν μετέχει, καὶ γὰρ ἔνθυμον καὶ διανοητικόν ἔστιν, διόπερ ἐλεύθερόν τε διατελεῖ καὶ μάλιστα πολιτευόμενον καὶ δυνάμενον ἄρχειν πάντων μιᾶς τυγχάνον πολιτείας (on which see p. 256, n. 1); cf. Plato, Rep. iv. 435 E, ii. 374 E sqq. to the latter

² Polit. vii. 13, 1332, *a, 29: διὸ κατ' εὐχὴν εὐχόμεθα τὴν τῆς πόλεως σύστασιν, ὧν ἡ τύχη κυρία κυρίαν γὰρ αὐτὴν ὑπάρχειν τίθεμεν τὸ δὲ σπουδαίαν εἶναι τὴν πόλιν οὐκέτι τύχης ἔργον, ἀλλὶ ἐπιστήμης καὶ προαιρέσεως. Cf. c. 1, 1323, b, 13, and the whole chapter.

reference to the first of these he proposes 1 that a portion of the whole territory be set apart as state property, from the produce of which the cost of religious services and public banquets may be defrayed, and that of what remains each citizen should receive two portions, one in the neighbourhood of the city, another towards the boundary of its territory.2 He requires for the city not only a healthy site and suitable plan of structure, but also fortifications, deprecating upon valid grounds 3 the contempt with which Plato 4 and the Spartans regarded the latter. Of much greater importance, however, are the means that must be adopted to secure the personal capacity of the citizens. These will not in the most perfect sort of state consist merely in educating men with a view to a particular form of constitution and to their own particular aims, nor again in making them efficient as a community, although imperfect as individuals; on the contrary, since the virtue of citizens here coincides with the virtue of man universally, care must 4 be taken to make each and every citizen a capable man, and to fit all for taking part in the government of the state.5 But for this end three things are necessary. The ultimate aim of human existence is the education = of the reason.⁶ As the higher is always preceded by the lower, the end by the means, in the order of time,7 so the education of the reason must be preceded by

¹ Ibid. c. 10, 1329, b, 36 sqq.
² There is a similar plan in PLATO, Laws, 745 c sqq.; Aristotle, however, in Polit. ii. 6, 1265, b, 24, considers Plato's arrangement, merely on account of a trifling difference, highly objectionable.

³ Polit. vii. 11, 12.

⁴ Lans, vi. 778 D sq.

⁵ See vol. ii. p. 209, n. 2, sup. ⁶ Cf. p. 142 sq. and Polit. vii. 15, 1334, b. 14: δ δὲ λόγος ἡμῶν καὶ ὁ νοῦς τῆς φύσεως τέλος. ὅστε πρὸς τούτους τὴν γένεσιν καὶ τὴν τῶν ἐθῶν δεῖ παρασκευάζειν μελέτην. ⁷ Cf. vol. ii. p. 28, n. 3, swpra.

that of the irrational element of the soul—namely, desire—and the training of desire by that of the body. We must therefore have first a physical, secondly a moral, and lastly a philosophic training; and just as the nurture of the body must subserve the soul, so must the education of the appetitive part subserve the reason.

Aristotle, like Plato, demands that state interference with the life of the individual should begin much earlier than is customary in our days, and that it should regu-- late even the procreation of children. He does not, indeed, as has been already shown,2 go so far as to make this act the mere fulfilment of official orders, as Plato had done in the Republic. Nevertheless he also would, have laws to regulate the age at which marriage should take place and children be begotten,3 careful regard being paid to the consequences involved not only to the children in relation to their parents, but to the parents in relation to one another. The law must even determine at what season of the year and during what winds procreation may take place. It must prescribe the proper course of treatment for pregnant women, procure the exposure of deformed children, and regulate the number of births. For those children who are superfluous, or whose parents are either too young or too old, Aristotle, sharing

and desire, v. vol. ii. pp. 112 sq., 155 sq. supra. [supra.

¹ Polit. vii. 15, 1334, b, 20: ὅσπερ δὲ τὸ σῶμα πρότερον τῆ γενέσει τῆς ψυχῆς, οὕτω καὶ τὸ ἄλογον τοῦ λόγον ἔχοντος... διὸ πρῶτον μὲν τοῦ σώματος τὴν ἐπιμέλειαν ἀναγκαῖον προτέραν εἶναι ἢ τὴν τῆς ψυχῆς, ἔπειτα τὴν τῆς ὀρέξεως, ἕνεκα μέντοι τοῦ νοῦ τὴν τῆς δρέξεως, τὴν δὲ τοῦ σώματος τῆς ψυχῆς. Cf. viii. 3 fin. On reason

² In the section on the Family, ³ Marriage ought to take place with men about the age of thirty-seven, with women about eighteen; procreation ought not to be continued beyond the fiftyfourth or fifty-fifth year of a man's age.

as he does the indifference of ancients in general as to such immoral practices, roundly recommends abortion, justifying it on the ground that what has as yet no life, has no rights.1 From the control of procreation Aristotle passes to education, which he regards . as beginning with the first moment of life, and extending to the last.2 From the earliest years of its life care must be taken to secure for the child, not only suitable exercise and physical training, but also games and stories as a preparation for its moral education. Children must be left as little as possible to the society of slaves, and kept altogether out of the way of improper conversation and pictures, which, indeed, ought not to be tolerated at all.3 Their public education begins at the age of seven, and lasts till twenty-one.4 Aristotle founds his argument in favour of state-regulated education upon its importance for the communal life, for it is the moral quality of the citizens which supports the fabric and determines the character of the commonwealth; and if a man would practise virtue in the state. he must begin early to acquire it.5 As in the best state all must be equally capable, as the whole state has one common object in view, and as no man belongs to himself, but all belong to the state, this education

¹ All this is treated of in *Polit*. vii. 16.

³ vii. 17.

⁴ *Ibid.* 1336, b, 35 sqq.

² With what follows cf. Lef-Mann, De Arist. Hom. Educatione Princ. Berl. 1864; Biehl, Die Erziehungslehre d. Arist. Gymn.-Progr. Innsbruck, 1877. For other literature on the subject, see UEEERWEG, Hist. of Phil. vol. i. p. 172 Eng. Tr.

⁵ Polit. viii. 1 init., where inter alia: το γαρ ήθος τής πολιτείας έκαστης το οἰκεῖον καὶ φυλάττειν εἴωθε τὴν πολιτείαν καὶ καθιστησιν ἐξ ἀρχής, οἶον το μὲν δημοκρατικον δημοκρατίαν, το δ΄ ὁλιγαρχικον ὁλιγαρχίαν ἀεὶ δὲ το βέλτιστον ήθος βελτίονος αἴτιον πολιτείας. Cf. v. 9, 1310, a, 12, and vol. ii. p. 209, n. 2, supra.

must be wholly in common and must be regulated in every detail with a view to the wants of the whole.1 Its one object, therefore, must be to train up men who shall know how to practise the virtue of freemen. The same principle will determine the subjects of instruction and the method of their treatment. of the arts which serve the wants of life, the future citizens shall learn only those which are worthy of a free man, and which vulgarise neither mind nor body,2 such as reading, writing, and drawing, the last of which, besides its practical utility, possesses the higher merit of training the eye for the study of physical beauty.3 But even among those arts which belong to a liberal education in the stricter sense, there is an essential difference between those which we learn for the sake of their practical application and those which we learn for

1 Ibid. 1337, a, 21 sqq.; cf. p. 209. n. 2. Aristotle recognises, indeed (Eth. x. 10, 1180, b, 7), that private education may be able more readily to adapt itself to the needs of the pupil, but replies that public education does not necessarily neglect these, provided that it is entrusted to the proper hands.

2 viii. 2, 1337. b, 4: ὅτι μἐν οδν τὰ ἀναγκαῖα δεῖ διδάσκεσθαι τῶν χρησίμων, οὐκ ἄδηλου. ὅτι δὲ οὐ πάντα, διηρημένων τῶν τε ἐλευθέρων ἔργων καὶ τῶν ἀνελευθέρων, φανερὸν ὅτι τῶν τοιούτων δεῖ μετέχοντα μὴ βάναυσον. βάναυσον δὶ ἔργον εἶναι δεῖ τοῦτο νομίζειν καὶ τέχνην ταύτην καὶ μάθησιν, ὅσαι πρὸς τὰς χρήσεις καὶ τὰς πράξεις τὰς τῆς ἀρετῆς ἄχρηστον ἀπεργάζονται τὸ σῶμα τῶν ἐλευθέρων ἢ τὴν ψυχὴν ἢ τὴν διάνοιαν. Ατὶstotle agrees with Plato (cf. Ph. d.

Gr. i. p. 754) in regarding this as the effect of trades (μισθαρνικαὶ ἐργασίαι) generally; they leave thought unexercised and generate low views. These, however, are to be found even with the higher activities (music, gymnastics, &c.) if these are pursued in a one-sided way as a vocation. There are many things, finally, that a man may do for himself or a friend, or for some good purpose, but not in the service of strangers.

s viii. 3, 1337, b, 23, 1338, a, 13 sqq. Ibid. 1. 37: among the useful arts are many which must be learned, not merely for the sake of their utility, but also as aids to further culture. Such are γραμματική and γραφική. The chief value of the latter is ὅτι ποιεῖ θεωρητικὸν τοῦ περὶ τὰ σώματα

κάλλους.

their own sake. The former have their end outside of themselves in something attained by their means, while tne latter find it within themselves, in the high and satisfying activities which their own exercise affords. That the latter are the higher, that they are the only truly liberal arts, hardly requires proof in Aristotle's view.1 As, moreover, of the two chief branches of education among the Greeks-music and gymnasticsthe latter is practised more as an aid to soldierly efficiency, while the former directly ministers to mental culture, it is not wonderful that he should disapprove of that one-sided preference for physical training which was the basis of the Spartan system of education. He remarks that where physical exercise and endurance are made so exclusively an object, a ferocity is produced which differs widely from true bravery; nor do these means suffice for the attainment even of the object sought-viz. superiority in war: for since Sparta had

Besides what is said sup. ii. p. 141 sqq., on the superiority of theory to practice, and, p. 209 sq., on peaceful and warlike avocations, cf. on this head vii. 14, 1333, α, 35 : [ἀνάγκη] πόλεμον μὲν εἰρήνης χάριν, ἀσχολίαν δὲ σχολης, τὰ δ' άναγκαΐα καὶ χρήσιμα τῶν καλῶν е́рекер. Similarly c. 15, 1334, a, 14, viii. 3, 1337, b, 28 (on music): νῦν μὲν γὰρ ὡς ἡδονῆς χάριν οί πλείστοι μετέχουσιν αὐτης οί δ' έξ άρχης έταξαν έν παιδεία, διά το την φύσιν αὐτὴν ζητεῖν . . . μὴ μόνον ἀσχολεῖν ὀρθῶς ἀλλὰ καὶ σχολάζειν δύνασθαι καλώς . . . εἰ γὰρ ἄμφω μέν δεῖ, μᾶλλον δὲ αἰρετὸν τὸ σχολάζειν της άσχολίας, και όλως ζητητέον τί ποιοῦντας δεῖ σχολάζειν. Mere amusement (παιδιά) is not

in itself an end but only a means of recreation, and accordingly more necessary in ἀσχολία than in σχολή. The latter consists in the attainment of the end, and therefore results immediately in pleasure and happiness; the former is effort after an end which is not yet attained. ωστε φανερόν ότι δεί και πρός την έν τη διαγωγή σχολην μανθάνειν άττα καὶ παιδεύεσθαι, καὶ ταῦτα μὲν τὰ παιδεύματα καὶ ταύτας τὰς μαθήσεις έαυτῶν εἶναι χάριν, τὰς δὲ πρὸς τὴν άσχολίαν ως άναγκαίας και χάριν άλλων. . . δτι μέν τοίνυν έστι παιδεία τις ην ούχ ώς χρησίμην παιδευτέον τοὺς υίεις οὐδ' ώς ἀναγκαίαν, ἀλλ' ώς ἐλευθέριον καὶ καλην, φανερόν έστιν.

ceased to have a monopoly of gymnastic training, she had lost her superiority over other states. Aristotle desires, therefore, to see gymnastics duly subordinated to the true end of all education, and to prevent the more exhausting exercises from being practised before the body has acquired sufficient strength and the mind has received a counterbalancing bias from other studies.¹

Turning to music, by which Aristotle means in the first instance music in the narrower sense of the word, in which it does not include poetry,² we have to distinguish between several uses to which it may be put.³ It serves for purposes of pleasure and of moral education; it soothes the spirit,⁴ and furnishes an enjoyable occupation.⁵ In the education of youth, however, its ethical effect is the main thing. The young are too

7, 1341, b, 36.

⁴ By the κάθαρσιs which is effected, not only by sacred music (μέλη ἐξοργιάζοντα), but by all music; Polit. viii. 1342, a, 4 sqq. For the fuller discussion of κάθαρσιs, see ch. xv. infra.

¹ viii. 4, especially 1338, b, 17: ούτε γάρ ἐν τοῖς ἄλλοις ζώοις ούτ' έπι των έθνων δρώμεν την άνδρίαν ἀκολουθοῦσαν τοῖς ἀγριωτάτοις, άλλὰ μᾶλλον τοῖς ἡμερωτέροις και λεοντώδεσιν ήθεσιν . . . ώστε το καλον άλλ' ου το θηριώδες δεί πρωταγωνιστείν ου γάρ λύκος οὐδὲ τῶν ἄλλων θηρίων τι ἀγωνίσαιτο αν οὐθένα καλόν κίνδυνον, άλλα μαλλον ανηρ αγαθός. οί δέ λίαν είς ταῦτα ἀνέντες τοὺς παῖδας, καλ των άναγκαίων άπαιδαγωγήτους ποιήσαντες, βαναύσους κατεργάζονται κατά γε το άληθες, προς έν τε μόνον ἔργον τἢ πολιτικἦ χρησίμους ποιήσαντες, και πρός τοῦτο χείρον. ως φησιν ὁ λόγος, ἐτέρων.

² PLATO, on the other hand, in the section of the *Rep*. upon musical education, deals chiefly with poetry-its form and content. See *Ph. d. Gr.* i. pp. 773, 779 sq.

³ Polit. viii. 5, 1339, b, 11, c

⁵ Διαγωγή. By this word Aristotle means generally an activity which has its end in itself, and is therefore necessarily accompanied by pleasure, like every activity which is complete in itself (seep. 146 sq. sup.). Hetherefore makes a distinction between those arts which serve human need and those which serve διαγωγή (Metaph. i. 1 sq. 981, b, 17, 982, b, 22), comprehending under the latter all kinds of enjoyment, both nobler and humbler. In this wider sense. mere amusements can be classed as διαγωγή (as in Eth. iv. 14 init.

immature to practise it as an independent occupation.1 It is well adapted, indeed, for amusement and recreation, since it affords innocent pleasure; but pleasure may not be made an end in learning, and to limit music to this would be to assign too low a place to it.2 All the more important, on the other hand, is its influence upon character. Music more than any other art represents moral states and qualities: anger, gentleness, bravery, modesty, and every variety of virtue, vice and passion find here their expression. This representation awakens kindred feelings in the souls of the hearers.3 We accustom ourselves to be pleased or pained by certain things, and the feelings which we have accustomed ourselves to entertain towards the imitation we are likely to entertain also towards the reality in life. But virtue consists just in this: in feeling pleasure in what is good, pain in what is bad. Music, therefore, is one of the most important means of education, all the more so because its effect upon the

x. 6, 1176, b, 12 sqq.; Polit. viii. 5, 1339, b, 22). In the narrower sense, however, Aristotle uses this expression for the higher activities of the kind indicated (διαγωγή έλευθέριος, Polit. viii. 5, 1339, b, 5). Accordingly he calls, Eth. ix. 11, 1171, b, 12, the society of friends, or Metaph. xii. 7 (p. 398, n. 5, supra), Eth. x. 7, 1177, a, 25, the active thought of the divine and the human spirit διαγωγή. In Polit. vii. 15, 1334, a, 16, in the discussion touched upon on p. 209 sq., he mentions σχολή and διαγωγή together, and in the passage before us, c. 5, 1339, a, 25, 29, b, 13, c. 7, 1341,

b, 40, he distinguishes the application of music to purposes of παιδιά and ἀνάπαυσις from that πρὸς διαγωγήν καὶ πρὸς φρόνησιν, saying (1339, b, 17) of the latter that τὸ καλὸν and ἡδονἡ are united init. Cf. Bonitz, Arist. Metaph. ii. 45; Ind. Ar. 178, a, 33; Schwegler, Arist. Metaph. iii. 19 so.

νίιί. 5, 1339, a, 29: they have no claim to διαγωγή: οὐθενὶ γὰρ ἀτελεῖ προσήκει τέλος.

² *Ibid.* 1339, a, 26-41, b, 14-31, 42 sqg.

31, 42 sqq.
³ ἀκροώμενοι τῶν μιμήσεων γίγνονται πάντες συμπαθεῖς.

young is in no small degree strengthened by the pleasure that accompanies it.1 These considerations determine the rules which Aristotle lays down for musical instruction. It cannot, indeed, be separated from actual practice, without which no true understanding of music can be arrived at; but since the aim of musical education is not the practice of the art itself, but only the cultivation of the musical taste, the former must be confined to the period of apprenticeship, seeing that it does not become a man to be a musician. Even in the case of children the line must not be crossed which separates the connoisseur from the professional artist.2 the latter, music is a trade which ministers to the taste of the uneducated masses: so it is the occupation of an artisan, enfeebling to the body and degrading to the mind. To the freeman, on the other hand, it is a means of culture and education.3 The choice of the instruments and melodies to be used for purposes of instruction will be made with this end in view. Besides, however, the quiet and simple music which alone he would permit his citizens to practise, Aristotle authorises for public occasions a more exciting and artificial style, which may be either earnest and purifying for those who have received a liberal education, or of a less chaste description for the recreation of the lower classes and slaves.4

¹ *Ibid.* 1339, a, 21 sqq. 1340, a, 7-b, 19.

² Aristotle deprecates in general education τὰ πρὸς τοὺς ἀγῶνας τοὺς τεχνικοὺς συντείνοντα, τὰ θαυμάσια καὶ περιττὰ τῶν ἔργων, ὰ νῦν ἐΛήλυθεν εἰς τοὺς ἀγῶνας, ἐκ

δε των άγωνων είς την παιδείαν. c. 6, 1341, a, 10.

³ viii. 6, 1340, b-20, 1341, a, 17, 1341, b, 8-18, c. 5, 1339, b, 8.

⁴ Ibid. c. 6, 1341, a-b, 8, c. 7.

With these remarks the Politics ends, leaving even the discussion of music unfinished. It is inconceivable, however, that Aristotle intended to conclude here his treatise upon education. With so keen a sense of the importance of music as an element in education, and with Plato's example before him, it is impossible that he should have overlooked that of poetry; and, indeed, he betrays his intention of discussing it in his proposal to treat 'subsequently' of comedy.2 It is also most improbable that a man like Aristotle, who regarded the scientific activity as the highest of all, and as the most essential element in happiness, and who considered political science of such vital importance as an element in social life,3 should have passed over in silence the whole subject of scientific training.4 Nor could he have desired to entrust it to private effort, for he says that the whole of education must be public. Aristotle himself repeatedly indicates that after ethical, he intends to discuss intellectual culture.⁵ He promises, moreover, to return to

¹ For after viii. 7 init. we should have had a discussion of rbythm; cf. HILDENBRAND, ibid. p. 453 (as opposed to NICKES, De Arist. Polit. Libr. p. 93).

³ See Eth. x. 10, 1180, a, 32,

b, 20 sqq. ·

It is the question of the education of the citizens that leads to the statement, *Polit.* vii. 14, 1333, b, 16 sqq., that theoretic activity is the highest and the aim of all the others. It must

therefore be the goal and one of the most essential elements of education in the best state.

s Polit. vii. 15, 1334, b, 8: λοιπὸν δὲ θεωρῆσαι πότερον παιδευτέοι τῷ λόγῳ πρότερον ἢ τοῖς ἐθεσιν. ταῦτα γὰρ δεῖ πρὸς ἄλληλα συμφωνεῖν συμφωνίαν τὴν ἀρίστην. The answer is, that moral education must precede (see p. 261, supra); by which it is implied that a section on scientific education will follow. Several departments are spoken of, viii. 3, 1338, a, 30 sqq., as belonging to a liberal education, and it is prescribed, viii. 4, 1339, a, 4, that after entering upon manhood

the life of the family and to female education (to which he attaches the greatest importance, and the neglect of which he severely censures), and to discuss these at greater length in connection with the various forms of constitution; ¹ in the text, however, as we have it, this promise is not fulfilled.² He further speaks of punishment as a means of education, ³ and we should accord-

young people should receive preliminary instruction for the space of three years in the other departments (μαθήματα) before the more exhausting exercise in gymnastics begins, as the two are incompatible—physical exhaustion being inimical to thought (διάνοια)—so that a place should here be assigned to the discussion of scientific instruction.

¹ Polit. i. 13, 1260, b, 8: περλ

δὲ ἀνδρὸς καὶ γυναικὸς καὶ τέκνων καὶ πατρὸς, τῆς τε περὶ ἔκαστον αὐτῶν ἀρετῆς, καὶ τῆς πρὸς σφᾶς αὐτοὺς ὁμιλίας, τί τὸ καλῶς καὶ μὴ καλῶς ἐστὶ, καὶ πῶς δεῖ τὸ μὲν εὖ διώκειν τὸ δὲ κακῶς φεύγειν, ἐν τοῖς περὶ τὰς πολιτείας ἀναγκαῖον ἐπελθεῖν · ἐπεὶ γὰρ οἰκία μὲν πᾶσα μέρος πόλεως, ταῦτα δ' οἰκίας, τὴν δὲ τοῦ μέρους πρὸς τὴν τοῦ δλου δεῖ βλέπειν ἀρετὴν, ἀναγκαῖον πρὸς τὴν πολιτείαν βλέποντας παιδεύειν καὶ

πολιτείαν βλεπουτας παιοευείν και τοὺς παίδας καὶ τὰς γυναῖκας, εἴπερ τι διαφέρει πρὸς τὸ τὴν πόλιν εἶναι σπουδαίαν καὶ τοὺς παίδας εἶναι σπουδαίαν καὶ τὰς γυναῖκας σπουδαίας. ἀναγκαῖον δὲ διαφέρειν αὶ μὲν γὰρ γυναῖκες ἢμισυ μέρος τῶν ἐλευθέρων, ἐκ δὲ τῶν παίδων οἱ κοινωνοὶ γίνονται τῆς πολιτείας. Cf. ii. 9, 1269, b, 17: ἐν ὅσαις πολιτείαις φαίλως ἔχει τὸ περὶ τὰς γυναῖκας, τὸ ἢμισυ τῆς πόλεως είναι δεῖ νομίζειν ἀνομοθέτητον. ΒRANDIS, ii. b, 1673, A, 769.

² For we cannot regard the occasional allusions which we find in ii. 6, 7, 9 as such a fulfilment.

3 The measure of punishment has already been found (see end of last chap.) in the principle of corrective justice, according to which each must suffer loss in proportion to the advantage which he has unjustly usurped. The aim of punishment, on the other hand, according to Aristotle, who here agrees with Plato (Ph. d. Gr. i. p. 744) is chiefly to improve the culprit and deter him from further wrong-doing, but partly also, in so far as he is himself incurable, to protect society against him. Cf. Rhet. i. 10, 1269, b, 12 : διαφέρει δὲ τιμωρία και κόλασις ή μέν γάρ κόλασις τοῦ πάσχοντυς ένεκά ἐστιν, ή δὲ τιμωρία τοῦ ποιοῦντος, ζνα λποπληρωθη̂. Eth. ii. 2; see p. 157, n. 5, sup. Ibid. x. 10, 1179, b. 28: he who lives by passion cannot be improved by mere exhortation; δλως τ' οὐ δοκεῖ λόγφ ὑπείκειν τὸ πάθος ἀλλὰ βία. Ibid. 1180, a, 4 (cf. p. 271, n. 4, infra): the better kind of men, say some [i.e. Plato—but Aristotle himself is clearly of the same opinion], must be admonished, ἀπειθοῦσι δὲ καὶ ἀφυεστέροις οδσι κολάσεις τε καλ τιμωρίας έπιτιθέναι, τοὺς δ' ἀνιάτους ὅλως ἐξingly have expected a full discussion of its aims and application, with at least a sketch of the outlines of a system of penal justice; but in the *Politics*, as we have it, this subject is not touched upon. Similarly, questions of public economy, of the treatment of slaves, and of drinking habits, though proposed for discussion, are left untouched; and generally it may be said the whole question of the regulation of the life of adult citizens is passed over in silence, although it is impossible to doubt that Aristotle regarded this as one of the chief problems of political science, and that, like Plato, he intended that education should be continued as a principle of moral guidance throughout the whole of life. The same is true, as already remarked, of the whole question of legislation: if the *Politics* gives us little light on this

ορίζειν· τὸν μὲν γὰρ ἐπιεικῆ καὶ πρός τὸ καλὸν ζώντα τῷ λόγφ πειθαρχήσειν, τὸν δὲ φαῦλον ἡδονῆς ορεγόμενον λύπη κολάζεσθαι ώσπερ ύποζύγιον. Ibid. iii. 7, 1113, b, 23: κολάζουσι γὰρ καὶ τιμωροῦνται τούς δρώντας μοχθηρά . . . τούς δέ τὰ καλὰ πράττοντας τιμῶσιν, ὡς τοὺς μὲν προτρέψοντες, τοὺς δὲ κωλύσοντες. The aim, therefore, of punishment, unless we have to do with an incurable offender, is improvement: in the first instance, however, only that improvement of conduct which springs from the fear of punishment, not that more fundamental one of the inclinations which is effected in nobler natures by instruction and admonition: improvement, therefore, only in the sense in which it corresponds to the determent of the offender.

Cf. HILDENBRAND, ibid. 299 sqq.

1 περί κτήσεως καὶ τῆς περί τὴν
οὐσίαν εὐπορίας πῶς δεῖ καὶ τίνα
τρόπον ἔχειν πρὸς τὴν χρῆσιν
αὐτήν. vii. 5, 1326, b, 32 sqq.

² vii. 10 fin.

³ vii. 17, 1336, b, 24, where the reference to the subsequent discussions does not apply to

comedy alone.

⁴ Besides Polit. vii. 12, 1331, a, 35 sqq. c. 17, 1336, b, 8 sqq. cf. especially Eth. x. 10, 1180, a, 1: οὐχ ἰκανὸν δ' ἴσως νέους ὄντας τροφῆς καὶ ἐπιμελείας τυχεῖν ὀρθῆς, ἀλλ' ἐπειδὴ καὶ ἀνδρωθέντας δεῖ ἐπιτηδεύειν αὐτὰ καὶ ἐθίζεσθαι, καὶ περὶ ταῦτα δεοίμεθ' ὰν νόμων καὶ δλως περὶ πάντα τὸν βίον · οἱ γὰρ πολλοὶ ἀνάγκη μᾶλλον ἡ λόγφ πειθαρχοῦσι καὶ ζημίαις ἡ τῷ καλῷ.

head, we must throw the blame, not upon Aristotle but upon the incomplete condition of the work.

In the completed work we should also have had a more detailed account of the constitution of the Best State. In the text before us we find only two of its characteristics described—namely the conditions of its citizenship, and the division in it of political power. In reference to the former of these, Aristotle, like Plato, with a truly Greek contempt for physical labour, would make not only handicraft but also agriculture a disqualification for citizenship in the most perfect state. For the citizen of such a state can only be one who possesses all the attributes of a capable man; but in order to acquire these, and to devote himself to the service of the state, he requires a leisure and freedom from the lower avocations which is impossible to the husbandman, the artisan, and the labourer. occupations, therefore, must in the Best State be left to slaves and metœci. The citizens must direct all their energy to the defence and administration of the state; they alone, moreover, are to be the possessors of landed estates, since the national property belongs only to the citizens.1 On the other hand, all citizens must take part in the direction of the commonwealth. This, according to Aristotle, is demanded equally by justice and necessity; since those who stand on a footing of essential equality must have equal rights, and those who possess the power will not permit themselves to be excluded from the government.² But since the actual

i vii. 9, 1328, b, 24 sqq. similar dispositions have been 1329, a, 17-26,35, c. 10, 1329, b, touched upon. Cf. p. 299, n. 4, sup. 36, after the Egyptian and other ² vii. 9, 1329, a, 9, c. 13,

administration cannot consist of the whole mass of the citizens, since there must be a difference between ruler and ruled, and since different qualities are demanded in the administrator and in the soldier-in the latter physical strength, in the former mature insight-Aristotle considers it desirable to assign different spheres to different ages: military service to the young, the duties of government, including the priestly offices, to the elders; and while thus offering to all a share in the administration, to entrust actual power only to those who are more advanced in life.1 Such is Aristotle's account of Aristocracy.2 In its fundamental conception as the rule of virtue and culture, it is closely related to Plato's, from which, however, it widely differs in detail; although even here the difference is one rather of social than of strictly political organisation.

1332, a, 34: ἡμῖν δὲ πάντες οἱ πολῖται μετέχουσι τῆς πολιτείας. c, 14, 1332, b, 12–32.

¹ vii. 9, 1329, a, 2-17, 27-34, c. 14, 1332, b, 32-1333, b, 11.

C. 14, 1532, 18, 32–1535, 18, 11.

2 iv. 7, 1293, b, 1: ἀριστοκρατίαν μὲν οδν καλῶς ἔχει καλεῖν περὶ ῆς διήλθομεν ἐν τοῖς πρώτοις λόγοις: τὴν γὰρ ἐκ τῶν ἀρίστων ἀπλῶς κατ' ἀρετὴν πολιτείαν, καὶ μὴ πρὸς ὑπόθεσίν τινα ἀγαθῶν ἀνδρῶν [cf. viii. 9, 1328, b, 37], μόνην δίκαιον προσαγορεύειν ἀριστοκρατίαν. Cf. c. 2, 1289, a, 31. Quite consistent with this is the definition of aristocracy, iii. 1, 1279, a, 34 (see p. 237, supra), as the rule τῶν ἀλίγων μὲν πλειόνων δ' ἑνὸς in the interest of the common good, for, in the first

place, Aristotle is there speaking only of common usage (καλείν δ' εἰώθαμεν), giving it at the same time as the sole ground of its right to the title that it is the rule of the best for the common good; and, secondly, in the perfect State it is always actually a minority who rule. There is therefore no ground for distinguishing between the aristocracy mentioned in iii. 7 from that which is spoken of under the same name in iv. 7 and vii. (see FECHNER, Gerechtigheitsbegr. d. Arist. p. 92, n.). Still less can iii. 17 (p. 239, n. 1, supra) be cited in support of this distinction, inasmuch as it exactly suits the ideal State.

VOL. II.

6. Imperfect Forms of Constitution

Besides the best constitution, there are others which, deviating from it in different ways and different degrees,1 also call for discussion. All these, indeed, in so far as they differ from the ideal state, must be reckoned defective; 2 but this does not prevent them from having a certain conditional justification in given circumstances or form, differing from one another in the degree of their relative worth and stability. Aristotle enumerates, as we have already seen,3 three chief forms of imperfect constitution: Democracy, Oligarchy, Tyranny; to which as he proceeds he afterwards adds as a fourth, Polity, together with several mixed forms which are akin to it.

Democracy is based upon civil equality and freedom. In order that the citizens may be equal, they must all have an equal right to share in the government; the community, therefore, must be autocratic, and a majority must decide. In order that the citizens may be free, on the other hand, everyone must have liberty to live as he pleases; no one, therefore, has the right to command another, or, so far as this is unavoidable, command, like obedience, must belong to all.4 All institutions, therefore, are democratic which are based upon the principles that election to the offices of state should be made

See p. 235 sq. supra.

² Cf. the passages which are cited p. 238, n. 1, supra, especially Polit. iv. 2, 1289, b, 6: Plato says, if the oligarchy &c. be good, the democratic form of constitution is the worst, whereas if they are bad, it is the best. ήμεις δε όλως ταύτας έξημαρτημένας είναί φαμεν,

καί βελτίω μέν όλιγαρχίαν άλλην άλλης οὐ καλῶς ἔχει λέγειν, ἦττον δὲ φαύλην. The imperfect forms of constitution are usually called παρεκβάσεις.

³ P. 237 sqq.
⁴ vi. 2, 1317, a, 40-b, 16, inter alia; see p. 239 sq.

either by universal suffrage, by lot, or by rotation; that no property qualification, or only an inconsiderable one, be attached to them: that their duration or their powers be limited; that all share in the administration of justice, especially in the more important cases; that the competence of the popular assembly be extended, that of the executive restricted, as much as possible; that all magistrates, judges, senators, and priests be paid. The senate is a democratic institution. When its functions are merged in those of the popular assembly, the government is more democratic still. Low origin, poverty, want of education, are considered to be democratic qualities.1 But as these characteristics may be found in different degrees in different states, as moreover a particular state may exhibit all or only some of them, different forms of democracy arise.2 As these variations will themselves chiefly depend, according to Aristotle, upon the occupation and manner of life of the people, it is of the highest political importance whether the population consists of peasants, artisans, or traders, or of one of the various classes of seamen. or of poor day-labourers, or of people without the full rights of citizenship, or whether and in what manner these elements are combined in it.3 A porulation engaged in agriculture or in cattle-breeding is in

¹ *Ibid*. 1317, b, 16-1318, a, 3, iv. 15, 1300, a, 31.

² vi. 1, 1317, a. 22, 29 sqq. ³ iv. 4, 1291, b, 15 sqq. c. 6 init. c. 12 (see p. 248, n. 1, supra), vi. 7 init. c. 1, 1317, a, 22 sqq. In the latter passage both grounds of the difference in democratic

constitutions-the character of the population, and the extent to which the institutions are democratic-are mentioned side by side. From other passages, however, it is evident that Aristotle regards the second of these as dependent upon the first.

general content if it can devote itself to its work in peace. It is satisfied, therefore, with a moderate share in the administration; as, for example, the choice of the magistrates, their responsibility to itself, and the participation of all in the administration of justice. For the rest, it will like to leave its business in the hands This is the most orderly form of of sensible men. democracy. A community of artisans, traders, and labourers is a much more troublesome body to deal with. Their employments act more prejudicially upon the character, and being closely packed together in the city they are always ready to meet for deliberation in public assemblies. If all without exception possess the full rights of citizenship; if those who are not freeborn citizens are admitted to the franchise; if the old tribal and communal bonds are dissolved and the different elements in the population massed indiscriminately together; if the force of custom is relaxed and the control over women, children, and slaves is weakened, there necessarily arises that unregulated form of democracy which, as licence has always more attraction for them than order, is so dear to the masses.1 In this way there arise different forms of democracy, of which Aristotle enumerates four.² The first is that in which actual equality reigns, and in which, while no exclusive

its peculiarity, however, according to this passage, $\tau \delta$ τὰς ἀρχὰς ἀπο τιμημάτων είναι, according to iv. 6 init is rather a characteristic of the first form. With SUSEMIHL and others, it will therefore be better to omit ἄλλο δὲ in the passage referred to. Of. HENKEL, ibid. p. 82.

¹ Polit. vi. 4 (where, however, 1318, b, 13, $\mu\eta$ must be struck out); cf. iv. 12, 1296, b, 24 sqg.

² iv. 4, 1291, b, 30 sqq. c. 6, istic of the first of cf. c. 12, ibid., vi. 4, 1318, b, 6, 1319, a, 38. A fifth form seems, therefore be better between the first and the second; therefore be better between the first and the second; the passage reference between the first and the second;

influence is conceded either to rich or poor, a certain property qualification-although a small one-is attached to the public offices. The second form is that in which no condition is attached to eligibility for office beyond citizenship and irreproachable character. A third is that in which, while the public offices belong by right to every citizen, the government is still conducted on constitutional principles. The fourth or unlimited democracy is, finally, that in which the decrees of the people are placed above the laws; in which the people. led by demagogues, as a tyrant by his courtiers, becomes a despot, and in which all constitutional order disappears in the absolute power of the many-headed sovereign.1

Oligarchy consists, as we already know, in the rule of the propertied classes. But here, also, we find a progress from more moderate forms to absolute, unlimited oligarchy. The mildest is that in which, while a property qualification sufficient to exclude the mass of poorer citizens from the exercise of political rights is demanded, the franchise is yet freely conceded to all who possess the requisite amount. The second form is that in which the government is originally in the possession only of the richest, who fill up their own ranks by co-optation, either from the whole body of the citizens or from a certain class. The third is that in which political power descends from father to son. The fourth. finally, as a parallel to tyranny and unlimited demo-

With the account of this Rep. viii. 557 A sqq. 562 B sqq. form of democracy, *ibid.* 1292, a, vi. 493, with the spirit of which 4 sqq. v. 11, 1313, b, 32 sqq. vi. it has obviously much in common. 2, 1317, b, 13 sqq., cf. Plato's

cracy, is that in which hereditary power is limited by no laws. Aristotle, however, here remarks, in terms that would apply equally to all forms of government, that the spirit of the administration is not unfrequently at variance with the legal form of the constitution, and that this is especially the case when a change in the constitution is imminent. In this way there arise mixed forms of constitution; these, however, are just as often the result of the conscious effort to avoid the one-sidedness of democracy and oligarchy, as is the case with 'aristocracy' commonly so called and with polity.

Although the name aristocracy belongs, strictly speaking, only to the best form of constitution, Aristotle yet permits it to be applied to those forms also which, while they do not, like the former, make the virtue of the whole body of the citizens their chief aim, yet in electing to public office look, not to wealth only, but also to capacity. This kind of aristocracy, therefore, is a mixed form of government in which oligarchical, democratic, and genuinely aristocratic elements are all combined.³ To this form 'polity' is closely allied.⁴

Polit. iv. 5.

² Ibid. 1292, b, 11.

⁸ So iv. 7, where Aristotle goes on to enumerate three kinds of aristocracy in this sense: ὅπου ἡ πολιτεία βλέπει εἴς τε πλοῦτον καὶ ἀρετὴν καὶ δῆμον, οἷον ἐν Καρχηδόνι ... καὶ ἐν αἶς εἰς τὰ δύο μόνον οἷον ἡ Λακεδαιμονίων εἰς ἀρετὴν τε καὶ δῆμον, καὶ ἔστι μίξις τῶν δύο τούτων, δημοκρατίας τε καὶ ἀρετῆς ... καὶ τρίτον ὅσαι τῆς καλουμένης πολιτείας ρέπουσι πρὸς τὴν δλιγαργίαν μάλλον. ν. 7, 1307, a.

^{7:} ἀρχὴ γὰρ [τῆς μεταβολῆς] το μὴ μεμίχθαι καλῶς ἐν μὲν τῆ πολιτεία δημοκρατίαν καὶ ὀλιγαρχίαν, ἐν δὲ τῆ ἀριστοκρατία ταῦτά τε καὶ τὴν ἀρετὴν, μάλιστα δὲ τὰ δύο λέγω δὲ τὰ δύο δῆμον καὶ ὀλιγαρχίαν ταῦτα γὰρ αὶ πολιτείαί τε πειρῶνται μιγνύναι καὶ αὶ πολλαὶ τῶν καλουμένων ἀριστοκρατιῶν ... τὰς γὰρ ἀποκλινούσας μᾶλλον πρὸς τὴν ὀλιγαρχίαν ἀριστοκρατίας καλοῦσιν, τὰς δὲ πρὸς τὸ πλῆθος πολιτείας.

⁴ See preceding note, and iv.

Aristotle here describes it as a mixture of oligarchy and democracy.1 It rests on a proper proportion between rich and poor; 2 it is the result of the union in one form or another of oligarchic and democratic institutions; 3 and accordingly it may be classed equally, in so far as this union is of the right sort, as a democracy and as an oligarchy.4 Its leading feature is, in a word, the reconciliation of the antagonism between rich and poor and their respective governments. Where the problem is solved, and the proper mean is discovered between one-sided forms of government, there must result a universal contentment with existing institutions, and as a consequence fixity and permanence in the con-

11, 1295, μ, 31 : καὶ γὰρ ας καλοῦσιν άριστοκρατίας, περί ων νθν είπομεν, τὰ μὲν έξωτέρω πίπτουσι ταις πλείσταις των πόλεων, τὰ δὲ γειτνιώσι τῆ καλουμένη πολιτεία: διὸ περί αμφοῖν ώς μιᾶς λεκτέον.

1 iv. 8, 1293, b, 33 : ἔστι γὰρ ή πολιτεία ώς άπλως είπειν μίξις όλιγαρχίας καὶ δημοκρατίας, εἰώθασι δὲ καλείν τὰς μὲν ἀποκλινούσας ὡς πρός την δημοκρατίαν πολιτείας, τάς δὲ πρὸς τὴν ὀλιγαρχίαν μᾶλλον ἀριστοκρατίας. Cf. preceding note.

² Ibid. 1294, a, 19: ἐπεὶ δὲ τρία έστι τὰ άμφισβητοῦντα τῆς ἰσότητος τῆς πολιτείας, ἐλευθερία πλοῦτος ἀρετή, . . . φανερὸν ὅτι τὴν μέν τοίν δυοίν μίξιν, των εὐπόρων καλ τῶν ἀπόρων, πολιτείαν λεκτέον, την δε των τριών αριστοκρατίαν μάλιστα τῶν ἄλλων παρὰ τὴν άληθινην και πρώτην. See p. 278, n. 3, *supra*.

s iv. 9: in order to obtain a 'polity' we must fix our attention on the institutions which are peculiar to democracy and oligarchy, είτα έκ τούτων άφ' έκατέρας ὥσπερ σύμβολον [on this expression, cf. inter alia, Gen. An. i. 18, 722, b, 11; PLATO, Symp. 191 D] λαμβάνοντας συνθετέον. This may be effected in three ways: (1) by simply uniting different institutions in each: e.g. the oligarchical custom of punishing the rich if they refuse to take part in court business, with the democratic custom of paying poor men a day's wage for appearing in court; (2) by a compromise: e.g. by making neither a high nor a low but a moderate property qualification a condition of admission to the popular assembly; (3) by borrowing one of two kindred institutions from oligarchy, another from democracy: e.g. from the former, appointment to office by election instead of by lot; from the latter, the abolition of all property qualifications.
⁴ *Ibid.* 1295, b, 14 sqq., where

this is shown more fully from the example of the Spartan constitu-

tion.

stitution as a whole.1 Hence polity is the form of government which promises to be the most enduring, and is the best adapted for most states. For if we leave out of consideration the most perfect constitution, and the virtue and culture which render it possible, and ask which is the most desirable,2 only one answer is possible: that in which the disadvantages of one-sided forms of government are avoided by combining them.3 and in which neither the poor nor the rich part of the population, but the prosperous middle class, has the decisive voice.4 But this is exactly what we find in polity. It exhibits the antagonistic forces of rich and poor in equilibrium, and must itself, therefore, rest on the class which stands between them. It is the intermediate form of constitution,5 that which is more favourable than any other to common well-being and universal justice,6 and presupposes the preponderance

1 Ibid. 1. 34: δεῖ δ' ἐν τῷ πολιτεία τῷ μεμιγμένῃ καλῶς ἀμφότερα δοκεῖν εἶναι καὶ μηδέτερον, καὶ σάζεσθαι δι' ἀὐτῆς καὶ μὴ ἔξωθεν εἶναι τοὺς βουλομένους [not by the fact that the majority of those who wish another form of constitution are excluded from participation in State management] (εἴη γὰρ ὰν καὶ πονηρῷ πολιτεία τοῦθ' ὑπάρχον) ἀλλὰ τῷ μηδ' ὰν βούλεσθαι πολιτείαν ἔτέραν μηθὲν τῶν τῆς πόλεως μορίων ὅλως.

2 Cf. iv. 11 init.: τίς δ' ἀρίστη πολιτεία καὶ τίς ἄριστος βίος ταῖς πλείσταις πόλεσι καὶ τοῖς πλείστοις τῶν ἀνθρώπων μήτε πρὸς ἀρετην συγκρίνουσι τὴν ὑπὲρ τοὺς ἰδιώτας, μήτε πρὸς παιδείαν ἡ φύσεως δείπαι καὶ χορηγίας τυχηρᾶς, μήτε πρὸς

πολιτείαν τὴν κατ' εὐχὴν γινομένην, ἀλλὰ βίον τε τὸν τοῖς πλείστοις κοινωτὴσαι δυνατὸν καὶ πολιτείαν ῆς τὰς πλείστας πόλεις ἐνδέχεται μετασχεῖν. Το this question (with which cf. p. 235) the answer is then given as in the text.

3 iv. 11, 1297, a, 6: δσφ δ' αν αμεινον ή πολιτεία μιχθή, τοσούτφ μονιμωτέρα. Cf. v. 1, 1302, a, 2 sqq.
3 v. 11; see p. 248, n. 1, supra.

5 μέση πολιτεία, iv. 11, 1296,

⁶ iv. 11, 1296, a 22: why is the best constitution, that which is intermediate between oligarchy and democracy, so rare? Because in most cities the middle class $(\tau \delta \ \mu \epsilon \sigma \sigma \nu)$ is too weak; because in the wars between parties the victors established no

of the middle class over each of the other two.1 more any one of the other forms of constitution approximates to this the better it will be, the more widely it differs from it-if we leave out of account the circumstances which may give it a relative value in a particular case—the worse.2 And as virtue consists in preserving the proper mean, it may be said that polity corresponds more closely than any other form of government to the life of virtue in the state; 3 and accordingly we shall be quite consistent in classing it among good constitutions, and in representing it as based upon the diffusion among all classes of a definite measure of civic virtue.4 If, further, this virtue be sought for pre-eminently in military capacity, and polity be defined as the govern-

πολιτεία κοινή και ίση; because in hands. ONCKEN, on the other like manner in the contest for the hand, Staatsl. d. Arist. ii. 269, hegemony of Greece one party favoured democracy, the other oligarchy, and because men are accustomed μηδέ βούλεσθαι τὸ ἴσον άλλ' ή ἄρχειν ζητείν ή κρατουμένους ὑπομένειν. Speaking of the influence των έν ἡγεμονία γενομένων τῆς Ἑλλάδος, Aristotle here remarks, 1. 39: for these reasons the μέση πολιτεία is either never found or ολιγάκις και παρ' ολίγοις. είς γάρ άνηρ συνεπείσθη μόνος των πρότερου έφ' ήγεμονία γενομένων ταύτην αποδοῦναι την τάξιν. The ϵls armo was formerly taken to be Lycurgus; others have suggested Theseus (SCHNEIDER, ii. 486 of his edition; SPENGEL, Arist. Stud. iii. 50), Solon (HENKEL, ibid. 89, SUSEMIHL, in Bursian's Jahresbericht for 1875, p. 376 sq.) and others. It cannot be said of any of these, however, that the hegemony of Hellas was in his

refers the passage to Philip of Macedon; but while he certainly left each state its own constitution in the treaty of 338, it is not known that he anywhere introduced (ἀποδοθναι) or restored the μέση πολιτεία. Can the reference be to Epaminondas and the communities of Megalopolis and Messene which were founded by him?

1 iv. 12; see p. 248, n. 1, supra.

² Ibid. 1296, b, 2 sq.

⁴ See p. 243, n. 1, supra.

⁸ Cf. Polit. iv. 11, 1295, a, 35: εί γὰρ καλώς έν τοῖς ἡθικοῖς εἴρηται το τον εὐδαίμονα βίον εἶναι τον κατ' άρετην άνεμπόδιστον, μεσότητα δέ την άρετην, τον μέσον άναγκαĵον Βίον είναι βέλτιστον, της εκάστοις ένδεχομένης τυχείν μεσότητος, τούς δὲ αὐτοὺς τούτους δρους ἀναγκαῖον είναι καὶ πόλεως άρετης καὶ κακίας καὶ πολιτείας · ή γὰρ πολιτεία Bios τίς ἐστι πόλεως.

ment of the men able to bear arms,¹ it may be pointed out in support of that view, first, that the only form of constitution which will be tolerated by a military population is one founded upon universal freedom and equality;² and, secondly, that the heavy-armed footsoldiers who constituted the main strength of the Greek armies belonged chiefly to the well-to-do portion of the people.³ Nevertheless, the ambiguity of the position of polity in Aristotle's account of it, to which attention has already been called in this chapter, cannot be said to be either justified or explained away by these remarks.

The worst of all forms of constitution is Tyranny, for in it the best—namely, true monarchy—has been transformed into its opposite.⁴ In the course of the brief discussion which he devotes to it, Aristotle distinguishes three kinds of tyranny, applying the same name, not only to absolute despotism, but also to the elective monarchy of some barbarous peoples, and to the dictatorship of the old Greek Æsymnetae. True tyranny, however, is only to be found in a state where an individual wields absolute power in his own interest and against the will of the people.⁵

iii. 7, 17; see p. 243, n. 2, sup.
 On this head, cf. iii. 11, 1281, b, 28 sq.

³ vi. 7, 1321, a, 12: τὸ γὰρ ὁπλιτικὸν τῶν εὐπόρων ἐστὶ μᾶλλον ἢ τῶν ἀπόρων. The reason of this is to be sought for partly in the fact that the equipment of the hoplites was expensive, but chiefly in the preliminary training in gymnastics required by the service. Cf. also Polit. iv. 13, 1297, a, 29 sqq.

⁴ iv. 2, 1289, a, 38 sqq. (cf. also vii. 1313, a, 34-1314, a, 29). On the same principle, according to this passage, oligarchy is the second worst, as aristocracy is the second best, constitution, while democracy is the most tolerable of the false forms, being a perversion of polity. For a fuller statement of the same view, see Eth. viii. 12.

⁵ Polit. iv. 10; cf. iii. 14,

Aristotle next proceeds to examine what division of political power is best adapted to each of the different kinds of constitution. distinguishing here three sources of authority: the deliberative assemblies, the magistrates, and the law courts.2 The functions, however, of these three were not so defined as to permit of their being completely identified with the legislature, the executive, and the judicature of modern political theory.3 He does not omit to draw attention here to the tricks and sophistries by which the predominant party, in one or other form of government, seeks to circumvent its opponent and to advance its own interests,4 making it clear, however, that he himself sets small store by such petty and hollow devices.⁵ He further discusses the qualities that fit a man for the discharge of the more important offices of state. He demands for this end not merely experience, business capacity, and attachment to the existing constitution, but before everything

1285, a, 16-b, 3, and p. 240 sq.

iv. 14-16; cf. vi. 2, 1317,

b, 17-1318, a, 10.

10, 14, 1297, b, 37: ἔστι δὴ τρία μόρια τῶν πολιτειῶν πασῶν, περὶ ὧν δεῖ θεωρεῖν τὸν σπουδαῖον νομοθέτην ἐκάστη τὸ συμφέρον 'ὧν ἐχόντων καλῶς ἀνάγκη τὴν πολιτείαν ἔχειν καλῶς, καὶ τὰς πολιτείας ἀλλήλων διαφέρειν ἐν τῷ διαφέρειν ἔκαστον τούτων 'ἔστι δὲ τῶν τριῶν τούτων ἐν μὲν τί τὸ βουλευόμενον περὶ τῶν κοινῶν, δεύτερον δὲ τὸ περὶ τὰς ἀρχάς . . . τρίτον δὲ τί τὸ διαζόν.

³ Tbid. 1298, a, 3, Aristotle continues: κύριον δ' ἐστὶ τὸ βουλευ΄μενον περὶ πολέμου καὶ εἰρήνης

καὶ συμμαχίας καὶ διαλύσεως, καὶ περὶ νόμων, καὶ περὶ θανάτου καὶ φυγῆς καὶ τῶν εὐθυνῶν, so that conformably to Greek usage the deliberative assembly, in addition to its legislative functions, has important judicial and executive duties to perform.

4 "Οσα προφάσεως χάριν ἐν ταῖς πολιτείαις σοφίζονται πρός τὸν δῆμον, the ὀλιγαρχικὰ σοφίσματα τῆς νομοθεσίας, and on the other hand & ἐν ταῖς δημοκρατίαις πρὸς ταῦτ' ἀντισοφίζονται, iv. 13.

5 v. 2, 1307, b, 40, he advises: μὴ πιστεύειν τοῖς σοφίσματος χάριν πρὸς τὸ πλῆθος συγκειμένοις ἐξεκέγχεται γὰρ ὑπὸ τῶν ἔργων:

else that kind of culture and character which is in harmony with the spirit of the constitution. He passes in review the various offices of state,2 leaving off at the point where we should naturally have expected that portion of the missing discussion of the laws which relate to public offices. He treats with especial care, however, the causes which produce change and dissolution in particular forms of constitution³ and the means to counteract them.4 Here, also, he is true to his method of specifying as fully as possible, as the result of wide observation and reflection, all the various causes which are at work and the nature of their effects: and accordingly he challenges the conclusions of Plato's Republic on the subject of the revolutions in states and their causes, with justice indeed, in so far as his theory of politics is in stricter accordance with facts, but at the same time not without a certain misunderstanding of their true character.5 This whole section is exceptionally rich in examples of acute observation, sound judgment, and profound knowledge of the world; it is impossible, however, to do more here than mention a few of the chief points of interest. Two of these stand out in special prominence. In the first place, he warns us against under-estimating small deviations from the status quo, or insignificant occasions of party strife. Important though the objects for which parties contend usually are, the actual outbreak of hostilities may be

¹ v. 9, where the third commonly neglected point of the ἀρετή και δικαιοσύνη έν έκάστη πολιτεία ή πρὸς την πολιτείαν is discussed with especial fullness. Cf. p. 286, Zeller, Platon, Stud. 206 sq. и. 3, infra.

² vi. 8.

³ v. 1-7, 10. 4 v. 8, 9, 11, vi. 5-7.

v. 12, 1315, a, 40 sqq.; cf.

occasioned by the pettiest of causes,1 and small as the change in a government may be at first, yet this may be itself the cause of a greater, and so there may gradually come about from small beginnings a complete revolution in the whole.2 Secondly, we have the principle which constitutes one of the leading thoughts in Aristotle's Politics, and is not the least of the many proofs of political insight exhibited in the work namely, that every form of government brings ruin on itself by its own excess, and that moderation in the use of authority, justice to all, good administration and moral capacity are the best means of retaining power. Democracies are ruined by demagogy and by injustice towards the prosperous classes; oligarchies, by oppression of the people and by the limitation of political rights to too small a minority; monarchies by arrogance and outrage in the rulers.3 He who desires the maintenance of any particular form of government must endeavour above everything to keep it within the limits of moderation, and prevent it from courting its own destruction by any one-sided insistence on the principle of its constitution; 4 he must endeavour to reconcile con-

sqq. These are not the only causes of their ruin, according to Aristotle, but they are among the most frequent and important.

¹ v. 4 init.: γίγνονται μὲν οδν αἱ στάσεις οὐ περὶ μικρῶν ἀλλ' ἐκ μικρῶν, στασιάζουσι δὲ περὶ μεγάλων. μάλιστα δὲ καὶ αἱ μικραὶ ἱσχύουσιν, ὅταν ἐν τοῖς κυρίοις γένωνται . . ἐν ἀρχῆ γὰρ γίγνεται τὸ ἀμάρτημα, ἡ δ' ἀρχὴ λέγεται ήμισν εἶναι παντός &c.; in support of which there follows a rich collection of examples.

² v. 7, 1307, a, 40 sqq. c. 3,

³ v. 5, c. 6 *init.*, *ibid.* 1305, b, 2, 1306, a, 12, c. 10, 1311 a, 22

⁴ v. 9, 1309, b, 18: παρὰ πάντα δὲ ταῦτα δεῖ μὴ λανθάνειν, δ νῦν λανθάνειν, δ νῦν λανθάνεις, τὰς παρεκβεβηκνίας πολιτείας, τὸ μέσον ΄ πολλὰ γὰρ τῶν δοκούντων δημοτικῶν λύει τὰς δημοκρατίας καὶ τῶν δλιγαρχικῶν τὰς δλιγαρχίας, as is well shown in what follows. Cf. vi. 5, 1320, a, 2 sqq.

flicting factions; he must counterbalance the preponderance of one by assigning corresponding influence to the other, and so preserve the former from excess.1 Above all, he must be careful to prevent the public offices from being worked for selfish ends, or one portion of the people from being plundered and oppressed by the other. Here the right course is precisely the opposite of that which is commonly pursued: it is precisely the natural opponents of a constitution that require most consideration, lest by unjust treatment they be transformed into active enemies of the commonwealth.2 In another respect what is required by the nature of the case is the opposite of that which commonly occurs. Nothing is of greater importance for the preservation of any form of state than the previous education of those in whose hands the power is placed.3 But capacity for rule depends solely upon modesty and hardihood; the power of the oligarch is incompatible with effeminacy. the freedom of the people with licentiousness.4 And this is true of all forms of constitution without excep-

¹ v. 8, 1308, b, 24.

² v. 8, 1308, b, 31-1309, a, 32, c. 9, 1310, a, 2 sqq. vi 5, 1320, a, 4 sqq. 29 sqq. c. 7, 1321, a, 31

sqq.

3 v. 9, 1310, a, 12: μέγιστον δὲ πάντων τῶν εἰρημένων πρὸς τὸ διαμένειν τὰς πολιτείας, οὖ νῦν ὁλιγωροῦσι πάντες, τὸ παιδεύεσθαι πρὸς τὰς πολιτείας. ὄφελος γὰρ οὐθὲν τῶν ἀφελιμωτάτων νόμων καὶ συνδεδοξασμένων ὑπὸ πάντων τῶν πολιτευμένων, εἰ μὴ ἔσονται εἰσισμένοι καὶ πεπαιδευμένοι ἐν τῆ πολιτείą. Cf. pp. 261, 284, n. 1, μυρτα.

⁴ Ibid. 1, 19: ἔστι δὲ τὸ πε-

παιδεῦσθαι πρὸς τὴν πολιτείαν οὐ τοῦτο, τὸ ποιεῖν οἶς χαίρουσιν οἱ δλιγαρχοῦντες ἢ οἱ δημοκρατίαν βουλόμενοι, ἀλλ' οἶς δυνήσονται οἱ μὲν δλιγαρχεῖν οἱ δὲ δημοκρατεῖσθαι. νῦν δ' ἐν μὲν ταῖς δλιγαρχίαις οἱ τῶν ἀρχόντων υἱοὶ τρυφῶσιν, οἱ δὲ τῶν ἀπόρων γίγνονται γεγυμνασμένοι καὶ πεπονηκότες, ἄστε καὶ βούλονται μᾶλλον καὶ δύνανται νεωτερίζειν. Similarly in democracies: ζῆ ἐν ταῖς τοιαύταις δημοκρατίαις ἔκαστος ὡς βούλεται . . . τοῦτο δ' ἐστὶ φαῦλον οὐ γὰρ δεῖ οἰεσθαι δουλείαν εἶναι τὸ ζῆν πρὸς τὴν πολιτείαν ἀλλὰ σωτηρίαν.

tion. Even the absolute power of the monarch depends for its continuance upon its limitation; 1 and the unrighteous rule of the tyrant can only make men forget the odium of its origin by approaching in the form of its administration to monarchy. The best means for the maintenance of tyranny is care for the common wellbeing, for the embellishment of the city, and for the public services of religion, a modest household and good economy, ready recognition of merit, a courteous and dignified bearing, commanding personality, sobriety and strength of character, regard for the rights and interests of all.2 So in like manner with regard to oligarchy, the more despotic it is, the more need is there for good order in the government: for just as it is the sickly body or the cranky vessel that demands the most careful management, so it is the bad state that most requires good administration in order to counterbalance its defects.3 And so we arrive always at the same conclusion-namely, that justice and morality are the only security for durability in states. However deep the philosopher goes in the scientific analysis of the forms of constitution which more or less lack this foundation. it is only to arrive in the end at the same result, and to show that in them also the government must be conducted upon the principles which more obviously underlie the true forms: that which in these last is the

ν. 11 init.: σώζονται δὲ [αἰ μοναρχίαι] τῷ τὰς μὲν βασιλείας κγειν ἐπὶ τὸ μετριώτερου. ὅσψ γὰρ ἐλαπτόνων ἄσι κύριοι, πλείω χρόνον ἀναγκαῖον μένειν πᾶσιν τὴν ἀρχήν αὐτοί τε γὰρ ἤττον γίνονται ὅεσπο

τικοί και τοῖς ἤθεσιν ἴσοι μᾶλλου και ὑπὸ τῶν ἀρχομένων φθονοῦντα. ἦττον.

² v. 11, 1314, a, 29–1315, b, 10.

³ vi. 6, 1320, b, 30 sqq.

primary object of government—namely, the well-being of all—is in the former an indispensable means for retaining the sovereignty.

The fates prevented Aristotle from developing his political views with the fullness and completeness he intended in his plan, and philosophy is, doubtless, greatly the loser. But even in the incomplete form in which we have it, the *Politics* is the richest treasure that has come down to us from antiquity, and, if we take into account the difference of the times, it is the greatest contribution to the field of political science that we possess.

CHAPTER XIV

RHETORIC

ARISTOTLE regards Rhetoric, as we have already seen, as auxiliary to Politics.1 His treatment of this, as of other branches of science, was thoroughly revolutionary, and his labours may be said to form an epoch in its history. While his predecessors had contented themselves with what was little more than a collection of isolated oratorical aids and artifices,2 he sought to lay bare the permanent principles which underlie a matter in which success is commonly regarded as a mere question of chance, or at best of practice and readiness, and thus to lay the foundations for a technical treatment of rhetoric.3 He seeks to supply what Plato 4 had demanded but had not actually attempted—namely, a scientific account of the principles of the oratorical art. He does not limit the sphere of this art, as did the

¹ Cf. p. 185, n. 1, supra, and on Aristotle's rhetorical works, vol. i. p. 72 sq.

i. p. 1013 sqq.
⁸ Rhet. i. 1, 1354, a, 6: τῶν μέν οδν πολλών οἱ μέν εἰκή ταῦτα δρώσιν, οί δε διά συνήθειαν από

έξεως. ἐπεὶ δ' ἀμφοτέρως ἐνδέχεται, δηλον ότι ·είη αν αὐτα καί δδοποιείν. δι' δ γάρ ἐπιτυγχάνουσιν οί τε διὰ συνήθειαν καὶ οἱ ἀπὸ ταὐτομάτου, τὴν αἰτίαν θεωρεῖν ενδέχεται, το δε τοιούτον ήδη πάντες αν δμολογήσαιεν τέχνης **ἔργον ε**ἶναι.

4 Phædr. 269 D sqq. : cf. ZELL. Ph. d. Gr. p. 803 sq.

² Besides what PLATO, Phadrus, 266 C sqq., and Aristotle himself, Rhet. i. 1, 1354, a, 11 sgg., remarks, see also Ph. d. Gr.

ordinary view, to forensic and perhaps political oratory. He remarks, as his predecessor had done, that since the gift of speech is universal and may be applied to the most diverse purposes, and since its exercise, whether in public or in private, in giving advice, in exhortation, and in every kind of exposition, is essentially the same, rhetoric, like dialectic, is not confined to any special field; 1 as dialectic exhibits the forms of thought, so must rhetoric exhibit the forms of persuasive speech in all their universality, and apart from their application to any particular subject-matter.2 On the other hand, as Plato had already observed,3 the function of the art of oratory is different from that of philosophy: the latter aims at instruction, the former at persuasion; the goal of the one is truth, of the other probability.4 Aristotle, however, differs from his teacher in the value he attaches to this art and to theoretical discussions devoted to its exposition.⁵ He agrees, indeed, with Plato in reproaching ordinary rhetoric with limiting itself to aims which are merely external, and considering it merely as a means for exciting the emotions and winning over the jury, and with neglecting the higher branch of oratory

¹ Rhet. i. 1 init., and 1355, b, 7, c. 2 init., ibid. 1356, a, 30 sqq. ii. 18 init. c. 1, 1377, b, 21; cf. PLATO, Phædr: 261 A sqq.

² Rhet. i. 4, 1359, b, 12: δσφ δ' ἄν τις ἡ τὴν διαλεκτικὴν ἡ ταύτην [rhetoric] μὴ καθάπερ ὰν δυνάμεις [dexterities] ἀλλ' ἐπιστήμας πειρᾶται κατασκευάζειν, λήσεται τὴν φύσιν αὐτῶν ἀφανίσας τῷ μεταβαίνειν ἐπισκευάζων εἰς ἐπιστήμας ὑποκειμένων τινῶν πραγμάτων, ἀλλὰ μὴ μόνον λόγων.

<sup>Gf. Ph. d. Gr. i. p. 803 sq.
Rhet. i. 1, 1355, a, 25, c. 2
init. See also infra.</sup>

s He does not, indeed, mention Plato in Rhet. i. 1, 1355, a, 20 sqq., but that he had him, and especially his Goryias (Ph. d. Gr. i. p. 510), in his mind is rightly observed by Spengel (Ueb. die Rhetorik des Arist.: Abh. d. philos.-philol. Kl. d. Bayer. Akad. vi. 458 sq.).

-in which these means occupy a secondary place-for the lower, political for forensic eloquence. But on the other hand he recognises that the one essential function of the speaker, under all circumstances, is to convince his audience, 1 and accordingly he admits no rhetoric as genuine which is not based upon dialectic or the art of logical demonstration.² He even expressly declares that all rhetorical artifices must be rigorously excluded from the law courts, and orators forced to confine themselves exclusively to logical demonstration.3 He recognises, however,4 that all are not open to scientific instruction, but that for the majority of men we must start from the level of the common consciousness, which moves in a region of probability, and not of abstract truth. Nor does he see any great danger in so doing, for men, he holds, have a natural sense of truth, and as a general rule are right.5 He reminds us that in the art of oratory we possess a means of securing the victory of right, as well as of defending ourselves; and that in order that we may not fall a prey to the arts of opponents, it is indispensable that we should ourselves understand their nature.6 As, therefore, in the Logic

² *Ibid.* 1355, a, 3 sqq. b, 15, c.

¹ Rhet. i. 1, 1354, a, 11 sqq. b, 16 sqq.

^{2, 1356,} a, 20 sqq.

³ i. 1, 1354, a, 24: ου γάρ δεῖ τον δικαστήν διαστρέφειν εἰς όργην προάγοντας ἡ φθόνον ἡ ἔλεον Κρησθα καν εἴ τις, ῷ μέλλει Χρησθαι κανόνι, τοῦτον ποιήσειε στρεβλόν. Cf. iii. 1, 1404, a, 4. ⁴ *Ibid.* 1355, a, 20-b, 7; cf.

iii. 1, 1404, a, 1 sqq.

based upon dialectic; τό τε γὰρ so in proportion to their value.

άληθες και τὸ υμοιον τῷ άληθεῖ τῆς αὐτῆς ἐστὶ δυνάμεως ἰδεῖν, ἄμα δὲ καὶ οἱ ἄνθρωποι πρὸς τὸ ἀληθὲς πεφύκασιν ίκανῶς καὶ τὰ πλείω τυγχάνουσι της άληθείας · διό πρός τὰ ἔνδοξα στοχαστικώς ἔχειν τοῦ δμοίως έχοντος και πρός την άλή. θείαν ἐστιν. Cf. p. 256, n. 2, supra.

6 Ibid. and 1355, b, 2: the misuse of the art of oratory is

certainly very dangerous, but this is true of all accomplish-5 1355, a, 14: rhetoric is ments except virtue—the more

he had supplemented the investigation of scientific proof by that of probable proof, in the *Politics* the account of the best with that of defective constitutions, so in the *Rhetoric*, he does not omit to treat of those aids to the orator which supplement actual proof, and to discuss the art of demonstration, not only in its strict sense, but also in the sense of probable proof, which starts with what is universally acknowledged and obvious to the mass of mankind.¹ But as he regards the former as the most

1 Aristotle therefore treats rhetoric, not only as the counterpart of dialectic (ἀντίστροφος τῆ διαλεκτική, Rhet. i. 1 init. which, however, primarily refers merely to the fact that they both deal, not with the contents, but with the universal forms of thought and speech), but as a branch (see p. 185, n. 1, supra) and even as a part of it μόριον τι της διαλεκτικής καλ δμοίωμα (Rhet. i. 2, 1356, a, 30 that SPENGEL, Rhet. Gr. i. 9. reads for δμοίωμα "δμοία," is for the question before us unimportant, but the alteration is not probable); a science compounded of analytic and ethics. word, it consists for the most part in an application of dialectic to certain practical problems (described p. 295, infra). While, therefore, we cannot directly apply to rhetoric all that is true of dialectic in general, and still less all that is true of it as applied to the service of philosophy, and while the distinctions which THUROT (Etudes sur Aristote, 154 sqq. 242 sq.; Questions sur la Rhétorique d' Aristote, 12 sq.) seeks to point

out between the two sciences are, so far, for the most part well grounded, it does not follow from this that the above account of their relation to one another is incorrect, and that we have a right, with Thurot, to set aside the definite statement in Rhet. i. 2, by altering the text. For the orator's most important function, according to Aristotle, is demonstration, which, as only probable, falls within the sphere of dialectic (Rhet. i. 1, 1355, a, 3 sqq.); rhetoric is demonstration & ἐνδόξων in reference to the subjects which are proper to public speaking, as dialectic is a like kind of demonstration with reference to all possible subjects. Nor can we accept Thuron's proposal (Etudes, 248 sqq.) to read, Rhet. i. 1, 1355, a, 9, c. 2, 1356, a, 26, Anal. Post. i. 11, 77, a, 29, " ἀναλυτική" instead of διαλεκτική. As the doctrine of συλλογισμός έξ ἐνδόξων, dialectic necessarily deals with inferences in general, and as it is precisely inferences of this kind which are the subject-matter of rhetoric, it is better to connect it with dialectic than with analytic, using διαλεκτική. important sense, he devotes the fullest discussion to it. Of the three books of the *Rhetoric*, the first two, being the first section of his plan, treat of the means of proof $(\pi i \sigma \tau \epsilon \iota s)$; while the second and third parts, on style $(\lambda \epsilon \xi \iota s)$ and arrangement $(\tau \iota \iota \xi \iota s)$, are compressed into the last book, whose genuineness, moreover, is not beyond dispute.

Proofs, according to Aristotle, are divided into those which fall within the province of art and those which do not. Rhetoric as a science has to do only with the former.2 These are of three kinds, according as they depend upon the subject, the speaker, or the hearer. A speaker will produce conviction if he succeeds in showing that his assertions are true and that he is himself worthy of credit, and if he knows how to create a favourable impression upon his hearers. Under the first of these heads, that of the subject-matter, we shall have to discuss demonstration; under the second, or the character of the speaker, the means which the orator takes to recommend himself to his audience; under the third, or the disposition of the hearers, the appeals that he makes to their emotions.3 The first and most important part of rhetoric, therefore, falls into these three sections.4

however, in a somewhat wide sense. On the relation of dialectic to rhetoric, see also WAITZ, Arist. Org. ii. 435 sq.

¹ Cf. vol. i. p. 74, supra; Ph.

d. Gr. i. p. 389.

γραφαὶ καὶ ὅσα τοιαῦτα, ἔντεχνα δὲ ὅσα διὰ τῆς μεθόδου καὶ δι' ἡμῶν κατασκευασθῆναι δυνατόν. ὤστε δεῖ τούτων τοῖς μὲν χρήσασθαι τὰ δὲ εὐοεῖν.

³ i. 2, 1356, a, 1 sqq. ii. 1, 1377, b, 21 sqq. iii. 1, 1403, b, 9; cf. i. 8, 9, 1366, a, 8, 25.

4 περί τὰς ἀποδείξεις, π. τὰ ἤθη, π. τὰ πάθη,

² Rhet. i. 2, 1355, b, 35: των δὲ πίστεων αἱ μὲν ἄτεχνοί εἰσιν αἱ δ' ἔντεχνοι. ἄτεχνα δὲ λέγω ὅσα μὴ δι' ἡμῶν πεπόρισται ἀλλὰ προϋπ-ῆρχεν, οἷον μάρτυρες βάσανοι συγ-

These, again, are found to deal with subjects of different intrinsic importance,1 and it is therefore not unnatural that Aristotle should treat the first of them, the theory of demonstration, at the greatest length. Just as scientific proof proceeds by syllogism and induction, so rhetorical proceeds by enthymeme and instance.2 The exposition of the various points of view from which a subject may be treated,3 the topics of oratory, occupies a considerable portion of Aristotle's treatise; nor does he here limit himself to universal principles which are equally applicable to every kind of speech, but discusses those peculiarities in each which depend upon the particular aim it has in view and the character of its subject-matter; 4 he thus seeks to exhibit the principles of oratory, not only in respect to its general form, but also in respect to its particular matter. With this aim he distinguishes three different kinds or classes of

¹ See p. 291, n. 2, supra.

⁵ In Rhet. i. 2, 1358, a, 2, ii. 26 init., and ii. 1 init., Aristotle speaks only of the principles of the enthymeme; but as the example only calls to mind in an individual case what the enthy-

meme states in a universal proposition, his account refers, as a matter of fact, to demonstration in general, as he, indeed, also includes in it (e.g. ii. 20, c. 23, 1397, b, 12 sqq. 1398, a, 32 sqq.) example and induction.

4 Rhet. i. 2, 1358, a, 2 sqq.: the enthymeme consists partly of universal propositions which belong to no special art or science and are applicable, e.g., to physics as well as ethics, partly of such as are of limited application within the sphere of a particular science, e.g. physics or ethics; the former Aristotle calls $\tau \delta \pi \sigma_i$, the latter $\delta \delta u$ or $\epsilon \delta \delta \eta$, remarking that the distinction between them, fundamental as it is, had almost entirely escaped his predecessors.

² Rhet. i. 2, 1356, a, 35–1357, b, 37, where the nature of these means of proof is fully explained, cf. ii. 22 init.; Anal. Pri. ii. 27, 70, a, 10. An enthymeme, according to this passage, is a συλλογισμός εξ εἰκότων ἢ σημείων. Rhet. 1356, b, 4 gives another definition: καλῶ δ' ἐνθύμημα μὲν ρητορικόν συλλυγισμόν, παράδειγμα δὲ ἐπαγωγὴν ρητορικήν; it comes, however, to the same thing, as the orator, qua orator, is limited to probable evidence.

speeches: deliberative, forensic, and declamatory. The first of these has to do with advice and warning; the second, with indictment and defence; the third, with praise and blame. The first deals with the future; the second, with the past; the third, pre-eminently with the present. In the first, the question is of advantage and disadvantage; in the second, of right and wrong; in the third, of nobility and baseness.2 Aristotle enumerates the topics with which each of these has to deal.3 He indicates 4 the chief subjects upon which advice may be required in politics, and the questions which arise in connection with each, and upon which information must be sought. He discusses minutely the goal for which all human actions make-namely, happiness; its constituents and conditions; 5 the good and the things which we call good; 6 the marks by which we distinguish goods of a higher or a lower character; 7 and, finally, he gives a brief review of the distinguishing characteristics of the different forms of government, inasmuch as these must in each case determine both the orator's actual proposals and the attitude he assumes towards his hearers.8 Similarly, with a view to the orator's practical guidance in the declamatory art, he enlarges upon the noble or honourable in conduct; upon virtue.

marks in Rhet. i. 4 init.

Aristotle was also undoubtedly the first to point out this important division, for we cannot regard the *Rhetorica ad Alexandrum* (c. 2 *init.*), as has been already remarked, vol. i. p. 74, supra, as pre-Aristotelian.

² Rhet. i. 3.

³ See the more general re-

⁴ *Ibid.* 1359, b, 18 sqq., where five are enumerated: revenue, war and peace, defence, exports, and imports, legislation.

i. 5.

⁶ i. 6.

⁷ Ibid. c. 7.

⁹ i. 8, cf. vol. ii. p. 240, n. 3, sup.

its chief forms, its outward signs and effects; and upon the method which the orator must adopt in treating of these subjects.1 For behoof of the forensic orator, he discusses, in the first place, the causes and motives of unjust actions, and since pleasure as well as good (which has already been discussed) may be a motive, Aristotle goes on to treat of the nature and kinds of pleasure and the pleasurable.2 He inquires what it is in the circumstances both of the perpetrator and of the sufferer of the wrong that tempts to its committal.3 He investigates the nature, the kinds, and the degrees of crime; 4 and adds, finally, in this section rules for the employment of those proofs which lie outside the province of art, and which find a place only in a judicial trial.⁵ The views he propounds on all these subjects agree, of course, entirely with what we already know of his ethical and political convictions, except that here, in accordance with the aim of the work, they are presented in a more popular, and therefore sometimes in a less accurate and scientific, form. Only after thus discussing the individual peculiarities of the different kinds of oratory does Aristotle proceed to investigate those forms of proof which are equally applicable to all,6 discussing under this head the universal forms of demonstration namely, enthymeme and instance, together with a few

supra), with SPENGEL, before the first seventeen chapters of the second book. But even if, with BRANDIS (iii. 194 sq.) and THUROT (Etudes sur Arist. 228 sqq.), we take the traditional order as the original one, we must admit that the contents of the section are more in place here.

¹ i. 9.

i. 10 sq.
 πω̂s ἔχοντες καὶ τ΄.νας ἀδικοῦσιν, Rhet. i, 12.

⁴ i. 13 sq., cf. c. 10 init.

⁵ i. 15, cf. p. 293, n. 2, supra. ⁶ ii. 18 (from 1391, b, 23 onwards), c. 26, if, that is to say, we place this section (see vol. i. p. 74,

rhetorical commonplaces.1 Of the two other means of proof, besides demonstration proper—namely, the personal recommendations of the speaker and the impression upon the audience—the former is only cursorily touched upon, as the rules relating to it are deducible from other parts of the argument.2 On the other hand, Aristotle goes into minute detail on the subject of the emotions and their treatment: on anger and the means of arousing and soothing it; 3 on love and hatred, desire and aversion, and the means of exciting each of them; 4 likewise on fear, shame, good will, sympathy,5 indignation,6 envy, and jealousy.7 To this he finally adds an account of the influence which the age and outward circumstances $(\tau \dot{\nu} \gamma a \iota)$ of a man exercise upon his character and disposition.8

These observations conclude the first and most important section of the Rhetoric; the third book treats more shortly of style and arrangement. In regard to the

According to the announcement made c. 18 fin., c. 19 treats especially of possibility and impossibility, actual truth and falsehood, relative importance and unimportance (περί δυνατοῦ καὶ άδυνάτου, καλ πότερον γέγονεν ή οὐ γέγονεν καὶ ἔσται ἡοὐκ ἔσται, ἔτιδὲ περί μεγέθους και μικρότητος των πράγματων, 1393, a, 19); c. 20 of illustration, c. 21 of gnomology; c. 21-26 of enthymemes, for which Aristotle gives, not only general rules (c. 22), but a complete topical account of the forms employed in proof and disproof (c. 23); of fallacies (c. 24); of instances for combating enthymemes (c. 25).
² ii. 1378, a, 6: to recom-

mend him to his audience the orator must get credit for three things: insight, uprightness and benevolence: δθεν μέν τοίνυν Φρόνιμοι καὶ σπουδαῖοι φανεῖεν αν, έκ τῶν περί τὰς ἀρετὰς διηρημένων (i.9; see p. 296, n. 1, sup.) ληπτέον . . . περί δ' εὐνοίας και φιλίας ἐν τοῖς περί τὰ πάθη λεκτέον νῦν.

³ ii. 2, 3. 4 c. 4.

⁵ c. 5-8.

⁶ The displeasure at the unmerited fortune of unworthy persons (véµeσis), the account of which in Rhet. ii. 9 harmonises with that in Eth. ii. 7 (see p.

⁷ ii. 10, 11.

⁸ ii. 12-17.

former, a distinction is in the first place drawn between delivery and language. While desiderating a technical system of instruction in rhetorical delivery, the author regrets the influence which so external a matter exercises on the general effect of a speech.1 He next calls attention to the distinction between the language of the orator and of the poet, demanding of the former, as its two most essential requirements, clearness and dignity,2 and advising as the means best fitted to secure them that the speaker should confine himself to appropriate expressions and effective metaphors.3 upon the qualities and conditions of which he proceeds to enlarge.4 He treats further of propriety of language,5 fullness and suitability of expression,6 rhythm and structure of the sentences, grace and lucidity of presentation. He examines, finally, the tone that should be adopted in written or oral discourse, and in the different kinds of oration.9 It is impossible, however, to give here in detail the many striking observations which the writer makes upon these subjects. They clearly show that

¹ iii. 1, 1403, b, 21-1404, a, 23. Aristotle does not go fully into the discussion of what is good or bad delivery; he merely remarks that it depends upon the voiceespecially upon its power, melody (άρμονία) and rhythm.

² τδ πρέπον, the proper mean between το ταπεινον and το ύπερ τὸ ἀξίωμα, between a bald and an overloaded style.

³ iii. 1 sq. 1404, a, 24-b, 37.

⁴ Ibid. to c. 4 fin.

⁵ τὸ ἑλληνίζειν, iii. 5, in which, besides correct gender, number

and syntax, are included definiteness and unambiguousness of expression, as well as τὸ εὐανάγνωστον and εξφοαστον.

⁶ ὄγκος της λέξεως, c. 6, τδ πρέπον τ. λέξ. c, 7, which consists chiefly in the true relation between matter and style.

⁷ The former c. 8, the latter

⁸ The ἀστεῖον and εὐδοκίμουν, the πρό ομμάτων ποιείν, &c., c. 10 sq.
⁹ c. 12.

even if the book did not come direct from Aristotle in its present form, it is yet founded upon his teaching.

In the last section of the Rhetoric, which treats of arrangement, prominence is in the first place given to two indispensable parts of every speech: the presentation of the subject-matter, and the demonstration. To these are added in the majority of speeches an introduction and a conclusion, so that there are four chief parts in The method of treatment which each of these parts demands, and the rules both for their arrangement and execution which the character of the circumstances require, are discussed with great knowledge and penetration. And just as Aristotle's theory of oratory as a whole does not neglect the external aids to success, so here also devices are touched upon which are permitted to the orator only in consideration of the weakness of his hearers or of his case.3 The Rhetoric stands in this respect also as the exact counterpart of the Topics. But here, as there, it is impossible to follow these discussions into greater detail.

sq. the proofs, c. 19 the conclu-

¹ πρόθεσις, expositio. Narration is merely a particular kind of it which is employed only in forensic speeches; c. 13, 1414, a, $\frac{34}{2}$ seq.

² c. 13. In accordance with this division Aristotle discusses first (c. 14 sq.) the introduction, secondly (c. 16) the exposition of the subject (which, however, he here again calls δίηγησις), c. 17

S Cf. e.g. c. 14, 1415, b, 4: $\delta \epsilon i \ \delta \hat{\epsilon} \ \mu \hat{\eta} \ \lambda \alpha \nu \theta d \nu \epsilon \nu \ \delta \tau i \ \pi d \nu \tau \alpha \ \tilde{\epsilon} \xi \omega \ \tau \sigma \tilde{v} \ \lambda \delta \gamma \rho u \ \tau \hat{\alpha} \ \tau \sigma u a \tilde{v} \tau \alpha \ \tilde{\epsilon} \xi \omega \ \tau \sigma \tilde{v} \ \lambda \delta \gamma \rho u \ \tau \hat{\alpha} \ \tau \sigma u \alpha \tilde{v} \tau \alpha \ \tilde{\epsilon} \xi \omega \ \tau \sigma \tilde{u} \ \pi \rho \Delta \gamma \mu \alpha \tau \sigma u \alpha \tau \alpha \ \tilde{\epsilon} \tau \alpha \ \tilde{\epsilon} \xi \omega \ \tau \sigma \tilde{u} \ \pi \rho \alpha \tau \sigma u \alpha \tau \sigma \alpha \ \tilde{\epsilon} \tau \alpha \tilde{\epsilon} \omega \ \tau \alpha \tilde{\epsilon} \alpha \tilde{\epsilon} \omega \ \tau \alpha \tilde{\epsilon} \alpha \tilde{\epsilon} \omega \ \tau \alpha \tilde{\epsilon} \alpha \tilde{\epsilon} \omega \ \tilde{\epsilon} \alpha \tilde{\epsilon} \alpha$

CHAPTER XV

THE PHILOSOPHY OF ART 1

BESIDES knowledge and action, Aristotle distinguishes, as a third branch, artistic production, and to theoretic and practical he adds poetic science.² The latter, however, he fails to treat with the same comprehensive grasp as the two former. Of such of his works as have come down to us only one is devoted to art, and that not to art as a whole, but to the art of poetry; and even this we possess only in an imperfect form. But even of those which are lost none treated of art, or even of fine art, in a comprehensive manner.³ Apart from a

² See vol. i. pp. 106 sq., 182. 3 There is, according to Aristotle, a great difference between these; to τέχνη belong all the products of intelligence, beautiful and useful alike; see interalia p. 107, n. 2, sup.; Metaph. i. 1, 981, b, 17, 21. While remarking, Metaph. ibid., that some of the τέχναι serve προς τάναγκαΐα. others πρός διαγωγήν, while ai μή πρός ήδουην μηδέ πρός τάναγκαΐα τῶν ἐπιστημῶν are different from both, he fails, nevertheless, to give any fuller account of the marks which distinguish the fine from the merely useful arts-in Phys. ii. 8, 199, a, 15 he is discussing, not (as TEICHMÜLLER,

¹ E. MÜLLER, Gesch. der Theorie der Kunst bei den Alten. ii. 1-181 BRANDIS, ii. b, 1683 sgg. iii. 156-178; TEICHMÜLLER, Arist. Forsch, vol. i. ii. 1867, 1869; REINKENS, Arist. über Kunst bes. üb. Tragödie, 1870; DÖRING, Kunstlehre d. Arist. 1876. For further literature on the subject see below and cf. UEBERWEG, Grundr. i. 204 sq.; cf. Susemihl, Jahrb. f. Philol. lxxxv. 395 sqq. xcv. 150 sqq. 221 sqq. 827 sqq. cv. 317 sqq., in the preface and notes to his edition of the Poetics (2 ed. 1874), and in Bursian's Jahresbericht for 1873, p. 594 sqq. 1875, p. 381 sqq. 1876, p. 283 sqq.

book upon Music, whose genuineness is highly doubtful, we hear only of historical and dogmatic treatises upon poets and the art of poetry, among which some were probably likewise spurious. We cannot, therefore, look to Aristotle for a complete theory of art; nor are his views even upon the art of poetry fully known to us from the sources which we possess.

Aristotle's philosophy of art is founded, like Plato's,² not on the conception of beauty in the abstract, but on that of art. The conception of beauty remains vague and undefined to the last. In dealing with moral beauty Aristotle compares the beautiful with the good inasmuch as the latter is desirable on its own account,³ remarking at the same time elsewhere that, looked at from other points of view, it is as compared with

Ar. Forsch. ii. 89 sqq. believes) two kinds of arts, but a twofold relation of art generally to nature. Cf. p. 303, n. 3, infra, and Döring, p. 80 sq.

On this treatise see vol. i. p. 103, n. 1, supra. The fragment in PLUT. De Mus. 23, p. 1139, which ROSE (Fragm. 43, p. 1482) and HEITZ (Fr. 75, p. 53) refer to the Eudemus, but for which a suitable place could hardly be found in this dialogue, seems to me to come from it. We cannot, however, regard this little piece, with its Pythagoreanism and copious style, as Aristotle's work.

2 Of which account is given in Arist. Et.

Ph. d. Gr. i. p. 795. BELGER, De

Arist. in Arte Poëtica componenda

Platonis discipulo, gives a full

and careful account of the points

in which Aristotle's theory of

art agrees with Plato's, and those

such definition.

in which it differs from it.

³ Rhet. i. 9, 1366, a, 33: καλὸν μὲν οὖν ἐστὶν ὁ ὰν δι' αὐτὸ αίρετου δυ έπαινετου ἢ, ἢ δ δυ ἀγαθου ου ἡδὸ ἢ, ὅτι ἀγαθου. ii. 13, 1389, b, 37: το καλου as distinguished from τὸ συμφέρου or that which is good for the individual is the ἀπλῶs ἀγαθόν. Of the numberless passages in which τὸ καλὸν is used of moral beauty, i.e. of goodness, several have already come before us, e.g. p. 149, n. 3, p. 151, n. 2, and p. 192, n. 6, supra. We cannot find, however, in Aristotle (as P. RÉE, Τοῦ καλοῦ notio in Arist. Eth. Halle, 1875, attempts to do) any more accurate definition of this conception; neither in the ethical nor in the æsthetic field does he seem to have felt the need of goodness a wider conception, for while the term good is applied only to certain actions, beauty is predicated also of what is unmoved and unchangeable. As the essential marks of beauty he indicates, at one time order, symmetry and limitation, at another right size and order. And yet how vague the conception of beauty is still left, and especially how remote is held to be its relation to sensible appearance, is obvious above all from the assertion that it is chiefly in the mathe-

¹ Metaph. xiii. 3, 1078, a, 31: έπει δε το άγαθον και το καλον έτερον, τὸ μὲν γὰρ ἀεὶ ἐν πράξει, τὸ δε και έν τοις ακινήτοις. Accordingly Mathematics (whose object, according to p. 183, is the unmoved) has to deal in a special sense with the beautiful. stotle applies, indeed, good as well as beautiful to the deity, who is absolutely unmoved (cf. p. 397, n. 3, and p. 404, supra), as he attributes to Him πραξιs in the wider sense (vol. i. p. 400, n. 1, ad fin.). Butthis does not justify us in converting the passage before us (as TEICHMÜLLER does, Arist. Forsch. ii. 209, 255 sqq.) into the opposite of its plain sense. It offers merely a further proof of the uncertainty of Aristotle's language with reference to $\tau \delta$ άγαθὸν and τὸ καλόν. In Metaph. xiii. 3 he is thinking only of good in the ethical sense.

² Metaph. ibid. 1. 36: τοῦ δὲ καλοῦ μέγιστα εἴδη τάξις καὶ συμμετρία καὶ τὸ ὁρισμένον. The εἴδη here are not different kinds of beauty, but the forms or qualities of things in which beauty reveals itself. How these points of view are maintained in Aristotle's rules of art

is shown by MÜLLER, p. 9 sqq., who compares also *Probl.* xix. 38, xvii. 1.

3 Practically identical with το ωρισμένου, as DORING rightly

observes, p. 97.

4 Poet. 7, 1450, b, 36 (cf. Pol. vii. 4, 1326, a, 29 sqq. b, 22; see p. 259, n. 1, supra, also Eth. iv. 3, 1123, b, 6): τὸ γὰρ καλὸν ἐν μεγέθει καὶ τάξει ἐστὶ, διὸ οὕτε πάμμικρον άν τι γένοιτο καλὸν ζώον (συγχείται γὰρ ἡ θεωρία ἐγγὺς τοῦ άναισθήτου χρόνου γινομένη) ούτε παμμέγεθες οὐ γὰρ ἄμα ἡ θεωρία γίνεται, άλλ' οίχεται τοῖς θεωροῦσι τό εν και το όλον έκ της θεωρίας. οίον εί μυρίων σταδίων είη ζώον. As a visible object must be easily taken in by the eye by virtue of its size, so a mythus must be easy to retain. The parenthesis (συγχείται γάρ, &c.) means: if an object is too small, its parts become merged in each other, and no clear picture of it is possible. It is probable that xoovou after ἀναισθήτου has crept into the text from Phys. iv. 13, 222, b, 15 (see Bonitz, Arist. Stud. i. 96; Susemihl, in loco).

⁵ Metaph. ibid. 1078, b, 1. In reply to TEICHMÜLLER'S objections to the above remark

matical sciences that the above characteristics find their application. If beauty is a quality not less of a scientific investigation or a good action than of a work of art, it is too vague a concept to serve as the foundation of a philosophy of art. Aristotle accordingly at the beginning of the Poetics sets it wholly aside,1 and starts from the consideration of the nature of Art.² The essence of art Aristotle, like Plato, finds, generally speaking, to be imitation.3 It has its origin

(Arist. Forsch. ii. 275 sq.), Suse-MIHL (Jahrb. f. Philol. cv. p. 321) has pointed out the confusion between the concrete phenomena of sense (e g. colours, sounds, &c.) and the abstract, mathematical forms of sensible existence.

1 The words here used, πωs δεῖ συνίστασθαι τοῦς μύθους, εἰ μέλλει καλῶς ἕξειν ἡ ποίησις (TEICHMÜLLER, ii. 278), are of course no argument against this view. It is hardly necessary to point out that such expressions as καλως έχειν, καλως λέγειν, &c. (e.g. in Meteor. i. 14, 352, a, 7, 11: Polit. iv. 14, 1297, b, 38; Metaph, xiii. 6 init.; Eth. vii. 13, and innumerable other passages), have nothing to do with the specifically aesthetic meaning of τὸ καλόν.

² TEICHMÜLLER, indeed, in a detailed discussion of beauty and the 'four aesthetic ideas' (order, symmetry, limitation and size), ibid. p. 208-278, has attempted to show that Aristotle's theory of art is based upon the conception of beauty. This attempt, however, is rightly discredited by DÖRING, p. 5 sqq. 93, sqq. If the abstract conception of beauty had been his

starting point in his theory of art, Aristotle would have devoted himself before everything else to its closer investigation, and would have used the result of this investigation as the criterion of the claims of art. This, however, he does not do: and while, of course, he demands of a work of art that it should be beautiful, while he speaks of a καλώς έχων μῦθος, a μύθος καλλίων, a καλλίστη τραγφδία, &c. (Poet. c. 9 fin. c. 11, 1452, a, 32, c. 13, 1452, b, 31, 1453, a, 12, 22, and passim), yet he never deduces any rule of art from the universal conception of beauty, but rather from the special aim of a particular art.

³ Poet. i. 1447, a, 12 (on the different forms of poetry and music): πᾶσαι τυγχάνουσιν οὖσαι μιμήσεις το σύνολον. c. 2 init. c. 3 init. and often. In the words. Phys. ii. 8, 199, a, 15, δλως τε ή τέχνη τὰ μὲν ἐπιτελεῖ α ἡ φύσις άδυνατεί ἀπεργάσασθαι, τὰ δέ μιμεῖται, art is used as fine art. It is mere imitation, but it may, indeed, be also regarded as a perfecting of nature, as in the training of the voice or deportment.

in the imitative instinct and the joy felt in its exercise which distinguishes man above all other creatures; hence also the peculiar pleasure which art affords.1 this pleasure, springing as it does from the recognition of the object represented in the picture and from the enjoyment thus obtained, Aristotle further recognises an intimation of the universal desire for knowledge.2 But as knowledge is of very different value according to the nature of the object known,3 this will of necessity be true of artistic imitation also. The object of imitation in art is, generally speaking, nature or the actual world of experience.4 But nature includes man and his actions; indeed, it is with man alone that the most impressive arts-viz. poetry and music-have to do: 5 and the object which it is the essential aim of the imitative artist to represent consists not merely of the outward appearance of things, but to a much greater

1 Poet. 4 init., where it is added: this is obvious from the fact that good pictures delight us even when the objects represented produce themselves quite the opposite impression: as in the case of loathsome animals or corpses. Cf. foll. n.

² Poet. 4, 1448, b, 12, Aristotle continues: αἴτιον δὲ καὶ τούτου [joy in works of art], ὅτι το μανθάνειν ου μόνον τοις φιλοσόφοις ήδιστον, άλλὰ και τοῖς άλλοις δμοίως άλλ' έπὶ βραχὺ κοινωνοῦσιν αὐτοῦ, διὰ γὰρ τοῦτο χαίρουσι τὰς εἰκόνας δρῶντες, ὅτι συμβαίνει θεωροῦντας μανθάνειν καὶ συλλογίζεσθαι τί εκαστον, οξον ότι οδτος έκεῖνος, ἐπεὶ ἐὰν μὴ τύχη προεωρακώς, οὐ διὰ μίμημα ποιήσει την ήδονην άλλα δια την απεργασίαν

ή την χροιάν ή διά τοιαύτην τινά άλλην αίτίαν. Rhet. i. 11, 1371, b, 4: ἐπεὶ δὲ τὸ μανθάνειν τε ἡδὺ καὶ τὸ θαυμάζειν, καὶ τὰ τοιάδε ἀνάγκη ήδέα είναι οίον τό τε μεμιμημένον. ώσπερ γραφική και ανδριαντοποιία καί ποιητική, και παν δ αν εδ μεμιμημένον ή, καν ή μη ήδυ αὐτό τὸ μεμιμημένον ου γάρ επί τούτω χαίρει, άλλὰ συλλογισμός ἐστιν ὅτι τοῦτο ἐκεῖνο, ὥστε μανθάνειν τι συμβαίνει.

³ Cf. p. 303, a. 3, supra.

⁴ Phys. ii. 8: see p. 303, n. 3. ⁵ Cf. foll. n. and page. Even of the art of dancing it is said, c. 1. 1447, a, 27: καὶ γὰροῦτοι διὰ τῶν σχηματιζομένων βυθμῶν μιμοῦνται καὶ ήθη καὶ πάθη καὶ πράξεις.

degree of their inner intelligible essence. He may confine himself to what is universal and actual, or he may rise above it. or he may sink below it.1 He may represent things as they are, or as they are commonly supposed to be, or as they ought to be.2 It is in representations of this last kind that the chief function of art consists. Art according to Aristotle must represent not the individual as such, but the universal, the necessary and the natural. It must not be content to reflect naked reality but must idealise it. painter, for instance, must both be true to his subject and improve upon it; 3 the poet must tell us, not what has been, but what must be according to the nature of the case, and on this account Aristotle prefers poetry to history, as higher and more nearly allied to philosophy, seeing that it reveals to us not only individual facts but universal laws.4 And this holds not only of

1 Poet. 2 init.: ἐπεὶ δὲ μιμοῦνται οἱ μιμούμενοι πράττοντας,
ἀνάγκη δὲ τούτους ἡ σπουδαίους ἡ
φαύλους εἶναι . . . ἡτοι βελτίονας
ἡ καθ' ἡμᾶς ἡ χείρονας ἡ καὶ
τοιούτους, which Aristotle proceeds to illustrate from painting,
poetry, and music.

² Ibid. 25, 1460, b, 7: ἐπεὶ γάρ ἐστι μιμητὴς ὁ ποιητὴς, ὅσπερ ὰν εἰ ζωγράφος ἢ τις ἄλλος εἰκονοποιὸς, ἀνάγκη μιμεῖσθαί τριῶν ὄντων τὸν ἀριθμὸν ἔν τι ἀεί· ἡ γὰρ οἶα ἦν ἢ ἔστιν, ἡ οἶα φασὶ καὶ δοκεῖ, ἡ οἷα εἶναι δεῖ. We may regard these words as genuine, although they stand in a rather suspicious section.

³ Poet. 15, 1454, b, 8: ἐπεὶ δὲ μίμησίς ἐστιν ἡ τραγφδία βελτιόνων, ἡμᾶς δεῖ μιμεῖσθαι τοὺς ἀγαθοὺς εἰκονογράφους καὶ γὰρ ἐκεῖνοι άποδιδόντες την ίδιαν μορφην, δμοίους ποιοῦντες, καλλίους γράφουσιν. The idealism of the Greek statues of the gods did not, of course, escape the philosopher's notice; cf. vol. ii. p. 217, n. 5, supra.

4 Poet. 9 înit.. οὐ τὸ τὰ γινόμενα λέγειν, τοῦτο ποιητοῦ ἔργον ἐστὶν, ἀλλὶ οἶα ἄν γένοιτο, και τὰ δυνατὰ κατὰ τὸ εἰκὸς ἢ τὸ ἀναγκαῖον. ὁ γὰρ ἱστορικὸς καὶ ὁ ποιητης οὖ τῷ ἔμμετρα λέγειν ἢ ἄμετρα διαφέρουσιν εἴη γὰρ ἄν τὰ Ἡροδότου εἰς μέτρα τεθηναι, καὶ οὐδὲν ῆττον ἀν εἴη ἱστορία τις μετὰ μέτρου ἢ ἄνευ μέτρων, ἄλλὰ τούτφ διαφέρει, τῷ τὸν μὲν τὰ γενόμενα λέγειν, τὸν δὲ οἶα ἄν γένοιτο. διὸ καὶ φιλοσοφώτερον καὶ σπουδαιότερον ποίησις ἱστορίας ἔστὶν ἡ μὲν

serious poetry but also of comic. The former in bringing before us forms which transcend ordinary limits must give us an ennobled picture of human nature, for it must represent typical characters in whom the true nature of certain moral qualities is sensibly exhibited to us; ¹ but the latter also, although dealing necessarily with the weaknesses of human nature, ² must nevertheless make it its chief end not to attack individuals but to present types of character. ³ While,

γάρ ποίησις μάλλον τὰ καθόλου, ή δ' ίστορία τὰ καθ' ἕκαστον λέγει. έστι δὲ καθόλου μὲν, τῷ ποίφ τὰ ποῖ' ἄττα συμβαίνει λέγειν ἡ πράττειν κατά το είκος ή το άναγκαῖον . . . τὰ δὲ καθ' ἕκαστον, τί 'Αλκιβιάδης ἔπραξεν ή τί ἔπαθεν. Ibid. 1451, b, 29: καν άρα συμβή γενόμενα ποιείν [τον ποιητήν] οὐθὲν ηττον ποιητής έστιν· των γάρ γενομένων ένια οὐδὲν κωλύει τοιαῦτα είναι οξα αν είκὸς γενέσθαι καλ δυνατά γενέσθαι. Cf. c. 15, 1454, α, 33: χρη δε και έν τοις ήθεσιν ωσπερ και έν τη των πραγμάτων συστάσει, αεί (ητείν ή το αναγκαίον ή τὸ εἰκὸς, ώστε τὸν τοιοῦτον τὰ τοιαθτα λέγειν ή πράττειν ή άναγκαίον ή είκος, και τούτο μετά τούτο γίνεσθαι ή αναγκαΐον ή είκός. С. 1, 1447, b, 13 sqq.: it is not the metre but the content that makes Empedocles (whose the poet. Homeric power Aristotle praises in Diog. viii. 56) has nothing but the metre in common with Homer.

1 Poet. 15 (see p. 305, n. 3, supra), Aristotle continues: οὕτω καὶ τὸν ποιητὴν μιμούμενον καὶ ὀργίλους καὶ ραθύμους καὶ τᾶλλα τὰ τοιαῦτα ἔχοντας ἐπὶ τῶν ἡθῶν, ἐπιεικείας ποιεῦν παράδειγμα ἡ σκληρότητος δεῖ &c. Cf. following note and c. 13, 1453, a, 16.

2 C.2 fin.: ἡ μèν γὰρ [comedy] χείρους ἡ δὲ βελτίους μιμεῖσθαι βούλεται τῶν νῦν. C. 5 init.: ἡ δὲ κωμῷδία ἐστὶν, ὥσπερ εἴπομεν, μίμησις φαυλοτέρων μὲν, οὐ μέντοι κατὰ πᾶσαν κακίαν, ἀλλὰ τοῦ αἰσχροῦ ἐστὶ τὸ γελοῖον μόριον. τὸ γὰρ γελοῖόν ἐστιν ἀμάρτημά τι καὶ αἴσχος ἀνώδυνον καὶ οὐ φθαρτικόν.

⁸ Cf. Poet. 9, 1451, b, 11 sqq. c. 5, 1449, b, 5; Eth. iv. 14, 1128, a. 22. Aristotle here gives the New Comedy the preference over the Old because it refrains from abuse (αἰσχρολογία). He gives Homer, moreover, the credit (Poet. 4, 1448, b, 34) of being creator, in the character of Margites, of comedy, οὐ ψόγον άλλὰ τὸ γελοῖον δραματοποιήσας. The Poetics are doubtless the source (cf. vol. i. p. 102, n. 2) of the remark in CRAMER'S Anecd. Paris. Append. I. (Arist. Poet, p. 78; VAHL. p. 208; Fr. 3 SUS.): διαφέρει ή κωμφδία της λοιδορίας, έπελ ή μέν λοιδορία ἀπαρακαλύπτως τὰ προσόντα κακά διέξεισιν, ή δε δείται της καλουμένης έμφάσεως [indication]. To this subject belongs the remark in Rhet. iii. 18, 1419, b, 7, where it is said that εἰρωνεία is more worthy of the freeman than βωμολοχία. This also had therefore, Plato and Aristotle agree in regarding art as a species of imitation, they draw very different conclusions from this account of it. Plato thinks of it only as the imitation of sensible phenomena and accordingly expresses the utmost contempt for the falsity and worthlessness of art; Aristotle, on the other hand, looks upon artistic presentation as the sensible vehicle to us of universal truths and thus places it above the empirical knowledge of individual things.

We are now in a position to explain what Aristotle says about the aim and the effect of Art. In two passages 2 to which we have already had occasion to refer, he distinguishes four different uses of

been particularly treated of by Aristotle in the Poetics (Rhet. i. 11, 1372, a, 1: διώρισται δὲ περὶ γελοίων χωρὶ sὲν τοῖς περὶ ποιητικῆς: cf. Vahlen, ibid. p. 76; Fr. 2), from which must come Fr. 9 of the Anecd. Paris. ibid.: ἤθη κωμφδίας τὰ τε βωμολόχα καὶ τὰ εἰρωνικὰ καὶ τὰ τῶν ὰλαζόνων.

view which is not consistent with the fact that art is at the same time regarded as one of the most important means of education whose function is the presentation of moral ideas (ibid. p. 532 sq. 772 sq. 800 sq; cf. Symp. 209 D).

² Pol. viii. 5, 7, see p. 266, supra. In the former of these passages no mention is made of purification; it is merely asked (1339, α, 15): τίνος δεῖ χάριν μετέχειν αὐτῆς, πότερον παιδιᾶς ἔνεκα καὶ ἀναπαύσεως... ἡ μᾶλλον οἰητέον πρὸς ἀρετήν τι τείνειν τὴν μουσικὴν, ὡς δυναμένην... τὸ

ήθος ποιόν τι ποιείν, εθίζουσαν δύνασθαι χαίρειν όρθως. ή πρός διαγωγήν τι συμβάλλεται καὶ φρόνησιν . καί γάρ τοῦτο τρίτον θετέον τῶν εἰρημένων. On the other hand it is very definitely referred to in the second (1341, b, 36): φαμέν δ' οὐ μιῶς ἕνεκεν ἀφελείας τῆ μουσική χρήσθαι δεῖν ἀλλὰ καὶ πλειόνων χάριν (καὶ γὰρ παιδείας ενεκεν καὶ καθάρσεως . . . τρίτον δὲ πρὸς διαγωγήν, πρὸς ἄνεσίν τε καί πρός την της συντονίας ανάπαυσιν). But, on this account, to change the text of the latter passage with Spengel (Ueber die κάθαρσις των παθημάτων, Abh. der philos.-philol, Kl. der Baur. Akad. ix. 1, 16 sq.), and to read: καί γάρ παιδείας ένεκεν και καθάρσεως, . . πρός διαγωγήν, τρίτον δὲ πρὸς ἄνεσίν τε &c. οr κ. γ. παιδ. έν. κ. καθάρσ., πρός άνεσίν τεανάπαυσιν, τρίτον δὲ πρὸς διαγωγήν. is a violent expedient against which BERNAYS (Rhein. Mus. xiv. 1859, p. 370 sqq.) rightly music¹: it serves (i) as a relaxation and amusement; (ii) as a means of moral culture; (iii) as an enjoyable exercise; and (iv) as a purifying influence. Whether each form of art has this fourfold function or not, he does not expressly say; nor could he in any case have regarded them as all alike in this respect. Of the plastic arts he remarks that their ethical effect, although considerable, is inferior to that of music,² while he probably hardly thought of attributing a purifying influence to them. Where they confine themselves to the exact imitation of particular objects, they serve in his view no higher purpose than the satisfaction of a rather shallow

protests. The first of these proposals is hardly permissible, even from the point of view of style, while neither of them finds any support in the alleged contradiction between c. 5 and c. 7, as it is not unfrequently the case in Aristotle that a preliminary division is supplemented in the sequel (cf. e.g. what is said, vol. i. p. 400, sqq., on the different classifications of constitution); both, moreover, are inconsistent with the distinction between edifying and purifying music, as that is definitely set forth in c. 7, and calls for immediate notice.

Not merely three, as Bernars ibid. represents by taking ardmars and $\delta \iota a \gamma w \gamma \eta$ together. Aristotle differentiates the two very clearly: young people, he says, are incapable of $\delta \iota a \gamma w \gamma \eta$, whereas they are very much inclined to $\pi a \iota \delta \iota d$ and $\delta \iota v \epsilon \sigma \iota s$ (see vol. ii. p. 267, n. 1, $s \iota u \gamma \tau a$); the former is an end in itself $[\tau \epsilon \lambda \sigma s]$, the latter a mere means (c. 5, 1339, a, 29, b, 25-42; cf. Eth. x. 6,

1176, b, 27 sqq. p. 140, supra); the former presupposes a higher culture (see p. 309, n. 3, infra), not so the latter: and accordingly they are completely separated from one another, 1339, a, 25, b, 13, 15 sqq., ibid. 4; cf. a, 33. Cf. p. 266, n. 5, supra.

Pol. viii. 5, 1340, a, 28: συμβέβηκε δε των αισθητών έν μεν τοῖς ἄλλοις μηδὲν ὑπάρχειν ὁμοίωμα τοις ήθεσιν, οίον έν τοις άπτοις και τοις γευστοις, άλλ' έν τοις όρατοις ηρέμα σχήματα γάρ έστι τοιαθτα (i.e. moral attitudes and gestures), άλλ' έπὶ μικρόν καὶ πάντες read οὐ πάντες, as MÜLLER ibid. 10 sq. 348 sqq. conjectures] τηs τοιαύτης αἰσθήσεως κοινωνοῦσιν, ἔτι δὲ οὐκ ἔστι ταῦτα δμοιώματα τῶν ἠθῶν, ἀλλὰ σημεῖα μᾶλλον τὰ γιγνόμενα σχήματα και χρώματα τῶν ἡθῶν. Nevertheless, young men ought not, ὅσον διαφέρει καὶ περί την τούτων θεωρίαν, to be allowed to study the pictures of a Pauson but those of a Polygnotus κὰν εἴ τις ἄλλος τῶν γραφέων η των άγαλματοποιών έστιν ήθικός.

curiosity. 1 Nor does he seem to expect from Comedy (on which see below) either morally edifying or purifying results. On the other hand, the purification of the emotions is the chief end, as we shall see, of serious poetry, although that art is not, of course, thereby excluded from exercising upon the hearer other effects as well which are either connected with or flow from the first. Granted that a part of this effect—viz. the amusement -is due to the pleasure derived from sensible appearance, yet the higher and more valuable portion is due to that ideal content which, according to Aristotle, it is the function of Art to present. As a means to nobler intellectual enjoyment ($\delta \iota \alpha \gamma \omega \gamma \dot{\gamma}$) the higher poetry must appeal to our reason, since according to Aristotelian principles the measure of our rational activity is also the measure of our happiness; 2 and, as a matter of fact, Aristotle regards this purifying effect of art as standing in the closest relation to intellectual culture.3 manner poetry can only serve for moral edification by exhibiting to us the nature and aim of moral action in examples that excite our admiration or abhorrence, as Aristotle holds it ought undoubtedly to do.4 Finally, as to the purifying effect of Art, we must admit

¹ Cf. vol. ii. p. 304, n. 2, sup.
² See the quotations from Eth. x. 8, sup. vol. ii. p. 143, n. 1.

that φρόνησις would not belong to διαγωγή but to the previously mentioned ἀρετή. This, however, is incorrect. By ἀρετή Aristotle means moral virtue, the training of character; by διαγωγή και φρόνησις, the training of the intellect and the taste. Cf. what was said about διαγωγή supra, vol. ii. p. 266, n. 5.

³ In the words quoted from Pol. viii. 5, p. 307, n. 2, supra: πρὸς διαγωγήν τι συμβάλλεται και φρόνησιν. Spengel, ibid. p. 16, and independently of him Thurot, Etudes sur Arist. 101, propose to read, instead of φρόνησιν, εὐφροτύνην (οι τὸ εὐφραίνειν), remarking

⁴ See p. 304 sq.

that to this day, after all the endless discussions to which Aristotle's definition of Tragedy has given rise, no agreement has been arrived at upon the question wherein, according to his view, it consists and what are the conditions of its production. This is, however, the less extraordinary, since in the extant portion of the *Poetics* the fuller discussion of 'purification' contained in the original work is missing, though the want may be partly supplied from other passages. These show, in the first place, that the purification of the emotions which is effected by art takes place not in the work of art itself, but in those who see or hear it. We further learn that the immediate object is not, as was formerly supposed, 4

For a review of these see Susemihl, Arist. π. ποιητ. p. 36 sqq. and elsewhere (see p. 300, n. 1); Reinkens, p. 78-135, and Döring, p. 263 sqq. 339 sq.; the last discusses some seventy essays and treatises bearing on the subject, most of them written within the previous fifteen years.

² See *supra*, vol. i. p. 102, n. 2. 3 GOETHE (Nachlese zu Arist. Poëtik, 1826; Briefwechsel mit Zelter, iv. 288, v. 330, 354) explained the words δι' ἐλέου καὶ φόβου περαίνουσα την τῶν τοιούτων παθημάτων κάθαρσιν in the definition of tragedy, Poet. 6, 1449, b, 24 sqq. as referring to the tranquillising effect upon the actors themselves. This explanation, however, is now universally acknowledged to be inadmissible (e.g. by MÜLLER, ibid. 380 sqq.; BERNAYS, ibid. 137; SPENGEL, ibid. 6). Apart from the linguistic difficulty, Pol. viii. 7, 1342, places beyond a doubt

that the κάθαρσις is effected in the audience, and the same may be proved, as MÜLLER well shows, from the Poetics; for it could be said that tragedy through fear and pity, effects a purification of these emotions in the actors only on condition that they came upon the stage in a condition of fear or pity, which (as LESSING, Hamb. Dramat. 78 St. has remarked) is by no means usually, and in the circumstances cannot possibly often be, the case. Aristotle, however, has expressed himself on this point as clearly as possible, c. 14 init. Δεῖ γὰρ [he says in treating of the production of the φοβερδν and έλεεινδν] καὶ άνευ τοῦ δρᾶν οὕτω συνεστάναι τον μύθον ώστε τον ακούοντα τά πράγματα γινόμενα καὶ φρίττειν καὶ έλεεῖν ἐκ τῶν συμβαινόντων.

⁴ Thus LESSING, with all previous writers, *Hamb. Dram.* 74-78 St. (Werke, vii. 352 sqq. Lachm.): ⁴ this purification depends on

moral improvement, but primarily the production of an effect upon the emotions. Aristotle himself definitely distinguishes between purification and moral culture as separate aims: 1 he would use for the latter as opposed to the former a style of music which is wholly different and requires different treatment. 2 He describes purification, moreover, as a species of healing and as a

nothing else than the transformation of the passions into promptitudes to virtue' (p. 352). He has been followed by many others, e.g. SPENGEL in the treatise referred to, p. 307, n. 2, summa.

1 Pol. viii. 7, 1341, b, 36, see supra c. 6, 1341, a, 21. ἔτι δ οὐκ ἔστιν δ αὐλὸς ἡθικὸν ἀλλὰ μᾶλλον όργιαστικὸν, ὥστε πρὸς τοὺς τοιος αὐτῷ καιροὺς χρηστέον ἐν οῖς ἡ θεωρία κάθαρσιν μᾶλλον δύναται

η μάθησιν,

² See preceding ц. and с. 7, 1341, b, 32: since we must distinguish a moral, a practical and an exciting and inspiring kind of music, and since further music has to serve the different ends stated at p. 307, n. 2,-therefore φανερδυ ότι χρηστέου μέν πάσαις ταις άρμονίαις, οὐ τὸν αὐτὸν δὲ τρόπον πάσαις χρηστέον, άλλα πρός μέν την παιδείαν ταις ηθικωτάταις πρὸς δὲ ἀκρόασιν έτ*έρων* χειρουργούντων καλ ταΐς πρακτικαΐς καί ταις ένθουσιαστικαίς. δ γάρ περί ένίας συμβαίνει πάθος ψυχάς ίσχυρως, τοῦτο ἐν πάσαις ὑπάρχει, τῷ δὲ ήττον διαφέρει καὶ τῷ μᾶλλον [there does not seem to be any reason to doubt these words with REIN-KENS, p. 156], οἶον ἔλεος καὶ φόβος, έτι δ' ενθουσιασμός, καλ γάρ ύπδ ταύτης της κινήσεως κατακώχιμοί τινές είσιν : ἐκ δὲ τῶν ἱερῶν μελῶν δρώμεν τούτους, όταν χρήσωνται

τοις έξοργιάζουσι την ψυχην μέλεσι. καθισταμένους ώσπερ ιατρείας τυγόντας και καθάρσεως, ταὐτὸ δὴ τοῦτο ἀναγκαῖον πάσχειν καὶ τοὺς έλεήμονας καὶ τοὺς φοβητικοὺς καὶ τούς όλως παθητικούς Tthe MSS. reading for which Spengel unnecessarily suggests όλως τούς παθ.], τοὺς δ' ἄλλους καθ' ὅσον ἐπιβάλλει τῶν τοιούτων ἐκάστφ, καὶ πᾶσι γίγνεσθαί τινα κάθαρσιν καί κουφίζεσθαι μεθ' ήδονης. δμοίως δέ καλ τὰ μέλη τὰ καθαρτικά παρέχει χαρὰν ἀβλαβῆ τοίς ανθρώποις. (This is a further effect of purifying music, different from the ná- $\theta \alpha \rho \sigma \iota s$ itself: it purifies the $\pi \alpha \theta \eta$ -TIKOL and affords enjoyment to all; the lacuna therefore which THUROT, Etudes, 102 sq. surmises before δμοίως δè cannot be admitted.) From this passage, (however we may interpret its general meaning) this at any rate seems obvious, that according to Aristotle there is a kind of music which produces a catharsis, although it possesses no ethical character, and may not, therefore, be used in the education of the youth, nor practised by the citizens, although it may be listened to by them—namely, exciting music; but if this is so, the catharsis, while not without indirect moral influence. yet cannot in itself, as regarded from the point of view

mental alleviation accompanied by pleasure, and accordingly looks for it not in any improvement of the will or in the production of virtuous inclinations,2 but in the equalisation of disturbances produced by violent emotions and the restoration of equanimity.3 It is here of less importance, in point of actual fact, whether it is the religious or the medical meaning of 'purification' that is prominent in Aristotle's mind; since in either case alike we are dealing with a figurative expression, in the sense that the term does not admit of being transferred literally from the one sphere to the other,5 and we can only decide

of its immediate effect, consist in the production of a definite character of will. That this is true also of the purification effected by tragedy admits of less doubt owing to the fact that precisely those emotions with which it has to deal (see infra) are here expressly connected with excitement, i.e. pity and fear.

1 See preceding n. Similarly in Poet. c. 14, 1453, b, 10 the aim of tragic representation, which according to c. 6 consists in catharsis, is placed in a pleasure : οὐ γὰρ πᾶσαν δεῖ ζητεῖν ἡδονὴν ἀπὸ τραγφδίας, άλλὰ τὴν οἰκείαν. ἐπεὶ δὲ τὴν άπο έλέου και φόβου διά μιμήσεως δει ήδουην παρασκευάζειν τον ποιη-

την. &c.

² Viz. χαίρειν δρθώς καὶ λυπεῖσθαι, Pol. viii. 5, 1340, a, 15, 22;

see p. 266, supra.

This is the sense in which many writers in antiquity took purification, e.g. ARISTOXENUS (Ph. d. Gr. i. p. 714), Ps. JAMBL. Myster. Aegypt. p. 22, PROKL. in Plat. Remp. (Plat. Opp. Basil. 1534) p. 360, 362, PLUT. Sept. Sap. Conv. c. 13, p. 156 c.

Quæst. conviv. III. 8, 2, 11, p. 657 A; cf. BERNAYS, Grundzüge der Verlorenen Abhandlung d. Arist. über Wirkung der Tragödie (Abh. der Hist.-philos. Gesellschaft in Breslau 1. 1858), p. 155 sqq. 199.; id. Ueber die trag, Katharsis bei Arist. (Rhein.

Mus. xiv. 374 sq.)

After Böckh had indicated, in 1830 (Ges. kl. Schriften, i. 180), this reference in κάθαρσις to medical purgation it was taken up first by A. WEIL (Ueb. d. Wirkung der Trag. nach Arist. Verhandl. der 10. Vers. deutscher Philologen, Bâle, 1848, p. 136 sqq.), more fully and independently of his predecessors by Bernays in the treatises mentioned in preceding note which go deeply into this question. These were followed by THUROT, Etudes, 104, and many others; cf. DÖRING, ibid. 278 sqq. who likewise resolutely defends this view, ibid. p. 248 sqq.

5 On the other hand it cannot be supposed that Aristotle uses the word κάθαρσις, which he had coined to express a definite effect how far he means to extend the analogy contained in it by a reference to other passages and to the whole scope of his doctrine. It seems probable that he took $\kappa \acute{a}\theta a\rho$ - $\sigma\iota s$, as we might use 'purgation,' in the first instance to mean the expulsion from the body of burdensome or injurious matter,¹ but that inasmuch as he was here dealing with the application of this conception to states of the emotions, he came to connect with it, as he went on, the idea of deliverance from pollution and spiritual disease as well ²—just as in general one readily combines notions connected with the same expression in a confused compound without clearly discriminating them from one

of artistic representation, in the Politics of music in a different sense from that in which in the Poetics he employs it of tragedy, nor does Pol. viii. 7, 1341, b, 38 give the remotest justification to the presumption that the tragic catharsis is specifically different from the musical. The one may be produced by different means from the other, but the effect indicated by κάθαρσις must itself in both cases be essentially the same. unless we are to attribute to Aristotle a confusion of terms which is wholly misleading. STAHR, Arist. und die Wirk. d. Trag. p. 13 sq. 21 sq., does not sufficiently distinguish between these two.

1 Aristotle's own expressions, Polit. viii. 7, 1342, a, 10, 14: &σπερ ἰατρείας τυχόντας καὶ καθάρσεως ... πᾶσι γίγνεσθαί τινα κάθαρσιν καὶ κουφίζεσθαι μεθ' ἡδονῆς, the remark in Ps. JAMBL. De Myst. i. 11 that the emotions (δυνάμεις τῶν παθημάτων) ἀποπληροῦνται καὶ ἐντεῦθεν ἀποκαθαιρόμεναι... ἀποπαύονται, and in Procl.

in Remp. 362 that Aristotle objects to Plato that he was wrong in forbidding tragedy and comedy, είπερ διὰ τούτων δυνατόν ἐμμέτρως ἀποπιμπλάναι τὰ πάθη καὶ ἀποπλήσαντας ἐγεργὰ πρὸς τὴν παιδείαν ἔχειν, τὸ πεπονηκὸς αὐτῶν θεραπεύσαντας all point to this.

² According to Polit. viii, 6, 1341, a, 21, orgiastic music is in place έν οἷs ή θεωρία [the representation κάθαρσιν μᾶλλον δύναται η μάθησιν, and c. 7, 1312, a, 9 ἰατρεία and κάθαρσις are attributed to εξοργιάζοντα την ψυχην μέλη. A definite kind of religious music is therefore compared in its effect with medical purgation. Aristotle seems also to have employed the word ἀφοσίωσις, which refers to the cancelling of transgressions by offerings and other religious acts, to express the same effect. PROCL. ibid. p. 360 represents him as asking Plato why he rejected tragedy and comedy, καὶ ταῦτα συντελούσας πρός άφοσίωσιν των $\pi \alpha \theta \hat{\omega} \nu$, and replying himself, p. 362. that it is not true that they serve as an ἀφοσίωσις.

another. This very notion of purgation, moreover, was one in which the ancients were unable to keep the ideas of healing and expiation distinct from one another. All the more, however, are we bound to investigate the question as to the internal processes which according to Aristotle are the means and condition of the purification effected by art. So much we learn from his own utterances, that the purification consists in deliverance from some dominating excitement of passion or overwhelming mental depression: 2 and accordingly we must understand by the expression in the first instance not 3 any purification within the soul of permanent affections, but the removal from it of unhealthy ones.⁴ When we ask

' Whoever is possessed of enthusiasm or any other violent and enslaving emotion which presses on him as a burden is κατακώχιμος, as Aristotle expresses it, Pol. viii. 7, 1342, a, 8. κατακωχή οτ κατοκωχή, however, is originally conceived of as θεία κατοκωχή, from which deliverance is to be obtained by reconciliation with God, the malady is a divine visitation, the cure is the result of propitiation (cf. PLATO, Phædr. 244 D sq.).

² In the words quoted, p. 311, n. 2, supra, from Polit. viii. 7, enthusiasm is spoken of as a form of excitement by which many persons are possessed (κατακώχιμοι), and of which, by means of orgiastic music, they are 'as it were cured and purified,' and the word κουφίζεσθαι is used to express the same effect.

3 As Zeller formerly thought. 1 The words κάθαρσις τῶν παθημάτων might themselves mean

either a purification of the emotions or deliverance from them, for we may say either καθαίρειν τινά τινός, to purify one of something, or καθαίρειν τl, to purge away a defiling element. Medical language adopted this use of the word κάθαρσις from the time of Hippocrates (see REINKENS, p. 151 sq. who follows Foesius). It was transferred to the moral sphere, e.g. by Plato, in the Phado 69 B, when he says that virtue is κάθαρσίς τις τῶν τοιούτων πάντων a deliverance from pleasure, fear, &c. Aristotle himself uses κάθαρσις in the sense of a 'purifying secretion,' e.g. Gen. An. iv. 5, 774, a, 1, where he speaks of a κάθαρσις καταμηνίων, ibid. ii. 4, 738, a, 28 of a κάθαρσις τῶν περιττωμάτων (for which, 1. 27, ἀπόκρισιs is used). These examples, combined with the passage referred to, n. 2 above, make it probable that κάθαρσις τῶν παθημάτων means a deliverHow does Art effect this removal? we are told by some that it produces this result by engaging and satisfying in harmless excitements man's innate need of at times experiencing more violent emotions.1 The peculiar character of the effect produced by art is not, however, to be thus easily explained. How is it that the cure is effected in this case by homeopathic and not as in other cases by allopathic treatment? 2 And why has the

ance from παθήματα. This view seems indeed inconsistent with the terms of the well-known definition of Tragedy (see p. 320, n. 4, infra) in which it is said that it effects by pity and fear την των τοιούτων παθημάτων κάθαρσιν: for it seems as though the emotions of pity and fear could not possibly be banished by exciting them. In answer to this, however, it has already been pointed out by others (as by Reinkens, p. 161) that the artificially excited emotions of tragic pity and fear serve to release us from the emotions (already, according to p. 311, n. 2, supra, existing in each in weaker or stronger form) of a pity and fear which are called forth by common facts, and that this is the reason why Aristotle writes τῶν τοιούτων $\pi\alpha\theta\eta\mu\dot{\alpha}\tau\omega\nu$ instead of $\tau\sigma\dot{\nu}\tau\omega\nu$, the two kinds of pity and fear referred to being related to one another, but not identical. (On the other hand, the fact that he writes παθημάτων instead of πα- $\theta \hat{\omega} \nu$ is unimportant, both words. as Bonitz, Arist. Stud. 5, H, has shown in opposition to BERNAYS, being used by Aristotle as perfectly synonymous.)

Thus WEIL, ibid. 139; but even Bernays falls short here when he says that the catharsis

effected by art is a discharge of solicited emotions: as purgative means produce health in the body by the expulsion of unwholesome matter, so purifying music produces a soothing effect by providing an outlet for the ecstatic element in us, &c. Cf. 171, 176, 164 and other passages in his treatise of 1858. Similarly his successors, e.g. DÖRING, who declares, p. 259, that κάθαρσιs is 'an excretion of diseased matter by an increased production of it, rather an acceleration of Nature's own healing process, which is already tending towards both these results; and UEBER-WEG, Zeitschr. f. Phil. L. 33 sqq. who says it is 'a temporary deliverance from certain feelings (which, according to Ueberweg, spring from a normal want) by the excitement and indulgence of them;' but he overlooks the fact that πάθημα does not mean every possible or even normal (still less feeling 'normal wants,' p. 33, and Grundr. i. 213; see Eng. Tr. Hist. of Phil. vol. i. p. 179), but only morbid or oppressive moods, and that it is only from such that we require to be 'purged.'
² Eth. ii. 2, 1104, b, 17 of

punishments: ἰατρεῖαι γάρ τινές

artistic excitement and not any other excitement of the emotions the effect of producing peace and purification by the expulsion of the morbid matter, whereas the frequent recurrence of certain emotions in real life has rather the effect of producing an inclination to repeat them? Aristotle did not overlook this circumstance; but if he observed it we may be quite sure that he also attempted to explain it. And this, as a matter of fact, he has The 'catharsis' is indeed effected in his view by exciting the emotions and is a homeopathic cure of them; 2 but this effect is not to be expected from all excitements indifferently, but only from such as are artistic-and by artistic Aristotle here means, as we clearly gather from his account of tragedy, not that which produces the most violent emotion in us, but that which produces emotion in the right way. Had the artificial catharsis depended in Aristotle's view merely upon the excitation of certain emotions and not also essentially upon the manner and means of exciting them, he must have sought for the criterion of a work of art, not in its contents and their proper treatment, but singly and solely in its effect upon the spectators. This he is far from doing.³ We are forced, therefore,

είσιν, αί δὲ ἰατρεῖαι διὰ τῶν ἐναντίων πεφύκασι γίνεσθαι.

¹ Cf. Eth. ii. 1, 1103, b, 17 sqq. ² Tragedy by pity and fear effects the purification of these emotions (Poet. 6): sacred music by producing in us astate of mental excitement effects the cure and purgation of excitement (Polit. viii. 7, 1342, a, 4 sqq., cf. c. 5, 1340, a, 8 sqq. See p. 311, n. 2, supra). ³ To mention only one thing.

Aristotle cannot reiterate too often that both the action and the characters in a tragedy must evolve according to the laws of necessity and probability (Poet. 7, 1450, b, 32. Ibid. and c. 9, see p. 305, n. 4, supra, c. 10, 1452, a, 18, c. 15, 1454, a, 33 sqq.), and he blames the poets for abandoning the development which is demanded by the nature of the facts out of regard for the taste

to look for the reason why, according to Aristotle, the excitement of the emotions produced by Art has a soothing effect, whereas their excitement in real life is followed by no such result, in the peculiar nature of artistic representation itself-in other words, in that which constitutes the generic difference between art and reality. The latter presents us only with the particular, the former with the universal in the particular: in the latter chance largely rules, the former must reveal to us in its creations the fixity of law.1 Aristotle certainly nowhere expressly says that this is the reason why art exercises a purifying influence; but if we would supplement the mutilated fragments of his theory of art which have come down to us in the spirit of the rest of his system we can hardly resist this conclusion. Art. we should then have to say, purifies and soothes the emotions in that it delivers us from such as are morbid or oppressive by exciting such as are subordinate to its law, directing them, not towards what is merely personal, but towards what is universal in man, controlling their course upon a fixed principle and setting a definite limit to their force.2 Thus, for example, tragedy in the fate of its heroes gives us a glimpse into the universal lot of man and at the same time into an eternal law of justice; 3 music calms mental excitement and holds it

of the public (c. 9, 1451, b, 33 sqq.; cf. c. 13, 1453, a, 30 sqq.).

possible ἐμμέτρως ἀποπιμπλάναι τὰ πάθη.

See p. 304 sq. supra.

We have at least a hint of this thought in the statement from Proclus, cited p. 313, n. 1, to the effect that tragedy and comedy serve as a cure of morbid states of feeling by rendering it

³ According to *Poet.* c. 13, those who pass in it from fortune to misfortune must be neither the wholly innocent nor the wholly bad: they should be characters distinguished neither by merit nor wickedness, but standing

spellbound by its rhythm and harmony.¹ Although we do not know how Aristotle further developed this thought, still we are forced to assume that he expressed it somehow.²

If we now turn from these general views upon Art to the special arts, Aristotle himself provides us with different principles according to which they might have been classified. All art is imitation, but the means, the objects, and the manner of this imitation are different. The means of imitation are sometimes colour and form,

rather above than below the common standard of morality (ή οίου είρηται, ή βελτίονος μαλλον ή χείρονος), μή διὰ μοχθηρίαν άλλὰ δι' άμαρτίαν μεγάλην. The tragedy must therefore be so constructed that we can put ourselves in the place of the hero, that we can say what happens to him might happen to each of us, while at the same time we feel that the fate which overtakes him is not wholly undeserved, but is brought on him by his own action, so revealing the laws of the moral order of the world. Kock, Ueb. d. Arist. Begr. d. Catharsis, 1851, p. 11, strangely misunderstands the sense of this passage in holding that the purification of pity depends upon the thought that we do not need to pity the sufferer so immoderately, as he does not suffer wholly undeservedly; the purification of fear, on the conviction that we can avoid the misfortunes which overtake the hero if we avoid the mistake which has brought them in its train. If the effect of tragedy had consisted for Aristotle in this trite moral applica-

tion he would have recommended above all those pieces which he so decidedly rejects (ibid. 1453, a, 1, 30)-those, namely, in which great transgressions are punished and virtue is rewarded, for in these the spectator has the tranquillising sense that he can avoid the penalty of transgression and reap the reward of virtue in a much higher degree. Aristotle is aware of the satisfaction which these moral reflections give, but says (ibid.) that they belong to the sphere, not of tragedy, but of comedy.

1 STAHR (Arist. und die Wirk. d. Trag. 19 sqq.) curiously enough expresses himself as satisfied with Bernays' explanation on this head, and in this way involves himself in the difficulty of having to explain the catharsis, which Aristotle describes in like terms in connection with different arts, quite differently in one case and in the other. Cf. p. 312, u. 5.

² In this view Zeller is at one with BRANDIS, ii. b, 1710 sqq. iii. 163 sqq. and SUSEMIHL (Arist. π. ποιητ. 43 sqq.).

sometimes the voice, sometimes words, harmony, and rhythm; these means, moreover, are sometimes employed singly, at other times several of them are combined.1 The chief objects of imitation are living and acting persons; 2 and these differ from one another in moral worth.3 The manner (here, however, Aristotle is speaking of poetry only) differs according as the imitator himself speaks or brings forward speakers; and in the former case according as he speaks in propria persona, or merely reports the words of others.4 Aristotle, however, has not attempted to use these differences as the basis of any systematic division of the Arts as a whole. Upon the particular arts, moreover, with the exception of the art of poetry, very little has come down to us in his works: we have only a few occasional observations upon painting,5 and a fuller discussion of music,6 the chief contents of which have

1 Poet. i. 1447, a, 16 sqq.

to imitate (1) ħ ἔτερόν τι [τινα] γιγνόμενον (by assuming the part of another), (2) ħ ώς τὸν αὐτὸν καὶ μὴ μεταβάλλοντα. Under this second category, along with personal narration would fall also lyric poetry, although Aristotle nowhere expressly refers to it in the Poetics as we have received them. While very closely connected with Plato's division of the forms of artistic presentation, Aristotle's does not wholly coincide with it.

⁵ Poet. 2, 15, see 305, n. 1 and 3, supra. Pol. viii. 5, v. vol. ii. p. 308, n. 2, supra; also Pol. viii. 3, v. vol. ii. p. 264, n. 3, supra.

⁶ Pol. viii. 3, 1337, b, 27, c. 5-7.

² μιμοῦνται οἱ μιμοῦμενοὶ πράττοντας, c. 2, 1448, a, 1. This statement suffers only slight modification from the passages quoted p. 304, n. 1 and 2, sup., on the representation of particular natural objects. Aristotle would not therefore have recognised landscape painting, which in his time did not yet constitute an independent branch of art, as art at all.

³ C. 2, see p. 305, n. 3, supra. 4 Poet. c. 3 init. Aristotle here distinguishes, as Susemihl rightly observes, (a) μιμεῖσθαι ἀπαγγέλλοντα, (b) μιμεῖσθαι πάντας τοὺς μιμουμένους ὡς πράττοντας καὶ ἐνεργοῦντας. Drama is constituted by the latter; in (a) it is possible

already been given.1 Finally, the extant portion of Aristotle's writings which deals with poetry limits itself almost entirely to tragedy. The art of poetry, we are told, sprang from the imitative instinct; 2 from the imitation of noble men and actions came epic poetry; from the imitation of ignoble, satire; subsequently as the form best adapted for the nobler poetry, tragedy was developed; as the best for satire, comedy.3 Tragedy is the imitation of an important completed action, of a certain length, expressed in graceful style, which varies in the several parts of the piece, to be acted, not merely narrated, and effecting by means of pity and fear the purification of these emotions.4 The first effect, therefore, of tragic poetry is to excite our sympathy by means of the fate of the actors: their sufferings claim our pity; the dangers with which they are threatened excite in us fear for the final issue—that tragic suspense which in the further development finds relief 5 at one time in

³ C. 4, 5.

(Hamb. Dramat. 75 St.) whom

Zeller followed in the previous

edition, the 'fear' in Aristotle's

¹ Sup. vol. ii. p. 266 sqq. cf. p. 311, n. 1&2. While Aristotle here attributes to music especially (as is there shown) the power of representing moral qualities, yet he does not explain in the Politics the grounds of this advantage which it possesses over the other arts. In Probl. xix. 27, cf. c. 29 it is asked: διὰ τί τὸ ἀκουστὸν μόνον ήθος έχει των αίσθητων; and the answer is given: because we perceive movements through the hearing alone, and the ηθος expresses itself in actions, and therefore in movements. But this passage can hardly be Aristotle's. ² See p. 303, supra.

⁴ C. 6, 1449, b, 24 : ἔστιν οὖν τραγφδία μίμησις πράξεως σπουδαίας καί τελείας, μέγεθος έχούσης, ήδυσμένφ λόγφ, χωρίς έκάστου τῶν εἰδῶν ἐν τοῖς μορίοις [i.e. as is immediately afterwards explained, so that the different kinds of ήδυσμένος λόγος-λέξις and μέλος -are employed in the dialogue and chorus of the tragedy respectively; cf. c. 1 fin.] δρώντων και οὐ δι' ἀπαγγελίας, δι' ἐλέου καὶ φόβου περαίνουσα την τῶν τοιούτων on which see supra, p. 314, n. 4. ad fin.] παθημάτων κάθαρσιν. 5 Since the time of LESSING

an unfortunate, at another in a fortunate, turn of events. But since the tragic poet sets before us in his heroes and in their fate universal types of human nature and life, our sympathies do not confine themselves to these particular characters, but extend to the common elements of human nature; and while thus on the one hand self-regarding humours akin to pity and fear are created in us by our participation in the experiences of the actors, on the other our own pain gives way before the feeling of others' pain, our personal woes are silenced at the spectacle of universal destiny, we are delivered from the oppressions that weigh on us, and our emotions find peace in the recognition of those eternal laws which the course of the piece reveals to us.2 This

definition has been commonly future to them, the latter by understood of fear for ourselves excited by the thought that those whom we see suffering are like ourselves, and the fate which overtakes them might overtake This view rests partly on the observation that fear for the heroes of tragedy is already involved in pity, and that there is, therefore, no reason to make particular mention of it; partly on Rhet. ii. 5 init. ii. 8 init., where φόβοs is defined as λύπη ἐκ φαντασίας μέλλοντος κακοῦ φθαρτικοῦ ή λυπηροῦ, ἔλεος as λύπη τις ἐπὶ φαινομένω κακῷ φθαρτικῷ καὶ λυπηρώ τοῦ ἀναξιοῦ τυγχάνειν. But it is not asserted that the fear refers only to such evils as threaten ourselves-any such assertion, indeed, would be wholly false; and, on the other hand, it holds also, as the distinction between fear for others and pity for them, that the former is excited by evils which are still

those which have already befallen them. On the contrary, it is rightly objected to Lessing's explanation (Susemihl, Poet. 57 sqq,, and the authorities quoted by him), that according to Aristotle's own indubitable statement the primary object of tragic fear is not ourselves but others: for he says, Poet. 13, 1453, a, 4, of έλεος and φόβος: ὁ μὲν γὰρ περί του ἀνάξιον ἐστιν δυστυχοῦντα, δ δὲ περί τον δμοιον, ἔλεος μὲν περί του ανάξιου, φόβος δὲ περὶ του ομοιον. Το this explanation there is the further practical objection that fear for ourselves produced by the spectacle of a tragedy would hardly be the proper means of delivering us from this same selfish fear.

¹ The latter, however, as is remarked c. 13, 1453, a, 12 sqq. 35 sqq., less to the character of tragedy than to that of comedy.

impression depends in the first place upon the nature of the events represented. These, therefore, are the important thing in every tragic representation. 'Myth,' as Aristotle says, is the soul of tragedy,¹ and accordingly he sets himself to investigate, in the first place, the qualities which are necessary in a tragedy that it may effect its end: viz. natural development,² proper length,³

To distinguish from this purifying effect of tragedy the moral effect as a second and different result (as UEBERWEG, Zeitschr. f. Philos. xxxvi. 284 sqq. does) seems to be incorrect. Although Aristotle, in treating of music, places παιδεία, διαγωγή, κάθαρσις side by side as co-ordinate aims (see p. 307, n. 2, supra) it does not follow that tragedy also has to pursue all these aims in like manner. On the contrary, as there is both a moral and a cathartic kind of music (i.e. one which directly affects the will, and one which primarily affects only the emotions and, through them, moral character), there may also be a kind of poetry whose primary aim is catharsis. must assume that tragedy, according to Aristotle, is actually such a cathartic species of poetry, inasmuch as in his definition of it he must have given its aim in an essentially complete form if he gave it at all. It is quite compatible with this to attribute to tragedy a moral effect, but it is added as a second, which is coordinate with the cathartic, but follows from it as result, and consists in the peaceful state of feeling which is produced by the purification of the emotions and the habit of self-control which it creates in us.

Poet. c. 6, where, inter alia, 1450. a. 15 (after the enumeration of the six elements in tragedy, μῦθος, ήθη, λέξις, διάνοια, ὄψις, μελοποιΐα): μέγιστον δὲ τούτων έστιν ή των πραγμάτων σύστασις: ή γαρ τραγωδία μίμησίς έστιν οὐκ ανθρώπων αλλα πράξεως και βίου καί εὐδαιμονίας καὶ κακοδαιμονίας . . . ούκουν δπως τὰ ήθη μιμήσωνται πράττουσιν, άλλὰ τὰ ἤθη συμπεριλαμβάνουσι διὰ τὰς πράξεις. ὥστε τὰ πράγματα καὶ ὁ μῦθος τέλος τῆς τραγωδίας. L. 38: ἀρχὴ μὲν οὖν και οίον ψυχη δ μύθος της τραγωδίας, δεύτερον δὲ τὰ ήθη. Cf. c. 9, 1451, b, 27: τον ποιητήν μάλλον τῶν μύθων είναι δεί ποιητὴν ἡ τῶν $\mu \acute{\epsilon} \tau \rho \omega \nu$. On the other hand, the effect produced by the mere spectacle (övis) is declared to be that which has the least artistic value; ibid. 1450, b, 16.

² C. 7, see *supra*, vol. ii. p. 316,

3 This question is decided, ibid. 1450, b, 34 sqq., in like fashion to that in the Politics (see p. 259, n. 1, supra) as to the size of the State. The longer and richer presentation is in itself the more beautiful, provided that the plot does not suffer in clearness (τὸ εὐσύνοπτον) owing to its length; the true criterion here is: ἐν ὅσφ μεγέθει κατὰ τὸ εἰκὸς ἢτὸ ἀναγκαῖον ἐφεξῆς γιγνομένων συμβαίνει εἰς εὐτυχίαν ἐκ δυστυχίας

unity of treatment, and the representation of events that are typical and of universal interest.2 He distinguishes simple events from complicated ones, and those in which the change in the position of the characters is brought about by some recognition or by some reversal of fortune in the course of the piece.3 Again he shows how myths must be treated in order to excite the emotions of pity and fear instead of those of moral indignation or satisfaction 4 or of mere wonder, and in order to produce this effect by means of these emotions themselves and not merely by means of the outward representation.⁵ He further discusses what is required for proper character-painting 6 and composition, 7 passing finally to speak of the style of expression best adapted to tragedy.8 We cannot, however, here linger over

ή έξ εὐτυχίας εἰς δυστυχίαν μετα-Βάλλειν.

¹ Of the so-called three Aristotelian unities of the French school, only the 'unity of action' is to be found, as is well known, in Aristotle himself; see Poet. c. 8; cf. c. 9, 1451, b, 33 sqq. c. 18, 1456, b, 10 sqq. The 'unity of place' he nowhere mentions, and on that of time he only remarks (c. 5, 1449, b, 12) that tragedy endeavours to compress the action into one day, or, at any rate, to keep as nearly as possible within this limit, but he gives no rule.

² C. 9; see sup. ii. 305, n. 4, ³ C. 10, 11, 16, where αναγνώρισιs and περιπέτεια are discussed. On the genuineness and position of c. 16, cf. Susemihl, at p. 12 sq. of his ed.

¹⁴ In this sense, viz. of the satisfaction of that moral feeling with

the violation of which Nemesia (see sup. vol. ii. p. 169, n. 9) has to do, we may interpret τὸ φιλάνθρωπον which, according to Aristotle (c. 13, 1453, a, 3, c. 18, 1456, a, 21), attaches to the deserved misfortune of the transgressor. It is commonly taken (as it was by Lessing) to refer to the human interest with which we accompany even the transgressor in such a case; but Aristotle appears, especially c. 18, to find τὸ φιλάνθρωπον precisely in the punishment of wrong as such: one who wishes well to humanity can wish no good to its enemies.

⁵ C. 13, 14. ⁶ C. 17 sq.

⁷ C. 15, on the text and arrangement of which see Suse-MIHL, p. 10, 13 sq.

⁸ Λέξις c. 19-22, with which cf. MÜLLER, *ibid*. 131 sqq.

these technical details. With regard to the section dealing with narrative poetry, with which the Poetics, as we have it, closes, we need only remark that Aristotle here also lays the main emphasis upon the unity of the action, finding in it the mark which separates epic poetry from history, which is the narrative of contemporaneous events without reference to their inner connection.2 It is chiefly, moreover, on the ground of its greater unity that in comparing tragedy with epicpoetry he assigns to the former the higher place as a form of artistic composition.3 Of the remaining kinds of poetry the extant portions of Aristotle's work do not treat. Comedy alone is briefly touched upon in an earlier passage4; and cursory as are his allusions5 to it, we can yet see from them that Aristotle was not inclined to concur in Plato's harsh estimate of its value.6

- ¹ C. 23-26.
- ² C. 23.
- ³ C. 26.
- 4 See supra, vol. ii. p. 304 sq.
- 5 Supplementary to these (as was shown by BERNAYS) are some statements to be found in the editions of VAHLEN and SUSEMIHL, as was already remarked, vol. i. p. 102. Besides the quotations, sup. vol. i. p. 306, μ. 3, p. 313, n. 1, the division of comedy into γέλως ἐκ τῆς λέξεως and γέλως ἐκ τῶν πραγμάτων is of especial interest in this connection. Cf. BERNAYS, Rhein. Mus. N. F. viii. 577 sqq.
- ⁶ Plato had conceived in a general way of comedy only as the representation of deformity, and the pleasure produced by it as malignancy. Only in the *Lars*

does he admit it as a means of moral education (see Ph. d. Gr. i. 800, 802). Aristotle admits that it has to do with human infirmity, but he adds that it deals only with harmless infirmities, and in demanding of it at the same time that it should devote itself not to the ridicule of particular persons but to depicting types of character, he opened the way to the recognition of it as a means of purifying and elevating natural sentiments. Whether Aristotle actually adopted this view, and whether he assigned to comedy a higher position than the music which, in Polit. viii. 7, 1342, a, 18 sqq., he withholds from the common people, cannot be positively decided.

CHAPTER XVI

RELIGIOUS ASPECT OF ARISTOTLE'S PHILOSOPHY

In the preceding section we had to deal with a fragmentary account of a theory which Aristotle himself developed more fully. In the section now before us we have to deal with a subject which he has made no attempt to treat scientifically, but has only touched upon occasionally in detached passages. Aristotle has not any more than Plato a philosophy of Religion in the scientific sense; 1 his system even lacks those features which give to the Platonic philosophy, in spite of the severe criticisms which it passes on the existing religion. a peculiar religious character of its own. He does not require to fall back upon the popular faith, as Plato had done in his theory of myths, although at the same time, on the principle that universal opinion and unreflecting tradition are never without a certain truth,2 he willingly makes use of the suggestions and links of connection which it supplies.3 His scientific researches

gion especially in its relation to philosophy, is nowhere fully investigated.

^{&#}x27;His view of the Divine Being, indeed, is set forth in the Metaphysics; but the question with which the philosophy of religion starts, as to the distinguishing characteristics of reli-

² See *supra*, vol. i. p. 256, n. 2, and p. 291, n. 5.

³ For proofs of this, see infra.

do not exhibit that constant direct reference to the personal life and circumstances of men which in an especial degree gives to the Platonic philosophy its religious tone; 1 even in morals the motives which he assigns for action are strictly ethical and not religious. His whole view of the world rests upon the principle of explaining things as completely as may be by a reference to their natural causes; that the universe of natural effects must be referred to a Divine cause he never in the least doubts; 2 but as this affords no scientific explanation of them he never connects individual facts and events, as Plato so often does, with divine agency. The conception of Providence, common to Socrates and Plato, as of a divine activity exercised in individual cases, finds no place in Aristotle.3 We miss, therefore, in his system that warm glow of religious feeling which in Plato has ever so strongly appealed to susceptible minds, and in comparison with which the Aristotelian philosophy seems to be cold and lifeless.

It would be wrong to deny or under-estimate the difference which exists in this respect between the two philosophers. They certainly treat their subject in a different spirit. The inner bond which in Plato unites philosophy with religion is not indeed completely severed in Aristotle, but it is so widely expanded as to give to science the freest scope in its own field. No attempt is ever made to answer scientific questions by means of religious presupposi-

tions. On the other hand, all positive treatment of religion itself, as a science in the same sense as art or morality, is as far from Aristotle's thoughts as from Different as is the attitude which each Plato's. actually takes up with regard to religion, yet in their scientific views of it they approach very near to one another, the main difference in this respect being that Aristotle is more strictly logical in drawing conclusions whose premises are no strangers to Plato's thought. Aristotle, as we have already seen, is convinced like Plato of the unity of the Divine Being (in so far as we understand by this Deity in the proper sense of the word, or the highest efficient cause), of his exaltation above the world, of his immaterial and purely spiritual nature, and of his faultless perfection; and he strives to demonstrate with greater fullness and more scientific accuracy than his predecessor not only the existence but also the attributes of Deity. while Plate had on the one hand identified God with the Idea of the Good, which can only be conceived of as impersonal, on the other he depicted his creative and governing activity in conformity with popular representations of it, and not without sundry mythical embellishments. This ambiguity is removed by his pupil, who defines the Divine Nature clearly and sharply on both sides: on the one hand God, as a personal supernatural Being, is guarded from all confusion with any merely universal conception or impersonal power; while on the other, as he is limited in his activity to pure thought and absolutely self-contained. and he operates upon the world only to set in motion the

outermost of the cosmic spheres.1 Individual events do not therefore upon this view admit of being referred directly to divine causation. Zeus does not rain in order that the corn may grow or be destroyed, but because, according to universal laws of nature, the rising vapours cool and descend as water; 2 prophetic dreams are not sent by the gods to reveal to us the future, but, in so far as the question is here of causality at all and not merely of chance coincidence, they are to be referred as natural effects to physical causes 3 Nor is the case in any degree altered by the fact that between God above and earth beneath numerous other eternal beings find a place; 4 since the operation of those heavenly beings is likewise limited to causing the motion of their own sphere, any interference on their part with individual events of the kind that popular belief attributes to its gods and demons is out of the question. The essential truth of the belief in Providence, however, Aristotle does not certainly on this account resign. He also recognises in the order of the universe the operation of Divine Power and of rational design; 5 he believes especially that the gods care for men, that they interest themselves in those who live according to reason, and that happiness is their gift 6;

¹ See *supra*, vol. i. p. 388 sqq; cf. *Ph.d. Gr.* i. p. 785 sqq. 591 sqq.

See supra, vol. i. p. 361, n. 1.
 See supra, vol. ii. p. 75 sq.

Div. 1, 462, b, 20.
See supra, vol. i. p. 494 sq.

⁵ See vol. i. p. 420 sq.

 $^{^{6}}$ Eth. x. 9, 1179, a, 24: εὶ γάρ τις ἐπιμέλεια τῶν ἀνθρωπίνων ὑπὸ θεῶν γίνεται, ὥσπερ δοκεῖ, καὶ εἴη

ὰν εύλογον χαίρειν τε αὐτοὺς τῷ ἀρ΄στφ καὶ τῷ συγγενεστάτφ (τοῦτο δ΄ ἀν εἴη ὁ νοῦς) καὶ τοὺς ἀγαπῶντας μάλιστα τοῦτο καὶ τιμῶντας ἀντενποιεῖν ὡς τῶν φίλων αὐτοῖς ἐπιμελουμένους καὶ ὁρθῶς τε καὶ καλῶς πράττοντας, i. 10, 1099, b, 11: εἰ μὲν οὖν καὶ ἄλλο τι ἐστὶ θεῶν δώρημα ἀνθρώποις, εὕλογον καὶ τὴν εὐδαιμονίαν θεόσδοτον εἶναι καὶ

he also opposes the notion that God is envious, and might therefore, if he liked, withhold from man his best gift of knowledge. But this Divine Providence coincides completely for Aristotle with the operation of natural causes; 2 all the more because in setting aside the Platonic eschatology he left no room for that direct agency of the Deity which Plato had so largely admitted into his pictures of the future life and its retribu-God stands according to Aristotle outside the world, engaged in solitary self-contemplation; he is for man the object of admiration and reverence; the knowledge of him is the mind's highest aim; 4 in him lies the goal towards which, along with all finite things, man strives, and whose perfection excites his love.5 But as man can expect no reciprocal love from God,6

μάλιστα τῶν ἀνθρωπίνων ὅσφ βέλτιστον. viii. 14, 1162, a, 4: ἔστι δ' ή μεν πρός γονείς φιλία τέκνοις. καὶ ἀνθρώποις πρός θεούς, ὡς πρὸς άγαθον και υπερέχον εδ γάρ πεποιήκασι τὰ μέγιστα.

1 Metaph. i. 2, 982, b, 32 (see sup. vol. ii. 163, 3): εἰ δὴ λέγουσί τι οί ποιηταί και πέφυκε φθονείν τὸ θεῖον, ἐπὶ τούτου συμβαίνειν μάλιστα εἰκός ἀλλ' οὕτε τὸ θεῖον φθονερον ενδέχεται είναι, &c. Cf. Ph. d.

Gr. i. 602, 1, 787, 1.

² Eth. i. 10: Aristotle continues: φαίνεται δὲ κὰν εἰ μὴ θεόπεμπτός έστιν άλλα δι' αρετήν καί τινα μάθησιν ή ἄσκησιν παραγίνεται τών θειοτάτων είναι το γαρ της ἀρετης ᾶθλον καὶ τέλος ἄριστον είναι φαίνεται καὶ θείόν τι καὶ μακάριον. If we compare with this the passage quoted from Eth. x. 10 on p. 156, n. 4, supra. we shall see that the happiness

which is θεόσδοτος consists merely in the moral and spiritual capacities of man-in the natural possession of reason in which he has still to secure himself by actual study and practice.

³ Metaph. xii. 7 (see supra, vol. i.p. 184, n. 1). SENECA, Q. N. vii.: egregie Aristoteles ait, nunquam nos verecundiores esse debere quam

cum de Dis agitur.

4 The Divine Being is the highest object of thought (see supra, vol. i. p. 398 n. 2), and theology therefore (vol. i. p. 184, n. 1), the highest branch of philosophy.

⁵ Cf. vol. i. p. 404, sqq.

6 See supra, vol. i. p. 398, n. 1, which places the passage quoted. p. 328, n. 6, supra, from Eth. viii. 14 in the proper light; there is a love (φιλία) of men towards the gods, but not vice versa.

neither can he experience any influence from him which would be different from that of natural causes, and his reason is the only means whereby he enters into direct communion with him.1

Holding these views, Aristotle could not concede to the popular religion the same significance which Plato did. That it must certainly have its own truth, followed for him from his view of the historical evolution of mankind and the value of common opinion. Universal conviction is for him of itself a mark of truth,2 all the more so when we are dealing with convictions which have been transmitted by mankind from time immemorial. Since the world, according to Aristotle, is eternal, the earth must be so also; and if the earth is so, man must be so as well.3 But all parts of the globe undergo continual change,4 and one of the consequences of this is that man's development does not proceed in an unbroken line but is ever and anon interrupted by relapses into a state of primitive barbarism and ignorance,5 from which a fresh start must be made in the cyclic process of creation.⁶ In this way all knowledge and all art have been lost and rediscovered times without number, and similar notions have recurred to mankind, not once or twice but with incalculable frequency. Nevertheless, a certain recol-

¹ Cf. on this point, supra, vol.

i. p. 329, n. 2, and p. 403 sqq.
² See *supra*, vol. i. p. 291, n. 5.

³ Cf. supra, vol. ii. p. 32, n. 1. ⁴ See *supra*, vol. ii. p. 29 sq. ⁵ Cf. *Polit*. ii. 8, 1269, a, 4:

είκός τε τούς πρώτους, είτε γηγενεις ήσαν είτ' έκ φθοράς τινος έσώ-

θησαν, δμοίους είναι και τούς τυχόντας και τους άνοήτους, ώσπερ και λέγεται κατά τῶν γηγενῶν, ὥστ' ἄτοπον τὸ μένειν ἐν τοῖς τούτων δόγμασιν.

⁶ Cf. Phys. iv. 14, 223, b, 24: φασί γὰρ κύκλον είναι τὰ ἀνθρώπινα πράγματα,

lection of particular truths has been retained amid the changes in man's condition, and it is these remnants of departed knowledge that, according to Aristotle, form the kernel of mythical tradition.1 Even the popular faith, therefore, has its roots in the search for truth, whether we trace it back to that intuition of the divine which even Aristotle is unwilling to contradict,2 and to those experiences which he regarded as the source of the popular theology,3 or whether we trace it to a tradition which, as a remnant of an older science or religion, must yet in the end have its roots in human reason. More particularly there are two truths which Aristotle, like Plato, finds to be contained in the popular belief of his country: first, that God exists; and secondly, that the stellar universe is in its nature divine.4 With the further details of Greek mythology,

1 Metaph. xii. 8; see p. 508, n. 2, supra. De Cælo i. 3; Meteor. i. 3, 339, b, 19: it is not we alone who have this view of the πρῶτον στοιχεῖον as the substance of the celestial world, φαίνεται δ' ἀρχαία τις ὑπόληψις αὕτη καὶ τῶν πρότερον ἀνθρώπων ... οὐ γὰρ δὴ φήσομεν ἄπαξ οιδὲ δὶς οὐδ' ὀλιγάκις τὰς αὐτὰς δόξας ἀνακυκλεῖν γινομένας ἐν τοῖς ὰνθρώποις, ἀλλ' ἀπειράκις. Polit. vii. 10, 1329, b, 25: σχεδὸν μὲν οὄν καὶ τὰ ἄλλα δεῖ νομίζειν εὐρῆσθαι πολλάκις ἐν τῷ πολλῷ χρόνφ, μᾶλλον δ' ἀπειράκις, as like needs and states must always have led to the same discoveries.

 2 De Cælo, ii. 1 fin.: Aristotle's view of the eternity of the world is not only truer in itself, alla kal $\tau \hat{\eta}$ marela $\tau \hat{\eta}$ $\pi \epsilon \rho l$ $\tau \delta \nu$ $\theta \epsilon \delta \nu$ mores an $\epsilon \chi \omega \nu \omega \omega \omega$

δμολογουμένως ἀποφαίνεσθαι συμφάνους λόγους. Cf. the appeal to πάτριοι λόγοι, ibid. 284, a, 2. Metaph. xii. 8, see supra, vol. i. p. 508, n. 2.

s See supra, vol.i. p. 390, n. 3.

4 The first hardly requires proof; see, however, the quotations, vol. i. p. 390, n. 3, 4, from SEXTUS and CICERO, and p. 395, n. 6, from the treatise De Cœlo, i. 9; in the latter passage a trace of true knowledge is discovered in the name αίων, just as elsewhere in that of the 'aether' (καὶ γὰρ τοῦτο τοῦνομα θείως ἔφθεγκται παρὰ τῶν ἀρχαίων). In support of his doctrine of the divinity of the heavens and of the stars, Aristotle appeals to the existing religion in the passage just referred to.

on the other hand, with all the doctrines aud stories which transfer the properties and weaknesses of human nature to the gods—in a word, with the whole range of anthropomorphic theology—Aristotle is as completely out of sympathy as Plato was; the only difference is that he no longer considers it necessary, as Plato had done, expressly to confute such representations, but treats them simply as preposterous fables.1 If we ask how those false elements have found their way into the popular faith, Aristotle refers us to the inherent tendency in mankind to anthropomorphic representations of the gods,2 which offended even Xenophanes,3 or to the fact that statesmen had accommodated themselves as a matter of policy to this tendency, and used it for their own ends. Even ancient tradition, he says, 4 recognises that the heavens and the heavenly bodies are gods, and that the whole world is encircled by divinity. 'All else, however, is mythical embellishment, devised to attract the multitude, to aid legislation, and to forward common interest.' While therefore Plato had permitted the legislator to employ myths (the origin of

¹ Metaph. xii. 8; see p. 508, n. 2, supra. Ībid. iii. 2,997, b, 8; see vol. i. p. 315, n. 2, c. 4, 1000, a, 18: $d\lambda\lambda\dot{\alpha}$ περι μὲν τῶν μυθικῶς σοφιζομείνων οὐκ ἄξιον μετὰ σπουδῆς σκοπεῖν. Poet. 25, 1460, b, 35: a poetic representation is justified by its correspondence either with the ideal or with the actual; εἰ δὲ μηδετέρως, ὅτι οὕτω φασιν, οἶον τὰ περι θεῶν. ἴσως γὰρ οὕτε βέλτιον οὕτω λέγειν, οὕτ' ἀληθῆ, ἀλλ' ἔτυχεν ὕσπερ Ξενοφάνης: ἀλλ' οὕ φασι τάδε.

2 Polit, i. 2, 1252, b, 24: καὶ

τοὺς θεοὺς δὲ διὰ τοῦτο πάντες φασὶ βασιλεύεσθαι, ὅτι καὶ αὐτοὶ οἱ μὲν ἔτι καὶ νῦν οἱ δὲ τὸ ἀρχαῖον ἐβασιλεύοντο ·ἄσπερ δὲ καὶ τὰ εἴδη ἐαντοῖς ἀφομοιοῦσιν οἱ ἄνθρωποι, οὕτω καὶ τοὺς βίους τῶν θεῶν. This deduction of the belief in a sovereign of the gods is all the more remarkable, because Aristotle might equally well have himself found in that tradition a proof of the unity of God.

⁸ Cf. Ph. d. Gr. i. 490. ⁴ In the passage quoted from Metaph. xii. 8, in vol. i. p. 508, n. 2.

which he did not explain) as pædagogic lies in the interest of the State, 1 Aristotle goes a step farther, and thus comes a step nearer the view of sophistic free-thinking as to the origin of religion,2 in maintaining that these myths, or at least a great part of them, had been from the beginning invented for no other purpose. This, indeed, is what we should expect from the strictness with which he himself excludes all that is mythical from his scientific investigations, his refusal to introduce religious considerations into his naturalistic view of the world,3 and the exclusiveness with which he relies in his Ethics upon moral motives to the neglect of the religious. Religion itself, indeed, he always treats as an absolute moral necessity. The man who doubts whether the gods have a claim on our reverence or not is a fit subject, he says,4 not for instruction but for punishment, just as would be the man who might ask whether his parents have a claim upon his love. As in his system the world cannot be thought of apart from God, so neither can man apart from religion. But to rest this religion upon such palpable fables as the myths of the popular belief can be justified only on the ground of the aforesaid political expediency.5 Aristotle himself sometimes makes use of these myths, as of other popular opinions, in order to point to some

¹ See *Ph. d. Gr.* i. 792. ² *Ibid.* i. 1010 sq.

³ The expression is used in no depreciatory sense, but as indicating the view that everything in the world is the effect of natural causes.

⁴ Top. i. 11, 105, a, 5, cf. Eth. viii. 16, 1163, b, 15, ix. 1, 1164, b,

^{4,} and supra, vol. ii. p. 329, n. 3.

³ It is possible, indeed, that if he had completed the discussion of education in the best state, he would have accepted Plato's doctrine, that myths were indispensable in education, as easily reconcileable with the argument.

universal truth embodied in them, 1 just as he likes to trace back scientific assumptions to their most insignificant beginnings, and to pay respect to popular sayings and proverbs. 2 But apart from the few universal principles of religion embodied in mythology, he ascribes to it no deeper significance; and just as little, on the other hand, does he seem to aim at its purification. He presupposes for his State the existing religion, 3 just as personally he did not renounce its

¹ Thus *Metaph.* i. 3, 983, b, 27, c. 4 init. xiv. 4, 1091, b, 3. Phys. iv. 1, 208, b, 29, hints of certain scientific views of the world are discovered in the cosmogonic myths of Hesiod and other poets; Meteor. i. 9, 347, a, 5 the Oceanus is interpreted of the air-current that encircles the earth; the myth of Atlas proves that its inventors, with later philosophers, attributed weight to the heavens (De Cælo, ii. 1. 284, a, 18, in the treatise De Motu Anim. 3, 699, a, 27, Atlas is interpreted to mean the world's axis; the same treatise, c. 4,699, b. 35, finds in Homer's lines upon the golden chain a reference to the immobility of the primum movens); Aphrodite is said to have obtained this name because of the frothy character of the semen (Gen. An. ii. 2 fin.); Ares was united with this goddess by the first inventors of this myth because warlike natures, as a rule, exhibit amorous propensities (Pol. ii. 9, 1269, b, 27); in the fable which tells how the Argonauts had to leave Heracles behind there lies a true political observation (Polit. iii. 13, 1284, a, 22); the story that Athene

threw away the flute expresses the truth that this instrument is unnecessary for mental culture (Polit. viii. 6, 1341, b, 2); the worship of the Graces points to the necessity of reciprocity (Eth. v. 8, 1133, a, 2); the number three derives its significance in the popular religion from the fact that it is the first number which has beginning, middle, and end (De Calo, i. 1, 268, a, 14).

² Thus, *H. An.* vi. 35, 580, a, 15, ix. 32, 619, a, 18 he quotes several myths about animals; in the fragment from the Eudemus (PLUT. *Cons. ad Apoll.* c. 27 fr. 40) he makes use of the story of Midas and Silenus; on his predilection for proverbs, cf. *supra*, vol. i. p. 256, n. 2.

3 As is obvious from *Polit*. vii. 8, 1328, b, 11, c. 9, 1329, a, 29, c. 12, 1331, a, 24, c. 16, 1335, b, 14. But that he went so far in his zeal for religion as to assign the fourth part of the land collectively to the priesthood for the support of religion cannot be concluded (as has been suggested in *Ferienschr*. N. F. i. 303) from *Polit*. vii. 10, 1330, a, 8. Aristotle says indeed here that the land should be divided into pub-

rites, and expressed his dependence on friends and relatives through the forms which it had consecrated; 1 but of the Platonic demand for the reform of religion by philosophy we have not a trace in him, and in his Politics he admits into the existing cultus things which he disapproves of in themselves.² Aristotle's philosophy stands thus as a whole in the loosest relation to positive religion. It takes advantage of its ideas as links of literary connection, but makes no further use of them. Just as little, however, does it desire to see religion purified or reformed; on the contrary, it seems to accept its imperfections as something which could not possibly be Each stands to the other in an attitude of essential indifference; philosophy goes its own way. without much troubling itself about religion, or fearing from it any interruption in the prosecution of its own work.

lic and private, and the latter again into two parts for the support of religion and the syssitia respectively, but he does not say that these parts should be of the same size.

¹ Cf. in this reference the quotations on the subject of his votive offerings and gifts to the dead, in chap. i. ad fin.

² Polit. vii. 17, 1336, b, 3: δλως μὲν οδν αἰσχρολογίαν ἐκ τῆς πόλεως, ἄσπερ ἄλλο τι, δεῖ τὸν νομοθέτην ἐξορίζειν . . . ἐπεὶ δὲ τὸ λέγειν τι τῶν τοιούτων ἐξορίζομεν, φανερὸν ὅτι καὶ τὸ θεωρεῖν ἡ γραφὰς η λόγους ἀσχήμονας. ἐπιμελὲς μὲν οὖν ἔστω τοῖς ἄρχουσι μηθὲν μήτε ἄγαλμα μήτε γραφήν εἶναι τοιούτων πράξεων μίμησιν, εἶ μὴ παρά τισι θεοῖς τοιούτοις οῖς καὶ τὸν τωθασμόν ἀποδίδωσιν ὁ νόμος τοὺς ἔχοντας ἡλικίαν πλέον προήκουσαν καὶ ὑπὲρ αὐτῶν καὶ τέκνων καὶ γυναικῶν τιμαλφεῖν τοὺς θεούς. The latter admission clearly shows how Aristotle endeavoured to make things which he disapproved of and only unwillingly permitted, at least as harmless as possible.

CHAPTER XVII

RETROSPECT

THE peculiar traits of the Aristotelian philosophy are due to the fusion in it of the two elements to which attention was called at the outset, namely the dialectic or speculative, and the empirical or realistic. On the one hand the system finds the true essence of things to consist in immaterial form, true knowledge of them in the apprehension of their concept; on the other hand, it insists that the form should not be conceived of as a transcendental 'idea' existing apart from things, and that it is the individual, and not the universal notion or genus, that is the ultimate reality. It therefore represents experience as the only source of concepts, which are obtained, not by turning away from the actual to an ideal world, but by apprehending in their essence the data of experience themselves; thus, while pursuing the dialectic development of the concept, it unites with it a comprehensive observation of the facts. Both traits have their roots equally in the intellectual capacity of its author, whose greatness just consists in this rare union in equal measure of qualities which in most men are found to be mutually exclusive of one another: the

¹ Vol. i. p. 170 sqq.

faculty, namely, of philosophic thought and the power of accurate observation applied with living interest to the world of fact. Hitherto these elements have been combined in very different proportions in philosophy. In the school of Socrates and Plato the art of developing the concept had far outstript the power of appreciating They had directed attention to what is the fact. inward in man to the neglect of the outward world. and had regarded thought itself as the immediate source of our truth. Thought, that is to say, conceptions, stood for what was absolutely certain, the criterion by which the truth of experience was to be tested. The strongest expression of, as well as the most remarkable deduction from, this theory is to be found in the Platonic doctrine of Ideas. Aristotle indeed shares the general presuppositions of this idealistic philosophy; he also is convinced that the essence of things is only known by thought, and consists only in that which is the object of our thought, or, in other words, in the form and not in the matter. He justly takes exception, however, to the transcendental character of the Platonic Ideas. He cannot conceive of the form and the essence as existing separately from the things whose form and essence they are. Reflecting further that our own conceptions are not independent of experience in their origin, he is the more convinced of the error of the Platonic separation between the Ideas and the phenomena. In place. then, of the doctrine of Ideas he presents us with an essentially new view. It is not the genus but the individual which, according to Aristotle, constitutes the substantial reality; the form does not exist as a universal apart from

the thing, but in it as the special form of this or that particular. While the general principle upon which the Platonic Idealism is founded is thus retained, the special development of it into the doctrine of Ideas is rejected. The 'Idea,' which Plato had conceived of as transcendental and supersensible, has a new place assigned to it as the formative and efficient principle in the phenomenal world. As the inner essence of things, it is sought for in the facts themselves, as these present themselves to us in experience. The Aristotelian doctrine may thus be described as alike the completion and the confutation of the Platonic. It confutes it in the form which Plato had given to it: yet at the same time it develops his fundamental thought still more fully and logically than Plato himself had done, in that it attributes to form not only, with him, complete and primary reality, but also a creative force to produce all else that is real. Aristotle, therefore, traces the potency of thought much deeper than Plato had been able to do throughout the whole field of phenomena.

From this fundamental principle all the leading doctrines of the Aristotelian philosophy logically follow. Since the universal cannot exist apart from the individual it cannot form an independent reality by itself, the individual alone has substantial reality. And since the form is conceived of, not as absolute essence, abstracted from phenomena, but as the efficient cause which works in them, it cannot stand as it does in Plato in a relation of mere opposition to that which is the substratum of phenomena—namely, matter. If form is the absolutely real, matter cannot be the absolutely un-

real and non-existent: for, in order that form may be able to realise itself in the matter, there must exist between the two a kinship or positive relation as well as the apparent antagonism. So matter is merely unrealised form, it is the potentiality of which form is the actuality.1 From this mutual relationship arises motion, and with it all natural life, all growth and decay, all change and transmutation. But since the two principles of form and motion stand originally towards one another in a relation of mere antagonism and opposition, this relation itself, or in other words motion, presupposes for form an absolute existence; if it is the cause of all motion, it must itself be unmoved, and precede all that is moved if not in order of time, at least in the logical order of reality. From the sum of the forms which are embodied in matter we must therefore distinguish the primum movens, or God, as pure form or pure reason whose only object is itself. Since all motions proceed from form, they must all be striving towards a certain definite form as their goal. There is nothing in nature which has not its own indwelling end; and since all motion leads us back to a primary source of movement, the sum total of things is subordinate to some highest end, and constitutes an organic whole—in other words, an ordered world. But since form operates in matter which only gradually develops into that which it is destined to become, the formal design can only realise itself under manifold restraints. and in conflict with the resistance of matter, at one time with greater at another with less perfection. Thus the

¹ Cf. p. 340 sqq., vol. i.

world is composed of many parts, which vary infinitely in worth and beauty; these again fall apart into the two great sections of heaven and earth, of which the former exhibits a gradual diminution, the latter, contrariwise, a gradual increase in perfection. But while all parts of the world down to the most imperfect and insignificant are essential elements in the whole, still the definite and peculiar character of each has a claim upon our regard, and accordingly it is not less in harmony with the demands of the system than with the personal inclinations of its author to investigate great things and small alike with scientific thoroughness, and to treat nothing with contempt as if it were insignificant and worthless for science.1 This does not, of course, exclude such degrees of importance among things themselves as Aristotle has sought to point out in the sphere, for example, of animate nature. So among mundane beings the first place is assigned to man, since in him alone spirit reveals itself The chief end of man, therefore, consists in the cultivation and exercise of his spiritual capacities: in other words, scientific knowledge and moral will are the essential conditions of happiness. But as no work is possible without appropriate material, it is impossible for man to dispense with external aids for the realisation of his end; and as all things develop into that which they are capable of becoming only by a gradual process, so in the spiritual life of man there is exhibited a gradual process of development. Thus from sense perception spring imagination and

 $^{^{1}}$ See on this head, vol. i. p. 167, n. 3, p. 169, n. 3, and also PLATO's statements noted, $Ph.\ d.\ Gr.$ i. p. 665.

memory, from these arises thought; natural capacity precedes moral action, practice and habit precede moral knowledge; reason appears first as passive and as entangled in the lower faculties of the soul before it realises itself as active in the purity of its being. The highest perfection of our spiritual life consists, however, in scientific contemplation, for here alone reason is in immediate contact with the pure forms of things, while at the same time it is beyond question that reason cannot confine itself to the immediate knowledge of first principles, but methodically pressing forward from phenomena to conceptions, and tracing causes to their effects, must finally embrace the whole sphere of reality.

This short survey has already shown us in the Aristotelian system a well-planned doctrinal structure, the outlines of which are drawn with a firm hand in accordance with one fundamental thought. The care and consistency with which the design is executed down to the minutest detail is manifest from the whole preceding account. It is nevertheless true that, as we have already had frequent occasion to remark, all the joints of the fabric are not equally secure; and the ultimate source of this defect must be sought for in the fact that the foundations of the whole have not been laid sufficiently deep. Putting aside all those points in which the want of experimental knowledge has led Aristotle to draw false conclusions and put forward untenable explanations, and limiting ourselves merely to the question of the self-consistency of his doctrine, without entering upon that of its absolute truth, we cannot deny that Aristotle has failed to unite the

chief points of view in his system in a manner free from self-contradiction. Just as in his scientific procedure dialectic and observation, the speculative and the empirical elements, are not equally balanced, but the a priori method common to Socrates and Plato continually re-asserts itself over the more strictly empirical,1 so also in his metaphysical speculations we detect a similar phenomenon. There is nothing in the Platonic system which is so distasteful to him as that dualism between Idea and phenomenon which expressed itself sharply in the doctrine of the absolute existence of the Ideas, and of the non-reality of His opposition to this dualism is the key-note of his whole reconstruction of the Platonic metaphysics and of the fundamental ideas peculiar to his own system. And yet, earnest and thorough as are his efforts to overcome it, he has not, after all, succeeded in doing so.

He denies Plato's doctrine that universal class notions possess substantial reality; but he asserts with him that all our conceptions are of the universal, and depend for their truth upon the reality of their object.² He combats the transcendental character of the Platonic Ideas and the dualism between Idea and phenomenon. But he himself leaves form and matter in a like fundamental opposition to one another, in that he fails to trace them back to a common source; and the further development of these two principles involves him in the contradiction³ of maintaining that the essence and substance of things is in the form, which at the same time

See sup. vol. i. p. 175 sq. p. 258, sqq. 2 Cf. vol. i. p. 334 sqq. 3 On which cf. vol. i. p. 372 sqq.

is a universal, and yet that the source of individuality and therefore also of substantiality must be the matter. He takes exception to Plato's doctrine on the ground that his Ideas contain no principle of motion; nevertheless his own account of the relation between form and matter leaves all actual motion equally unexplained. He places God as a personal being outside the world; but lest he should derogate in anything from his perfection, he thinks it necessary to deny to him the essential conditions of personality. So, to escape involving him in the transmutations of finite things, he limits God's operation (herein contradicting the more living idea of God which he elsewhere entertains) to the production of motion in the outer cosmic sphere, and so pictures that activity to himself, as to assign spatial existence to the Deity.

Connected with this is the obscurity which surrounds his conception of Nature. In the spirit of antiquity he describes Nature as a single being who operates with a purpose as a rational all-efficient power: and yet his system supplies no subject of which these attributes may be predicated. Far as Aristotle has advanced beyond the superficial teleology of Socrates and Plato, he has none the less failed actually to solve the opposition between physical and final causes; and while we must admit that the problem with which he is here face to face is one that still taxes our resources, and that we cannot therefore reproach him with having failed to solve it, it is yet curious to note how easily the two prin-

 $^{^1}$ Cf. with the above remarks vol. i. p. 420 sq. 2 As will be obvious from p. 358 sqq. p. 464 sqq. and p. 17, sup.

ciples which he had posited at the outset of his philosophy of nature might in the sequel become mutually contradictory and exclusive of one another. A further difficulty arises in connection with the Aristotelian account of animate nature, and especially of man, inasmuch as it is hard to discover any inner principle of union between the various elements of the soul, and harder still to explain the phenomena of its life, if, like every other moving force, the soul is held to be itself unmoved. The difficulty, however, becomes greatest when we ask how we are to comprehend in the unity of personal life the reason of man and the lower faculties of his soul, and to determine the share of the former in his spiritual acts and states; how we are to conceive of what is passive and incorporeal as at the same time part of a soul which by its very definition is the 'entelechy' of the body, and to assign to personality its place between the two constituent parts of human nature of which the one transcends it while the other sinks below it.1

Turning finally to his Moral Philosophy, we find that here also Aristotle strove with much success to correct the one-sidedness of Socrates and Plato. He not only contradicts the Socratic doctrine that Virtue is Knowledge, but sets aside also Plato's distinction between ordinary and philosophic Virtue. To him, all moral qualities are a matter of the Will, and have their primary source not in instruction but in habit and education. Nevertheless in the account of the intellectual virtues there reveals itself an unmistakable vacillation as to

¹ P. 119 sqq.

the relation in which moral knowledge stands to moral action, while in the preference for theoretic over practical activity (which follows indeed quite logically from the Aristotelian doctrine of the soul) there reappears the same presupposition which lay at the root of the very views that Aristotle controverted. So, too, even in his political philosophy, however deep its insight in other respects into the actual conditions of social life, and however great its superiority to Plato's political idealism, we yet find remnants of the old idealism —if not so much in the picture of the best State, yet in that distinction between true and false forms of government the untenableness of which becomes manifest by the ambiguous position which the doctrine itself assigns to 'polity.' There thus runs through every part of the Aristotelian system that dualism which it had inherited from Plato, and which, with the best intentions, it never succeeded, after it had once accepted it as one of its fundamental principles, in wholly overcoming. The more earnestly, on the other hand, Aristotle strives to transcend this dualism, and the more unmistakable the contradictions in which he involves himself by his efforts, the clearer it becomes how heterogeneous are the elements which are united in his philosophy, and how difficult the problem which Greek philosophy had to face when once the opposition between idea and phenomenon, spirit and nature, had been brought so clearly and sharply into view as it was in the Platonic doctrine.

¹ Cf. p. 142 sq., supra, and the proposition (p. 396, vol. i.) that applies to Ethics.

only theoretic activity belongs

² See p. 243, supra.

Whether Aristotle provided the means of satisfactorily solving this problem, and what attempts in this direction were made by the later schools, it will be the task of this work to investigate as it proceeds. early followers who continued to build on Aristotelian foundations and who belonged to the Peripatetic school, could not be expected to find a more satisfactory answer to the main problem than Aristotle himself had succeeded in finding. Aristotle's own conclusions were much too deeply rooted in the fundamental presuppositions of his system to permit of their being altered without a reconstruction of the whole. Yet on the other hand, thinkers so keen and independent as the men of this school continued to be, could not shut their eyes to the difficulties of the Aristotelian doctrine, and it was therefore natural that they should devise means of escaping them. But since these difficulties ultimately arose from the fact that idealism and observation, a spiritual and a naturalistic view, had been united without being completely reconciled, and since such a reconciliation was impossible on the given premises, there was no way of solving the contradiction but by the suppression of one of its terms. It was, however, to be expected in the circumstances that the scientific should obtain the preference over the dialectic element, for it was the former that constituted the distinguishing characteristic of the Aristotelian school in opposition to the Platonic, and the new interest thus implanted in it by its founder naturally exercised a stronger fascination than the older doctrine of Ideas which had been handed down by the common tradition from Socrates and Plato. It was just this

side of the Aristotelian system which might be expected chiefly to attract those who gave their allegiance to the later philosophy, and so to have an undue prominence assigned to it in subsequent deductions from Aristotelian ideas. The further development of the Peripatetic school corresponds to this expectation. Its most important result in the immediately succeeding period was to bring the purely naturalistic view of the world more and more into prominence, to the neglect of the spiritual side of things.

CHAPTER XVIII

THE PERIPATETIC SCHOOL: THEOPHRASTUS

Among the numerous pupils of the Stagirite, Theophrastus occupies the first place. Born at Eresos in Lesbos, he came early (perhaps even before the death of Plato) into connection with Aristotle, from whom in

1 Diog. v. 35: $\tau ο \hat{v}$ δη Σταγειρίτου γεγόνασι μὲν πολλοί γνώριμοι, διαφέρων δὲ μάλιστα Θεόφραστος. SIMPL. Phys. 225, a. and: $\tau \hat{\omega}$ κορυφαίφ τῶν 'Αριστοτέλους ἐταίρων Θεοφράστ ω ; id. Categ. Schol. in $A\tau$. 92, b, 22: $\tau \delta \nu$ ἄριστον τῶν αὐτοῦ μαθητῶν τὸν Θεόφρ. That he was actually so is evident from all that we know of Theophrastus and his position in the Peripatetic School.

Efectors. According to PLUT. Adv. Col. 33, 3, p. 1126; N. p. suan vivi sec. Epic. 15, 6, p. 1097, he had delivered his native city twice from Tyrants. No particulars, however, are given, and we are not in a position to test the historical character of the statement.

Theophrastus, like Aristotle himself, remained a member of the Academy until the death of Plato, and after that event continued with Aristotle. several indications, moreover, we gather that Theophrastus was with Aristotle in Macedonia: for unreliable as is AELIAN's statement (V. H. iv. 19) that he was highly esteemed by Philip, it makes it all the more certain that he was a friend of Callisthenes, whom he could only have come to know at that time, and that he lamented his tragic end in a work entitled Καλλισθένης ή περὶ πένθους (CIC. Tusc. iii. 10, 21, v. 9, 25; Diog. v. 44; ALEX. De An. 162, b fin.). The possession of a property at Stagira (DIOG. v. 52) and the repeated mention of this town, and of the museum in it, also go to prove that he was there at the same time as Aristotle. The expression which the latter is said to have used with regard to him and point of age he was not far removed.1 Before his death Aristotle committed to his charge not only his private affairs2 but also his School, which he had probably already handed over to him on his departure from Athens.3 Under Theophrastus the school grew even

more suspicious as it is also attributed to Plato and Isocrates (see Ph. d. Gr. i. 842, 1). Similarly the assertion that Theophrastus was originally called Tyrtamus, and received the name Θεόφραστος from Aristotle on account of his graceful style (STRABO, xiii. 2. 4. p. 618; CIC. Orat. 19, 62; QUINTIL. Inst. x. 1, 83; PLIN. H. Nat. praef. 29; Diog. 38; SUID. Θεόφρ.; AMMON. De Interpr. 17, b, and: OLYMPIOD. V. Plat. p. 1) is justly called in question by BRANDIS, iii. 251, and MEYER (Gesch. der Botanik, i. 147).

1 The year of Theophrastus's birth and death can only be

determined approximately. According to APOLLODORUS (Diog. 58) he died Ol. 123 (288-284 B.C.), but the year is not given; that it was the third year of the Olympiad (BRANDIS, iii. 254; NAUWERCK, De Strat. 7), and that he was himself the head of the school for thirty-five (BRAN-DIS ibid.) or thirty-six (RITTER 408) years is mere conjecture. Diog. 40 gives his age as eightyfive, and this is far more probable than the statement of the spurious letter prefixed to Theophrastus's Characters, that he composed this treatise at the age of ninety-nine, and of HIERONY-MUS (Ep. 34 Ad Nepotian. iv. b, 258 Mart., where our text has 'Themistoclem' instead of 'Theophrastum'), that he was 107, for Diog. probably here follows

Apollodorus; these statements. moreover, make him older than Aristotle, and much too old to be destined by the latter (see following note) as the husband of his daughter, who was not yet grown According to Diog., Theophrastus's birth falls between 373 and 368 B.C.; he was therefore from eleven to sixteen years

younger than Aristotle.

² He begs Theophrastus, along with some others, until Nicanor can interest himself in the matter. ἐπιμελεῖσθαι . . ἐὰν βούληται καὶ ἐνδέχηται αὐτῷ, τῶν τε παιδίων καὶ Έρπυλλίδος καὶ τῶν καταλελειμμένων, and in case Nicanor, for whose wife he had destined his daughter Pythias, should die before the marriage took place, he enjoins upon him the duty of marrying her in his stead and becoming the guardian of her younger brother. (See his Will, Theophrastus Diog. v. 12, 13.) actually undertook the education of the latter, as he also afterwards did that of the sons of Pvthias (see p. 20, n. 3, vol. i.; Diog. 53; SEXT. Math. i. 258), and his affection for him gave occasion to one Aristippus, περί παλαιᾶς τουψηs, to accuse him of erotic relations with him (Diog. 39). In his Will (ibid. 51 sq.) Theophrastus leaves directions for the execution of pictures of Aristotle and Nicomachus.

⁸ See p. 37, and p. 39, n. 1.

more flourishing,¹ and when, after holding the presidency for more than thirty-four years,² he died, honoured in spite of many hostile attacks³ both at home and abroad,⁴ he left it as an endowment the garden and the hall in which henceforth it had its settled abode.⁵ Nor

1 Diog. 37: ἀπήντων τε εἰς τὴν διατριβὴν αὐτοῦ μαθηταὶ πρὸς δισχιλίους. If by this is meant that he had this number during his whole life we must suppose that the inner circle of his students is referred to; if he had them all at one time it can only have been at single lectures, perhaps on rhetoric or some other popular subject. Zeno's expression (Plut. Prof. in Virt. c. 6 fim. p. 78; De se ipso land. c. 17, p. 545) δ ἐκείνου χορός μείζων, δ ἐμὸς δὲ συμφωνότερος refers to the number of his students.

² See p. 349, n. 1, supra.

See following note. Of the Epicureans besides Epicurus himself (PLUT. adv. Col. 7, 2, p. 1110) the hetaera Leontium also wrote against him; Cro. N.

D. i. 33, 93.

4 Of foreign princes Cassander and Ptolemy, according to DIOG. 37, gave him proofs of their esteem; to the former of whom was dedicated a treatise π. βασιλείας, the genuineness of which, however, was doubted by some (DIOG. 47; DIONYS. Antiquitt. v. 73; ATHEN. iv. 144, e). The esteem in which he was held at Athens was shown at his burial (DIOG. 41), as also previously in the matter of the accusation of impiety brought against him by Agnonides, which failed completely (perhaps AE-LIAN, V. H. viii. 12, relates to

this), and in the matter of the law of Sophocles (cf. also ATHEN. xiii. 610, e; Krische, Forsch. 338), which made the consent of the Senate and people necessary for the opening of a philosophical school. When, in consequence of this law (prob. ann. 306-5). all the philosophers, and among them Theophrastus, left Athens it is said to have been chiefly regard for him which caused its repeal and the punishment of its author; Diog. 37 sq., cf. ZUMPT, Ueber den Bestand der philos. Schulen in Athen, Abh. der Berl. Akad. hist.-phil. Kl. 1842, 41 sq.

5 DIOG. 39 : λέγεται δ' αὐτὸν καὶ ζδιον κήπον σχείν μετά την Αριστοτέλους τελευτήν, Δημητρίου τοῦ Φαληρέως . . . τοῦτο συμπράξαντος. Theophrastus's will, ibid. 52: τον δε κήπον και τον περίπατον καὶ τὰς οἰκίας τὰς πρὸς τῶ κήπφ πάσας δίδωμι τῶν γεγραμμένων φίλων αξί τοις βουλομένοις συσχολάζειν καὶ συμφιλοσοφεῖν ἐν αὐταῖς (ἐπειδήπερ οὐ δυνατον πᾶσιν ἀνθρώποις αξί ἐπιδημεῖν) μήτ' ἐξαλλοτριούσι μήτ' έξιδιαζομένου μηδενός. άλλ' ως αν ίερον κοινή κεκτημένοις . . . ἔστωσαν δὲ οἱ κοινωνοῦντες "Ιππαρχος &c. It is probable that the sanctuary of the Muses, described § 51 sq., with its two chambers, in one of which were hung the mivakes ev als at this yhs $\pi \in \rho(io\delta oi \in l\sigma i\nu)$, belonged to the buildings here mentioned. From the words, § 39, μετὰ τὴν 'Aριwere his services to the Peripatetic doctrine less conspicuous. In creative power of intellect he is not indeed to be compared with Aristotle. But he was in an especial degree fitted for the work of strengthening, extending and completing the system which the latter had left behind him. The interest in science by which he was governed even to excess, and which led him to subordinate all other concerns to its peaceful pursuit and even to forego the pleasures of the family life; the insatiable thirst for knowledge which drew from him even when dying complaints of the shortness of human life; the industry which scarcely relaxed in extreme old age; the penetration, conspicuous even in what has come

στοτέλους τελευτήν ZUMPT infers. ibid. 31 sq., that Aristotle had previously possessed this garden, and that as it was to be sold after his death Demetrius managed that it should be transferred to Theophrastus. BRAN-DIS (iii. 253) considers this inference a rash one, but also supposes that Aristotle taught in a house and garden of his own in the Lyceum. We have no information, however, on this point; yet the opposite cannot, after what has been said p. 38, vol. i., be inferred with any certainty from the fact that Aristotle's will makes no mention of any such property. Even the words upon which ZUMPT relies, if they have any special force, may with equal reason be held to imply that the Peripatetic school did not become the owner of property till after Aristotle's death. It is most probable, therefore, that Aristotle did not give his instructions in a garden of his own.

According to ATHEN. v. 186, a (i. 402, Dind.), Theophrastus left behind him also means to provide common meals for members of the school.

1 That Theophrastus was still unmarried at the time of Aristotle's death is obvious from the will of the latter (see p. 349, n. 2, supra); that he remained so is obvious from his own and from the total absence of any statement to the contrary. The reason why he disdained the married state he himself gives us in the fragment in HIERON. Adv. Jovin. i. 47, iv. b, 189, Mart., hereafter to be discussed, where he dissuades the philosopher from it, chiefly on the ground that it brings with it disturbances incompatible with the scientific life.

² CIC. Tusc. iii. 28, 69; DIOG. v. 41; HIERON. Epist. 24 Ad Nepotian. iv. b, 258 Mart.

3 DIOG. 40: ἐτελεύτα δη γηραιδς . . ἐπειδήπερ δλίγον ἀνῆκε τῶν πόνων, down to us of his writings; that grace of language and delivery, the fame of which survived him, as well as the independence of his outward circumstances and the possession of all the requisite means for the prosecution of his learned labours—all these must have contributed in a high degree to promote his success as a scientific investigator and teacher. The numerous writings which he left behind him as a monument to his diligence extend to every part of the field of knowledge that was then open.⁴ To us only a small

¹ Cf. besides the passages quoted supra, p. 348, n. 3 fin.: CIC. Brut. 31, 121: quis . . . Theophrasto dulcior? Tusc. ∇ . 9, 24: hic autem elegantissimus omnium philosophorum et eruditissimus. In his case, as in Aristotle's, this merit belongs chiefly to his popular writings, and especially to the dialogues, which, like Aristotle's, are described as exoteric (see p. 111, n. 2, 3, vol. i.). PROKL. In Parm. i. fin. p. 54 Cous. complains that the introductions in them do not hang together with the main content. According to HERMIPPUS (ATHEN. i. 21, a) his personal adornment was excessive and his delivery too theatrical. Frequent mention is made of his witticisms, e.g. PLUT. Qu. Conv. ii. 1, 9, 1, v. 5, 2, 7 (vii. 10, 2, 15); Lycurg. c. 10 (Cupid. Div. c. 8, p. 527; PORPH. De Abstin. iv. 4, p. 304).

² We may infer Theophrastus's opulence from his will (Diog. v. 51 sqq.), which specifies considerable property in land, slaves, and money, although the total amount of the last (§ 59 sq.) is not stated.

³ Mention is made of his library, of which Aristotle's constituted the ground floor, in STRABO, xiii. 1, 54, p. 608, and in his will (DIOG. 52; ATHEN. i. 3, a, where τούτων shows that Theophrastus's name has fallen out after that of Aristotle). KIRCHNER, Die Botan. Schr. d. Theophr. (Jahrb. f. Philol. Supplementbd. vii. 1874, p. 462 sqq.), makes it appear probable from Theophrastus's botanical works that besides many parts of Greece and Macedonia he had visited Crete, Lower Egypt, perhaps also Southern Thrace, and the coast of Asia Minor, and thus added the knowledge of foreign countries to his other means of research.

⁴ Hermippus and Andronicus had made lists of his works (see p. 49, n. 4, vol. i.; Plut. Sulla, 26; cf. Porphyr. Vit. Plotini, 24); Diog. v. 42-50 has presented to us one (upon which cf. the minute investigations of Usener, Analecta Theophrastea, Leipsic, 1858, 1-24; and on the treatises on logic which it contains, Prant, Gesch. der Log. i.

portion of these multitudinous works remains: the two on botany, a few shorter treatises on natural

350). This list not only omits some known writings (USENER, 21 sq.) but follows a strange After two alphabetical lists, of which the second is clearly supplementary to the first, but both of which probably give only those of the writings of Theophrastus which were to be found in the Alexandrine or some other great library, follow two more supplements; the first of these is not arranged according to any definite principle, the second, if we exclude some insertions, is again alphabetical. It is not improbable that this list, as Usener thinks, is Hermippus's, come to us (cf. Rose, Arist. Libr. Auct. 43 sq.) through Favorinus, from whom Diog. immediately before (v. 41) quotes Hermippus, and whose name is also introduced before the list of ARIST.'S writings (v. 21) and before PLATO'S will (iii, 40). How far the writings here enumerated are genuine we have scarcely any means of judging; USENER, p. 17, makes it probable that a few of them (the History of Geometry, Astronomy, and Arithmetic, perhaps also the History of Theological Opinions, v. 48, 50) belonged to Eudemus.

1 Π. φυτῶν ἰστορίας nine books; π. φυτῶν αἰτιῶν six books. It has already been shown (supra, vol. i. p. 93, n.*2), that these works are by Theophrastus and not by Aristotle; in determining the date of their composition we have further to take into consideration the allusions, Hist. Pl. v. 2, 4, to the destruction of Megara by Demetrius Poliorcetes (Ol. 118, 2= 306 B.C.), vi. 3, 3, to the archonship of Simonides (Ol. 117, 2), iv. 3, 2, to the expedition of Ophellas (Ol 118, 1), ix. 4, 8, to King Antigonus. Hist. Pl. v. 8, 1, also refers to the period subsequent to the conquest of Cyprus by Demetrius Poliorcetes (DIODORUS, xx. 47 sqq. 73 sqq.), and was therefore written after Ol. 118, 2. (Cf. Brandis, iii. SIMPLICIUS'S state-322 sq.) ment, Phys. 1, a, that Aristotle treated of plants partly historically and partly ætiologically can hardly refer to these two works, and is the less important since SIMPL. (as already remarked, vol. i. p. 93, n. 2), had no personal acquaintance with Aristotle's treatise upon plants. In the two works of Theophrastus, besides many corruptions in the text, there are a number of lacunæ. In the π. φυτῶν αἰτιῶν the last sections (perhaps two books, since Diog. 46 speaks of the treatise as consisting of eight) unmistakably lost are SCHNEIDER, Theophr. Opp. v. 232 sqq.). The ascription by Diog. 46 of ten books to the ίστορία is perhaps to be explained by the supposition that one of those which we have (Schnei-DER, ibid. thinks the fourth, which certainly has a break, c. 12 fin.) was divided in some manuscripts; contrariwise the fact that Hist. viii. 4, 5 and ix. 18, 2 are quoted by Apollon. Mirab. 33, 41, as respectively from ζ' and η' περί φυτῶν points to the loss of one of the earlier science, fragments of a work on metaphysics and of the important history of physics (which seems to have been the treasure-house from which later tradition chiefly

books or its combination with another. On the other hand. the view that the ninth book of the botanical treatise did not originally belong to it (WIMMER, Theophr. Hist. Plant. 1842, p. ix.) is with good reason rejected KIRCHNER, De Theophr. Libr. Phytol. 34 sqq.: it is known as part of the treatise not only to Diog. (ibid.) but to APOLLON., who in c. 29 quotes ix. 13, 3; 20, 4, c. 31, ix. 17, 4, c. 41, ix. 18, 2, c. 48, ix. 11, 11, c. 50, ix. 17, 3 (here expressly as the ἐσχάτη τῆς πραγματείας); it is unmistakably referred to in the sixth book De Caus. Plant., even quoted ii. 6, 4 (cf. Hist. ix. 18, 10), its contents are forecast i. 12, 1, and in 1, 4; 2, 2; 8, 8; 19, 1, it refers back itself to the earlier books. Similarly MEYER (Gesch. d. Botanik, i. 176 sq.) and Brandis, iii. 32 sq., are right in again setting aside the view that the sixth book De Causis Pl. could be a separate work or wholly spurious. the remarks upon the number seven, c. 4, 1, 2, which Brandis finds strange, contain nothing surprising; Aristotle had already counted seven primary colours and seven tastes corresponding to the seven notes (see supra, vol. i. p. 518, n. 3), and a statement similar to that which is here made about the number seven, is to be found in THEOPHR. De Ventis (Fr. 5), 49, about the number three.

See Schneider, Opp. i 647 sqq. Wimmer, vol. i i. of his

edition (1862).

² Metaphysical aporiæ, with regard to which we do not know whether they belonged to a more comprehensive work or merely to an introductory treatise. cording to the scholium at the end, the work of which they were a part was not included either by Hermippus or by Andronicus in their lists but quoted by Nicolaus (of Damascus). On the manifold corruptions of its text, see besides the edd. of BRANDIS (Arist. et Theophr. Metaph. 308 sqq.) and WIMMER (Fragm. No 12), USENER in the Rhein. Mus. xvi 259 sqq.

3 This work is called sometimes φυσική ίστορία (ALEX. apud SIMPL Phys. 25, a, o.), sometimes φυσικά (Diog. ix. 22; SIMPL. De Cælo, Schol. in Ar. 510, a, 42; Stob. Ekl. i. 522), elsewhere φυσικαί δόξαι (Diog. v. 48), περί φυσικών (ihid. 46), π. τών φυσικών (ALEX. Metaph. 24, 4; Bon. 536, a, 8 bk.), π. των φυσικών δοξών (TAURUS apud PHILOP. Adv. Procl. vi. 8, 27). Diog. v. 46, assigns to it eighteen books, v. 48, 16. USENER, Anal. Theophr. 30 sqq., has collated the fragments of it; but the treatise. περί αἰσθήσεως καὶ αἰσθητών (WIM-MER, fr. 1), which Philippson deals with, ὕλη ἀνθρωπίνη (1831). 81 sqq. (cf. USENER, ibid. 27), seems also to have belonged to On the other hand, the supposition that the extract PHILO. Ætern. m. c. 23-27, p. 510 sqq. Mang., is taken from it (USENER, p. 38; BERNAYS, Theophrast. üb. Frömmigk. 46) does drew its accounts of the earlier physicists 1) besides a number of other fragments.² The 'Characters' are only an incomplete extract, with several foreign additions, probably from Theophrastus's treatise upon Ethics.³

The chief feature of the scientific labours of Theophrastus, so far as these are known to us, is the endeavour to complete the compass and define more sharply the contents of Aristotelian doctrine. The fundamental principles of the system suffer no change and are not unfrequently stated in the very words of Aristotle.⁴ Theophrastus, however, exerts himself to develop his doctrine as completely as possible on every side, to increase the number of scientific and ethical

not commend itself; for a dogmatic and polemical discussion with Zeno the Stoic (as ZELLER has shown this to be in HERMES. xi. 422 sqq.) can have formed no part of an historical work, nor does it at all resemble the treatise π , alothorews, either in tone or treatment. In the first book of the φυσική ίστορία THEOPHR. (as is shown in the Abhandl. d. Berl. Akad. 1877, p. 150 sqq.) had given a review of the principles of earlier philosophers, in which he connected his work with the first book of ARIST.'s Metaphysics.

Fuller proof of this fact, which he was the first to perceive, will be found in H. DELS' recent work, Dowographi Græci, as also ibid. p. 473 sq. the fragments of the φυσικαὶ δόξαι.

To those collected in Wimmer must be added chiefly the remainder of the treatise περί εὐσεβείας, which BERNAYS (Theo-

phrast. Schrift über Frömmigheit) cleverly recovered from PORPHYRY'S De Abstinentia. The treatise on indivisible lines was also attributed to him, perhaps rightly. By some even ARIST.'s Politics (see vol. ii. supra. p. 204, n. 2) was referred to Theophrastus. More recent writers have attributed to him the treatises upon colour (SCHNEIDER, iv. 864, who, however, considers them only a portion of a larger work; on the other side see PRANTL, Arist. v. d. Farben, 84 sq.), upon Melissus, Xenophanes &c. (on this see Ph. d. Gr. i. 476 sqq.).

s On this and on the ethical writings of Theophrastus see in-

⁴ As among others, KIRCH-NER, Jahrb. f. Philol. Supplementb. vii. 532 sqq. has shown in respect of the botanical works.

observations, to apply the Aristotelian rules to particular cases, especially to those which had been overlooked by Aristotle, to correct the vagueness of particular conceptions and to set them in a clear light.\(^1\) His startingpoint is experience. As Aristotle in all his investigations had taken his stand upon the firm ground of fact and had established even the most universal conceptions upon the basis of a comprehensive induction, Theophrastus also is convinced that we must begin with observation in order to attain to true conceptions. Theories must coincide with the data of experience, and they will do so if we start with the consideration of the individual; 2 perception furnishes the material which thought may either straightway apply to its own ends or by solving the difficulties which experience brings to light may utilise for future discoveries.3 Natural science,

P. Cf. BOETH. De Interpr. p. 292: Theophrastus, ut in aliis solet, quum de similibus rebus tractat, quæ scilicet ab Aristotele ante tractatæ sunt, in libro quoque de affirmatione et negatione iisdem aliquibus verbis utitur, quibus in hoc libro Aristoteles usus est... in omnibus evim, de quibus ipse disputat post magistrum, leviter ea tangit, quæ ab Aristotele dicta ante cognovit, alias vero diligentius res non ab Aristotele tractatas exsequitur.

² Caus. Pl. i. 1, 1: εὐθὸ γὰρ χρὴ συμφωνεῖσθαι τοὺς λόγους τοῖς εὐρημένοις. 17, 6: ἐκ δὲ τῶν καθέκαστα θεωροῦσι σύμφωνος ὁ λόγος τῶν γιγνομένων. ii. 3, 5: περὶ δὲ τῶν ἐν τοῖς καθέκαστα μᾶλλον εὐποροῦμεν ἡ γὰρ αἴσθησις δίδωσιν ἀρχάς κ. τ. λ.

³ Fr. 12 (Metaph.), 19: τὸ δὲ

δυ δτι πολλαχώς φανερόν, ή γάρ αίσθησις καὶ τὰς διαφοράς θεωρεί και τὰς αἰτίας ζητεῖ. τάχα δ' ἀληθέστερον εἰπεῖν ὡς ὑποβάλλει τη διανοία, τὰ μέν ἁπλῶς ζητοῦσα τὰ δ' ἀπορίαν ἐργαζομένη, δι' ñs καν μη δύνηται προβαίνειν, δμως έμφαίνεταί τι φως έν τῷ μή φωτί ζητούντων ἐπὶ πλέον. Ibid. 25: μέχρι μὲν οὖν τινὸς δυνάμεθα δι' αίτίου θεωρείν, άρχὰς ἀπό τῶν αίσθήσεων λαμβάνοντες. CLEMENS. Strom. ii. 362, D; Θεόφρ. δὲ τὴν αίσθησιν άρχην είναι πίστεώς φησιν. άπο γάρ ταύτης αι άρχαι προς τον λόγον τον ἐν ἡμιν καὶ τὴν διάνοιαν έκτείνονται. SEXT. Math. vii. 217: Aristotle and Theophrastus have two criteria, αἴσθησιν μὲν τῶν αἰσθητῶν, νόησιν δὲ τῶν νοητων κοινον δε άμφοτέρων, ως έλεγεν δ Θεόφρ., τὸ ἐναργές.

moreover, must rest upon perception because it has to do wholly with corporeal substance.1 Theophrastus accordingly keeps this principle steadily in view. Where universal laws fail to explain particular facts, he does not hesitate to refer us back to experience; 2 where no complete certainty is possible he will content himself, like Plato and Aristotle, with mere probability; 3 where more exact proofs fail, he, like his master, brings analogy to his aid,4 but he warns us at the same time not to carry analogy too far or to mistake the peculiar characteristics of phenomena,⁵ just as Aristotle had laid down as a fundamental axiom that everything must be explained upon principles peculiar to itself.6 We cannot say, in truth, that Theophrastus has entirely renounced the comprehensive and universal points of view: but his own inclinations and scientific researches

τοὺς ἀφορισμούς.

³ SIMPL. Phys. 5, a, m: natural science cannot arrive at the complete certainty of knowledge; άλλ' οὐκ ἀτιμαστέον διὰ τοῦτο φυσιολογίαν· ἀλλ' ἀρκεῖσθαι χρη τῷ κατὰ την ημετέραν χρησιν καλ δύναμιν, ώς καλ Θεοφράστω δοκεί. Cf. also *supra*, vol. i. p. 167 sq.
⁴ See *Caus. Pl.* iv. 4, 9-11;

Hist. i. 1, 10 sq.

5 Hist. i. 1, 4: we must beware of comparing plants with animals in every respect. ωστε ταῦτα μὲν οὕτως ὑποληπτέον οὐ μόνον είς τὰ νῦν ἀλλὰ καὶ τῶν μελλόντων χάριν . δσα γὰρ μὴ οξόν τε ἀφομοιοῦν περίεργον τὸ γλίχεσθαι πάντως, Ίνα μη καλ την οίκε αν ἀποβάλλωμεν θεωρίαν,

6 See supra, vol. i. p. 249, n.

¹ Fr. 18: ἐπεὶ δὲ οὐκ ἄνευ μὲν κινήσεως οὐδὲ περί ένδς λεκτέον, πάντα γὰρ ἐν κινήσει τὰ τῆς φύσεως, ἄνευ δὲ ἀλλοιωτικῆς καὶ παθητικής ούχ ύπέρ των περί τὸ μέσον, εἰς ταῦτά τε καὶ περὶ τούτων λέγοντας οὐχ οἶόν τε καταλιπεῖν την αίσθησιν, άλλ' άπο ταύτης άρχομένους πειρασθαι χρη θεωρείν, ή τὰ φαινόμενα λαμβάνοντας καθ' έαυτά, ή ἀπὸ τούτων, εἴ τινες ἄρα κυριώτεραι καλ πρότεραι τούτων ἀρχαί.

² Caus. Pl. ii. 4, 8; ἀλλ' ἐν τοίς καθέκαστα τὸ ἀκριβès μᾶλλον ίσως αἰσθητικής δείται συνέσεως, λόγω δε οὐκ εὐμαρες ἀφορίσαι. Cf. Hist. i. 3, 5. The differences between botanical species are somewhat vague; διὰ δἡ ταῦτα ώσπερ λέγομεν οὐκ ἀκριβολογητέον τῷ ὅρφ ἀλλὰ τῷ τύπφ ληπτέον

have an unmistakable bias in the direction of particulars rather than fundamental principles.

This is the method which Theophrastus and, following him, Eudemus have adopted in their treatment of logic. While holding fast by Aristotelian principles, they have permitted themselves many divergences in detail. In discussing the Conception, for instance, Theophrastus refused to admit that all contraries belong to the same genus. The doctrine of the Judgment, again, to which both Eudemus and he devoted separate treatises, received at their hands various additions, which, however, so far as we know, were of no great importance. They introduced a slight change in the

¹ Cf. PRANTL, Gesch. der Log. i. 346 sqq., who, however, seems to undervalue the contributions of Theophrastus and Eudemus to Logic.

² Čf. fr. 15 (SIMPL. Categ. 105, a'; Schol. in Ar. 89, a, 15). ALEX. on Metaph. 1018, a, 25; also supra, vol. i. p. 224, n. 3.

3 Theophrastus in the treatises περl καταράσεως καl ἀποφάσεως (Diog. 44, 46; Alex. in Anal. Pr. 5, a, m, 21, b, m, 124, a, 128; Metaph. 653, b, 15; Galen, Libr. Propr. 11, xix. 42, K; Boeth. Aā Arist. de Interpr. 284, 286, 291, 327, (Bâle); Schol. in Ar. 97, a, 38, 99, b, 36; Prantl, 350, 4), π. λέξεως (Diog. 47; Dionys. Hal. Comp. Verb. p. 212, Schäf.), π. τῶν τοῦ λόγου στοιχείων (as Prantl, 353, 23, in Simpl. Categ. 3, β, Bâle, rightly emends). As to Eudemus, π. λέξεως, see Alex. Anal. Pr. 6, b, in Metaph. 566, b, 15, Br.; Anon. Schol. in

Arist. 146, a, 24; GALEN, ibid. On their other logical treatises cf. supra, vol. i. p. 64, n. 1. PBANTL, p. 350, and Eth. Eud. i. 6 fin. ii. 6, 1222, b, 37, c. 10, 1227, a, 10.

⁴ Theophrastus distinguishes in his treatise π. καταφάσεως between different meanings of πρότασις (ALEX. Anal. Pr. 5, a, m; ibid. 124, a; Top. 83, a, 189, a. Similar distinctions are quoted from the same treatise and that π. τοῦ Πολλαχῶς (which was probably on the model of Aristotle's—see sup. vol. i. p. 76 sq.); Eudemus noticed the predicative force of the verb 'to be'in existential propositions (Anon. Schol. in Arist. 146, a, 24, and for another remark of Eudemus on the verb 'to be' see ALEX. Anal. Pr. 6, b, m). Theophrastus called particular propositions indeterminate (see sup. vol. i. p. 233, n. 1, and BOETH. De Interpr. 340, m; Schol. in WAITZ, Ar. Org. i. 40; PRANTL, 356, 28), and Aristotle's theory of the Conversion of Propositions, with which Aristotle's treatment of the Syllogism begins, by substituting a direct, in place of Aristotle's indirect, proof of the simple converse of universal negative propositions. As they further approached the question of the Modality of Judgments from a different side, they con-

indeterminate ἐκ μεταθέσεως (see supra, vol. i. p. 232, u. 2; Stephanus and Cod. Laur. in WAITZ, ibid. 41 sq; and on his reasons for doing so, PRANTL, 357). He distinguished in particular negative propositions between 'not all' and 'some not' (Schol. in Ar. 145, a, 30). In regard to the modality of judgments he made a distinction between simple necessity and necessity resulting from particular circumstances (ALEX. An. P. 12, b, u.). He elucidated contradictory opposition, which he declared in general to be indemonstrable (ALEX. on Metaph. 1006, a, 11, p. 653, b, 15, Br.), with the remark that contradictory propositions are absolutely exclusive of one another only when their meaning is fixed and definite (Schol. Ambros. in WAITZ, ibid. 40), a caution against sophistical objections to which PRANTL, p. 356, unnecessarily takes exception.

1 In Arist. Ânal. Pr. i. 2, 25, a, 15, it stands: εὶ μηδενὶ τῶν B τὸ Α ὁπάρχει, οὐδὲ τῶν Α οὐδενὶ ὑπάρξει τὸ Β. εἰ γὰρ τινι, οἷον τῷ Γ, οὐκ ἀληθὲ ἔσται τὸ μηδενὶ τῶν B τὸ Α ὑπάρχειν τὸ γὰρ Γ τῶν B τἱ ἐστιν. Theophrastus and Eudemus put it more simply: 'if no B is A, A is separate from all B, B is therefore separate from all A, and therefore no A is B' (ALEX. An. Pri. 11, u, m. 12,

a.; PHILOP. An. Pr. xiii. b; Schol. in Ar. 148, b, 46; cf. the scholium which PRANTL, 364, 45, gives from Minas). PRANTL criticises this 'convenient' proof: ZELLER, on the contrary, considers it the right one, and says that he cannot find for that of Aristotle 'reasons founded on the very nature of genus and species' as Prantl professes to do.

2 Aristotle had taken the conceptions of possibility and necessity, as has been remarked (see sup. vol. i. p. 234 sq.) to express a quality of things, not of our knowledge of things. By the possible he does not understand that which we have no reason to deny, nor by the necessary that which we are forced to accept, but by the former that which by nature may equally be or not be, by the latter that which by its nature must be. Theophrastus and Eudemus, indeed, have left us no general statement on this subject (even in the passage quoted by PRANTL, 362, 41, from ALEX. Anal. Pr. 51, a, only the words 'τρίτον τὸ ὑπάρχον [sc. ἀναγκαῖόν ἐστιν] · δτε γὰρ ὑπάρχει τότε οὺχ οἶόν $\tau \in \mu \eta$ δπάρχειν,' seem to belong to THEO.'S Prior Analytics, while the rest belong to Alexander himself); but it is obvious from their departures from Aristotle, which we are about to mention, that they take possibility sequently denied what Aristotle had affirmed, that every assertion of possibility implies the opposite possibility, and they maintained, against his denial, the convertibility of universal negative judgments of possibility; while with regard to conclusions whose premises are of different modality, they held firmly by the principle that the conclusion follows the weaker premise.2 We further know that Theophrastus added to the four Modes which Aristotle had assigned to the first Figure five new ones, obtained by the conversion of the conclusions or the premises, a development in which we certainly fail to see any advantage,3 and it is possible that he treated the two other Figures in the same way,4 asserting at the same time, in opposition to Aristotle, that these also give perfect conclusions.5 He also

and necessity only in the formal logical sense.

See sup. vol. i. p. 234 sq. and ALEX, Anal. Pr. 14, a, m.; Anon. Schol. in Ar. 150, a, 8. The proofs of the two Peripatetics are given in a scholium which PRANTL, 364, 45, prints from MINAS's notes on Galen's Είσαγωγή διαλεκτική, p. 100. The same writer's quotation, 362, 41, from BOETH. Interpr. 428, upon Theophrastus relates merely to an unimportant explanation. Similarly a modification of an Aristotelian argument mentioned by ALEX. Ana?. Pr. 42, b, n. is, as PRANTL, p. 370, also remarks, insignificant.

² From an apodeictic and a categorical premise follows, they said, a categorical; from a categorical and hypothetical, a hypothetical; from an apodeictic and hypothetical also a hypothetical conclusion (see sup. vol. i. p. 234 sq. and on the third case, PHILOP. Anal. Pr. li. a; Schol. in Arist. 166, a, 12; on an argument of Theophrastus relating to this, ALEX. Anal. Pr. 82, b.).

³ For details see ALEX. Anal. Pr. 22, b. 34, b.-35, a; Anon. Schol. in Ar. 188, a, 4, and PRANTL'S citations, 365, 46, from APUL. De Interpr. (Dogm. Plat. iii.), 273 sq. 280, Oud.; HOETH. Syll. Cat. 594 sq; PHILOP. An. Pr. xxi. b (Schol. 152, b, 15); cf. also UEBERWEG, Logik, 282 sqq.

4 As PRANTL, 368 sq., conjectures from ALEX. Anal. Pr. 35,

Cf. following note.

5 Schol. in WAITZ, Arist. Org. i. 45: δ δè Βοηθός . . . έναντίως τῷ 'Αριστοτέλει περί τούτου έδόξασε . . . καὶ ἀπέδειξεν, ὅτι πάντες οἱ ἐν δευτέρφ καὶ τρίτφ σχήματι τέλειοί είσιν (which Aristotle denies, see supra, vol. i. p. 240, n. 4). . . . φαίνεται δὲ καὶ Θεό-

changed the order of several of the Modes.1 It is more important, however, to note that Theophrastus and Eudemus introduced into logic the theory of Hypothetical and Disjunctive Syllogisms.2 Both of these they embraced under the name Hypothetical, pointing out that in the Disjunctive also that which is undetermined at first is afterwards determined by the addition of a second clause,3 They distinguished further two kinds of hypothetical conclusions: those which, consisting of purely hypothetical propositions, only assign the conditions under which something is or is not the case,4

φραστος . . την έναντίαν αὐτῷ (Aristotle) περί τούτου δόξαν έχων.

In the third figure he placed the fourth of Aristotle's modes as simpler before the third, and the sixth before the fifth (Anon. Schol. in Ar. 155, b, 8; PHILOP. ibid. 34, 156, a, 11), adding a seventh mode which he obtained by dividing the first (APUL. ibid.

p. 276).

² As ALEX. An. Pr. 131, b.; PHILOP. An. Pr. lx. a; Śchol. in Ar. 169, b, 25 sqq., expressly state. According to BOETH. Syll. Hypoth. 606 (in PRANTL, 379, 59), Eudemus treated this subject more fully than Theophrastus.--Much less important are the citations from Theophrastus's discussions upon syllogisms κατά πρόσληψιν given by ALEX. An. Pr. 128, a., cf. 88, a, m.; PHILOP. cii. a; Schol. in Ar. 189, b, 12; Anon. ibid. 1. 43, 190, a, 18, cf. Prantl, 376 sq. These are syllogisms formed of propositions such as those mentioned by Aristotle, Anal. Pr. ii. 5, 58, α, 29, b, 10: δ τὸ A μηδενί τὸ B παντί ὑπάρχει &c. According to

ALEX. 128, a, Schol. 190, a, 1, however, Theophrastus expressly said that these differ from ordinary categorical propositions only in form; that he nevertheless entered with such minuteness into the discussion of them is only one of the many proofs of the frequently misspent industry with which he traversed every detail.

³ Cf. Philop. An. Pr. lx. b; Schol. in Ar. 170, a, 30 sqq.; ALEX. An. Pr. 109, b, m. That both these writers in the passages named follow the Peripatetic view, as presented by Theophrastus and Eudemus, is obvious from the whole context.

4 Οἱ τίνος ὄντος ἡ μὴ ὄντος τι οὐκ ἔστιν ή τί ἔστι δεικνύντες ('if A is, B is—if B is, C is—if A is. C is '), which are called by Theophrastus διὰ τριῶν ὑποθετικοὶ or δι' ὅλων ὑποθετικοὶ, as also on account of the similarity of the three propositions κατ' ἀναλογίαν. Theophrastus distinguished three forms of these syllogisms corresponding to the three Aristote-lian figures of the categorical

and those which prove that something is or is not.¹ Of the latter a further division is made into those with a hypothetical and those with a disjunctive form,² both of which classes, however, agree in this—that what is stated in the major premise as possible is either affirmed or denied in the minor ³ Under the hypothetical are finally classed Comparative,⁴ or, as the Peripatetics called them, Qualitative Syllogisms.⁵

syllogism, except that he transposed the order of the second and third. ALEX. Anal. Pr. 109, b, m. 110, a.; cf. 88, b.; PHILOP. ibid. 170, a, 13 sqq. 179, a, 13 sqq. 189, a, 38.

¹ PHILOP. Schol. in Ar. 170, a, 14,30 sqq. Cf. ALEX. An. Pr. 88, b.

² PHILOP, ibid.: τῶν τὸ εἶναι η μη είναι κατασκευαζόντων ύποθετικών οἱ μὲν ἀκολουθίαν κατασκευάζουσιν οί δὲ διάζευξιν &c. the first, two forms are next enumerated: those which by affirming the antecedent affirm the consequent, and those which by denying the consequent deny the antecedent ('If A is, B is. But A is,' &c.; and: 'If A is, B is. But B is not,' &c.). Of the second by a more complicated classification three forms: (1) 'A is not at the same time B and C and D. Therefore it is But it is B. neither C nor D.' (2) 'A is either B or C. But it is B. Therefore it is not C.' (3) 'A is either B or C. But it is not B. Therefore it is C.

³ This categorical minor premise following on a conditional or disjunctive major, for which the Stoics afterwards invented the name πρόσληψις, the older Peripatetics (οἱ ἀρχαῖοι, οἱ περὶ 'Αριστοτέλην, cf. PRANTL, 385, 68), following ARIST. (Anal Pr. i. 23, 41, a, 30; cf. WAITZ, in

loco; c. 29, 45, b, 15), called μετάληψις (ALEX. An. Pr. 88, a, o. 109, a, m.; PHILOP. Schol. in Ar. 169, b, 47, 178, b, 6). If this minor itself receives proof from a categorical syllogism we have the so-called 'mixed syllogism' (ALEX. 87, b, m. sq.). The conditional sentence is called συνημμένον, the antecedent being the ἡγούμενον, the consequent the έπόμενον (Philop. Schol. in Ar. 169, b, 40). Theophrastus, however, remarked the difference here between those conditional sentences in which the condition is introduced problematically by an Ei and those in which it is introduced affirmatively by an 'Eπεl (SIMPL. De Cœlo, Schol. 509, a, 3). He remarked also (ALEX. Anal. Pr. 131, b. Ald.; cf. PRANTL, 378, 57) that the μετάληψις again is either a mere hypothesis, or immediately certain, or demonstrated either inductively or deductively.

⁴ Ol ἀπὸ τοῦ μᾶλλον καὶ τοῦ δμοίου καὶ τοῦ δτοίου καὶ τοῦ ἡττον, e.g.: 'if the less precious is a good, so also is the more precious; but wealth, which is less precious than health, is a good, therefore health is so also.' Upon this see ALEX. An, Pr. 88, b, m. 109, a.—b.; PHILOP. An. Pr. lxiv. b; PRANTL, 389 sqq. ⁵ Κατὰ ποιότητα, probably fol-

No contributions of any importance to the second main division of the Analytics—the doctrine of Demonstration—have come down to us from Theophrastus or Eudemus, and we may therefore assume that neither of them differed in any important point from the conclusions of Aristotle on this subject. The same is in substance true of the Topics, to which Theophrastus had devoted several treatises. It cannot be proved that he interpreted the subject-matter of the science differently from Aristotle; nor do the isolated utterances on this head which have come to us from Theophrastus and Eudemus go beyond a few formal extensions of Aristotelian doctrines.

lowing ARIST. An. Pr. i. 29, 45, b, 16—where, however, this expression is not further explained.

¹ Even PRANTL (p. 392 sq.) has failed to find more than two statements referring to this subject: one in PHILOP. An. Post. 17, b.; Schol. in Ar. 205, a, 46, distinguishing between \$ αὐτὸ and καθ' αὐτό, the other the remark in the anonymous scholium, ibid. 240, a, 47, that definition is embraced under demonstration. Equally unimportant are the remarks on καθ' αὐτὸ in ALEX. Qu. Nat. i. 26, p. 82, Speng.; on definition in BOETH. Interpr. ii. 318, Schol. 110, a, 34: on definition and demonstration in Eustrat. in Libr. ii.; Anal. Post. 11, a, o.; Schol. 242, a, 17; cf. ibid. 240, a, 47: on the impossibility of proving contradictory propositions in ALEX. on Metaph. 1006, a, 14; Syrian. in Metaph. 872, b, 11 (from the treatise π. καταφάσεως): and the definition of ἀξίωμα in THEMIST. Anal. Post. 2, a; Schol. 199, b, 46.

363

² Cf. Prantl, 350 sq. nn. 11-

³ PRANTL, p. 352, infers it from the statement (AMMON. De Interpr. 53, a.; Schol. in Ar. 108, b, 27; Anon. ibid. 94, a, 16) that Theophrastus distinguished a twofold relation, one to the fact in regard to which the question is one of truth or falsehood, the other to the hearers; but the latter is here assigned not to dialectic but to poetry and rhetoric. The citation from the Analytics of EUDEMUS in ALEX. Top. 70, is also quite Aristotelian.

⁴ Theophrastus distinguished between τόπος and παράγγελμα, understanding by the latter a rule which is general and indefinite, by the former one that is definite (ALEX. Top. 72; cf. 5, m. 68); of the topical heads, which Aristotle had enumerated (γένος and διαφορὰ, δρος, Τδίον,

The conclusion to which we are so far led, namely, that Theophrastus is by no means inclined blindly to accept the Aristotelian doctrines, becomes still more obvious from the fragment on Metaphysics. The difficulties $(a\pi o \rho i a \iota)$ suggested in this fragment are directed in great part to Aristotelian assumptions, but we are left wholly in the dark as to whether and in what way the author found the solution of them. Starting from the distinction between First Philosophy and Physics, Theophrastus here asks how their respective objects, the supersensible and the sensible, are related to one another; and after proving that there must be some common bond of union between them and that the supersensible must involve the sensible, he goes on to examine how this is possible.² The principles of Mathematics (to which Speusippus had assigned the highest place) are insufficient for the solution of the problem; we require a higher principle, and this we can find only in God.³ God, therefore, must be the cause of motion in

συμβεβηκὸς, ταὐτὸν) he placed ταὐτὸν, as well as διαφορὰ, under γένος (ibid. 25), and all others except συμβεβηκὸς under δρος (ibid. 31—this is all that we are told, but PRANTL, p. 395, seems to be wrong in his interpretation, cf. BRANDIS, iii. 279). He asserted—to pass over some still more unimportant remarks which are quoted by ALEX. on Metaph. 1021, a, 31, and Top. 15 (Schol. 277, b, 32)—that opposites do not fall under one and the same generic conception (see 8νη. vol. ii. 358, n. 2). Theophrastus's divison of γνῶμαι

(GREGOR. COBINTH. ad Hermog. de Meth. vii. 1154, w.), Eudemus's division of questions (ALEX. Top. 38), and his classification of fallacies $\pi a \rho \lambda \tau h \nu \lambda \ell k \nu$ (that is if GALEN. π . τ . $\tau a \rho \lambda \tau$. $\lambda \ell k$. $\tau \phi \phi \iota \omega \mu$. 3. xiv. 589 sqq. follows him), will be found in PRANTL, 397 sq.

¹ Śee supra, vol. ii. p. 354, n. 2.
² § 1 sqq.; § 2 read ἀρχη δὲ, πότερα, &c., 'we begin here with the question whether,' &c.

 9 § 3 sq. according to USENER's emendation (see p. 354, n. 2, supra) of which WIMMER, p. 151, 11, ventured to accept even old $\tau\epsilon$

the world. He produces that motion, however, not in virtue of any movement in himself, but of a causality more accordant with his nature: he is the object of desire to all the lower creation, and this alone is the cause of the endless movement of the heavens. Satisfactory though this view undoubtedly seemed in many respects, it was not without its difficulties. If there be only one moving principle, why have not all the spheres the same movement? If there are several, how can we explain the harmony of their movements? But a satisfactory reason must also be assigned for the multiplicity of the spheres, and, in fine, everything must be explained as the outcome of design. Why, moreover, should this natural desire of the spheres be directed to motion rather than to rest? And does not desire presuppose a soul, and therefore motion? 2 Why do not things under the moon as well

for ωστε; § 4 we might propose to read: ἐν ὁλίγοις εἶναικαι πρώτοις, εἶ μὴ ἄρα και ἐν τῷ πρώτφ.

1 § 6: μέχρι μὲν δη τούτων οξον άρτιος δ λόγος, άρχην τε ποιών μίαν πάντων, και την ένέργειαν και την ούσίαν αποδιδούς, έτι δε μη διαιρετόν μηδέ ποσόν τι λέγων, άλλ' άπλως έξαίρων είς κρείττω τινά μερίδα και θειοτέραν. That everything has a natural desire for the good is also stated by Theoph. in the fr. (from περί πλούτου) Schol. in Plat. Legg. p. 449, 8 Bekk.: εὶ ζωὴν εἶχεν δ πλουτος, πρός μόνους αν απηλθε τοὺς ἀγαθούς. ἕκαστον γὰρ τοῦ οἰκείου ἐφίεται ἀγαθοῦ, for this alone accords with its nature, πάντα δὲ τῆς κατὰ φύσιν ὀρέγεται διαθέσεως.

² § 7 sq. (where l. 12 W

for ἀνήνυτον we should perhaps " read ἄριστον). In § 8 the remark relating to the Platonists (τί οὖν αμα τῆ μιμήσει, &c.) is hardly intelligible, probably on account of the corruption of the text. The sense ascribed to it by Brandis, iii. 328 sq. (q.v.), seems be neither contained in the text nor admissible in itself. In the following words (εὶ δη έφεσις, άλλως τε καί του άρίστου. μετὰ ψυχης, εί μή τις λέγοι καθ' όμοιότητα και διαφοράν, ξμψυχ' αν είη τὰ κινόυμενα) USENER, p. 267, in place of διαφοράν happily reads μεταφοράν: 'unless the expression έφεσιs is used by a mere analogy and improperly.' Even the fragment quoted in the previous note speaks only of living things.

as things above it desire the best? And how is it that in the heavenly sphere this desire produces nothing higher than rotation? For the movements of the soul and the reason are of a higher order than this. To this, however, it might be replied that all things cannot attain to like perfection. Finally we might ask whether motion and desire are essential or merely accidental attributes of the heavens.1 Touching further on the necessity of deducing not only some but all reality from first principles,2 we find that even in reference to these first principles themselves many new questions are suggested. Are they formless and material, or endowed with form, or both? And if the first of these assumptions is obviously inadmissible, there is also a difficulty in attributing design to everything however insignificant. We should therefore have to determine how far order extends in the world and why it ceases at certain points.3 Again, what are we to say of rest? Has it, like motion, to be deduced as something real from our first principles, or does positive reality belong only to energy-among sensible objects only to motion-and is rest only a cessation of motion? 4 How, again, are we to describe the relation of Form and Matter? Is matter

¹ § 9-11. In § 10 instead of συμβαίνει USENER reads λαμβάνει; it would be better to read: συμβαίνει γὰρ εἶναι κ. συμβ.

^{2 § 11-13} where, however, p. 153, W. n. we must punctuate thus: από δ' οῦν ταύτης ἢ τούτων τῶν αρχῶν ἀξιώσειεν ἄν τις, τάχα δὲ καὶ ἀπό τῶν ἄλλων ἄρ', ἄν τις τιθῆται, τὰ ἐφεξῆς εὐθὺς ἀποδιδόναι καὶ μὴ μέχρι του προελθύντα παύεσθαι—as

the Platonists are accused in the sequel of doing.

⁸ § 14 sqq.; § 15 n.—where instead of αὐτὸ we ought to read αὖτό.

⁴ This apparently is the sense of the first half of § 16: what follows, however, as it stands, is, as Brandls, p. 332, says, unintelligible.

non-existent although endowed with potential reality. or is it an existence although still void of any definite form? 1 Why is the whole universe divided into contraries so that there is nothing without its opposite? Why does the worse far exceed in quantity the better? 2 And since on account of this diversity in things knowledge also is of different kinds, the question rises what method we are to adopt in each case and how we are to define the nature and the kinds of knowledge.3 To assign causes to everything is impossible, for we cannot go on ad infinitum either in the sensible or the supersensible world without renouncing the possibility of knowledge; but we can go a little way in that direction in advancing from the sensible to the supersensible. When, however, we reach ultimate grounds of reality we can go no further, either because these have themselves no cause or because our eyes are too weak to penetrate into the brightest light.4 But if it be thought that the mind knows these by immediate contact and therefore infallibly, 5 yet it is not easy, however necessary, to say what it is of which we make this assertion and which is the object of this immediate knowledge.6 Granted.

¹ § 17. Instead of δυνάμει δ' εν (Br.) or δυνάμει μεν δν (W.) we ought probably to read δυνάμει δ' δν. ² § 18.

³ §§ 19-20. We cannot here enter into particulars; see, however, BRANDIS, iii. 334 sq. USENEE, *ibid.* p. 269 sq. places c. 8 Br. (§§ 19-27 W.) between cc. 3 and 4 Br. (§§ 13 and 14 W.)

⁴ The latter is a deviation from Aristotle's doctrine (on which cf. supra, vol. i. p. 205, n. 2,

and p. 246 sqq.) in the same direction as the statement Μεταρλ. ii. (a) 1, 993, b, 9: ὅσπερ γὰρ καὶ τὰ τῶν νυκπερίδων όμματα πρὸς τὸ φέγγος ἔχει τὸ μεθ' ἡμέραν, οὕτω καὶ τῆς ἡμετέρας ψυχῆς ὁ νοῦς πρὸς τὰ τῆ φύσει φανερώτατα πάντων.

⁵ For Aristotle's view see *sup*. vol. i. p. 197, n. 4.

⁶ So we should understand the words § 26: χαλεπή δὲ καὶ εἰς αὐτὸ τοῦθ' ἡ σύνεσις καὶ ἡ πίστις ἐγ

further, that the world and the structure of the heavens is eternal 1 and that we cannot, therefore, point to the causes of its origin, the problem yet remains of assigning the moving causes and the final aim of the constitution of the world, and of explaining individual forms of existence, down to animals and plants. Astronomy as such is inadequate to meet the former of those demands; since motion is just as essential to the heavens as life is to living creatures, we must seek a deeper origin for it in the essence and ultimate cause of the heavens themselves.² Upon the question of design in the world it is not always clear, apart from other considerations,3 whether a thing exists for a definite end or only in consequence of a chance coincidence or natural necessity; 4 and even assuming design in the world, we are yet unable to prove its presence equally in every case, but must admit that there is much

τίνι ποιητέον τον δρον. BRANDIS, p. 336, explains: 'where we are to place a limit on inquiry,' which the text does not seem to permit. For the rest see §§ 24 sq.

sq.

1 § 26 fin. must be read:
πέφυκεν δσοι δὲ τὸν οὐρανὸν ἀῖδιον ὑπολαμβάνουσιν ἔτι δὲ, &c.
SPENGEL (see BRANDIS, p. 337)
had already changed the unmeaning ἡμέρων into ἡ μερῶν.

² This at any rate seems to be the meaning of § 27 sq. ($\epsilon i \ o \delta \nu$

αστρολογία, &c.)

These are indicated § 28. USENER, Anal. Theophr. 48, here proposes: ἄλλως θ' ὁ ἀφορισμὸς οὐ ράδιος... καὶ δὴ τῷ ἔνια μὴ δοκεῦν, &c. In that case 'πόθεν

τ' ἄρξασθαι χρή' may be suggested instead of (βάδιος ...) πόθεν δ' ἄρξασθαι χρῆν. Otherwise one might, still reading ἄλλως, omit the μάτην which precedes as an explanatory gloss: ὑπὲρ δὲ τοῦ πάνθ' ἔνεκά του καὶ μηθὲν ἄλλως, δ ἀφορισμὸς οἱ ῥάδιος, &c. 'Αφορισμὸς here is equivalent to δρισμὸς, as in the passage from Theophrastus in Simpl. Phys. 94, 2.

⁴ Theophr. gives examples §§ 29 sq. where, however, § 30 instead of τούτων χάριν we must read with USENER (Rhein. Mus. xvi. 278) τοῦ χάριν. In what follows, it seems that the words καὶ ταῦτ', &c. are somewhat out

of order.

that seems to oppose its realisation and even that the amount of this is largely in excess of that which clearly exhibits design—in other words, that 'evil' is largely in excess over 'good.' 1

It is impossible from so mutilated a fragment to obtain any very exact information as to the views of Theophrastus upon the ultimate grounds of reality. We only see from it that he was not blind to the difficulties of the Aristotelian doctrine, and that he brought these into prominence especially in connection with the question of the relation between the movens and the motum and with the teleological view of nature. We must nevertheless admit that even in his Metaphysics he has kept closely to the main lines of the Master's doctrine, as is obvious from his own express statements on several important heads,² and from the general fact that we

1 §§ 28-34. In § 31 read: εἰδὲμὴ τοῦθ' [or ταῦθ'] ἔνεκά του καί είς το άριστον, ληπτέον, and immediately after: καὶ ἀπλῶs λεγόμενα (Br. and W. λέγομεν &) καὶ καθ' ἔκαστον. In what follows ἐπὶ τῶν ζώων will then correspond to καθ' ἕκαστον. In § 32 we ought perhaps to read: ἀκαριαῖον τὸ βέλτιον και το είναι πολυ $\delta \epsilon \pi \lambda \hat{\eta} \theta os$ (without $\hat{\eta}$ or $\epsilon l \nu a \iota$) $\tau \delta$ κακόν. In what follows the text may have originally been: οὐκ ἐν αοριστία δε μόνον και οίον ύλης είδει, καθάπερ τὰ τῆς φύσεως (in the world of men—for the allusion must be to this-there is not only, as in nature, indeterminateness and materiality, but also evil). After this, however, there seems to be a gap; and of the missing words αμαθεστάτου alone has survived. Similarly in the

following passage to the protasis εὶ γὰρ.—ἐκατέρωθεν (Ph, d, Gr, i. 852, 3, where, however USENER'S conjecture, ibid. 280, τὰ δ' ἀθρόα καλ έκατέρωθεν ought to have been mentioned) an apodosis is needed: this (the rarity of goodness) is even truer of Man. Of the next passage we have only a fragment in the words τὰ μὲν οὖν $-\delta \nu \tau \alpha$. The remainder is probably complete or nearly complete; the discussion, however, then breaks suddenly off and we are left without means of conjecturing its further course. In § 33 Usener's conjecture (ibid.) έπιμιμεῖσθαι τὸ θεῖον ἄπαντα (for ἐπιμ. γε θέλειν ἄπ.) has much to support it.

² Besides the theological doctrines hereafter to be discussed we may note the distinc-

nowhere hear of any deviations from it. Even what little has come down to us of Theophrastus's theological views harmonises in every respect with the doctrines of Aristotle. It is indeed urged against him that he declares God at one time to be Spirit, at another Heaven and the Stars; 1 but the same objection is urged against Aristotle, 2 whose view we must have wholly misunderstood if we do not find an easy explanation of it in the fact that while he identifies God

tion between form and matter (Metaph. 17, THEMIST. De An. 91, a, m) with all that it involves, and the Aristotelian teleology. The latter Theophr. expresses in Aristotelian phraseology, Caus. Pl. i. 1, 1 (cf. ii. 1, 1): η γὰρ φύσις οὐδὲν ποιεί μάτην ήκιστα δὲ έν τοίς πρώτοις καὶ κυριωτάτοις. Ibid. i. 16, 11 (where moreover we must read ' η δ ' in place of ή δ'): ἀεὶ πρὸς τὸ βέλτιστον δρμά [ή φύσιs]. Cf. iv. 4, 2; 1, 2. Art, again, is partly an imitation (Caus. ii. 18, 2), partly a support and completion (ibid. ii. 16, 5, i. 16, 10 sq. v. 1, 1) of the designs of nature; it differs, however (Caus. i. 16, 10, cf. sup. vol. i. p. 418, n. 3), from nature in that the latter operates from within outwards, and therefore spontaneously (ἐκ τῶν αὐτομάτων), while it works from without by force, and therefore only piecemeal (Caus. i. 12,4); hence it is that art produces much that is unnatural (ibid. i. 16, 11, v. 1, 1 sq.). Even this is not without a purpose, but it serves not the original design of nature but certain ends of man (cf. v. 1. 1): these two, however, do not coincide and may even con-

tradict one another (Caus. i. 16, 1; 21, 1 sq. iv. 4, 1-Theophr. here distinguishes in reference to fruits and their ripeness την τελειότητα την τε πρός ήμας καί την πρός γένεσιν. ή μεν γαρ πρός τροφην ή δε πρός δύναμιν τοῦ γεννάν). Nevertheless even the unnatural can by habit change its nature (Caus. ii. 5, 5, iii. 8, 4, iv. 11, 5, 7); and on the other hand many vegetables and animals are, Theophr. believes, entrusted by nature herself to the care of man, whereby only they can reach perfection, and just herein consists the difference between wild and tame (Caus. i. 16, 23) which, as we shall find hereafter, he regards as not merely an artificial but a natural distinction.

1 The Epicurean in Cic. N. D.
i. 13, 35: nec vero Theophrasti
inconstantia ferenda est; modo
enim menti divinæ tribuit principatum, modo cælo, tum autem
signis sideribusque cælestibus.
CLEMENS, Protrept. c. 5, 44, B:
Θεόφρ. . . . πῆ μὲν οὐρανὸν πῆ
δὲ πνεῦμα τὸν θεὸν ὑπονοεῖ.

² Cic. *ibid.* § 33, cf. Krische, Forsch. 276 sqq.

in the highest sense with infinite spirit alone, he yet conceives of the motive forces in the stellar spheres, and especially in the highest of them, as eternal and divine beings. Theophrastus holds this view also. To him also God in an absolute sense is pure reason, the single cause which co-ordinates all reality, and which, itself unmoved, produces motion in everything else, since everything else desires it. In proof of this assumption Theophrastus had appealed, it appears, like Aristotle, to the universality of religious beliefs. He also described its universal operation as Providence, without, however, distinguishing this divine causality from the ordinary course of nature, and he demanded of man that

1 Metaph. § 16: ἔστι δὲ [τὸ κινοῦν ἔτερον καὶ ὁ κινεῖ] ἄν τις ἐπ' αὐτὸν ἄγῃ τὸν νοῦν καὶ τὸν θεόν.

² Ibid. § 4 sq. (see supra), where inter alia: θεία γὰρ ἡ πάντων ἀρχὴ δι' ἦs ἄπαντα καὶ ἔστι καὶ διαμένει . . . ἐπεὶ δ' ἀκίνητος καθ' αὐτὴν, φανερὸν ὡς οὐκ ὰν ἔτη τῷ κινεῖσθαι τοῖς τῆς φύσεως αἰτία, ἀλλὰ λοιπὸν ἄλλῃ τινὶ δυνάμει κρείττονι καὶ προτέρα, τοιαύτη δ' ἡ τοῦ ὀρεκτοῦ Φύσις, ἀφ' ἡς ἡ κυκλικὴ [sc. κίνησις, which USENER iðid. p. 263 wishes to supply] ἡ συνεχὴς καὶ ἄπαυστος.

² On which cf. sup. vol. i. p. 390. ⁴ We may at least infer this from the fact that in PORPH. De Abst. ii. 7 sq. (see also BERNAYS, Theophr. üb. Frömm. 56 sq.) he treats the neglect of all worship as an exceptional outrage, on account of which the Thracian Thoans were destroyed by the gods; probably the same people of whom SIMPL in Epict. Enchir. 38. iv. 357 Schweigh. says:

πάντες γὰρ ἄνθρωποι νομίζουσι εἶναι θεὸν πλὴν ἄκροθοἴτῶν, οὖς ἰστορεῖ Θεόφραστος ἀθέους γενομένους ὑπὸ τῆς γῆς ὰθρόως καταποθῆναι.

⁵ Minuc. Fel. Octav. 19, 11: Theophrastus et Zenon, &c. . . . ad unitatem providentiæ omnes revolvuntur. Cf. Procl. in Tim. 138, e: ἡ γὰρ μόνος ἡ μάλιστα Πλάτων τῆ ἀπό τοῦ προνοοῦντος αἰτίᾳ κατεχρήσατο, ψησίν ὁ Θεόφρ.

* Asisseenfrom Alex. Apar., who says at the end of his treatise De Anima: φανερώτατα δέ Θεόφραστος δείκνυσι ταὐτὸν την τὸ καθ΄ εἰμαρμένην τῷ κατὰ φύσιν ἐν τῷ Καλλισθένει—for εἰμαρμένη indicates the course of the world as divinely appointed, which therefore Theophr. according to his manner identified with the order of nature, as he identified the lot which God has appointed to each individual with a man's natural state. Cf. STOB. Ecl. i. 206: φέρεται δέ πως εἰς τὸ εἰμαρμένην

he should imitate its ceaseless intellectual activity.¹ At the same time he follows Aristotle² in also attributing a soul to the heavens,³ whose higher nature reveals itself in its orderly motion;⁴ and since he is likewise in agreement with the Aristotelian doctrine of the æther as the material of the heavenly structure⁵ and of the eternity of the world,⁶ he could attribute blessedness or divinity not only to the highest Heaven, of which it is expressly asserted,⁵ but also with equal right to the

είναι την έκάστου φύσιν τέν ή τόπον τεττάρων αἰτιῶν ποικίλων, προαιρέσεως φύσεως HEEREN and others], τύχης και ανάγκης. As regards the two last, τύχη means accident, ἀνάγκη constraint (either of other men or of natural necessity) as distinguished from φύσις or nature acting with a purpose .-From the allusions to Theophr.'s Providence views upon Olympiodorus in Phæd. Finckh, p. 169, 7 nothing can be inferred.

¹ Julian, Orat. vi. 185, a Spanh.: ἀλλὰ καὶ Πυθαγόρας οἴ τε ἀπ' ἐκείνου μέχρι Θεοφράστου τὸ κατὰ δύναμιν ὁμοιῶσθαι θεῷ φασι. Plato especially expresses himself to this effect; how far it was the view also of Theophr. is seen from the note: καὶ γὰρ καὶ ὁ ᾿λριστοτέλης. 'ὁ γὰρ ἡμεῖς ποτὲ, τοῦτο ὁ θεὸς ἀεί' (see supra). According to Diog. v. 49 Theophr. wrote a treatise against the Academics on the blessedness of God.

See supra, vol. i. p. 495, n. 4.
 Procl. in Tim. 177, a:

Theophrastus deems it unnecessary to base the existence of the soul, as the cause of motion,

upon higher principles, as Plato had done. ἔμψυχον γὰρ καὶ αὐτὸς εἶναι δίδωσι τὸν οὐρανὸν καὶ διὰ τοῦτο θεῖον εἰ γὰρ θεῖός ἐστι, φησί, καὶ τὴν ἀρίστην ἔχει διαγωγὴν, ἔμψυχός ἐστιν οὐδὲν γὰρ τίμιον ἄνευ ψυχῆς, ὡς ἐν τῷ περὶ Οὐρανοῦ γέγραφεν. (See also on the last head p. 281, b. Plat. Theol. i. 12, p. 35 Hamb.)

4 Upon this see Metaph. § 34. CIC. Tusc.i. 19, 45: hace enim pulchritudo etiam in terris patriam illam et aritam (ut ait Theophrastus) philosophiam cognitionis cupiditate incensam excitavit refers to the beauty of the heavens. By πάτριος καl παλαιὰ φιλοσοφία is meant, as the context also shows, knowledge of the heavens, or astronomy.

5 According to TAURUS (Scholiast to Timæus, Bekker's Scholias p. 437 and PHLOP. Ætern. m. xiii. 15), Theophr. rejected Aristotle's doctrine of the aether on the ground of Plato's assertion (Tim. 31 B) that all that is solid and visible must consist of fire and earth.

⁶ On this see infra, p. 380.

⁷ See n. 2 and the quotation from Aristotle *sup*. vol. i. p. 474.

other heavenly spheres. Between him and Aristotle there is in this regard no difference of doctrine.

Theophrastus, however, devoted much more attention to scientific than to metaphysical inquiries, and had indeed much more talent for them. That here also he continued to build upon the foundations laid by Aristotle is beyond question; but we find him exerting himself not only to supplement the results of his teacher by further observation, but also to correct them by re-examination of his scientific conceptions. With this view he instituted an inquiry in a work of his own 2 into the conception of Motion which lay at the root of the Aristotelian doctrine of Nature; 3 and he found it necessary to deviate in some respects from the teaching of Aristotle on this head. He asserted, for instance, that Motion, which he agreed with Aristotle in defining as the realisation of potentiality, 4 may be predicated in

teenth' of the Physics in SIMPL. Phys. 23, a, and Categ. 100, β (Schol. 331, a, 10, 92, b, 23) have arisen out of mere clerical errors ($\tau\hat{\varphi}$ ια' and $\tau\hat{\varphi}$ ιδ' out of TΩI A). From $\hat{\epsilon}\nu\delta\epsilon\kappa d\tau\varphi$ in the former passage came next $\delta\epsilon\kappa d\tau\varphi$ in the Aldine text.

⁸ Theophrastus also says that physics have to do only with the *motum* (see *sup* vol. i. p. 417 sq.); see *supra*, vol. ii. p. 357, n. 1.

¹ As Theophr. according to the passage quoted, sup. vol. i. p. 461, 3 accepted Aristotle's theory of spheres, he was obliged to presuppose also with Aristotle an eternal mover for each sphere—an hypothesis which was forced upon him also by the principles of the Peripatetic philosophy with respect to mover and moved.

² The three books π. κινήσεως. On these and on the eight books of the *Physics* (if there were really so many) see PHILIPPSON, "ΤΑη ἀκθρ. p. 84, USENER, Anal. Theophr. 5, 8, and BRANDIS, iii. 281. The last rightly remarks, as ROSE, Arist. libr. ord. 87 had already done, that the 'eleventh' book π. κινήσεως and the 'four-

⁴ ένέργεια τοῦ δυνάμει κινητοῦ ἢ κινητὸν κατὰ γένος ἔκαστον τῶν κατηγοριῶν—ἡ τοῦ δυνάμει ὅντος ἢ τοιοῦτον ἐντελέχεια—ἐνέργειὰ τις ἀτελὴς τοῦ δυνάμει ὅντος ἢ τοιοῦτον καθ΄ ἐκαστον γένος τῶν κατηγοριῶν (ΤΗΕΟΡΗΚ. Fr. 19 sq. 23 b, SIMPL. Phys. 201, b, 94, a, m. Categ. ibid.) ἀτελὴς γὰρ ἡ κίνησις (ΤΗ.

all the categories; as change is not confined, as Aristotle tried to prove, to substance, size, quality, locality, but is also applicable to relation, position, &c. Again, Aristotle had asserted that all change takes place gradually, and therefore that everything which changes must be divisible; Theophrastus maintained, on the contrary, the possibility—which Aristotle himself elsewhere admits

apud THEMIST. De An. p. 199, 20 Sp.). It is plain from the quotation, sup. vol. i. p. 383, n. 1, that this completely agrees with Aristotle. Nor is it easy to see in SIMPL. Categ. 77, €. Phys. 202, a, the deviation from Aristotle which RITTER (iii. 413 sq.) finds. The first passage (Fr. 24) runs: τούτφ μέν γὰρ (Theophrastus) δυκεί μη χωρίζεσθαι την κίνησιν της ένεργείας, είναι δὲ την μέν κίνησιν καὶ ἐνέργειαν ὡς ἂν ἐν αὐτῆ περιεχομένην, οὐκέτι μέντοι καλ τὴν ένέργειαν κίνησιν την γάρ έκάστου οὐσίαν καὶ τὸ οἰκεῖον εἶδος ἐνέργειαν είναι έκάστου μη οδσαν ταύτην κίνησιν. This means, however: every motion is an energy, but every energy is not a motion; energy is the wider, motion the narrower conception. Italmost the opposite, therefore, to RITTER's explanation: that he refuses to comprehend either the conception of energy under that of motion 'or the conception of motion under the conception energy.' Phys.202. of SIMPL. says: ὁ Θεόφραστος (ητείν δείν φησι περί των κινήσεων εί αί μέν κινήσεις είσλν, αί δὲ ώσπερ ἐνέργειαί τινες, which he cites. however, only as proof that Theophr. uses klynois not merely of motion in space, but of any

change. In this more general sense he may have understood particularly the 'motion of the soul' (see infra). Aristotle also, however, frequently uses κίνησις synonymously with μεταβολή, and even he calls motion energy as well as entelechy (see sup. vol. i. p. 383, n. 1): while, on the other hand. Theophr. as well as Aristotle says that it is only an incomplete energy. According to Priscian (in his paraphrase of the Physics bk. v. p. 287, Theophr. Opp. ed. Wimm. iii. 269) he says expressly: ταῦτα δὲ [ἐνέργεια and κίνησις] διαφέρει χρησθαι δὲ ἀναγκαῖον ἐνίοτε τοῖς αὐτοῖς ονόμασιν.

1 See supra, vol. i. p. 423, n. 1. 2 Theophr. Fr. 19, 20, 23 (cf. sup. vol. ii. p. 373, n. 4). The remark in Fr. 20 on the motion of relation is obscure, and in the words: ἡ γὰρ ἐνέργεια κίνησίς τε καὶ καθ' αὐτὸ the text is probably corrupt. Perhaps we ought to read: ἡ γὰρ ἐνεργεία κίνησις τοῦ καθ' αὐτὸ. But even so the passage is not quite clear.

³ Phys. vi. 4 init. (see supra, vol. i. p. 439, n. 3), cf. c. 10.

⁴ Phys. i. 3, 186, a, 13, and in the discussions upon light see supra, vol. i. p. 518, n. 3.

-of a simultaneous change in all parts of a mass. Aristotle finally, in connection with the same subject, had assumed that, although there is a moment at which a change is completed, there is none at which it begins;2 Theophrastus rightly held this to be inconceivable.3 He further took serious exception to Aristotle's doctrine of space.4 If space is the limit set by the surrounding to the surrounded body, the latter must be a plain surface: space would move, along with the surrounding body, which is inconceivable; nor would every body be in space, since the outermost circle would not be; moreover, all that is in space would cease to be so, without. however, itself suffering any change, if the surrounding body coalesced with it in one whole or were wholly removed.⁵ Theophrastus was himself inclined to define space as the order and position of bodies relatively to

¹ THEMIST. Phys. vi. 4, p. 381, 23 sqq. c. 5, 389, 8 sqq. Cf. SIMPL. Phys. 233, a, m (Fr. 54 sqq.). On the other hand the citation from Theophrastus in SIMPL. Phys. 23, a, is not directed against Aristotle, but is in agreement with him against Melinus.

² See *supra*, vol. i. p. 439, n. 4. ³ SIMPL. *Phys.* 230, a, m. THEMIST. *Phys.* p. 386, 16 Sp. (*Schol.* 410, b, 44, 411, a, 6). Cf. Eudemus in SIMPL. 231, b (Fr. 67 Sp.).

⁴ In respect to time, on the other hand, he wholly agreed with Aristotle; SIMPL. Phys. 187, a, m. cf. Categ. Schol. in Ar. 79, b, 25; controverting apparently, like Eudemus (according to SIMPL. Phys. 165, a, and b, Fr.

⁴⁶ Sp.), Plato's views upon time. ⁵ Fr. 21, b, SIMPL. Phys. 141, a, m.; Theophrastus objects in the Physics to Aristotle's definition of space, δτι τὸ σῶμα ἔσται έν ἐπιφανεία, ὅτι κινούμενος ἔσται ὁ τόπος [but according to SIMPL. Phys. 131, b, 136, a. 141, b, 143, a, Theophrastus and Eudemus treated it as an axiom that space is immobile, as Aristotle also had done, see sup. vol. i. p. 432 sq. Phys. iv. 4, 212, a, 18 sqq.], ότι οὐ πᾶν σωμα ἐν τόπω (οὐδὲ γὰρ ἡ ἀπλανης), ὅτι, ἐὰν συναχθῶσιν αί σφαίραι, καὶ όλος ὁ οὐρανὸς οὐκ έσται ἐν τόπφ [cf. ARIST. Phys. iv. 4, 211, a, 29], ὅτι τὰ ἐν τόπω ὄντα. μηδέν αὐτὰ μετακινηθέντα, έὰν ἀφαιρεθή τὰ περιέχοντα αὐτὰ, οὐκέτ έσται έν τόπω.

one another.¹ Of less importance are some other statements quoted from the portions of his *Physics* which dealt with more general questions.² In his treatise upon the elements ³ to which the extant passage upon fire belongs, while holding fast to Aristotelian principles,⁴ he nevertheless finds certain difficulties. While all other elements are themselves definite materials, fire (whether we take it to include light or not) only exists in materials which burn and give light; how then can it be treated as an elementary substance? This can only be the case if we assume that in a higher region ⁵ heat is pure and unmixed, whereas upon earth

¹ SIMPL, *ibid*. 149, b, m. (Fr. 22): Theophrastus says, though only as a suggestion (ωs έν ἀπορία προάγων τον λόγον): ' μήποτε οὐκ ξστι καθ' αύτον οὐσία τις δ τόπος. άλλὰ τῆ τάξει καὶ θέσει τῶν σωμάτων λέγεται κατά τὰς φύσεις καί δυνάμεις, δμοίως δ' έπὶ ζώων καὶ φυτών καὶ ὅλως τῶν ἀνομοιομερών, είτε εμψύχων είτε αψύχων, εμμορφον δέτην φύσιν έχόντων και γάρ τούτων τάξις τις καλ θέσις τῶν μερῶν έστι πρός την δλην οὐσίαν · διό καί έκαστον έν τη αύτου χώρα λέγεται τῷ ἔχειν τὴν οἰκείαν τάξιν, ἐπεὶ καὶ τῶν τοῦ σώματος μερῶν ἕκαστον ἐπιποθήσειεν ὰν καὶ ἀπαιτήσειε τὴν έαυτοῦ χώραν καὶ θέσιν.

² At the beginning of his treatise he had illustrated the beginning of Aristotle's with the remark that all natural existences have their principles as all natural bodies are composite (SIMPL. Phys. 2, b, 5, b, m. Schol. in Ar. 324, a, 22, 325, b, 15. PHILOP. Phys. A, 2, m.); in the third book, which was also entitled π. οὐρανοῦ, he distinguishes three

kinds of becoming: by means of something similar, something opposite, and something which is neither similar nor opposite to that which comes to be but only in general a previous actuality (Fr. 16, b, SIMPL. ibid. 287, a).

3 According to Alex. in SIMPL. De Cælo, init., Schol. 468, a, 11, Theophrastus had discussed these in the treatise π. οὐρανοῦ, which however (ibid. 435, b, 33, and previous note) is the same as Physios, Bk. iii. SIMPL. De Cælo, 517, a, 31, however, cites also a special work by him, περὶ τῆς τῶν στοιχείων γενέσεως (USENER, Anal. 21, thinks perhaps the same as Diog., v. 39, calls π. γενέσεως).

The composition of the elements of heat, cold, &c. (see sup. vol. i. p. 478 sqq.; to this account, e.g. De Igne, 26: το γὰρ πῦρ θερμον και ξηρόν refers). Similarly the theory of the natural weight and levity of bodies; cf. De Vent. 22, De Sensu, 88 sq.

5 ἐν αὐτῆ τῆ πρώτη σφαίρα, by

it is only found in union with something else and in a process of becoming; but in this case we must again ask whether terrestrial fire springs from the heavenly element or owes its origin to certain states and movements in burning material.1 Again, how are we to explain the sun? If it consists of a kind of fire, this must be very different from other fire; if it does not consist of fire, we should then have to explain how it can kindle fire. In any case we should have to admit that not only fire but also heat are properties. But how is it possible to admit this with regard to heat, which is a far more universal and elementary principle than fire? This suggests further questions. Are heat, cold, &c. really first principles and not merely attributes?2 Are the socalled simple bodies not rather composite things? since even moisture cannot be without fire, for if it were it would freeze; nor can the earth be wholly without moisture, for if it were it would fall to pieces.3 We are not, however, justified in ascribing to Theophrastus on account of these criticisms an actual departure from the Aristotelian doctrine.4 He is only following his general custom of pointing out the difficulties which his Master's view involves, without necessarily giving it up.

It is the less necessary to follow Theophrastus

which, however, only the first elemental sphere can be meant.

λαμβάνουσι τὸ θερμὸν καὶ τὸ ψυχρὸν ὅσπερ πάθη τινῶν εἶναι, οὐκ ἀρχαὶ καὶ δυνάμεις · ἄμα δὲ καὶ ἡ τῶν ἀπλῶν λεγομένων φύσις μικτή τε καὶ ἐνυπάρχουσα ἀλλήλοις &C.

¹ De Igne, 3-5. Cf. also OLYMPIODORUS in Meteorol. i. 137. id.

² Ibid. 5-7, where § 6 with the words: ἐν ὑποκειμέν φ τινὶ καὶ τὸ πῦρ καὶ ὁ ἥλιος τὸ θερμόν we must supply ἔχει.

³ Ibid. 8: φαίνεται γάρ ούτω

⁴ Aristotle also says that the elements do not present themselves separately in actuality; see *supra*, vol. i. p. 482, n. 4.

further in his discussion of fire, inasmuch as, in spite of many true observations, he not unfrequently proceeds upon false assumptions and fails to bring to the elucidation of the facts any actual knowledge of the processes of combustion. Nor need we enter into his account of wind 2 (the cause of which he traces to the motion of the sun and warm vapours 3), of the origin of rain, 4 of the signs of the weather, 5 of stones, 6 of smells, 7 tastes, 8

¹ Thus, for the explanation of several actual or supposed phenomena, we have such assumptions as that the smaller fire (as also ARIST. supposes, Gen. et Corr. i. 7. 323, b. 8) is consumed by the greater, or that it is suppressed and suffocated by the density of the air (Fr. 3, 10 sq. 58; Fr. 10, 1 sq); that a cold environment increases the interior heat by repulsion (avtiπερίστασις) (ibid. 13, 15, 18, 74, π. ίδρώτ. 23, π. λειποψυχ. Fr. 10, 6; Caus. Pl. i. 12, 3, vi. 18, 11, and passim; cf. the Index under άντιπερίστασις, άντιπεριΐστασθαι. PLUT. Qu. Nat. 13, p. 915) and the like. Hence also the statement (in SIMPL. De Cælo, 268, a, 27; K. Schol. 513, a, 28) that there have been cases of sparks darting from men's eyes.

² Π. ἀνέμων (Fr. 5). In § 5 of this work mention is also made of that π. ὑδάτων (cf. DIOG. v. 45; USENER, Anal. Theophr. 7).

³ Ibid. §§ 19 sq. ALEX. in Meteorol. 100, b; cf. sup. vol. i. p.514 sq. Theophrastus had spoken more fully on this subject in an earlier treatise—De Vent. 1.

4 On this see OLYMPIO-DORUS on *Meteorol*. i. 222 id.

5 Π. σημείων ὑδάτων καὶ πνευμά-

των και χειμώνων και εὐδιῶν(Fr. 6). ⁶ Π. λίθων (Fr. 2), according to \$ 59 written during the Archonship of Praxibulus (Ol. 116, 2, 315 B.C.) At the beginning of this essay the treatise on Metals, on which cf. USENER, p. 6, and supra, vol. i, p. 84, n. 1, is THEOPHR. (ibid.) mentioned. makes stones consist of earth. metals of water, berein (see sup. vol. i. p. 514) connecting his doctrine with that of Aristotle, whom he follows in general in the treatment of this subject (see SCHNEIDER'S references in his Commentar, iv. 535 sqq. and passim), except that he goes much more deeply into particulars than Aristotle did in the corresponding section of the Meteorology (iii. 6).

7 On smells and tastes cf. Cans. Pl. vi. 1-5 (on those of plants, the rest of the book); on smells alone: περὶ δομῶν (Fr. 4). Theophrastus here treats of the kinds of smells which do not permit of such sharp separation as the kinds of tastes, and next with great fullness of particular fragrant or offensive substances, their mixture, &c. Cf. also Plut. Qu. Conv. i. 6, 1, 4.

8 On these also he had written

light,1 colours,2 sounds.3 His view of the structure of

a special treatise, according to DIOG. v. 46, in five books (cf. USENER, p. 8, and sup. vol. i. p. 84, n.1); Caus. Pl. vi. 1, 2, 4, 1, he enumerates seven chief tastes with an obvious reminiscence of ARIST. De Sensu, 4, 442, a, 19 (see sup. vol. i. p. 85). Ibid. c. 1, 1 he gives a definition of χυμός, which agrees with that of Aristotle (see suv. vol. i. p. 518). OLYMPIOD. in Meteorol, i. 286 id. mentions an assumption with reference to the bring taste of sea water (that it comes from the nature of the bottom of the sea).

1 Theophrastus had explained his theory on this subject in the fifth book of the Physics, of which fragments have been preserved to us in PRISCIAN'S Paraphrase (see Philippson, "Tan άνθρωπίνη, pp. 241 sqq.; WIMMER, Theophy. Opp. iii, 232 sqq.). On light and transparency cf. § 16 The διαφανές is, according to the view here presented, which agrees with Aristotle's (see sup. vol. i. p. 518, u. 3), not a body but a property or state of certain bodies, and when light is called the ἐνέργεια τοῦ διαφανοῦς (§ 18), ενέργεια must be understood in the wider sense of a πάθημα or certain change in the transparent. The idea that light is a material emanation is rejected.

² All that can be obtained on this subject from the works of Theophrastus (to which, however, the pseudo Aristotelian treatise on Colours does not belong; cf. supra, vol ii. p. 355, n. 2) is almost entirely in agreement with Aristotle, and it is brought together by PRANTL, Arist. üb. d.

Farben, 181 sqq. Fr. 89, 3, 6 also belongs to this group.

3 Theophr. had discussed these in the treatise upon Music. In the fragment of this treatise which Porphyry has preserved (Fr. 89) in Ptol. Harm. (Wallish, Opp. iii. 241 sqq.) he controverts the assumption the difference between higher and lower notes is merely a numerical one. We cannot assert that the higher note either consists of more parts or moves more swiftly (πλείους ἀριθμούς κινείται § 3, which according to § 5 fin. seems to refer to the greater swiftness of motion by means of which in the same time it traverses a greater number of equal spaces) than the lower (the former was Heraclides', the latter Plato's and Aristotle's assumption; see Ph.d.Gr. i. 887, 1, 655 n. and sup. vol. i. p. 519). For in the first place if the essence of sound is number, then wherever we have number we must also have sound; on the other hand, if number is not the essence of sound, sounds are not distinguished by number only; in the second place observation shows that for a low note an equally strong movement is required as for a high one; and again the two could not accord with one another if they moved with unequal velocity or consisted of an unequal number of movements. If a higher note is audible at a greater distance, this is only because it is transmitted in a merely forward direction, whereas the deep note is transmitted in all directions.

the universe agrees in every respect with Aristotle's. He shares also his doctrine that the world is without beginning or end, defending it, à propos of Aristotle's physical theory, with great fullness and success against the founder of the Stoic school. And since among

He holds that intervals do not explain the difference in notes, they merely make the latter perceptible by omission of the intermediate notes. In their case much more than in that of colours a qualitative difference must be admitted. Wherein this difference, however, consists, Theophr. does not seem more precisely to have defined.

We see this from the state. ment of Simplicius on the retrogressive spheres quoted sup. vol. i. p. 502, n. 1, and that of Pseudo-Alex. in Metaph. 678, 13 Bon. (807, b. 9 Br.) which agrees with it. The remark Fr. 171 (π. τῶν Ἰχθύων) 6 that the air is nearer the fire than is the water refers to Ariassumption that the elements lie round the earth in the form of a sphere. We need not believe that Theophr. held the Milky Way, as MACROB. Somn. Scip. i. 15 supposes, to be the band that unites the two hemispheres of which the celestial sphere is composed; he may have compared it with such a band, but the idea that the celestial sphere is really composed of two parts is inconsistent with Aristotle's doctrine that the world by reason of the nature of its materials can only have the form of a perfect sphere (see sup. vol. i. p. 486 sq.). It has already been remarked sup. vol. ii. p. 372, that Theophrastus follows Ari-

stotle in his general view of the world.

² The extract from treatise on this subject given in the pseudo Philo has already been considered, sup. vol. ii. p. 354, n. 3. Theophr. here (c. 23 sqq. Bern.) controverts four arguments of opponent and maintains his against them (as is shown in ZELLER'S Hermes, xi. 424 sq.) c. 25, p. 270, 6 sqq. that in the first place their assertion that if the world were without beginning all unevenness in the earth's surface must long ago have been overlooks the levelled. that the fire in the which originally heaved up the mountains (cf. on this Theophr. F. 2, 3) also keeps them up; and in the second place if from the retreat of the sea which has taken place at particular places, a final exhaustion of it and an absorption of all elements in fire are inferred. this overlooks fact that that decrease (as Aristotle had previously taught, see sup. vol. ii. p. 30, n. 2) is a merely local one and is counterbalanced by an increase at other places; just as little in the third place does it follow from the transitoriness of all particular parts of the world, that the world as a whole is transitory, inasmuch as the destruction of one thing is always the birth of another (cf. on this sup. vol. i. p. 485). If finally

other presuppositions of the Peripatetic system the eternity of the human race was involved in the eternity of the world, while on the other hand the relatively recent origin of civilisation was recognised by Theophrastus and illustrated by researches into the origin of the arts upon which it depends and of religious rites, he assumed with his Master that there occurred from time to time overwhelming natural disasters which, covering vast territories, either totally annihilated the inhabitants or reduced them again to the primeval state of barbarism. The mistake, in fact, which Aristotle made in assuming with the old astronomy that in the eternity of the universe is involved also that of the earth and the human race, reveals itself again in Theophrastus.

Striking proof of Theophrastus's ability in the field of natural history is afforded by his two works upon

man and therefore also the world is said to have had a beginning, because the arts without which man cannot live have had one, Theophr. opposes to this view the theory developed in the text.

Cf. sup. vol. ii. p. 32, n. 1.
 DIOG. v. 47 mentions two books by him π. εδρημάτων.

³ See more on this subject, infra.

4 lt is not permissible, says the pseudo-Philo, c. 27, p. 274, 3 sqq. Bern., to judge the antiquity of man from that of the arts. For φθοραλ τῶν κατὰ γῆν οὐκ ἀθρόων ἄπάντων ἄλλὰ τῶν πλείστων δυσλ ταῖς μεγίσταις αἰτίαις ἀνατίθενται, πυρὸς καὶ ὕδατος ἀλέκτοις φοραῖς. κατασκήπτειν δ' ἑκατέραν ἐν μέρει φασλν ἐν πάνυ

μακραίς ένιαυτών περιόδοις; and after further explaining how both kinds of devastation occur. and how the inhabitants of the mountains are swept away by the one, those of the valleys and plains by the other, he proceeds: κατὰ δὴ τοὺς λεχθέντας τρόπους δίχα μυρίων ἄλλων βραχυτέρων φθειρομένου τοῦ πλείστου μέρους άνθρώπων ἐπιλιπεῖν ἐξ ἀνάγκης καὶ τὰς τέχνας ... ἐπειδάν δὲ αί μὲν κοιναὶ νόσοι χαλάσωσιν, ἄρξηται δὲ ἀνηβᾶν καὶ βλαστάνειν τὸ γένος έκ τῶν μὴ προκαταληφθέντων τοῖs ἐπιβρίσασι δεινοῖς, ἄρχεσθαι καὶ τὰς τέχνας πάλιν συνίστασθαι, οὐ τὸ πρώτον γενομένας, άλλα τῆ μειώσει τῶν ἐχόντων ὑποσπανισθείσας.

⁵ Cf. on this Phil.-histor. Abhandl. der Berl. Akademie, 1878, pp. 105 sq.

plants.1 Observations are there collected with the most unwearied diligence from all regions of the world accessible at that time. All the information attainable by the insufficient means and methods at the disposal of the investigator of the period, not only upon the form and parts, but also upon the development, the cultivation, the use, and the geographical distribution of a large number of plants,2 is there set down. His statements are moreover in general so reliable, and where they rest on the testimony of others so cautious, that they give us the most favourable impression of his power of observation and critical skill. Neither ancient nor mediæval times have any botanical work of equal importance to compare with the writings of Theophrastus. The scientific explanation of the facts, however, was necessarily in the highest degree unsatisfactory, since neither botany nor science in general was as yet adequate to this task. Aristotle was able in his geological works to compensate in some degree for the like defect both by the general grandeur of his fundamental thoughts and in particular by a multitude of brilliant conjectures and startling observations; but Theophrastus cannot be compared with his Master in either of these respects.

known before his time, we cannot assume that he intended to enumerate all that were known to him.

^{&#}x27;According to KIROHNER, Die Botan. Schrift. d. Th. (Jahrb. f. Philol. Supplementb. vii.) p. 497, he names 550 plants, and of these there are about 170 with regard to which we do not know whether they had been previously known. As, however, he omits several with regard to which it can be proved that they were

² Cf. what Brands, iii. 298 sqq., Kirchner, 499 sqq., have collected from the writings of Theophrastus on the sources and compass of his botanical knowledge.

The fundamental ideas of his botanical theory are taken from Aristotle. Plants are living creatures.2 Theophrastus does not make express mention of a soul in them; he regards their natural heat and moisture as the seat of their life,3 finding in these also the chief ground of the individual peculiarities by which they are differentiated from one another.4 But in order that they may germinate and grow, a suitable external environment is indispensable.⁵ Their progress and perfection, their improvement or deterioration depend, therefore, in this respect, primarily upon the heat and

¹ KIRCHNER, ibid, 514 sqq. gives us a comparison of Theophrastus's botanical theory with Aristotle's so far as we know it.

² Ζῶντα, Caus i. 4, 5, v. 5, 2; 18, 2; ξμβια, ibid. v. 4, 5; they have not έθη [ήθη] and πράξεις, like the animals, but they have

Blovs, Hist. i. 1, 1.

3 Hist. i. 2, 4: ἄπαν γὰρ φυτὸν έχει τινά ύγρότητα καί θερμότητα σύμφυτον ώσπερ και ζώον, ὧν ύπολειπόντων γίνεται γήρας καί φθίσις, τελείως δε ύπολιπόντων θάνατος καὶ αὕανσις. Cf. 11, 3; Caus. i. 1, 3: for germination there is required ξμβιος ύγρότης and σύμφυτον θερμόν as well as a certain proportion between them. Hist. i. 11. 1: the seed contains the σύμφυτον ύγρον και θερμόν, and if these escape, it loses the power of germination. See further Caus. ii. 6, 1 sq. 8, 3, and other passages.

⁴ Cf. Caus. i. 10, 5. Ibid. c. 21. 3: τὰς ίδίας ἐκάστων φύσεις είτ' οδυ ύγρότητι καλ ξηρότητι καλ πυκνότητι [WIMMER'S conjecture] καλ μανότητι καλ τοῖς τοιούτοις διαφερούσας είτε θερμότητι καί ψυχρότητι. The latter, however, he remarks, are difficult to measure: he accordingly exerts himself here and in c. 22 to discover marks by means of which we may recognise the degrees of temperature in a plant, an endeavour in which, as we might suppose, he meets with very little success.

5 Caus. ii. 3, 4: ἀεὶ γὰρ δεῖ λόγον τινὰ ἔχειν την κρᾶσιν τῆς Φύσεως πρός τὸ περιέχου. 7, 1: τὸ συγγενές της φύσεως έκαστον άγει πρός του οἰκεῖου [τόπου] . . . οξον ή θερμότης και ή ψυχρότης και ή ξηρότης καὶ ή ύγρότης · ζητεῖ γὰρ τὰ πρόσφορα κατὰ τὴν κρᾶσιν. с. 9, 6: ἡ γὰρ ἐπιθυμία πᾶσι τοῦ συγγενοῦς. The statement of BRANDIS (iii. 319) that the efficacy of heat, &c., is conditioned also by the opposite is not to be found either in Caus. ii. 9, 9, or anywhere else in Theophrastus. although he states in another connection, Hist. v. 9, 7, that passive and active must be heterogeneous.

moisture of the air and the ground and on the effects of The more harmonious the relation in sun and rain.1 which all these factors stand to one another and to the plant, the more favourable are they to its development,2 which is therefore conditioned partly by outward influences and partly by the peculiar nature of the plant or the seed, in reference to the latter of which we must again distinguish between the active force and the passive susceptibility to impressions from without.3 This physical explanation does not, of course, with Theophrastus any more than with Aristotle exclude the teleological, which he finds both in the peculiar perfection of the plant itself and in its usefulness for man, without, however, going deeper into this side of the question or developing it in relation to the rest of his botanical theory.4

The chief subjects discussed in the remaining portions of the two works upon plants are the parts, the origin and development, and the classification of plants.

In considering the first of these Theophrastus encounters the question whether annual growths such as leaves, blossoms, and fruit are to be regarded as parts of the plant or not. Without giving a definite answer to this question he inclines to the latter view,⁵ and accordingly names as the essential external parts of the

² Caus. i. 10, 5; 6, 8, ii. 9, 13, iii. 4, 3, and passim.

¹ Cf. Hist. i. 7, 1; Caus. i. 21, 2 sqq. ii. 13, 5, iii. 4, 3; 22, 3, iv. 4, 9 sq. 13, and other passages. In the explanation of the phenomena themselves, Theophrastus indeed not unfrequently gets into difficulty, and rescues himself by assumptions such as that referred to supra, vol. ii. p. 378,

n. 1, of the compression of internal heat by external cold.

³ The δύναμις τοῦ ποιείν and τοῦ πάσχειν, Caus. iv. 1, 3.

⁴ See *supra*, vol. ii. p. 369, n. 2. ⁵ *Hist*. i. 1, 1-4.

plant 1 the root, stem (or stalk), branches and twigs.2 He shows how plants are differentiated by the presence or absence, the character, the size, and the position of these parts,3 remarking that there is nothing which is found in all plants as invariably as mouth and belly are in animals, and that in view of the infinite variety of botanical forms we must frequently be content with mere analogy. 4 As 'internal parts' 5 he names bark. wood, pith, and as the 'constituent parts' of these again, sap, fibres, veins and pulp.6 From these, which are permanent, he distinguishes finally the yearly changing elements, which, indeed, in many cases are the whole plant.7 Here, however, as not unfrequently elsewhere, he takes the tree as the basis of his investigation; it seems to stand with him for the perfect plant, just as humanity stands with Aristotle for the perfect animal and man for the perfect type of humanity.

In his treatment of the origin of plants, Theophrastus points out three distinct methods of propagating them, viz. from seed, from parts of other plants, and by spontaneous generation.^a The most natural of these is

¹ τὰ ἔξω μόρια (ibid.), the ἀνομοιομερῆ (ibid. 12, cf. supra, vol. i. p. 517, n. 6, and vol. ii. p. 28, n. 1.

² βίζα, καυλος, ἀκρεμών, κλάδος . . . ἔστι δὲ βίζα μὲν δι' οῦ τὴν τροφὴν ἐπάγεται [it depends on this, i.e. on the δύναμις φυσική, not on the position in the ground, Hist. i. 6, 9] καυλος δὲ εἰς δ φέρεται. καυλὸν δὲ λέγω τὸ ὑπὲρ γῆς πεφυκὸς ἐφ' ἔν . . . ἀκρεμόνας δὲ τοὺς ἀπὸ τούτου σχιζομένους, οῦς ἔνιοι καλοῦσιν ὅζους. κλάδον δὲ τὸ βλάστημα τὸ ἐκ τούτων ἐφ'

ξυ οἷου μάλιστα τὸ ἐπέτειου, Hist. i. 1, 9. Aristotle's view was not altogether identical; see supra, vol. ii. p. 35, n. 4.

Ihid. 6 sqq.
 Ibid. 10 sqq.

⁵ τὰ ἐντὸς, ibid.; τὰ ἐξ ὧν ταῦτα, δμοιομερῆ, ibid. 2, 1.

⁶ Hist. i. 2, 1, 3. On the meaning of ts, φλèψ, σὰρξ of plants, see MEYER, Gesch. der Bot. i. 160 sq.

⁷ Hist. i. 2, 1 sq.

⁸ Here he follows Aristotle; see *supra*, vol. ii. p. 36.

from seed. All seed-bearing plants employ this method, even if individuals among them exhibit another as well. This law, according to Theophrastus, is not only obvious from observation, but follows still more clearly from the consideration that otherwise the seed of such plants would serve no purpose, in a system of nature where nothing, least of all anything so essential as the seed, is purposeless.1 Theophrastus compares seed, as Empedocles had done, to eggs,2 but he has no true conception of the fructification and sexual differences of plants. He often distinguishes, indeed, between male and female plants,3 differing in this from Aristotle;4 but when we inquire what he means by this, we find, in the first place, that this distinction refers always to plants as a whole and not to the organs of fructification in them, and can apply, therefore, only to the smallest portion of the vegetable kingdom; that, in the second place, it is applied by Theophrastus only to trees, and not even to all these; and, thirdly, that even here it rests not upon any actual knowledge of the process of fructification, but upon vague analogies of popular language.5

ing, and that it belongs in fact to the unscientific use of language. He nowhere gives a more exact definition of its significance or its basis; on the contrary, he frequently marks it as a customary division by the use of καλοῦσι or a similar expression (e.g. Hist. iii. 3, 7, 8, 1, 12, 6, 15, 3, 18, 5). The division in his text is limited to trees: trees, he says, are divided into male and female (Hist. i. 14, 5, iii. 8, 1; Caus. i. 22, 1, and passim); and nowhere does he

¹ Caus. i. 1, 1 sq. 4, 1; Hist. ii. 1, 1, 3.

² Caus. i. 7, 1, cf. ZELLER, Ph. d. Gr. i. 717, 5. So also Aristotle, Gen. An. i. 23, 731, a, 4.

³ See *supra*, vol. ii. p. 34, n. 1, and p. 48.

⁴ See Index under $\ddot{a}\rho\rho\eta\nu$ and $\theta \hat{\eta}\lambda us$.

⁵ It is clear from his whole mode of applying the distinction between male and female plants that Theophrastus was not the first to make it. It is plain that he found it already exist-

On the other hand, he instituted accurate observations upon the process of germination in some plants. Among the different methods of propagating plants by slips, bulbs, &c., which Theophrastus minutely dis-

call any other plant but a tree male or female; for although he says (Hist. iv. 11, 4) of a species of reed that in comparison with others it is $\theta \hat{\eta} \lambda vs \tau \hat{\eta}$ προσόψει, this is quite different from a division into a male and Theophrastus female species. speaks also (Caus. vi. 15, 4) of an δσμή θήλυς. Even trees, however, do not all fall under the above division; cf. Hist. i. 8, 2: καὶ τὰ ἄρρενα δὲ τῶν θηλειῶν δίωδέστερα, έν οίς έστιν **άμφω**. This is enough to show that the division is not based on any correct conceptions as to the fructification of plants, and all that he further states concerning it proves how little value must be set upon it. The distinction between male and female trees is found to consist in the former being barren, or at any rate less fruitful than the latter (Hist. iii. 8, 1). The most general distinction between trees is that of male and female, ων το μέν καρποφόρου τὸ δὲ ἄκαρπου ἐπὶ τινών. έν οίς δε άμφω καρποφόρα, τὸ θῆλυ καλλικαρπότ∈ρον πολυκαρπότερον: some, however, contrariwise call the latter kind of trees male. Caus. ii. 10, 1: τὰ μὲν ἄκαρπα τὰ δὲ κάρπιμα τῶν άγρίων, & δη θήλεα τὰ δ' ἄρρενα καλοῦσιν. Cf. Hist. iii. 3, 7, c. 9, 1, 2, 4, 6, c. 10, 4, c. 12, 6, c. 15, 3, c. 18, 5; Caus. i. 22, 1, iv. 4, 2). Moreover, it is remarked that the male have more branches

(Hist. i. 8, 2), and that their wood is harder, of closer tissue. and darker, while the female are more slender (Hist. iii. 9, 3, v. 4, 1; Caus. i. 8, 4). Only of the date tree does Theophrastus say that the fruit of the female ripens and does not fall off if the pollen of the male fall upon it, and he compares this with the shedding of the spawn by the male fish; but even in this he cannot see fructification in the proper sense, as the fruit is supposed to be already there; his explanation of the matter rather is that the fruit is warmed and dried by the pollen, and he compares the process with the caprification of figs (Caus. ii. 9, 15, iii. 18, 1; Hist. ii. 8, 4, 6, 6). He never supposes that all seedformation depends upon fructification. In Caus. iii. 18, 1, he expressly rejects the idea which might have been founded upon this fact : πρὸς τὸ τελειογονείν μη αὔταρκες εἶναι τὸ θῆλυ, remarking that if it were so there would be not only one or two examples of it, but it would necessarily establish itself in all, or at any rate in most, cases. It is not surprising, therefore, that he says (Caus. iv. 4, 10) that in the case of plants the earth bears the same relation to the seed as the mother does in the case of animals.

¹ Hist. viii. 2, on grain, pulse, and some trees.

cusses,¹ he reckons grafting and budding, in which he says the stem serves as soil for the bud or the graft;² and, as a second method of a similar kind, the annual sprouting of plants.³ In reference, finally, to spontaneous generation, Theophrastus indeed remarks that this is not unfrequently merely apparent, the seeds of many plants being so minute as to escape observation, or having been carried by winds, water and birds to places where we least expect to find them.⁴ But that it does actually take place, especially in the case of smaller plants, he does not doubt,⁵ and he explains it, like the spontaneous generation of animals, as the result of the decomposition of certain materials under the influence of terrestrial and solar heat.⁶

In classifying plants, Theophrastus arranges them under the four heads of trees, bushes, shrubs and herbs, calling attention at the same time to the unsatisfactoriness of this classification. He further distinguishes

Hist. ii. 1 sq. Caus. i. 1-4 and passim. Also propagation by the so-called tears (δάκρνα), on which see Caus i. 4, 6, Hist. ii. 2, 1, and cf. MEYER, Gesch. der Bot. i. 168.

² Caus. i. 6.

³ Caus. i. 10, 1, where this subject is further discussed.

4 Caus. i. 5, 2-4, ii. 17, 5; Hist. iii. 1, 5.

⁵ Cf. Caus. i. 1, 2, 5, 1. ii. 9, 14, iv. 4, 10, Hist. iii. 1, 4.

6 Caus. i. 5, 5; cf. ii. 9, 6, 17, 5. 7 Hist. i. 3, 1, with the further explanation: δένδρον μὲν οὖν ἐστι τὸ ἀπὸ ῥίζης μονοστέλεχες πολύκλαδον ὀζωτὸν οὐκ εὐαπόλυτον ... θάμνος δὲ τὸ ἀπὸ δίζης πολύ-

κλαδον φρύγανον δὲ τὸ ἀπὸ ρἰζης πολυστέλεχες καὶ πολύκλαδον πόα δὲ τὸ ἀπὸ ρίζης φυλλοφόρον προϊὸν ἀστέλεχες οδ ὁ καυλὸς σπερμοφόρος.

* Ibid. 2: δεῖ δὲ τοὺς ὅρους οὕτως ἀποδέχεσθαι καὶ λαμβάνειν ὡς τύπφ καὶ ἐπὶ τὸ πῶν λεγομένους · ἔνια γὰρ ἴσως ἐπαλλάττειν δόξειε, τὰ δὲ καὶ παρὰ τὴν ἀγωγὴν [by culture] ἀλλοιότερα γίνεσθαι καὶ ἐκβαίνειν τῆς φύσεως. And after explaining by examples and further enlarging upon this fact, that there are also bushes and herbs with the form of trees, and that we might thus be inclined to lay more stress upon the size, strength and durability of plants,

between garden and wild plants, fruit-bearing and barren, blossoming and non-blossoming, evergreen and deciduous; while admitting that these also are vanishing distinctions, he yet regards them as the common natural characteristics of certain classes. He lays special stress, however, on the division into land and water plants. In his own treatment of plants he follows the first main division, except that he classes trees and bushes together. Into the further contents of his botanical writings, however, we cannot here enter.

Of Theophrastus's work upon Zoology ⁵ hardly anything remains to us; nor does the information which we possess from other sources as to his zoological doctrines justify us in attributing to him more in this field

he concludes again, § 5: διὰ δὴ ταῦτα ὥσπερ λέγομεν οὐκ ἀκριβολογητέον τῷ ὅρφ ἀλλὰ τῷ τύπῳ ληπτέον τοὺs ἀφορισμούς.

1 Hist. i. 3, 5 sq. and some further remarks c. 14, 3. In respect to the distinction between garden and wild plants especially he observes here and iii. 2, 1 sq. that this is a natural one, as some plants degenerate under cultivation, or at least do not improve; others, on the contrary (Caus. i. 16, 13), are designed for it.

² Hist. i. 4, 2 sq. 14, 3, iv, 6, 1; Caus. ii. 3, 5.

Books ii.—v. of the History of Plants treat of trees and bushes, therefore of ligneous plants; book vi. of shrubs; book vi. viii. of herbs; book ix. discusses the sap and healing qualities of plants.

4 Brandis, iii. 302 sqq., gives

a review of the contents of both works; see also a shorter one in MEYER, Gesch. der Bot. i. 159

sqq.
5 Seven books, which Diog. v. 43 first enumerates singly by their particular titles, and then comprehends under the common title π. ζώων. Single books are also cited by Atheneus among others: see USENER, p. 5. Theophrastus himself refers (Caus. Pl. ii. 17, 9, cf iv. 5, 7) to the ίστορίαι περί ζώων. He does not seem, however (if we may judge from the single titles in Diogenes). to have intended in this work to give a complete natural history. but only (as was his general plan where Aristotle had already laid down the essential principles) to supplement Aristotle's work by a minute treatment of particular points. To this work belong Fr. 171-190.

than an extension of Aristotle's labours by further observations and some isolated researches of minor value.¹

His views upon the nature of life and of the human soul are of more importance.² Several of the funda-

' The citations from him relating to this apart from isolated. and sometimes rather mythical, references to his natural history (e.g. Fr. 175 and the statement in PLUT. Qu. conr. vii. 2, 1), are limited to the following:-Animals occupy a higher stage than plants: they have not only but also ἔθη [ἤθη] and πράξεις (Hist. i. 1, 1); they are related to man, not only in body, but also in soul (see infra, p. 394, n. 1). Their life proceeds in the first instance from a native, internal heat (Fr. 10 π , $\lambda \epsilon \iota \pi \circ \psi \upsilon \chi$, 2); at the same time they require a suitable (σύμμετρος) environment, air, food, &c. (Caus. Pl. ii. 3, 4 sq. iii. 17, 3); alterations of place and season produce in them certain changes (Hist. ii. 4, 4, Caus. ii. 13, 5, 16, 6). With Aristotle (see Chap. X. supra) Theophrastus emphasises marks of design in their bodily organs as against the older physics: the physical organism is the instrument, not the cause of vital activity (De Sensu, 24). Here. however, Theophrastus does not, any more than Aristotle (see Ch. VII. supra), overlook the fact that even in the case of animals it is impossible to trace in every particular a definite design (Fr. 12, 29: see supra, vol. ii.p. 11, n. 2). A distinction is occasionally made between land- and water-animals (Hist. i. 4, 2, 14, 3, iv. 6, 1; Caus. ii. 3, 5); wild and tame (*Hist.* iii. 2, 2, Caus. i. 16, 13); on the latter distinction in Hist. i. 3, 6 he remarks

that the measure of it is relation to man, δ γαρ ανθρωπος ή μόνον ή μάλιστα ήμερον. The use which the different animals are to one another Theophrastus had referred to in the Natural History (Caus. ii, 17; 9 cf. § 5). Concerning the origin of animals he also believes in spontaneous generation even in the case of eels, snakes and fish (Caus. i. 1, 2, 5, 5, ii. 9, 6, 17, 5; Fr. 171, 9, 11, 174, 1, 6; cf. PORPH. De Abst. ii. 5, according to which the first animals must have sprung from the earth, and the treatise π. τῶν αὐτομάτων ζώων in Diog. v. 46); their metamorphoses are mentioned in Caus. ii. 16, 7, iv. 5, 7. Respiration he conceives, with Aristotle, to serve the purpose of refrigeration: fish do not breathe, because the water performs this service for them (Fr. 171, 1, 3; cf. Fr. 10, 1). Lassitude is traced (Fr. 7, 1, 4, 6, 16) to a σύντηξις, a decomposition of certain constituents of the body (cf. the σύντηγμα, vol. ii. p. 51, n. 2, sup.); vertigo (Fr. 8, π. ιλίγγων), to the irregular circulation of humours in the head. Fr. 9. π. ίδρώτων investigates the properties of perspiration and their conditions. Fainting is the result of the want or loss of vital heat in the respiratory organs (Fr. 10, π. λειποψυχίας); similarly palsy results from cold in the blood (Fr. 11, π , παραλύσεως).

² Theophr. had spoken of the soul in *Physics*, Bks. iv. and v., which according to THEMIST, *De*

mental conceptions of the Aristotelian doctrine are here called in question. Aristotle had described the soul as the unmoved principle of all movement, and had referred its apparent movements, in so far as they can properly be regarded as such, to the body.¹ Theophrastus held that this is true only of the lower activities of the soul: thought-activity, on the contrary, must, he thinks, be regarded as a movement of the soul.²

An. 91 a, Spengel ii. p. 199, 11, were also entitled ' π . $\psi \nu \chi \hat{\eta} s$.'

¹ See supra, Ch. XI.

² According to SIMPL. Phys. 225, a, he said in the first book π. κινήσεως: ὅτι αί μὲν δοέξεις καλ αί ἐπιθυμίαι καλ δογαλ σωματικαί κινήσεις είσι και άπο τούτων άρχην έχουσιν, δσαι δέ κρίσεις καὶ θεωρίαι, ταύτας οὐκ ἔστιν els ετερον άγαγείν, άλλ' έν αὐτή τῆ ψυχῆ καὶ ἡ ἀρχὴ καὶ ἡ ἐνέργεια και τὸ τέλος, εί δὲ δη και δ νοῦς κρεῖττόν τι μέρος καὶ θειότερον, ἄτε δη έξωθεν έπεισιών και παντέλειος. καλ τούτοις ἐπάγει ὑπὲρ μὲν οὖν τούτων σκεπτέον εί τινα χωρισμόν έχει πρώς του δρου, έπει τό γε κινήσεις είναι καί ταύτας όμολογού-We know that Theophrastus also described music as κίνησις ψυχής. Το him, also, RITTER, iii. 413, refers THEMIST. De An. 68 a, Sp. ii. p. 29 sq., where divers objections to Aristotle's criticism of the assumption that the soul moves, are cited from an unnamed writer who is described with the $\tau \hat{\omega} \nu$ 'Αριστοτέλους words έξεταστής. THEMIST. 89 b. Sp. p. 189, 6, certainly says Θεόφραστος έν οξε έξετάζει τὰ Αριστοτέλους: and Hermolaus Barbarus translates (according to Ritter) both passages Theophrastus in iis

libris in quibus tractat locos ab Aristotele ante tractatos. But this very similarity makes it possible that Hermolaus merely transferred Theophrastus's name from the second passage to the first — a transference hardly justified by that passage itself. The statements of Themistius seem rather to refer to another. and indeed far later, writer than Theophrastus, e.g., when he reproaches his anonymous opponent (68, a), with having apparently wholly forgotten Aristotle's views upon motion, καίτοι σύνοψιν ἐκδεδωκώς τῶν περὶ κινήσεως εἰρημένων 'Αριστο-τέλει (Theophrastus can hardly have written such a treatise - ἐκδεδωκώς moreover points to an original work-nor was it necessary to appeal to this to prove that Aristotle's theory of motion might have been known to him): when he reports of him (68, b.): όμολογῶν τὴν κίνησιν τὴς ψυχῆς οὐσίαν εἶναι καὶ φύσιν, διὰ τοῦτό φησιν, δσφ διν μαλλον κινηται τοσούτω μᾶλλον της οὐσίας αὐτης εξίστασθαι, &c. (this Theophrastus would certainly not have said); when he says to him with reference to this that he appears not to know the distinction of motion and energy. The general tone

Aristotle had spoken of a Passive Reason, declaring that only the capacity of knowledge is innate, and that this capacity can only develop gradually into actual knowledge; but the development of that which is present at first only as a capacity—in other words, the realisation of possibility—is movement.2 It is improbable that Theophrastus on this account defined the nature of the soul differently from Aristotle; 3 but on the other hand, he found serious difficulty in accepting his view of the relation between active and passive reason. The question, indeed, as to how reason can at once come from without and be innate, may be answered by assuming that it enters at the moment of birth. But a further difficulty arises: if it be true that reason is at first nothing actually, but everything only potentially, how does it accomplish that transition to actual thought and passion, which we must attribute to it in one sense or another, when it performs an act of thought? If it be said that it is impelled to think by external things. it is hard to understand how the incorporeal can be acted upon and altered by the corporeal. If it receives the impulse from itself-the only other alternative to im-

of Themistius's argument conveys the impression that he is dealing with a contemporary.

See supra, vol. ii. p. 96.

Aristotle had himself defined the soul as the entelecty of an organic body. Theophrastus, therefore, would have merely added that the first substratum of the soul, the $\theta \epsilon \hat{n} o r \sigma \hat{\omega} \mu a$, is the ether; which, however, he probably meant in the same sense in which Aristotle also (see supra, vol. ii. p. 6, n. 2) conceived of the soul as united to a substance like the ether.

² See supra, vol.ii. p. 380, n. 1. ³ Jamblichus says, indeed, in Stob. Ecl. i. 870: ἔτεροι δὲ [sc. τῶν ᾿Αριστοτελικῶν] τελειότητα αὐτὴν ἀφορίζονται κατ' οὐσίαν τοῦ θείου σώματος, ἢν [the τελειότης perhaps, not the θείον σῶμα]ἐντελέχειαν καλεῖ ᾿Αριστοτέλης, ἄσπερ δὴ ἐν ἐνίοις Θεόφραστος. Βυτ

pulse from the senses—then it is not passive at all. In any case this passivity must be of a different kind from passivity in general: it is not the mobilisation of that which has not yet reached completion, but it is a state of completion. If, moreover, matter is defined as that which exists only potentially, does not reason, conceived of as mere potentiality, become something material? If, finally, the distinction must be made in the case of reason, as elsewhere, between the efficient and the material cause, the question yet remains, how are we further to describe the nature of each? what are we to understand by the passive reason? and how is it that the active reason, if it is innate, does not act from the very first? if it is not innate, how does it afterwards originate?

Theophrastus in THEMIST. De An. 91 a, Sp. 198, 13 sq. (the same in a rather poor and corrupt extract in PRISCIAN'S paraphrase, ii. 4, p. 365 sq. Wimm.): δ δὲ νοῦς πῶς ποτε ἔξωθεν ὧν καὶ ὥσπερ ἐπίθετος, ὅμως συμφυής; καὶ τίς ἡ φύσις αὐτοῦ; τὸ μὲν γὰρ μηδὲν εἶναι κατ' ἐνέργειαν, δυνάμει δὲ πάντα, καλῶς, ώσπερ καὶ ἡ αἴσθησις. οὐ γὰρ οὕτω ληπτέον, ως οὐδε αὐτός · έριστικὸν γάρ άλλ' ώς ὑποκειμένην τινὰ δύναμιν, καθάπερ καὶ έπὶ τῶν ὑλικῶν Tthe above statement, that it is nothing κατ' ἐνέργειαν, must not be taken to mean that it is never present itself: rather is its presence as faculty presupposed by every exercise of reason]. and τὸ ἔξωθεν ἄρα οὐχ ὡς ἐπίθετον, ἀλλ' ως εν τη πρώτη γενέσει συμπεριλαμβάνον [-βανόμενον] θετέον, πως δέ ποτε γίνεται τὰ νοητά: [how does reason become the object of thought? how does it unite itself

with it? Aristotle had said of divine as well as of human thought that in its exercise it is the object of thought; see supra, vol. i. p. 197, n. 3, and p. 1997 καὶ τί τὸ πάσχειν αὐτόν; δεῖ γὰρ [sc. πάσχειν], εἴπερ εἰς ἐνέργειαν ήξει, ώσπερ ή αζοθησις. άσωμάτω δε ύπο σώματος τί το πάθος; ἡ ποία μεταβολή; καὶ πότερον ἀπ' ἐκείνου ἡ ἀρχὴ ἡ ἀπ' αὐτοῦ; τὸ μὲν γὰρ [for on the one hand] πάσχειν άπ' έκείνου δόξειεν άν [sc. δ νους] (οὐδεν γαρ ἀφ' έαυτοῦ [sc. πάσχει] τῶν ἐν πάθει). τὸ δὲ ἀρχὴν [l. ἀρχὴ, as Priscian also has πάντων είναι και έπ' αὐτῷ τὸ νοείν καὶ μὴ ώσπερ ταίς αἰσθήσεσιν ἀπ' αὐτοῦ [thought must lie in its own power, and not come to it from the object as sensation to the senses—αὖτοῦ must be referred to ekeivou; BRENTANO'S changes, Psychol. d. Ar. 219, are unnecessary], τάχα δ' αν φανείη και τοῦτο άτοπον, εί δ νοῦς ὅλης That Theophrastus nevertheless held fast by the Aristotelian doctrine of the twofold nature of reason is beyond dispute: 1 what we know of the way in which he silenced his doubts shows merely that he took the various terms, as applied to reason, in a different sense from that which they bear in other fields, holding that

έγει φύσιν μηδέν ὢν, ἄπαντα δέ Themistius adds that δυνατός. Theophrastus continued these discussions in the fifth book of the Physics, and in the second on the Soul, and that they are μεστὰ πολλῶν μὲν ἀποριῶν, πολλῶν δὲ ἐπιστάσεων πολλῶν δὲ λύσεων. The result is, 871 καλ περί τοῦ δυνάμει νοῦ σχεδὸν τὰ αὐτὰ διαποροῦσιν, εἴτε ἔξωθέν ἐστιν εἴτε συμφυής, και διορίζειν πειρώνται, πως μέν έξωθεν πως δε συμφυής. λέγουσι δέ και αὐτὸν ἀπαθή και χωριστόν, ώσπερ τον ποιητικόν καί των ενεργεία ' άπαθης' γάρ, φησιν, ό νοῦς, εἰ μὴ ἄρα ἄλλως παθητικός [PRISCIAN also has these words, but he also quotes, as an introduction to them, the remark that we cannot suppose reason to be wholly impassive: 'εἰ γὰρ ὅλως ἀπαθης,' φησίν, οὐδὲν νοήσει]. καὶ ὅτι τὸ παθητικὸν ύπ' [1. ἐπ^τ] αὐτοῦ οὐχ ώς τὸ κινητικόν ληπτέον, ἀτελής γὰρ ή κίνησις, ἀλλ' ὡς ἐνέργειαν. [So also Priscian.] και προϊών φησι [following Aristotle, see sup., vol. ii. p. 61, μ. 37 τὰς μὲν αἰσθήσεις οὐκ άνευ σώματος, τον δε νοῦν χωριστόν. (διδ, here adds PRISCIAN, c. 9, p. 272 W., των έξω προελθόντων [1. προσελθ.] οὐ δεῖται πρὸς τὴν τελείωσιν.) άψάμενος δὲ καὶ τῶν περὶ τοῦ ποιητικοῦ νοῦ διωρισμένων Αριστοτέλει, ' ἐκεῖνό, φησιν, ἐπισκεπτέον δ [perhaps δτι] δή φαμεν έν πάση φύσει, τὸ μὲν ὡς ὕλην καὶ δυνάμει, το δε αίτιον και ποιητικόν. καί δτι ἀεί τιμιώτερον τὸ ποιοῦν τοῦ πάσχοντος και ή ἀρχη της ὕλης. ταθτα μέν ἀποδέχεται, διαπορεί δέ, τίνες οὖν αὖται αἱ δύο Φύσεις, καὶ τί πάλιν τὸ ὑποκείμενον ἡ συνηρτημένον τῷ ποιητικῷ: μικτον γάρ πως δ νους έκ τε του ποιητικου καί τοῦ δυνάμει. εἰ μὲν οὖν σύμφυτος ό κινών, και εὐθὺς ἐχρῆν και ἀει [SC. κινείν]. εί δὲ ὕστερον, μετά τίνος και πῶς ἡ γένεσις; ἔοικεν οὖν καὶ ἀγέννητος, είπερ καὶ ἄφθαρτος. ένυπάρχων δ' οὖν, διὰ τί οὖκ ἀεί: ή διὰ τί λήθη καὶ ἀπάτη καὶ ψεῦδος: η διὰ την μίξιν; The last paragraph THEMISTIUS gives, 89 b, Sp., 189, 8, more literally, apparently, as follows: εἰ μὲν γάρ ώς έξις, φησίν, ή δύναμις έκείνω [the νους ποιητ.], εί μέν σύμφυτος ἀεὶ, καὶ εὐθὺς ἐχρῆν : εἰ δ' ὕστερον &c. The development of the active reason from the potential is described also in the fragment in Priscian, c. 10, which has its place here, as the acquisition of a εξις (in the sense discussed. vol. i. p. 285, n. 3, supra). For the text in the above, besides SPEN-GEL and BRANDIS, iii. 288 sq., TORSTRIK, Arist. de An. 187 sq. and Brentano, ibid. 216 sqq. may be consulted.

' Cf. previous note and supra,

vol. ii. p. 391, n. 2.

its evolution has no relation to the incorporeal, which is always present to it, but only to the corporeal, of which it furnishes the explanation.¹

In the views to which we have just referred, and especially in attributing motion to the activity of the soul, Theophrastus shows an unmistakeable inclination to identify the spiritual element in man more closely with the physical. Similarly a statement has come down to us in which he asserts that the soul of man is of the same nature as that of animals, that it exhibits the same activities and states, and is only distinguished

Rven the intimations in THEMISTIUS take this turn. The passivity and potentiality of the reason is taken to be of another kind than that of corporeal existence; as independent of the body it does not require external impressions in order to reach completeness as active, but is self-evolved from δύναμις to εξις; error and forgetfulness are explained by its union with the body. On similar lines is the Theophrastean defence of the Aristotelian doctrine which PRIS-CIAN gives us (see ii. 17, p. 277, W.): πάλιν δὲ ὑπομιμνήσκει φιλοσοφώτατα δ Θεόφρ. ως και αυτό τδ είναι τὰ πράγματα τὸν νοῦν καὶ δυνάμει και ένεργεία ληπτέον οἰκείως τνα μη ώς ἐπὶ τῆς ὅλης κατά στέρησιν το δυνάμει, ή κατά την έξωθεν και παθητικήν τελείωσιν τὸ ἐνεργεία ὑπονοήσωμεν ἀλλὰ μηδε ως έπι της αίσθήσεως, ένθα διά της των αίσθητηρίων κινήσεως ή τῶν λόγων γίνεται προβολή, καὶ αύτη τῶν ἔξω κειμένων οὖσα θεωρητική, άλλα νοερώς έπι νου και το

δυνάμει καλ τὸ ἐνεργεία είναι τὰ πράγματα ληπτέον . . . c. 20, p. 281. W.: τοῦτο δὲ [the previous citation from Aristotle διαρθρών δ Θ. ἐπάγει · ἀλλ' ὅταν γένηται καὶ νοηθή, δήλον ότι ταῦτα έξει, τὰ δὲ νοητά άελ, είπερ ή ἐπιστήμη ή θεωρητική ταὐτό τοῖς πράγμασιν : αὕτη δὲ ἡ κατ' ἐνέργειαν δηλονότι, κυριωτάτη γάρ. [We must point in this way and take αῦτη . . . γὰρ as probably an explanation of Priscian.] τῷ νῷ, φησὶ, τὰ μὲν νοητά, τουτέστι τὰ ἄϋλα, ἀεὶ ύπάρχει· ἐπειδὴ κατ' οὐσίαν αὐτοῖς σύνεστι καὶ ἔστι[ν] ὅπερ τὰ νοητά · τὰ δὲ ἔνυλα, ὅταν νοηθῆ, καὶ αὐτὰ τῷ νῷ ὑπάρξει, οὐχ ὡς συστοίχως αὐτῷ νοηθησόμενα οὐδέποτε γὰρ τὰ ἔνυλα τῷ νῷ ἀΰλφ ὄντι· ἀλλ' όταν δ νοῦς τὰ ἐν αὐτῷ μὴ ὡς αὐτὰ μόνον άλλά καὶ ώς αἴτια τῶν ἐνύλων γινώσκη, τότε καὶ τῷ νῷ ὑπάρξει τὰ ένυλα κατά την αιτίαν. In making use of these passages it must not be forgotten that we have in them the words of Theophrastus only in the paraphrase of a Neoplatonic.

from it by a greater degree of perfection.¹ This, however, can only refer to the lower powers of the soul exclusive of reason.² The relation of the lower to the higher elements of the soul seems also to have offered insuperable difficulties to him; we know at least that in regard to the imagination he was in doubt whether it ought to be referred to the rational or the irrational part.³ From what we know of his treatment of the doctrine of reason we may conjecture that he found this subject also full of difficulty.⁴

We have fuller details of Theophrastus's doctrine of

PORPH. De Abst. iii. 25 (apud BERNAYS, Theophr. über Frommigk. 97, 184; for the fragment there given belongs, as BERNAYS proves at p. 99, to this book and not to the π. ζώων φρονήσεως): Θεόφραστος δὲ καί τοιούτφ κέχρηται λόγφ. τους έκ τῶν αὐτῶν γεννηθέντας . . . οἰκείους είναι φύσει φαμέν άλλήλων. So also of people of the same race, even if they are not of the same descent: πάντας δέτους ανθρώπους άλλήλοις φαμέν οἰκείους τε καὶ συγγενείς είναι δυοίν θάτερον, ή τώ προγόνων είναι τῶν αὐτῶν, ἡ τῷ τροφής και ήθων και ταύτοῦ γένους κοινωνείν καλ μην καλ πάσι τοίς ζώοις αἵ τε τῶν σωμάτων ἀρχαὶ πεφύκασιν αί αὐταὶ [i.e. seed, flesh, &c.]. πολύ δέ μαλλον τώ τας έν αὐτοῖς ψυχὰς ἀδιαφόρους πεφυκέναι, λέγω δη ταις επιθυμίαις και ταις όργαις, έτι δέ τοις λογισμοίς, καί μάλιστα πάντων ταις αισθήσεσιν. άλλ' ὥσπερ τὰ σώματα, καὶ τὰς ψυχὰς οῦτω τὸ μὲν ἀπηκριβωμένας έχει των ζώων, τὰ δὲ ἦττον τοιαύτας. πασί γε μην αὐτοῖς αἱ αὐταὶ πεφύκασιν άρχαί, δηλοί δὲ ή τῶν παθῶν

οἰκειότης. The rest concerns Porphyry, not Theophrastus.

² The λογισμοl, which with the beasts are different in perfection, are not in any very different position from the analoga of νοῦς and φρόνησις, ascribed to the beasts by Aristotle (suprā, vol. ii p. 27, n. 6, and p. 38, n. 2).

³ SIMPL. De An. 80, a. As to the difference between phantasy and perception, see also PRISCIAN, c. 3, 6, 263, W.

With this theory of the imagination was connected a question referred to by PRIS-CIAN (see PLOTIN. p. 565, ed. Didot, cf. Brandis, iii. 373). It is to be noted, however, that Priscian does not expressly name Theophrastus; and that the supposition that he is here referring to him is a conjecture of DÜB-NER'S. The question is, why do we remember our dreams when we are awake, and forget our waking life in dreams? We do not get any clear answer from Priscian.

the senses. Here, however, he adopts Aristotle's conclusions without important modification.² of previous philosophers upon the senses and the objects of sense-perception are accurately presented and tested from the point of view of the Peripatetic doctrine.3 Theophrastus himself explains sensation, with Aristotle, as a change in the organs of sense by means of which they become assimilated, not in matter but in form, to the object of perception.4 This effect proceeds from the object.⁵ In order that it may be produced it is necessary that the latter should stand to the organ of sense in a certain harmonious relation, the nature of which accordingly here forms an important subject of discussion; 6 it may not, however, be sought for either in the homogeneity or the heterogeneity of the constituent parts of its terms alone.7 The operation of

We can only notice in passing another anthropological inquiry: namely, the discussion on Melancholy, which is to be found in the Aristotelian Problems (xxx. 1, pp. 953-955), the Theophrastean origin of which (i.e. from the book π. Μελαγχολίας mentioned by DIOG. v. 44), ROSE, De Arist. libr. ord. 191 has detected by means of the reference therein (954, a, 20) to the book on Fire (§ 35, 40). The diverse effects which it was customary to attribute to the μέλαινα γολη are explained, with the aid of an analogy drawn from the effects of wine, by the theory that the μέλαινα χολή was of its own nature cold, but was capable of taking on a high degree of heat, and that accordingly it rounding circumstances, sometimes a condition of cold and weariness, and sometimes a heating and exciting effect.

² For which see p. 58 sqq. of

vol. ii. supra.

³ In the De Sensu, as to which see vol. ii. p. 354, n. 3.

⁴ Priscian, i. 1, p. 232, W: λέγει μέν οδν καλ αὐτός, κατά τὰ είδη καλ τοὺς λόγους ἄνευ τῆς ὅλης γίνεσθαι την έξομοίωσιν. The theory of an απορροή, i.e. an effluence from the object to the sense, is attacked in the De Sensu, 20, cf. Caus. Pl. vi. 5, 4. Compare the passages cited from Aristotle supra, vol. ii. p. 59 n. 2.
5 PRISCIAN, i. 37, p. 254, W.

b De Sensu, 32, PRISC. i. 44, p. 258, W, Caus. Pl. vi. 2, 1, 5, 4. 7. Both views are attacked by produced according to the sur- Theophrastus in the De Sensu. the object upon the senses is always mediated, according to Theophrastus, by a third term. In developing his own doctrine, as in criticising his predecessors, he doubtless discussed each of the senses separately, but only a meagre report has here come down to us. Like Aristotle, he distinguished the sensus communis from the other senses, but did not wholly agree with that philosopher's view of the way in which the universal qualities of matter are perceived. He defends the veracity of sensation against the attacks of Democritus.

31; the first also *ibid.*, 19, and the second *opud* PRISC. i. 34, p. 252. Cf. *supra*, vol. i. p. 454 sq.

Cf. supra, vol. i. p. 519 (on the διηχès and δίοσμον). PRISC. i. 16, 20, 30, 40, p. 241, 244, 250, 255; Caus. Pl. vi. 1, 1. Theophrastus here says, in agreement with Aristotle (vide supra, vol. ii. p. 64), that all sensations reach us through some medium, which is in the case of Touch our own flesh, and in the case of the other certain external senses stances: for Sight the transparent medium; for Hearing, the air: for Taste, water; for Smell, air and water together. He also considers that the immediate organs of sense-perception in the c+se of Sight, Hearing and Smell are formed out of water and air.

² Besides the passages already cited, we ought to mention here the observations (Fr. 4 De Odvr. 4, Caus. Pl. vi. 5, 1 sq.; which follow Aristotle, as to whom see supra, vol. ii. p. 65, n. 3) that although Smell is in man the feeblest of the senses, yet he alone cares for a pleasant smell for its own sake, and that sensa

tions of Hearing make the keenest impression on our emotions (PLUT. De Audiendo, 2, p. 38, a); and the account of eyes that send out fire (apud SIMPL. De Cælo, Schol. 513, a, 28; with which the citations supra, vol. ii. p. 65, n. 1, should be compared); and the criticisms of the theory of Democritus (see Zeller, Ph. d. Gr. i. p. 818) as to the existence of an image of any visible object in the air. Nevertheless THEOPHRASTUS himself said (ap. PRISCIAN, i. 33, p. 251, W) as to images in mirrors: τηs μορφης ώσπερ αποτύπωσιν έν τώ άέρι γίνεσθαι.

3 Aristotle had said (in the De Anima, iii. 1, 425, a, 16 sqq.) that size, form, &c. were perceived by means of motion; ἔτοπον δὲ ὁ Θεόφρ. [φησίν], εἶτὴν μορφὴν τῆ κινήσει (PRISC. i. 46, p. 259, W).

In the *De Sensu*, 68 sq. (where, however, for the corrupt χυμοῦ in 68 we should read, not, with Schneider and Philippson, χυλοῦ, but rather θερμοῦ) he complains that Democritus treated weight, lightness, hardness and softness as things in themselves,

As a Peripatetic, Theophrastus of course asserted the freedom of the will.¹ In his treatise on voluntary action ² he fully discussed this subject, and possibly took notice of the Stoic doctrine of determination that was just then rising into notice. But on this point, as on so many others in Aristotle's psychology which demanded further investigation, little is known of Theophrastus's contribution to science.

We have somewhat fuller information as to his ethical doctrines.³ Here also he merely continued the

and yet considered cold, heat, sweetness &c., as merely relative qualities of things. He argues that if these qualities depend on the form of the atoms-e.g. if warmth is said to consist in roundness of atoms-then such qualities must be in some sense objective. If they are supposed not to be objective because they do not appear alike to all men, then the same conclusion should follow as to all other qualities of things. Even as to such qualities sweetness and bitterness, people are deceived only as to a particular case, and not as to the nature of sweets and bitters. Properties so essential as heat and cold, must be something belonging to the bodies that have them. Cf. on this the references supra, vol. i. p. 209. EPICURUS defended the atomic view against THEOPHRASTUS (ap. PLUTARCH, Adv. Col. 7, 2, p 1110).

1 STOB. Ecl i. 206: Θεόφρ.

1 STOB. Ecl i. 206: Θεόφρ. προσδιαιρεῖ (Mein. -αρθροῖ) ταῖς αἰτίαις τὴν προα'ρεσιν. PSEUDO-PLUT. V. Hom. ii. 120, p. 1155.

2 Π. ἐκουσίου α', DIOG. v. 43.
 3 DIOG. v. 42 sq. (with which of, the further information in

USENER, Anal. Theophr. 4 sq.) attributes to Theophrastus the following ethical works: § 42, π. βίων three books (if this work really treated of the different pursuits in life, e.g. the Blos θεωρητικός, πρακτικός, απολαυστιндя, &c. [cf. supra, vol. ii. p. 140, n. 27, and was not merely biographical); § 43, ἐρωτικὸς α' (ATHEN. xiii. 562, e. 467, b. 606, c), π. ἔρωτος α' (STRABO, x. 4, 12, p. 478), π. εὐδαιμονίας (ΑΤΗΕΝ. xii. 543, xiii. 567, a; ΒΕΚΚΕR, Anecd. Gr. i. 104, 31; Cic. Tusc. v. 9, 24, cf. ÆLIAN. V. H. ix. 11); § 44, π. ἡδονῆς ὡς ᾿Αριστοτέλης α', π. ήδονης άλλο α' (ΑΤΗΕΝ. xii. 526, d, 511, c; ibid. vi. 273, c. viii. 347, e, where he adds, however, that this work was also attributed to Chamæleon); Kalliσθένης ή π. πένθους (ALEX. De An. fin., Cic. Tusc. v. 9, 25, iii. 10, 21); § 45, π . $\phi i\lambda ias$ 3 B. (HIERON. vi. 517, b, ed. Vallars.; GELL. N. A. i. 3, 10, viii. 6, and infra, p. 409 sq.), π. φιλοτιμίας 2 B. (Cic. ad Att. ii. 3 ad fin.); ξ 46, π. ψευδούς ήδονης (ΟΙΥΜΡΙΟ-DOR. Phileb. 269); § 47, π. εὐτυχίας: ἡθικῶν σχολῶν α': ἡθικοὶ χαρακτήρες (v. infra): π. κολακείας work of Aristotle, his chief merit being the greater fullness with which he develops it in details. We can-

α' (ATHEN. vi. 254, d): δμιλητικός α': π. δοκου α': π. πλούτου α' (ASPAS. in Eth. N. 51, and Cic. Off. ii. 16, προβλήματα πολιτικά ήθικά φυσικά έρωτικά α' : \$ 50, π. εὐσεβείας (Schol, in Aristoph. Av. 1354; as to BERNAYS' view vide supra ii. p. 355, n. 2), π. παιδείας ή π. άρετῶν ἡ π, σωφροσύνης α' (to this work the Fragm. apud STOB. Floril. iv. 216, No. 124, ed. Mein. might be referred). A work π . $\pi \alpha \theta \hat{\omega} \nu$ not named by Diogenes is referred to by SIMPL. Catea. 69. δ. Schol. in Ar. 70, b, 3. Theophrastus, however, also wrote two larger ethical works, of which one may possibly be the ήθικαλ σχολαλ of Diog., which must in that case have had more than one book. The two are referred to as 'Hθικά and π. 'Hθων. Out of 'Θεόφρ. ἐν τοις ήθικοις. PLUT. Pericl. 38 quotes a story about Pericles. 'Eν τοῖς π. ἡθῶν' Theophr. had, according to the Scholiast in CRAMER'S Anecd. Paris. i. 194, made mention of the avarice of Simonides, and according ATHEN. xv. 673 e, a contemporary of this scholar named Adrantus wrote five books περί τῶν παρὰ Θεοφράστω έν τοῖς περί ήθων καθ' ίστορίαν και λέξιν ζητουμένων, and a sixth book περί τῶν ἐν τοῖς 'Ηθικοίς Νικομαχείοις 'Αριστοτέλους, We must assume from this that this ethical treatise of Theophrastus was on a more comprehensive scale than Aristotle's, since it gave occasion for so much more voluminous an historical commentary; and we also gather expressly that it, like the Nicomachean Ethics, comprised seve-

ral books. In fact, EUSTRAT, in Eth. N. 61, b, tells us, obviously from a well-informed source, that the verse ἐν δὲ δικαιοσύνη, &c. (ABIST. Eth. v. 2, 1129, b, 29) was ascribed by Theophrastus in the first book π . $^{\prime}$ H $\theta\hat{\omega}\nu$ to Theognis, and in the first book of the 'Hθικά to Pho-From one of these cvlides. works, or perhaps from both, the sketches of various faults which are collected in the Characters as we have it appear to have been borrowed. That this, as it stands, is an authentic work of Theophrastus is incredible; and that a genuine treatise on Characters by him underlies it. as BRANDIS, iii. 360, thinks possible, is in fact very unlikely. origin of the collection above suggested explains, on the one hand, the fact that it does not form a connected whole, and, on the other, the fact that it exists in several different recensions, as to which cf. Petersen, Theoph. Characteres, p. 56 sqq., SAUPPE, Philodemi Devitiis. I. (Weimar, 1853), p. 8. SPENGEL, Abhandl. der Münchener Akad. Phil., Philos. Kleinschriften, iii. 495, and PETERSEN, Theoph. Characteres, p. 66, have also suggested that this Theophrastian treatise has been used the statement of the ethical teaching of the Peripatetics in Ecl. ii. 242_334, STOBAEUS. HERREN having already connected a part of the account (v. his remarks on p. 254) with THEOPHR.'S book π. εὐτυχίας. In any case, the sources from which

PERIPATETIC SCHOOL: THEOPHRASTUS 401

not, however, fail here to observe a certain deviation from Aristotle's point of view, consisting not so much in new or different conclusions as in a slightly altered estimate of the relative importance of the different elements which it is the problem of ethics to combine. Aristotle had not overlooked the significance of external goods and circumstances for the moral life of man, but he regarded these only as aids and instruments of moral activity, and insisted on their subordination to practical virtue. In Theophrastus, on the other hand, we find springing from his desire to escape from all disturbances a tendency to attach greater importance to outward circumstances. With that preference for theoretic activity which is so deeply rooted in the Aristotelian system, there is united in Theophrastus the demand of the student to be permitted to devote himself without hindrance to his work as well as that limitation to private life which was the outcome of the altered conditions of the time. As a consequence of this his moral tone lacks some of the rigor and force which, in spite of his cautious regard for the external conditions of action, are so unmistakable in Aristotle. The objections, however, which were urged against him. especially by his Stoic opponents, on this ground, are manifestly exaggerated; the difference between him and Aristotle is an insignificant one of emphasis, not a fundamental one of principle.

STOBÆUS drew must have been of a much later date (cf. Zeller, Ph. d. Gr. iii. a, 546 sq.) and we cannot use his statement as evidence concerning the teaching

of Theophrastus himself, except in the one passage (at p. 300) where he is named. As to this, cf. Brandis, p. 358-9. The character here attributed to the ethical views of Theophrastus shows itself especially in his account of happiness, which he holds to be the goal of philosophy as of human activity in general. While he agrees with Aristotle in holding that virtue is absolutely desirable, and regards it, if not alone, at least in a special sense as good, he yet was unable to admit that outward conditions are indifferent. He denied that virtue alone was sufficient for happiness, or that the latter could exist together with extreme forms of physical suffering. He complained of the disturbances to which our

¹ CIC. Fin. v. 29, 86: 'omnis auctoritas philosophiæ, ut ait Theophrastus, consistit in vita beata comparanda. beate enim vivendi cupiditate incensi omnes sumus'—assuming that the words 'ut ait Th.' are to be transposed to this place, as appears probable.

² CICERO, *Legg*. i. 13, 37-8, counts Theophrastus and Aristotle among those 'qui omnia recta et honesta per se expetenda duxerunt, et aut nihil omnino in bonis numerandum, nisi quod per se ipsum laudabile esset, aut certe nullum habendum magnum bonum, nisi quod vere laudari sua sponte posset.' To Theophrastus, however, we ought to ascribe only the latter of these opinions, and this the more confidently because it is probable from the context that CICERO is here, as elsewhere, following ANTIOUHUS, whose eclectic point of view led him to minimise the differences between the ethics of the Stoics and of the Peripatetics, just as much as the Stoics, on their side, were accustomed to exaggerate the distinction. In Tuse, v. 9, 24, CICERO himself tells us that Theophrastus admitted three kinds of Goods—as did Aristotle (supra, vol. ii. p. 151, n. 1), Plato and the Academics (see ZELLER, Ph. d. Gr. i. 808, n. 3, and 879, n. 2).

³ Cic. Tusc. v. 8, 24: 'Theophr. . . . cum statuisset, verbera, tormenta, cruciatus, patriæ eversiones, exilia, orbitates magnam vim habere ad male misereque vivendum [so said Aristotle also : r. supra, vol. ii. pp. 145, 150, np. 1, 2], non est ausus elate et ample loqui, cum humiliter demisseque sentiret . . . vexatur autem ab omnibus [by the Stoics and, above all, the Academics] . . . quod multa disputarit, quamobrem is qui torqueatur, qui crucietur, beatus esse non possit.' Cf. Fin. v. 26 77, 28, 85. It is no doubt the same part of the teaching to which CICERO, in Acad. ii. 43 134, alludes when he remarks that Zeno had expected of virtue more than human nature admitted 'Theophrasto multa diserte copio.

PERIPATETIC SCHOOL: THEOPHRASTUS 408

intellectual life is subjected from the body; 1 of the shortness of human life, which ceases just when we have arrived at some degree of insight; 2 and of the dependence of man upon circumstances which lie beyond his own control.3 It was not indeed his intention to depreciate in this way the worth of virtue, or to seek the essence of happiness in accidental advantages and states, 4 but he certainly seems to attribute to outward relations greater importance than his master had done. The explanation of this trait must be sought, however, in his predilection for the peace and quiet of the life of study. He is not accused of attributing to external goods as such any positive value. 5 Even his

seque [contra] dicente'; and also when he complains, in Acad. i. 9, 33, that 'Theophr. . . . spoliavit virtutem suo decore imbecillamque reddidit, quod negavit in ea sola positum esse beate vivere'; cf. Fin. v. 5, 12: 'Theophrastum tamen adhibeamus ad pleraque, dummodo plus in virtute teneamus, quam ille tenuit, firmitatis et roboris.'

1 Apud PLUT. De Sanit. tu. 24, p. 135, e. In Porph. De Abstin. 1v. 20, p. 373 we have the saying: πολὸ τῷ σώματι τελεῖν ἐνοίκιον τὴν ψυχήν: that is, as it is explained in the Plutarch Fragment i. 2, 2, p. 696, the λύπαι, φόβοι, ἐπιθυμίαι, ζηλοτυπίαι.

² Vide supra, vol. ii. p. 351,

³ CIC. Tusc. v. 9, 25: 'Vexatur idem Theophrastus et libris et scholis omnium philosophorum, quod in Callisthene suo laudavit illam sententiam: vitam regit fortuna, non sapientia.' Cf. Plut. Cons. ad Apoll. 6, p. 104, d.

4 Cf. supra vol. ii p. 402, n. 1. The story about Pericles in PLUT. Pericles, 38, can only be intended to lead up to a negative answer to the question which is there proposed by Theophrastus, εί πρός τὰς τύχας τρέπεται τὰ ήθη καὶ κινούμενα τοῖς τῶν σωμάτων πάθεσιν έξίσταται της άρετης. Ας to the words cited from Callisthenes, they are (as CICERO himself remarked and indicated by his metrical translation) a phrase of some other writer, probably a tragic or comic poet, which Theophrastus quoted; and, besides, it would be necessary, before we could draw a safe inference from them, that we should know the context in which Theophrastus introduced them. An isolated excerpt such as this in an attack by an opponent is not a safe basis for a conclusion as to Theophrastus's real teaching.

⁵ He is blamed merely because he holds that sorrows and misfortune are a hindrance to statements about pleasure closely accord with the Aristotelian teaching.¹ But that preference for the scientific life which he shared with Aristotle² was in his case not free from one-sidedness, and he held himself aloof from all that might in any degree disturb him in the practice of it. We see this especially in the fragment of his work upon Marriage;³ from which he dissuaded the philosopher, both on the ground that the care of a house and family withdrew him from his work, and that he especially must be self-sufficient and

happiness: but this is genuine Aristotelian teaching: v. sup. vol. ii.p. 402, n. 3. But, on the other hand, he required (ap. Stob. Floril. iv. 283, No. 202, Mein.), that men should by simplicity of life make themselves independent of external things; he desired, ap. PLUT. Lyc. 10 (see PORPH. De Abst. iv. 4, p. 304), Cup. Div. 8, p. 527, to see man become by a proper use of wealth ἄπλουτος καλ ά(ηλος; and he finds (ap. Cic. Off. ii. 16, 56) the chief value of riches in the fact that they serve for 'magnificentia et apparatio popularium munerum,'

In the passage given by ASPASIUS (Class. Journal, xxix. 115; cf. Brandis, iii. 381) THEOPH. says, as Aristotle also might have said, that it is not the desire of a pleasure which is blameworthy, but the passionateness of the desire and the want of self-control. According to OLYMPIODORUS (in Phileb. 269, Stallb., he maintained against Plato, μη είναι άληθη και ψευδη ήδονην, άλλα πάσας άληθεῖς. By this, however, he cannot have meant to deny the differences in

quality between different sorts of pleasure, which the Peripatetic school always admitted. meant merely, as is clear from the fuller explanation given OLYMPIODORUS, that the ascription of 'truth' and 'falsehood' to pleasure is inappropriate, because every pleasure is for the man who feels it a true pleasure, and the predicate 'false' is therefore never suitable. If the words ή δητέον &c. which follow still refer to THEOPH., it seems that he even admitted the use of the words 'true' and 'false' in this connection, if only they were properly explained.

² CIC. Fim. v 4, 11, says of both, 'vitæ autem degendæ ratio maxume quidem illis placuit quieta, in contemplatione et cognitione posita rerum,'&c. Ib. 25, 73, and Ad Att ii. 16, we are told that Dicæarchus gave the preference to the practical life, and Theophrastus to the theoretical.

³ HIERON. Adv. Jovin. i. 47, iv. 6, 189, Mart. Vide Theophrasti Opp. (ed. Schneid.) v. 221 sqq.

able to dispense with family life. It is quite consistent with this attitude of thought that Theophrastus should shun, as a hindrance to perfect happiness, such external fatalities and sufferings as threaten freedom and peace of mind. His nature was not adapted for the battle with the world and with the ills of life. The time and strength which this would demand would be withdrawn from the scientific labours which were his only happiness; it would interrupt quiet contemplation and the intellectual peace that accompanied it. Therefore he avoided everything which might involve him in such a conflict. Both the Stoic and the Epicurean school at this time aimed at making the wise man independent and self-sufficient. Theophrastus pursued the same end, except that, true to the spirit of the Peripatetic

1 Theophrastus in this passage is answering the question, Whether the wise man would take a wife? He begins by saying that he would, 'si pulchra esset, si bene morata, si honestis parentibus, si ipse sanus ac dives.' But he promptly goes on to say that all these conditions are seldom combined, and therefore it is more prudent to avoid matrimony. Primum enim impediri studia philosophiæ, nec posse quemquam libris et uxori pariter inservire.' The best possible teacher might be to be found abroad, but one could not go to seek him if one was tied to a wife. Again, a wife has no end of costly wants. She fills her husband's ears, as Theophrastus explains in lively mimicry, with hundreds of complaints and reproaches, night and day. A poor

woman is costly to keep: a rich one is unendurable. A man does not discover his wife's faults until after marriage. Her de-mands, her jealousies, her insistences on what is due to her and her family are endless. A beautiful wife is hardly to be kept faithful; yet a wife without beauty is a burden, &c., &c. It is wiser to leave one's housekeeping to a faithful servant, and to trust to one's friends in case of sickness. As for company, a man needs no wife: the wise man is never alone, for he has the wise men of all ages for his companions; and if men fail him he can speak with God. Nor should one set store by children, for they often bring one rather trouble and expense than joy or help. For heirs, a man does better to choose his friends.

ethics, he refused to overlook the external conditions of the self-sufficient life.

As in the points hitherto discussed the difference discernible between Theophrastus and Aristotle is one of degree only, which does not admit of being strictly defined, so also in the remaining portions of his moral philosophy which are known to us it is but seldom that any important divergence of view is visible. Theophrastus, like Aristotle, defined virtue as the preservation of the true mean according to reason between two vices, or, more accurately, as the quality of the will directed to this end, under the guidance of insight.²

We should not, however, be justified in referring to Theophrastus the line of argument set out in CIC. Fin. v. 6, 17, 9, 24 sqq. and STOB. Ecl. ii. 246 sqq., in which the Stoic dogma of the life according to nature is brought into relation with the Peripatetic theory of the different kinds of Good: for Cicero's account is derived, according to c. 3, 8, 25, 75, 27, 81 from Antiochus, and that in Stobæus (ZELLER, Ph. d. Gr. iii. a, 546 sq. 2nd ed.) from Arius Didymus, and the later Eclecticism has manifestly coloured both of these sources

2 Stob. Eol. ii. 300: το οδυ προς ήμας μέσον άριστον, οἶον, φησὶν δ Θεόφραστος, ἐν ταῖς ἐντυχίαις ὁδὶ μὲν πολλὰ διελθών καὶ μακρῶς άδολεσχήσας, ὁδὶ δ' ολίγα καὶ [which Gaisf. unnecessarily deletes] οὐδὲ τὰναγκαῖα οὖτος δὲ αὐτὰ δι ἔδει μὴ τὸν καιρὸν ἔλαβεν. αὕτη μεσότης προς ἡμας, αὕτη γὰρ ὑφ' ἡμῶν ἄρισται τῷ λόγῳ. δι' δ ἔστιν ἡ ἀρετὴ ἔξις προαιρετικὴ, ἐν μεσότητι οὖσα τῆ πρὸς ἡμας, ἀρισμένη λόγῳ, καὶ

ώς αν δ φούνιμος δρίσειεν [this is word for word the Aristotelian definition; supra, vol. ii. p. 163, 2], είτα παραθέμενος τινάς συζυγίας, ἀκολούθως τῷ ὑφηγητῆ (ARIST. Eth. N. ii. 7) σκοπείν έπειτα καθ' έκαστον ἐπάγων ἐπειράθη του τρύπου τοῦτου [perhaps we should read σκοπείν ἐπειράθη κ. ἔκ. ἐπάγων τ. τρ. τ.] · ἐλήφθησαν δὲ παραδειγμάτων χάριν αίδε σωφροσύνη, άκολασία, αναισθησία · πραότης, όργιλότης, αναλγησία · ἀνδρεία, θρασύτης, δειλία δικαιοσύνη • έλευθεριότης, ασωτία, ανελευθερία · μεγαλοπρέπεια, μικροπρέπεια. σαλακωνία. After an explanation on these lines of the nature of the virtues named, he adds, at p. 306: τοῦτο μέν τὸ τῶν ήθικῶν ἀρετῶν εἶδος παθητικὸν καὶ κατὰ μεσότητα θεωρούμενον, δ δή καί την ἀντακολουθίαν έχει [add τῆ φρονήσει], πλην οὐχ όμοίως, άλλ' ή μεν φρόνησις ταις ήθικαις κατά το ίδιον, αθται δ' έκε νη κατά συμβεβηκός. ὅτι [read δ] μέν γὰρ δίκαιος ἐστὶ καὶ φρόνιμος, δ γὰρ τοιόσδε αὐτὸν λόγος εἰδοποιεῖ, οὐ

In the description of the different virtues and their opposite vices we cannot doubt that he went into greater detail than his master, 1 although we can follow his work here only in respect of some of the vices under the uncertain guidance of the Characters. He did not, however, conceal from himself that the distinction between the separate virtues is to a certain degree a vanishing one, inasmuch as they all find in moral insight a common root and connecting principle.2 That

μην ὅτι [δ] φρόνιμος καὶ δίκαιος κατὰ τὸ ἴδιον, ἀλλ' ὅτι τῶν καλῶν κάγαθών κοινώς πρακτικός φαύλου δ' οὐδενός (i.e. φρόνησις is contained in the idea of justice immediately, since justice is the adjustment of relations concerning rights according to φρόνησις; but justice is contained in the idea of φρόνησις only mediately). -Down to this point the extract seems to come from THEOPHRAS-TUS, because there is an unbroken grammatical connection from the εἶτα παραθέμενος, &c., which can only refer to him. The reading ἐν ταῖς ἐντυχίαις in the second line of the passage is rightly supported by PETERSEN, Theophr. Characteres, 67 sq., against HEEREN'S conjecture, èv τοῖς περί εὐτυχίας. PETERSEN. however, himself distorts THEO-PHRASTUS'S meaning (which in this evidently incomplete excerpt is not very clearly expressed) when he reads καὶ μην τον καιρον έλαβεν, in place of μη τ. κ. ἔλ. For the words οὖτος . . . ἔλαβεν indicate. not the correct course, but a third kind of error, that, namely, in which what is done may be right in itself but not right in relation to the particular circumstances of the persons acting: where, that is to say, the μεσότης πρός τὸ πράγμα is observed, but not the μεσότης πρός ημας (cf. supra,

vol. ii. p. 162, n. 3).

This cannot be said to be proved with any certainty (as has been already pointed out), from what we find in STOB. Ecl. ii. 316 sqq., and Cic. Fin. v. 23. 65. It is, however, probable in itself, arguing on the analogy of the general lines of Theophrastus's work, and it is made still more probable when we remember the detailed description of a series of failings which we have in the Characters. We are told by HERMIPPUS (ap. ATHEN. i. 21, a: cf. supra, vol. ii. p. 352, п. 1), probably with some exaggeration (as Brandis, p. 359, justly remarks), that Theophrastus in his lectures carried even a mimicry outward characteristics to great lengths. His tendency to and talent in such pictures of detail is obvious from the Fraom. just described at p. 405, n. 1, supra. The notice of Adrantus (supra, p. 400) is probably one of numerous examples introduced by him to illustrate his Ethics.

² ALEX. APHR. De An. 155,

one who so preferred scientific to practical activity distinguished dianoëtic from moral virtue cannot be doubted; nor could he easily avoid touching upon it in his *Ethics*; but whether he here discussed it at length it is impossible to tell.¹ Nor have we fuller information as to his treatment of the passions.² We are only informed that he maintained, seemingly against Zeno, the naturalness and inevitableness of certain emotions, such as anger against wrong-doing and under excitement.³ For the rest he demands that no one should act under the influence of passion—for instance, that no one should inflict punishment in anger.⁴ Of the sins

b: πάσαι αν εποιντο αι άρεται τῆ φρονήσει οὐδε γὰρράδιον τῶν ἀρετῶν κατὰ τὸν Θεόφραστον τὰς διαφορὰς οὕτω λαβεῖν, ὡς μὴ κατὰ τι κοινωνεῖν αὐτὰς ἀλλήλαις. γίνονται δ' αὐταῖς αι προσηγορίαι κατὰ τὸ πλεῖστον. Cf. the end of the passage from Stob Eus quoted in the preceding note. Ibid. p. 270: φρόνησις decides, both for itself and for all other virtues, what is and what is not to be done, τῶν δ' ἀλλων ἐκάστην ἀποτέμνεσθαι μόνα τὰ καθ' ἐαυτήν.

1 That he did not, PETERSEN, ib. 66, concludes (with SPENGEL, Abhandl. der München. Akad. philot.-philos. Kteinschriften, iii. 495) from the absence of the Dianoëric Virtues in the Magna Moralia. It is, however, to be observed, on the one hand (as BRANDIS, ii. 6, 1566, iii. 361, suggests), that these virtues are not in fact unknown to that book, and, on the other hand, that it is impossible to prove that the book here follows Theophrastus. In STOBÆUS, Ecl. ii.

316, we find the ἔξις θεωρητική, to which belong σοφία, ἐπιστήμη, and φρόνησις, distinguished from the ἔξις πρακτική. Since, however, Aristotle bimself (see supra, vol. ii. p. 178, n. 1) only discussed the theoretic activities in his Ethics so far as was necessary for the complete explanation of the ethical aspect of life, we cannot assume that Theophr. treated the subject in any other way.

² SIMPL. Schol. in Ar. 70, b, 3, citing the π . π aθῶν (d. q. r. supra, vol. ii. p. 399), tells us that Theophr. distinguished the notions of μῆνις, ὀργὴ and θυμὸς by the formula of μᾶλλον καὶ ἦττον.

³ SENECA, De Ira, i. 14, 1, 12, 1, 3; BARLAAM, Eth. sec. Sto. ii. 13 (Bibl. Max. patr. xxvi. 37 D, and apud BRANDIS, iii. 356). Against the Stoics were doubtless also directed the arguments mentioned by SIMPL. Categ. Schol. 86, b, 28, as to the mutability of the virtues.

⁴ STOB. Floril. 19, 12.

of passion he declared those of desire to be worse than anger, since it is worse to succumb to pleasure than to pain.¹

Theophrastus, like Aristotle, had devoted special attention to the moral relations which rest upon community of life. We know of special treatises written by him upon Friendship, Love, and Marriage.² He set the highest value upon Friendship—provided it is of the right kind, which, however, is not often the case.³ He even went so far as to permit slight violations of duty if the interests of a friend could thereby be greatly furthered, holding that in this case the qualitatively higher worth of moral virtue was outweighed by the quantitative preponderance of the counterbalancing advantage to a friend, just as the value of a little piece of gold might be exceeded by a large quantity of copper.⁴ All the more necessary must prudence in the selection of friends have appeared to him.⁵ The three

² Supra, vol. ii. p. 399, n. 2. Theophrastus's three books on Friendship were extensively used by CICERO for his *De Amicitia*: cf. Gell. N. A. i. 3, 11.

21-28, who gives partly the Greek text, partly a translation and summary. CICERO (Amic. 11 sqq. 17, 61) passes, as Gellius rightly complains, much too lightly over this point. He declaims passionately against the view, which nobody set up, that a man should commit treason or other gross crimes to oblige a friend; but at the end he concedes in two words, that if a friend's interests are very deeply involved, 'declinandum sit de via, modo ne summa turpitudo se-quatur.' Brandis (iii. 353) sees in this a criticism of the teaching of Theophrastus; but this does not seem to be necessary. ⁵ PLUT. Frat. Am. 8, p. 482,

¹ M. AUREL. πρ. ἐαυτ. ii. 10, Schol. apud CRAMER, Anecd. Paris. i. 174. So also Aristotle: . supra, vol. ii. p. 190, n. 1 and p. 113, n. 1.

³ HIERON. in Micham, iii. 1548, Mart.: 'scripsit Theophrastus tria de amicitia volumina, omni eam praeferens charitati, et tamen raram in rebus humanis esse contestatus est.' Cf. the remark quoted supra, vol. ii, p. 405, n. 1, that to be cared for by a friendis better than to be tended by a wife.

⁴ See GELL. N. A. i. 3, § 10,

kinds of friendship which Aristotle had distinguished he also recognises, and doubtless in his treatise upon them made many fine observations upon the peculiarities of each of them and the divers relations in which friendship involves us. He has much less sympathy with the more passionate affection of the lover: to him this is an irrational desire which overpowers the soul, and, like wine, may only be enjoyed in moderation. This, however, is not the ground of his own disinclination to marriage; upon which, notwithstanding, as upon the education and the conduct of women, he may be credited with having said much that is true.

Of Theophrastus's political writings we know, apart

b (STOB. Floril. 84, 14; SENECA, Ep. i. 3, 2; see Schneider, v. 289): we must try friends, before we love them: with our family, the converse is true.

1 EUSTRAT in Eth. N. 141 a

¹ EUSTRAT. in Eth. N. 141, a (BRANDIS, iii. 352, by a slip refers it to Aspasius); Theophrastus and Eudemus held that friendships of persons in unequal relation were divisible into the same three classes as friendships of equality. Cf. Eth. Eud. vii. 4 init., and see supra, vol. ii. p. 196,

² Examples are the citations given in Gellius, viii. 6: 'In' reconciliations with friends explanations are dangerous:' Plut. Frat. Am. 20, p. 490: 'If friends have everything in common, it must especially be true that they have their respective friends in common:' Plut. Cato Min. c. 37; 'Excessive friendship easily passes over into hate.'

Stob. Floril. 3, 50 ad fin.: 'Itis better δανείσαντα φρονίμως ἀπολαβεῖν φιλικῶς, ἡ συναλλάξαντα φιλανθρώπως κομίσασθαι φιλαπεχθημόνως' Further interesting fragments of this work of Theophr. will be found in Heylbut, De Theophr. Libr. π. φιλίας, 13 sqq.

³ Stob. *Floril*. 64, 27, 29; ATHEN. xiii. 562, e.

⁴ Supra, vol. ii. p. 405, n. 1.
⁵ See Stob. Floril. 74, 42: a woman should neither wish to see nor to be seen; ibid. 85, 7: not politics but housekeeping is her sphere; ibid. vol. iv. 193; No. 31 Mein. education in γράμματα is necessary for girls also, but it should not be carried beyond what is needful for housekeeping.

⁶ In the passage cited in Stob. Floril. 3, 50, he insists on sympathy and friendliness towards wife and children.—The

from a number of historical statements, only the general fact that here also he endeavoured to supplement the Aristotelian teaching and that to Aristotle's account of the different kinds of States he added a collection of laws. In his own investigations into the nature of the State he gave special prominence to the discussion of the magisterial offices, and to the treatment of the problems that arise in connection with special circumstances. It is not to be supposed that Theophrastus deviated in any respect from the principles of Aristotle's political doctrine; and if in addition to the national bond of

remaining fragments of Theophrastus's ethical texts give us only isolated remarks, often keen and finely observed, but without any special philosophic interest. Such are the apophthegms preserved by STOBÆUS in the Florilegium (see the index thereto) and by PLUTARCH, Agis, c, 2, and Sertur. c. 13: the statement as to his commendation of hospitality in Cic. Off. ii. 18, 64: the remark (probably aimed at Anaxagoras) as to the relation between pleasure and pain, cited by ASPASIUS in Arist. Eth. (Classical Journal, xxix.) 114. The note ap. ULYMPIOD. in Phileb. 169 as to the threefold ψεῦδος, relates, not to moral falsehood, but to the possible meanings of ψευδής ήδουή (cf. supra, vol. ii. p. 404, u. 1.)

For almost everything we know of his politics we are indebted to CICEBO. We know, in fact, that he was one of Cicero's favourite political authors (Ad Att. ii. 9, 2). Cicero tells us, not only that Theophrastus had thoroughly worked

out a political philosophy, with great knowledge of the subject (Divin. ii. 1, 3: the 'locus de republica' was, he says, 'a Platone Aristotele Theophrasto totaque Peripateticorum familia tractatus uberrime'; Legg. iii. 6, 14: 'Theophrastus vero institutus ab Aristotele habitavit, ut scitis, in eo genere rerum'), but he gives us further details as to the contents of his political writings. Legg. iii. 5, 14: 'Sed hujus loci de magistratibus sunt propria quædam, a Theophrasto primum, deinde a Dione [? Diogene] Stoico quæsita subtilius.' Fin. v. 4, 14: Omnium fere civitatum, non Græciæ solum, sed etiam barbariæ, ab Aristotele mores instituta disciplinas, a Theophrasto leges eriam cognovimus; cumque uterque eorum docuisset, qualem in republica principem esse conveniret, pluribus præterea cum scripsisset, quis esset optimus reipublicæ status: hoc amplius Theophrastus, quæ essent in republica inclinationes rerum et momenta temporum, quibus esset moderandum utcumque res posfellow-citizenship he gives express prominence to the natural brotherhood of all men, yet this is quite in harmony with the spirit of his master, however significant the approach in it may be to the cosmopolitanism of the Stoics.

In one of his ethical writings Theophrastus expressed views upon sacrifice in which the ascetic Aristotelian

tularet.'-Of Theophrastus's poliworks we know from tical Diogenes, &c., the vous in twentyfour books (see Fr. 97-106; the έπιτομη νόμων in 10 bks. can only be a later extract from the νόμοι); 1 bk. π. νόμων and 1 bk. π. παρανόμων (Diog. 47), perhaps also excerpts from the vouci: 3 bks. νομοθετών (the title was no doubt νομοθέται or περί νομοθ.); 4 bks. πολιτικών έθων; 6 bks. πολιτικών (D. 45), and again 2 bks. πολιτικών (D. 50), which were probably a duplicate or excerpt of the others Junless we are to read in D. 50 with COBET and HENKEL (Stud. z. Gesch. d. griech. Lehre vom Staat, p. 20), not πολιτικών, but, on the analogy of the Aristotelian πολιτικός (supra, vol. 1, p. 59) πολιτικοῦ]; 1 bk. π. τῆs άρίστης πολιτείας (D. 45) or (D. 49) πως άριστ' αν πόλις οίκοιτο: 2 bks. ἐπιτομὴ τῆς Πλάτωνος πολιτείας; 1 bk. π. βασιλείας (D. 42) and 1 bk. π. τυραννίδος (D. 45), both probably combined in the 2 bks. π. βασιλείας (D. 49); πρός Κάσσανδρον π. βασιλείας (D. 47), which according to ATHEN. iv. 144, e, was also ascribed to Sosibius; 1 bk. π. παιδείας βασιλέως; 4 bks. πολιτικών πρός τοὺς καιροὺς (to which also the 2 bks. καιρῶν, D. 50, may be referred). This work is often cited (by CIC. Fin. v. 4, 11 as the 'momenta temporum').—Further notes as to these writings and the evidence about them will be found in USENER, Anal. Th. 6 sqq., HENKEL, ibid. 19 sqq.; and as to the vbuoi in particular, see USENER, Rhein. Mus. xvi. 470 sqq.

¹ See the passage apud PORPH. De Abst. iii. 25, cited supra, vol. ii. p. 396, n. 1.

2 See the passage from Eth. viii. 13, 1161, b, 5 referred to supra, p. 219, n. 5, where Aristotle says that a friendship with a slave is possible, not indeed δ δούλος, but δ ἄνθρωπος δοκεί γὰρ εἶναί τι δίκαιον παντὶ ἀνθρώπω πρὸς πάντα τὸν δυνάμενον κοινωνῆσαι νόμου καὶ συνθήκης καὶ φιλία δ η, καθ' ὅσον ἄνθρωπος.

s Cf. Bernays, Theophr. üb. Frommigh. 100sq. His remark that in the Aristotelean Ethics there is no note of the love of humanity must be somewhat limited by the passage just cited; but we may concede that in Theophrastus this side of things, which in Aristotle was far less prominent, obtained much greater importance in conformity with the spirit of the new epoch which came with Alexander.

followed Empedocles and anticipated Porphyry.1 not only sought historically to prove that originally only the simplest products of nature 2 were used for sacrifices, and that animal offerings especially were of later origin.3 but he also demanded that men should abstain from the latter, and confine themselves to the more harmless presentation of fruits of the field.4 slaughter, moreover, of animals in general and the use of their flesh, in so far as the former was not rendered necessary by their ferocity, the latter by lack of other provisions, he was consistent enough to condemn, on the ground that these beasts are akin to us, and therefore possess rights as against us which forbid us forcibly to rob them of life.5 He did not, however, on this account desire to renounce the national rites of sacrifice.6 He merely said that their moral value lay, not in the greatness of the gift, but in the disposition of the giver.7

¹ The π. εὐσεβείας, d. q. v. supra, vol. ii. p. 355, n. 2.

² E.g. first grass, then fruits; first water, then honey, and, still

later, wine.

³ PORPH. De Abstin. ii. 5-8, 12-15, 20-1, pp. 39, 56, 62, 79, &c., Bern. He dealt with human sacrifices (ibid. c. 7) and with the peculiar customs of the Jews as to sacrifices (ii. 26); see, as to the mistakes in the latter section, BERNAYS, p. 109 sqq. 184-5.

⁴ *Ibid.* c. 12 sqq. 22 sqq.

* Ibid. c. 12-18, 22-23, and

cf. supra, ii. p. 396.

belief in Demonology, cannot be taken from Theophrastus; and, in fact, Porphyry does not ascribe it to him. Nor have we any sufficient ground in PLUT. Def. Orac. 20, p. 420, to assert that Theophrastus believed in Dæmons. Even if it be true that the passage correctly represents his attitude to the belief, it would only prove that, while he could not accept it in the prevailing form, he did not feel free to reject it absolutely.

⁷ Apred Stob. Floril. 3, 50, he says: χρη τοίνυν τον μέλλοντα θαυμασθήσεσθαι περί το θείον φιλοθύτην εἶναι μη τῷ πολλὰ θύειν ἀλλὰ τῷ πυκνὰ τιμῶν τὸ θεῖον τὸ μὲν γὰρ εὐπορίας τὸ δ' ὁσιότητος σημεῖον, and ap. Porph. De Abstin. ii. c.

⁶ Tbid. ii. 43, p. 184: ωστε κατὰ τὰ εἰρημένα Θεοφράστφ θύσυμεν καὶ ἡμεῖs. The theory which Porphyry here sets out, that this view was founded on a

His whole conception of religion was undoubtedly identical with that of his master.¹

From the numerous works of Theophrastus upon Rhetoric² only a few not very important observations are preserved.³ Of his works upon the theory of art⁴

19, he goes on to say that the costliness of the offering is not the important thing, but rather the purity of the intention; for the Godhead will be best pleased by the right direction of that in us which is akin to Himself, and most divine: with which cf. ARIST. Eth. ix. 9, 1179, a, 24.

¹ We have shown this of his theology, see supra, vol. ii. p. 370 sq. As to matters touching popular religion and its myths, it would be quite in the spirit of Aristotle if Theophrastus explained the Prometheus myth by the theory that Prometheus was the first teacher of men (Fr. 50, b. Schol. in Apoll. Rhod. ii. 1248), and the myth of the Nymphs nursing Dionysos by reference to the 'tears' of the vine (ATHEN. xi. 465, b).

 2 De quo cf. USENER, Anal. Theophr. p. 20 whose conjecture, that the words $\epsilon'' \delta \eta \iota \zeta'' \pi \epsilon \rho l \tau \epsilon \chi \nu \hat{\omega} \nu \delta \eta \tau \rho \rho \nu \hat{\omega} \nu$ are the general title covering the books separately set out in the list, seems very

probable.

s The definition of the σκῶμμα as ὁνειδισμὸς ἀμαρτίας παρεσχηματισμένος (PLUT. Qu. Conr. ii. 1, 4, 7, p. †31), which is certainly taken from one of the rhetorical books (or perhaps, as Brandis, iii. 366, suggests, from the π. γελοίου) and a few similar details (see Fr. 93-96, the Index to the Rhetores Graeci s. v. 'Theophr.,'

CIC. De Invent. i. 35, 61), and also the statement of Ammonius (Theophr. Fr. 74 sq. cf. supra, vol. ii. p. 363, n. 3) that Theophr. distinguished in speech a double relation—that to the hearers, and that to the subject in hand. With the former Rhetoric and Poetics are concerned, and these studies accordingly have to do with choice of expression, charm of utterance, pleasing and effective presentation of the subject. &c : τῆς δέ γε πρὺς τὰ πράγματα τοῦ λόγου σχέσεως δ φιλόσοφος προηγουμένως έπιμελήσεται, τό τε ψεῦδος διελέγχων καὶ τὸ ἀληθès ἀποδεικνύς. AMMONIUS cites this sentence to prove that the π . έρμηνείας dealt only with the ἀποφαντικός λόγος: it must accordingly have referred in the text of Theophr. only to the form of oral statement, and it cannot have been intended as a statement of the distinction between philosophy in general and Rhetoric and Poetics.

⁴ Diog. 47-8, 43 mentions two π . ποιητικήs, and one π . κωμφδίας; ATHEN. in vi. 261, d, names the latter, and in vii. 318, a, also the π . γελοίου, but what he professes to cite from it is quite incredible. The statement that Tragedy was $\hat{\eta}$ ρωϊκήs τύχης περίστασις (DioMED. De Oratione, p. 484, Putsch) could not have satisfied Theophrastus as a complete definition, after the elabo-

the books on music, which were highly valued by the ancients,2 are the only ones of which we have any detailed information. Even this for the most part refers to the physical explanation of sounds, and has already been dealt with in that connection.3 Otherwise we learn merely that Theophrastus ascribed the effect of music to a movement of the soul.4 by means of which we are delivered from the trouble and annoyance caused by certain affections; 5 that he further

rate investigation of the subject which Aristotle had already provided.

¹ PLUT. N. P. Suav. V. sec. Epic. 13, 4, p. 1095, argues thus against Epicurus: τί λέγεις, & 'Επίκουρε; κιθαρωδών και αὐλητών εωθεν άκροασόμενος είς το θέατρον βαδίζεις, ἐν δὲ συμποσίω Θεοφράστου περί συμφωνιών διαλεγομένου καί 'Αριστοξένου περὶ μεταβολών καὶ 'Αριστοφάνους περὶ 'Ομήρου τὰ ὧτα καταλήψη ταις χερσί; He thus places Theophrastus on a level with the famous musician Ari-The reference to stoxenus. Theophrastus cannot be explained (BRANDIS, iii. 369) of table talk about Music found in one of his books or otherwise published by him, any more than reference to Aristoxenus could be.

² Π. μουσικη 2 bks. (D. 47 cf. infra, n. 3); άρμονικών α' (D. 46); π. δυθμῶν α' (D. 50). For a Fragm. from bk. ii, π. μουσ. (Fr. 89) see supra, vol. ii. p. 379, p. 3.

³ Supra, vol. ii. p. 379, n. 3. 4 So CENSORIN. Di. Nat. 12, 1: 'haec [musica] enim sive in voce tantummodo est . . . sive, ut Aristoxenus, in voce et cor-

terea in animi motu, ut putat Theophrastus.'

5 At the end of Fr. 89 he says: μία δὲ φύσις τῆς μουσικῆς. κίνησις της ψυχης for, as he put it earlier, κίνημα μελωδητικόν περί την ψυχην, ή κατά ἀπόλυσιν γιγνομένη τῶν διὰ τὰ πάθη κακιῶν, ἢ εί μη ην. The manifestly defective clause at the end is amended by Brandis, p. 369, by reading, not ή κατά ἀπόλ., but ή κ. ἀπόλ. meaning: 'Music is fitted to give us relief from the pains that arise from the emotions, or to awake them where they do not exist.' This sense, however, would require, instead of εἰ μὴ ην either δπου οὐκ ἐστίν or ἐὰν μη \$\textit{\eta}\$. Besides, the sense so obtained is not altogether satisfactory. ZELLER suggests that the text may have been somewhat as follows: η κ. ἀπόλ. βέλτιον έχεινήμας ποιεί ή εί μη ήν: 'Music is a movement of the soul which brings relief from the pains produced by the emotions, and so produces in us a higher kind of wellbeing than we should have had, if these emotions had never been aroused'-which is exactly the Aristotelian idea of Catharporis motu, sive in his et præ- sis: cf. supra, vol. ii. p. 309 sqq. enumerated three of these affections: pain, pleasure, and possession; ¹ that he connected the lively impression produced by music with the peculiar susceptibility of the auditory sense; ² and that he held that even physical disease could be cured by music.³ So far as we may infer from these few fragments the nature of Theophrastus's theory of art, it cannot have been different from that of Aristotle

1 PLUT. Qu. Conv. 1. 5, 2, p. 623: λέγει δὲ Θεόφρ. μουσικῆς ἀρχὰς τρεῖς εἶναι, λύπην, ἡδονὴν, ἐνθουσιασμὸν, ὡς ἐκάστου τούτων παρατρέποντος ἐκ τοῦ συνήθους καὶ ἐγκλίνοντος τὴν φωνήν. See also JOH. LYDUS, De Mens. ii. 7, p. 54, Röth., and in CRAMER'S Aneod. Paris. i. 317, 15.

² PLUT. De Aud. 2, p. 38, a: περὶ τῆς ἀκουστικῆς αἰσθήσεως, ἡν ὁ Θεόφρ. παθητικωτάτην εἶναί φησι πασῶν; whether the further arguments are also taken from Theo.

phrastus it is impossible to say.

³ ATHEN. xiv. 624, a: δτι δὲ καὶ νόσους ἱᾶται μουσική Θεόφρ. ἱστόρησεν ἐν τῷ περὶ ἐνθουσιασμυῦ, ἰσχιακοὺς φάσκων ἀνόσους διατελεῖν, εἰ καταυλήσοι τις τοῦ τόπου τῆ φρυγιστὶ ἀρμονία. The like in PLIN. H. N. xxviii. 2, 21. We are told that viper bites and other hurts were, according to Theophra, healed by flute-playing (GELL. iv. 13, 2, APOLLON. Mirabil. c. 49).

CHAPTER XIX

EUDEMUS, ARISTOXENUS, DICÆARCHUS, AND OTHERS

NEXT in importance to Theophrastus of the immediate disciples of Aristotle¹ comes Eudemus of Rhodes.² Rivalling Theophrastus in erudition, he also wrote numerous treatises on the Peripatetic philosophy and the history of science.³ All that we know of him,

' We know nothing further of his life. He is often referred to as 'the Rhodian' and as 'the scholar of Aristotle,' to distinguish him from other men of the same name (v. FRITZSCHE, Eth. As he seems to Eud. xiv). have framed his Logic under Theophrastus's personal influence, but corresponded by letter with him about Aristotle's Physics (v. supra, vol. i. p. 136, n. 2, p. 143), we may conjecture that he lived for a time at Athens under Theophrastus's teaching, and that he afterwards went to his home, or to some other country. infra, p. 419, n. 2.

² He is so described in the story referred to supra, vol. i. p. 39, n. 1, and in the statemert (ibid. p. 80, n.) that he edited Aristotle's Metaphysics. This story, however, is made doubly improbable by the statement (ASCLEF. Schol in Ar. 519, b,

38 sqq.) that Aristotle sent it to him to ask if it should be published, for the book is obviously incomplete; cf. Hist.-phil. Abh. d. Berl. Akad. 1877, p. 156.

We know of the following books by Eudemus (for the passages where they are named see FRITZSCHE, ibid. xv., and for the Fragments, see SPENGEL, Eud. Fragmenta, ed. ii. 1870): Γεωμετρικαλ ίστορίαι, 'Αριθμητική ίστορία, 'Αστρολογικαί ίστορίαι, the chief and almost the unique source of all later information as to the ancient mathematicians and astronomers. To these may perhaps be added a history of theological ideas; at least, that he went into this inquiry closely, and that in this connection (following Aristotle: cf. supra, vol. i. p. 57, n.) he dealt with the cosmogonies of Orpheus, Homer, Hesiod, Acusilaus, Epimenides, and Pherecydes, and however, goes to show that his merit as a philosopher consisted far more in his appropriation and propagation of Aristotelian doctrines than in any independent development of them. In logic, indeed, as has been already shown, he found it necessary to deviate from his master on isolated points, and in one or two not unimportant respects to supplement the Aristotelian theory; but

with the Babylonian. also Zoroastrian, Phoenician, and (less accurately) the Egyptian theories as to the origin of the world, we learn from DAMASC. De Princ. c. 124-5, p. 382 sqq.; cf. Diog. L. Proæm. 9 (Fr. 117-8); cf. also supra, vol. ii. p. 352, n. 4 fin. In the same connection he may well have treated of the Platonic Cosmogony, and the remark preserved by PLUT. An. Procr. 7, 3, p. 1015, as to Matter, may have belonged to this discussion, although it might also belong to his Physics. There were also a π. γωνίας, an 'Αναλυτικά in at least two books (supra, i.p. 67, n. 1, ii. p. 358, n. 3; Fr. 109 sqq.), a π. λέξεωs (supra, vol.i. p. 66, n. 1; Fr. 113 sqq.); but probably not Categories or π. έρμηνείας (supra, vol. i. p. 65). Then there was the Physics, which we shall speak of presently, and the Ethics, of which we still possess the first three books and the last (supra, vol. i. p. 98, n. 1). A zoological work was also current under his name in later times, as we know from APUL. Apol. c. 36 (Fr. 109), ÆLIAN, Hist. An. iii. 20, 21, iv. 8, 45, 53, 56, v. 7; but what Ælian tells us of its contents does not make for its authenticity. To this Eudemus Rose (Arist. Libr. Ord. 174) also assigns

those anatomical inquiries for which a writer named 'Eudemus' is mentioned with praise by GALEN (vide Index; Rose, ibid.; SPRENGEL, Gesch. d. Arzneik 4, ed. i. 539-40), RUFUS, Eph. i. 9, 20, and the Homeric Scholiast (v. Fritzsche, ibid. xx. 49-50). Since this 'Eudemus,' however, is not in any of these places described as the Rhodian, and since. according to GALEN (De Ut. Anat. 3, vol. ii. 890, De Semine, ii. 6, vol. iv. 646, Hippocr. et Plat. Plac. viii. 1, vol. v. 651, Loc. Affect. iii, 14, vol. viii, 212, in Aphor. vol. xviii. a, 7, Libr. Propr. vol. xix. 30) he was clearly not the senior of Herophilus, and probably not of Erasistratus, who was a pupil of Theophrastus (Diog. v. 57), nor of the Metrodorus (SEXT. Math. i. 258) who is referred to as the third husband of Aristotle's daughter (supra, vol. i. p. 20, n. 3); we may more probably suppose that he is another Eudemus.-The rhetorician Eudemus (De Gen.: cf. FRITZSCHE, p. xvii) is also to be distinguished from our philosopher.

¹ SIMPL. Phys. 93, b: μαρτυρεί δὲ τῷ λόγῳ καὶ Εἴδημος ό γνησιώτατος τῶν 'Αριστοτέλους ἑταίρων.

² Cf. supra, vol. ii. p. 358 sqq.

he rightly held fast by its fundamental principles, and in such changes as he made, we gather that he coincided for the most part with Theophrastus, who, as the more independent thinker of the two, probably here led the way. In his account of Aristotle's Physics 2 he followed step by step the lines of the original, as a rule retaining its very words.3 In his own Physics he seems to have permitted himself scarcely any important departure from his master,4 his modifications consisting merely of a reduction of the number of books,5 a few transpositions,6 historical and doctrinal explanations, and such

This is indicated by the fact that, beyond those points which they have in common, there is very little noted which is peculiar to Eudemus, but much more which is peculiar to Theo-

phrastus.

² Apparently he undertook this work primarily as a textbook for his oral lectures: cf. his words ap. SIMPL. Phys. 173 a: εὶ δέ τις πιστεύσειε τοῖς Πυθαγορείοις, ώς πάλιν τὰ αὐτὰ ἀριθμῷ [ί.e. that in a future world each individual entity will recur], κάγω μυθολογήσω το ραβδίον [the Professor's rod] έχων ὑμῖν καθημέ-If we take this passage along with that quoted supra, vol. i. p. 136, n. 2, it will be seen to be probable that Eudemus set up a school of his own in some city other than Athens, and that it was for this school that he compiled his Physics.

3 See the very full references

given supra, i. p. 148, n. 4.

4 SIMPLICIUS, who so often speaks of EUDEMUS, notes only a single such variance, and that is sufficiently doubftul. He tells us (ibid. 93, b, 94, a; Fr. 26) that EUDEMUS in his second book ascribed change in time (i.e. a becoming old) to the four Aristotelian kinds of motion (v. supra, i. p. 423, p. 1). Yet we know that he did not agree with Theophr.'s extension of movement to all the categories (see supra, ii. p. 373), and that, in explaining ARIST. Phys. v. 2, 226, a, 23, he expressly pointed out that we could only talk of a motion of relation by using the word in a secondary sense (cf. ibid. 201, b). Apart from this question, we shall find no variance beyond the expression of a few slight doubts as to unimportant items of detail.

⁵ SIMPL. names only three books in the work of Eudemus: and as the citations he gives us extend over all the six earlier Aristotelian books, (cf. following notes) while the seventh was passed over by Eudemus (supra, i. p. 82), there cannot in all have been more than four books in the Eudemian Physics.

6 The inquiries which in Ari-

changes in the mode of expression as seemed to him to be necessary for the sake of clearness.¹ In the numerous fragments of his treatise we cannot fail to recognise a true apprehension of the Aristotelian doctrine, careful consideration of the different questions involved in it,

stotle occupy Phys. vi. 1-2 were dealt with by Eudemus (acc. to SIMPL. 220, a)-in connection with the question as to the divisibility ad infinitum of Space and Time, which is discussed in ARIST. Phys. iii. 6 (cf. supra, i.p. 430. n. 1)—either wholly or in part in his second book; whereas Space and Time in general, discussed by ARIST, in the fourth book of the Physics, were by Eudemus placed in the third (SIMPL. 124, a, 155, b, 167, b, 169, b, 173, a; THEMIST. Phys. 40, a). So also Eudemus dealt in the second book (perhaps in the same connection) with the question (which ARISTOTLE discusses Phys. vi. 5 ad fin.) how far we may say of qualitative change that it takes place in an indivisible time. Otherwise Eudemus seems to have followed the order of the Aristotelian works, excepting always the seventh book. For at the beginning of his commentary on this seventh book, at p. 242, a, SIMPL, says: καὶ δ γε Εύδημος μέχρι τοῦδε τοῖς ὅλοις σχεδὸν τῆς πραγματείας κεφαλαίοις ακολουθήσας, τούτο παρελθών ώς περιττόν έπὶ τὰ έν τῶ τελευταίω βιβλίω κεφάλαια μετηλθεν. According to what is said at p. 216, a, Eudemus passed directly from the end of the fifth book to the sixth book. Therefore the main part of the fifth and sixth books must have come with Eudemus, as with Aristotle, between the matter of

the fourth and that of the eighth.

1 In the present edition ZELL. has not considered it necessary to demonstrate this position by a review of the Fragments of the Eudemian Physics, mostly found in SIMPL., as was done in his second German edition, pp. 701-703: partly because Brandis, iii. 218-240, has fully gone into the contents and character of the work, and partly because the materials are also fully given by SPENGEL, Fr. 1-82. The only items the latter has passed over are the remarks, apud SIMPL. Phys. 2, a, (cf. ARIST. Metaph, xiv. 1. 1087, b, 13, and D10G. iii. 24) that Plato was the first who called the material causes στοιχεία, and the passage cited from Plutarch, supra, ii. p. 418. In the introduction to this work, Eudemus (v. SIMPL. 11, a; Fr. 4) raised the question, not touched in the Aristotelian Physics, whether each of the different sciences should deduce its own principles, or whether they should in common derive them from one higher science. Here also, however, as ZELLER shows (Hist.-phil. Abhandl. d. Berl. Akad. 1877, p. 159 sqq. and supra, i. p. 79, n. 1) EUDEMUS was following one of his master's texts-i.e. the Metaphysics (iii. 2, iv. 3, 5), of which we also find echoes elsewhere in the Eudemian Physics.

and a skilful elucidation of many statements and conceptions; but we shall look in vain in them for fresh scientific ideas or observations.¹

Passing over a noteworthy peculiarity in his doctrine of the Categories,² we may observe an important deviation from his master in the borderland between physics and metaphysics. While in general agreeing with Aristotle's theological conceptions,³ Eudemus yet rightly finds the assertion that the *primum movens* must itself

1 'Eudemus,' says Brandis, p. 240, very rightly, 'shows himself in his Physics as a scholar who follows with care and comprehension the lines of his master's thought, and who only leaves them reluctantly and in When FRITZminor matters.' SCHE, Eth. Eud. xviii. rests the opposite view on WEISSE's statement (Arist. Phys. p. 300) that Eudemus in the Physics varied greatly from Aristotle, this only shows that neither of them had accurately examined the statements of Simplicius.

2 In Eth. N. i. 4, 1096, a, 24 ABIST. named 6 Categories: τί, ποιδν, ποσδν, πρόδ τι, χρόνος, τόπος; ΕυDEMUS, on the other hand, says in the Eth. Eud. i. 8, 1217, b, 26, that Being and the Good occur in many πτώσεις, the τί, ποιδν, ποσδν, πότε, 'καὶ πρὸδ τούτοις τὸ μὲν ἐν τῷ κινεῦσὰι τὸ δὲ ἐν τῷ κινεῦτὸι τὰ μὲν ἐν τῷ κινεῦσὰι τὸ δὲ ἐν τῷ κινεῦτὸι τὸ τος, in Aristotle (supra, i. p. 274), appear to replace the Aristotelian ποιεῖν and πάσχειν.

³ Fr. 81, b, SIMPL. 319, a and b, says that the *primum movens* has its seat (cf. Aristotle; supra, i. p.409, n. 4) in the largest

of the spheres, that, namely, through the pole of which the axis of the heavens passes, inasmuch as this moves quickest (following the reading which SIMPL. found in Alexander, and which is clearly better than that of the SIMPL. MS. text itself). He maintained, however, following Aristotle (supra, i. p. 395), that it had no parts : cf. p. 422, n. 2, infra, and Spengel, p. 109: εἰ ἀμερές, φησίν, έστι το πρώτως κινοῦν καλ μη άπτεται τοῦ κινουμένου, πως έχει πρός ἀυτό; Eudemus also repeats the saying that God thinks only on himself (Eth. Eud. vii. 12, 1245, b, 16: οὐ γὰρ οὕτως ὁ θεδς εδ έχει [like a man], άλλὰ βέλτιον ή ώστε άλλο τι νοείν αὐτὸς παρ' αύτόν, αἴτιον δ' ὅτι ἡμῖν μὲν τὸ εὖ καθ' ἕτερον, ἐκείνω δὲ αὐτὸς αύτοῦ τὸ εὖ ἐστίν), and therefore he deduces the further propositions that the Godhead needs no friends, and that God, by reason of his wide separation from mankind, does not love man, or at least does not so love man as man loves God (see *Eth.* vii. 3-4, 1238, b, 27, 1239, a, 17, c. 12, 1244, b, 7, 1245, b, 14; supra, i. p. 398, n. 1).

move with the world in order to move it¹ inconsistent with the immateriality of the *movens*. He does not seem to have observed, however, that the assumption which he himself shares as to its position in space is equally so, nor does he appear to have given any further explanation of the way in which God moves the world.²

It is to its theological side, again, that we must look for the most distinctive peculiarity of the Eudemian ethics.³ Aristotle had confined himself entirely to the

¹ Supra, i. p. 409.

² Cf. supra, ii. p. 421, n. 3; Fr. 82. SIMPL. 320, a: δ δε Εύδ. τοῦτο μέν οὐκ ἀπορεῖ ὅπερ ὁ ᾿Αριστοτέλης, εί ἐνδέγεταί τι κινούμενον κινείν συνεχώς, άπορει δε άντι τούτου, εί ένδέχεται τὸ ἀκίνητον κινεῖν · ' δοκεῖ γάρ, φησί, το κινούν κατά τόπον ή ώθοῦν ἡ ἔλκον κινεῖν [supra, i. p. 423, n. 1]. εί δὲ μη μόνον οὕτως, άλλ' οὖν ἁπτόμενόν γε ἡ αὐτὸ ἡ δι' άλλου, ή δι' ένδς ή πλειόνων, τὸ δὲ άμερες οὐδενός ενδέχεται άψασθαι. οὐ γάρ ἐστιν αὐτοῦ τὸ μὲν ἀρχὴ τὸ δὲ πέρας, τῶν δὲ ἀπτομένων τὰ πέρατα ἄμα [supra, i. p. 438, n. 1]. πως οδν κινήσει το άμερές : και λύει την ἀπορίαν λέγων, ὅτι τὰ μὲν κινούμενα κινεῖ τὰ δὲ ἡρεμοῦντα, καλ τὰ μὲν κινούμενα κινεῖ ἀπτόμενα άλλως []. ἀπτόμενα, τὰ δὲ ήρεμοῦντα ἄλλως; BRANDIS, iii. 210, conjectures, άπτ. άλλα άλλως, and SPENGEL, p. 110, άπτ. άλλων; but the words following show that before the &Alos there must be some reference to that which is at rest], οὐχ δμοίως δὲ πάντα οὐ γὰρ ὡς ἡ γῆ τὴν σφαῖραν ριφθείσαν έπ' αὐτὴν άνω ἐκίνει, ούτως και το πρώτως κινησαν ου γάρ προγινομένης κινήσεως έκείνο κινεί · οὐ γὰρ ἄν ἔτι πρώτως κινοίη · ή δὲ γῆ οὐδέποτε ἡρεμοῦσα πρώτως

κινήσει. It is the less easy to see any solution of the question in this argument, that the connection of the primum movens with the earth is not satisfactory either in itself or on the lines of the Aristotelian system. For in the theory stated by Eudemusthe earth does move by contact, and, further, a thing which by its nature is unmoved cannot be taken as analogous to a thing that is at rest, since rest (see supra, i. p. 419, n. 5 ad fin.) can only be predicated of that which has motion.

3 It has already been pointed out (supra, i. p. 98, n. 1, cf. ii. p. 176, n. 4) that this text is really a work of Eudemus of which only the first three books and the seventh are preserved; and that FISCHER and FRITZSCHE are in error in veferring to it book v. 15, and books vi. and vii. of the Nicomachean Ethics. Eth. Eud. vii. 13-15 (which Fritzsche, with the majority of the MSS., counts as an eighth book) contains certain fragments of a larger tract, the text of which is much injured. There is, however, no doubt that this tract did in fact stand at the end of the Eudemian natural side of human aims and capacities in his theory of morals; Eudemus connects human action in its origin and end more closely with the divine. With reference to the origin of action he remarks that many people without acting from insight are yet fortunate in all that they do; and as he was unable to regard this phenomenon as accidental on account of the regularity of its occurrence, he held that it must be referred to a fortunate gift peculiar to these persons—a natural uprightness of will and inclination. But whence comes this gift? Man has not given it to himself: it must therefore come from God, who is the source of movement in the world.² Insight, moreover, and the virtue

Ethics proper (as FRITZSCHE, p. 244, says, and BRANDIS, ii. b, 1564-5, proves), and not before bk. vii. as Spengel supposed (p. 401-2, of the text cited supra, i. p. 98, n. 1), by reason of M. Mor. ii. 7 (from 1206, a, 36 onwards) 8, 9.

On the principles set out supra, i. p. 362, n. 5, p. 462, n. 3. ² In *Eud.* i. 1, 1214, a, 16, it was said that men could become happy either by μάθησις or by άσκησις, or in one of two other ways: ήτοι καθάπερ οἱ νυμφόληπτοι καί θεόληπτοι των ανθρώπων, έπιπνοία δαιμονίου τινός ώσπερ ένθουσιάζοντες, η διὰ τύχην. He goes on in greater detail at Eud. vii. 14: with many people almost everything succeeds, however little φρόνησις they have (ἄφρονες όντες κατορθοῦσι πολλά ἐν οίς ἡ τύχη κυρία· ἔτι δὲ καὶ ἐν οἶs τέχνη έστι, πολύ μέντοι και τύχης ένυπάρχει), and this, on the above principles, is to be attributed, not to chance, but to the φύσις, so

that such people are not so much εὐτυχείε as εὐφυείε. τί δὲ δη; [he goes on at 1247, b, 18] αρ' οὐκ ἔνεισιν όρμαὶ ἐν τῆ ψυχῆ αἰ μὲν ἀπὸ λογισμοῦ, αἱ δ' ἀπὸ ὀμέξεως άλόγου, καὶ πρότεραι αὖται; εἰ γάρ έστι φύσει ή δι' ἐπιθυμίαν ήδέος όρεξις, φύσει γε ἐπὶ τὸ ἀγαθὶν βαδίζοι ὰν παν. εἰ δή τινίς εἰσιν εύφυείς, ώσπερ οί ώδικοι ούκ έπιστάμενοι ἄδειν, οὕτως εὖ πεφύκασι καὶ άνευ λόγου όρμῶσιν, άλλ' ὅτι ἡ φύσις εὖ πέφυκε, καὶ ἐπιθυμοῦσι καὶ τούτου καὶ τότε καὶ οὕτως ὡς δεῖ και οδ δεί και ότε, οδτοι κατορθώσουσι κάν τύχωσιν άφρονες όντες καὶ ἄλογοι.... ἐκείνους μὲν τοίνυν εὐτυχεῖν διὰ φύσιν ἐνδέχεται. ἡ γαρ δρμη και ή δρεξις οδσα οδ έδει κατώρθωσεν, δ δε λογισμός ήν ήλί- θ 105. We may ask, he adds, at Eud. 1248, a, 15, ἀρ' αὐτοῦ τούτου τύχη αἰτία, τοῦ ἐπιθυμῆσαι οδ δεῖ καί ότε δεί; and having, as will be seen presently, answered this in the negative, he adds, at line 24: το δέ ζητούμενον τοῦτ' ἐστὶ, τίς ή της κινήσεως άρχη έν τη

that springs from it, however much they may differ in themselves from this unreflecting apprehension of right, point to the same source, is since every rational activity presupposes the existence of reason, which must itself be the gift of God. And just as virtue in its origin is referred to God, so God is held to be the ultimate end of all intellectual and moral activity. While Aristotle had described scientific knowledge as the highest intellectual activity and the most essential element in happiness, Eudemus further conceives of this knowledge as the knowledge of God, and accordingly converts Aristotle's proposition that happiness is coextensive with thought $(\theta \varepsilon \omega \rho \ell a)$ into the statement that everything

ψυχη · δηλον δη, ώσπερ έν τῷ ὅλο, θεδς καλ έν [so Fr. for παν] ἐκείνω [-- η]. κινεῖ γάρ πως πάντα τὸ ἐν ἡμιν θειον. λόγου δ' ἀρχὴ οὐ λόγος άλλά τι κρείττον. τί οὖν ἃν κρείττον καλ έπιστήμης είη [καλ νου, as SPENGEL and FRITZSCHE add] πλην θεός; ή γαρ αρετή του νου [better, perhaps, ἐκείνου or τοῦ θεοῦ] ὄργανον . . ἔχουσι γὰρ άρχην τοιαύτην, η κρείττων τοῦ νοῦ καλ βουλεύσεωs - they hit the right measure without λόγος, not through practice or experience, but $\tau \hat{\varphi} \theta \epsilon \hat{\varphi}$. In the same way, adds Eudemus, prophetic dreams are to be explained: ἔοικε γὰρ ἡ άρχη [Nous as the principle of immediate knowledge απολυομένου τοῦ λόγοι ἰσχύειν μᾶλλον. Cf. ii. p. 1225, a, 27: the condition of the ενθουσιώντες and προλέyoures is not a free one, although the resulting activity is rational (διανοίας ἔργον). We find a similar view of τύχη in Aristoxenus.

¹ Since this is without λόγος; see last note, and *Eud.ibid.* 1246,

b, 37, 1247, a, 13 sqq.

² Eud. ibid. 1248, a, 15: in the case of such happily organised natures does the ground of their fortunate φύσις lie in τύχη? ħ ούτω γε πάντων έσται; και γάρ τοῦ νοῆσαι καὶ βουλεύσασθαι οὐ γάρ δη έβουλεύσατο βουλευσάμενος [their insight is not the outcome of a previous consideration], άλλ' ἔστιν ἀρχή τις, οὐδ' ἐνόησε νοήσας πρότερον νοήσαι καλ τοῦτ' είς ἄπειρον, οὐκ ἄρα τοῦ νοῆσαι δ νοῦς ἀρχὴ, οὐδὲ τοῦ βουλεύσασθαι βουλή, τί οδν άλλο πλην τύχη; ώστ' από τύχης απαντα έσται, εί έστι τις άρχη ης οὐκ έστιν άλλη έξω. αθτη δε διά τι τοιαύτη τώ είναι ώστε τούτο δύνασθαι ποιείν; τὸ δὲ ζητούμενον, &c. (see last two notes).

⁸ Eth. N. x. 8; supra, ii. p. 143, n. 1. Eudemus shows how exactly he agrees with Aristotle also in the statement (Eth. Eud.

is a good in proportion as it leads us to the contemplation of God. All that hinders us on the other hand by reason of excess or defect from the contemplation and worship of God is evil; and it is just this conception which supplies what is wanting in Aristotle, namely a more exact definition of the kind of action that is according to reason. The more persistently we keep that goal in view the less shall we be distracted by the irrational element in the soul.¹ But while the effort after the knowledge

vii. 12, 1244, b, 23 sqq. 1245, a, 9; cf. supra, 200, 5), that life is nothing else than αἰσθάνεσθαι καὶ γνωρίζειν, ἄστε διὰ τοῦτο καὶ ζῆν ἀεὶ βούλεται [men wish always to live], ὅτι βούλεται ἀεὶ γνωρίζειν.

¹ Eth. Eud. vii. 15, 1249, a, 21 (probably the conclusion of the whole work); as the doctor has a definite point of view [8pos], by reference to which he judges what is, and how far anything is, healthy, ούτω και τῷ σπουδαίφ περί τὰς πράξεις καὶ αίρέσεις τῶν φύσει μέν άγαθων οὐκ ἐπαινετών δὲ δεί τινα είναι δρον και της έξεως και της αίρέσεως και περί φυγής χρημάτων πλήθους και όλιγότητος καί τῶν εὐτυχημάτων []. καὶ φυγής, καὶ περὶ χρημάτων πληθος καὶ όλιγότητα, &c.]. ἐν μὲν οὖν τοῖς πρό-τερον ἐλέχθη τὸ ὡς ὁ λόγος.... τοῦτο δ' άληθὲς μὲν, οὐ σαφὲς δέ [sup. ii.p. 163, n. 1]. δείδη ωσπερ καλ έν τοις άλλοις πρός τὸ άρχον (ῆν καί πρός την έξιν κατά την ένέργειαν την τοῦ ἄρχοντος . . . ἐπεὶ δὲ καὶ άνθρωπος φύσει συνέστηκεν έξ άρχοντος καὶ άρχομένου, καὶ ἕκαστον δὲ δέοι πρός τὴν ξαυτῶν ἀρχὴν ζην. αυτη δέ διττή . άλλως γάρ ή ιατρική άρχη και άλλως ή ύγίεια,

ταύτης δὲ ἕνεκα ἐκείνη οῦτω δ' έχει κατά το θεωρητικόν. οὐ γάρ ἐπιτακτικῶς ἄρχων ὁ θεὸς, ἀλλ' οδ ένεκα ή φρόνησις ἐπιτάττει (διττὸν δὲ τὸ οῧ ἕνεκα διώρισται δ' ἐν άλλοις), έπεὶ ἐκεῖνός γε οὐθενός δείται. By this reading, in which the words before and after διώρισται are a parenthesis, the argument is that: 'A man should direct his life by that in him which naturally rules; but that is twofold, the active power which determines a man's work, and the end towards which that power works. The former is Reason or φρόνησις; the latter is found in the Godhead: and the Godhead as the highest end of our activity rules us; not, however, like a ruler who gives orders for his own ends, since the Godhead has no need of our services: and God is the end, not in the sense in which man is, but in that higher sense in which he can be also the end for all men.' 'As to this twofold meaning of the οδ ένεκα Aristotle had stated his views in his work on Philosophy; but his extant works give us only a few hints, from which we gather that a distinction is to be drawn beof God is, according to Eudemus, the ultimate source of all morality, yet the form under which the latter first appears and the principle which gives unity in the first instance to all the virtues is that goodness of disposition which he calls uprightness ($\kappa a \lambda o \kappa \dot{a} \gamma a \theta i a$), and which consists in the habitual desire for what is absolutely worthy, the noble and the laudable, for its own sake—in other words, in perfected virtue based on love of the good.\(^1\) Aristotle had indeed touched upon this

tween that which profits by an activity and that which is its final end; cf. Phys. ii. 3, 194, a, 35 : ἐσμὲν γάρ πως καὶ ἡμεῖς τέλος · διχῶς γὰρ τὸ οὖ ἕνεκα · είρηται δ' έν τοις περί φιλοσοφίας. Metaph. xii. 7; supra, i. p. 355, n. 3, ad fin. De An. ii. 4, 415, b, 1 : πάντα γὰρ ἐκείνου [τοῦ θείου] ορέγεται, κακείνου ένεκα πράττει όσα πράττει κατά φύσιν. τὸ δ' οδ ένεκα διττόν το μέν οδ το δε φ. Eudemus seems, in the passage quoted above, to have this last passage in his mind; even if the words τὸ δ' οῦ ἕν. &c., which recur in line 20, should, as TREN-DELENBURG thinks, be rejected. Eudemus then goes on: Hris over αίρεσις και κτήσις των φύσει άγαθῶν ποιήσει τὴν τοῦ θεοῦ μάλιστα θεωρίαν. ή σώματος ή χρημάτων ή φίλων ή των άλλων άγαθων, αθτη άρίστη καὶ οὖτος ὁ ὅρος κάλλιστος: ήτις δ' ή δι' ἔνδειαν ή δι' ὑπερβολήν κωλύει τον θεον θέραπεύειν και θεωρείν, αθτη δὲ φαύλη. ἔχει δὲ τοῦτο [sc. $\delta \in \chi \omega \nu : i e$. but we have this in our soul'] τη ψυχή και οδτος της ψυχης δ [which is not in Cod. R. and should be omitted] őρος ἄριστος, τὰ [1. τὸ] ἡκιστα αἰσθάνεσθαι τοῦ ἄλλου [Fr. rightly αλόγου μέρους της ψυχης ή τοιου τον.

1 Eth. Eud. vii. 15, init.: Having dealt with the several Virtues, we must also consider the whole which is made up by their union. This is καλοκάγαθία. As the well-being of all parts of the body is the condition of Health, so the possession of all virtues is the condition of It is, however, not Rectitude. same thing as the mere άγαθὸν εἶναι. Only those goods are 'καλὰ,' ὅσα δι' αύτὰ ὄντα αίρετὰ (so read with SPENGEL, in lieu of the unmeaning πάντα; cf. Rhet. i. 9, supra, ii. p. 301, n. 3) ἐπαινετά ἐστιν, and only of the virtues (cf. 1248, b, 36) can this be said. Άγαθὸς μὲν οὖν ἐστιν ῷ τὰ φύσει άγαθά ἐστιν ἀγαθά (r. sup., ii. p. 149, n. 3, and Eth. N. v. 2, 1129, b, 3), which happens only when the right use is made of these goods (honour, wealth, health, good fortune, &c.); καλὸς δὲ κάγαθὸς τῷ τῶν ἀγαθῶν τὰ καλὰ ὑπάρχειν αὐτῷ δι' αύτὰ καὶ τῷ πρακτικὸς είναι τῶν καλῶν καὶ αὐτῶν ἕνεκα. If a man proposes to be virtuous, but only for the sake of these natural goods, then he may be indeed αγαθός ανήρ, but he cannot have καλοκάγαθία, for he desires the beautiful not for its own perfect virtue under the name of justice, but only incidentally, and in so far as it presents itself in men's relations to one another: 1 the proper bond of union between the virtues being, in his view, insight. 2 In giving express prominence to the quality of will and disposition which lies at the foundation of all the virtues, Eudemus supplies a lacuna in the Aristotelian account. In effect, however, Aristotle had stated the same principle in his discussion of the essential nature of virtue. 3

In other respects the Eudemian Ethics, so far as it is known to us, differs, like the Physics, from the Aristotelian only in individual transpositions, elucidations, and abbreviations, in changes of expression and the meaning of words.⁴ Eudemus indeed breaks the close connection between the Ethics and the Politics by inserting Economics as a third science between them.⁵ In his Ethics, moreover, he gives a more independent place than Aristotle to the cognitive activities and to the corresponding dianoëtic virtues.⁶ But these diver-

sake. To those of whom this latter is true, on the other hand (before και προαιροῦνται, at 1249, a, 3, there seems to be a small lacuna), not only the beautiful in itself, but also every other good, comes to be 'beautiful,' because it subserves an end which is the beautiful: δ δ' οἰδμενος τὰς ἀρετὰς ἔχειν δεῖν ἕνεκα τῶν ἐκτὸς ἀγαθῶν κατὰ τὸ συμβεβηκὸς τὰ καλὰ πράττει. ἔστιν οὖν καλοκὰγαθία ἀρετὴ τέλειος.

¹ Supra, ii. p. 170.

² Supra, ii. p. 166, n. 1. ³ Supra, ii. p. 154, nn. 3, 4; 155, n. 1; p. 149, n. 3.

With what follows cf. FRITZSCHE, Eth. Eud. xxix. sqq.

and also see BRANDIS, who at ii. b, 1557 sqq. iii. 240 sqq. has put together the variations of the Eudemian Ethics from the Nicomachean.

⁵ Cf. sup., i.p. 186, n. 4. It will be shown infra, in discussing the Pseudo-Aristotelian Economics, that it is possible that Eudemus himself wrote a treatise on Economics, and that it may perhaps be preserved to us in bk. i. of that work.

⁶ Supra, ii. p. 178, n. 1. That EUDEMUS, i. 5, 1216, b, 16, includes the poetical and practical sciences under the term ποιητικαὶ ἐπιστῆμαι, in contradistinction to the theoretical, is unimportant. gencies have no perceptible influence upon his treatment of ethical questions. The further peculiarities of the Eudemian *Ethics* are still more unessential.¹ On

1 EUD, condenses the opening (Eth. Nic. i. 1) into a few words and begins with Nic. i. 9, 1099, a, 24; he expressly does away in i. 2,1214, b, 11 sqq. with the distinction drawn between the constituents and the inseparable conditions of happiness (cf. supra, ii. p, 150, n. 1; i. p. 360, n. 1): he expands in i. 5 Nic. i. 3 (partly by using N. vi. 13; v. supra, ii. p. 158, n. 2); inserts in i. 6 methodological observations which are in fact entirely in agreement with Aristotle's views; extends in c. 8 the discussion of the Idea of the Good out of Nic. i. 4 with certain general observations; omits the inquiry in Nic. i. 10-12 (cf. supra, ii. p. 144 foll.) and modifies the argument of Nic. i. 8-9 by combining it with what goes before. In the discussion of the nature of Virtue, Eth. Eud. ii. 1, 1218, a, 31-1219, b, 26 is Aristotelian matter (Nic. i. 6, x. 6 init. i. 11 init. i. 13, 1102, b, 2 sqq.) freely worked up; what follows is more closely connected with Nic. i. 13; and ii. 2 follows Nic. ii. 1; so ii. 3 is *Nic.* ii. 2, 1104, a, 12 sqq. ii. 5, 1106, a, 26, ii. 8 init.; the sketch of the virtues and vices 1220, b, 36 sqq. (which seems, however, to include later additions: see FRITZSCHE, ad loc.) follows Nic. ii. 7; 1221, b, 9 sqq. rests on Nic. iv. 11, 1126, a, 8 sqq. With End. ii. 4, cf. Nic. ii. 2, 1104, b, 13 sqq. and c. 4 init. Nic. ii. 1 (genesis of virtue by virtuous acts) is passed over, and Nic. ii. 5 (virtues are neither δυνάμεις nor πάθη, therefore έξεις)

is hardly touched: that virtue was, however, called not merely έξις (Eud. ii. 5, c. 10, 1227, b, 8, &c.), but also διάθεσις (ii. 1, 1218, b, 38, 1220, a, 29) is nothing. Eud. ii. 5 is in essence taken from Nic. ii. 8. The inquiry as to free will, &c., is opened by Eudemus, ii. 6, with an introduction which is peculiar to him, after which he gives, at c. 7-10, in a free selection and order the main points of the Aristotelian argument in Nic. iii. 1-7 (cf. Brandis, ii. b, 1388 sqq.), and closes in c. 11 with the question (which is not put by, but for the solution of which Nic. iii. 5, 1112, b, 12 sqq. is used) whether it is will (προαίρεσις) or insight (λόγος) that virtue directs aright? Eudemus decides for the former, because the main question in virtue is the end of our action, and this is determined by the will; whereas the protection of our power of insight from distortion by desire is the business of εγκράτεια, which is a praiseworthy quality, but is to be distinguished from ἀρετή. In the treatment of the specific virtues Eudemus follows his master, with unimportant variations, as follows: iii. 1 (ἀνδρεία) is Nic. iii, 8-12; iii. 2 (σωφροσύνη) is Nic. iii. 13-15; then we pass (c. 3) to πραότης (Nic. iv. 11), and next (c. 4) to $\epsilon \lambda \epsilon \nu \theta \epsilon \rho \iota \delta \tau \eta s$ (N. iv. 1-3), and in c. 5 to μεγαλοψυχία (N. iv. 7-9), and c. 6 to μεγαλοπρέπεια (N. iv. These are generally abbreviated, and show only a few explanatory additions.

the other hand, the connection of ethics with theology, discussed above, resting though it obviously does upon Aristotelian doctrines, nevertheless presents an unmistakable departure from the spirit of the Aristotelian philosophy and an approach to the Platonic.¹

With the religious attitude which characterised Eudemus, the naturalism of his fellow-disciples Aristoxenus and Dicæarchus stands in striking contrast. The former of these,² who, before he became acquainted with Ari-

Finally, in c. 7 (cf. N. iv. 12-15, and supra, i. p. 169) Eudemus deals with νέμεσις, αίδως, φιλία, σεμνότης (absent in Nic.), αλήθεια and άπλότης, and εὐτραπελία, all of which, with a certain variance from Aristotle, he treats as laudable qualities, but not as virtues in the strict sense, as being merely μεσότητες παθητικαί or φυσικαί άρεται (1233, b, 18, 1234, a, 23 sqq.), because they do not involve a προαίρεσις. τιμία (Nic. iv. 10) is passed over; and for certain virtues left without a name by Aristotle (φιλία and ἀλήθεια) Eudemus, as usual, has a technical term-a note of the later date of his book. three following books we possess only (v. supra, i. p. 98, n. 1) in the Aristotelian orginal. The seventh has in c. 1-12 chiefly an original restatement matter of the inquiry as to Friendship (in Nic. viii. ix.) so constructed that new ideas only appear in minor points, and contradictions of the Aristotelian teaching never. The three final chapters of this book (more correctly bk. viii.) have been already dealt with, supra, ii. p. 422, n. 3. With Eudemus in this con-

nection should be named his nephew Pasicles (αp. Philop. 'Pasicrates'), who is also called a scholar of Aristotle, if it be true (according to the views set out supra, vol. i. p. 79) that he was the author of bk. ii. (α) of the Metaphysics. See c. 1, 993, a, 9: ὅσπερ γὰρ καὶ τὰ τῶν νυκτερίδων ὅμματα πρὸς τὸ φέγγος ἔχει τὸ μεθ' ἡμέραν, οὕτω καὶ τῆς ἡμετέρας ψυχῆς ὁ νοῦς πρὸς τὰ τῆ ψύσει φανεράτατα πάντων, and cf. with this Plato, Rep. vii. init. Otherwise the contents of this book show no remarkable peculiarity.

² For the life and works of Aristoxenus see MAHNE, De Aristoxeno, Amsterd. 1793, and MÜLLER, Fragm. Hist. Gr. ii. 269 sqq., where the Fragments are collected. He was born at Tarentum (SUID. 'Αριστόξ.: STE-PHANUS BYZ. De Urb. Tapas), and was the son of Spintharus (Diog. ii. 20, SEXT. Math. vi. 1: as to his alleged second name, 'Mnesias' apud Suid., see Mül-LER, p. 269), who was a celebrated musician (ÆLIAN, H. Anim. ii. 11, p. 34, Jac.). He learned also, according to Suid. from the musician Lamprus (de stotle, had been a student of the Pythagorean philosophy, acquired by his writings on music 1 the highest reputation among musicians of antiquity, 2 and what we know of his works amply justifies his fame. While far outstripping all his predecessors in the completeness of

quo v. MAHNE, p. 12; cf. ZELL. Ph. d. Gr. i. p. 45, n. 3), from the Pythagorean Xenophilus (ihid. i. p. 310, n. 5), and from Aristotle. As a scholar of Aristotle, he is named by CIC. Tusc. i. 18, 41, and GELL. N. A. iv. 11, 4. He himself refers in Harm. Elem. p. 30 (ZELL. ibid. p. 596, n. 3), to an oral statement of Aristotle's, and at p. 31 of the same he relates 'that Aristotle used, in his lecturing, to give out beforehand the subject and general lines of his discussion. SUIDAS relates that, being one of the most notable of Aristotle's scholars, he had expectations of becoming his successor, and that when this did not come about he abused Aristotle after his death. ARISTOCLES, however (supra, i.p. 11, n. 1, p. 12, n. 1), refutes the last suggestion, and possibly it was merely the statement cited on p. 11, n. 1 (which refers really to another person), that started the story. We learn further that Aristoxenus lived at first, probably in his youth, at Mantinea, and that he was a friend of Dicæarchus (CIC. in Tusc. i. 18, 41, calls him his 'æqualis et condiscipulus,' and in Ad Att. xiii. 32, he mentions a letter then extant from Dicæarchus to Aristox.). We know not on what grounds Lucian's story, Paras. 35, rests, that he was a 'parasite'

of Neleus (? Neleus of Scepsis: but he is of too late a date: supra, i. p. 137, n. 1, p. 139, n. 3). In any case, we cannot rely on it. The period of the life of Aristox.. of which we cannot fix either limit, is broadly determined by his relations to Aristotle and Dicæarchus: when Cyrill. C. Jul. 12 c, places him in Ol. 29 he is confusing him (see MAHNE, 16) with the much earlier Selinuntian poet; he is, however, more correct in 208, B, when he calls him younger than Menedemus of Pyrrha (Zell. Ph. d. Gr. p. 365, n. 2, p. 837).

1 The list of those known to us, in MÜLLER, p. 270, includes eleven works, some of them in several books, on Music, Rhythm, &c., and also on the Musical Instruments. We still possess the three books π. ἀρμονικῶν στοιχείων, and other fragments (αρ. ΜΑΗΝΕ, p. 130 sqq. and MÜLLER, p. 283 sqq.). For the literature covering Aristoxenus's harmonic and rhythmic theories, see UEBER

WEG, Grundr. i. 216.

² O Moνσικός is his regular description. As the chief authority on music, ALEX. in Top. 49 classes him with the great men of medicine and mathematics, Hippocrates and Archimedes. Cf. also Plut. sup. ii. p. 415, p. 1;

his investigations, he was distinguished also in a high degree by the strictness of his method, by the accuracy of his definitions, and by the thoroughness of his musical knowledge. He occupied himself besides with questions of natural science, psychology, ethics, and politics, as well as with arithmetic and with historical sketches. Of the reliability of these last, however, his fabulous statements about Socrates and Plato, obviously inspired in part by a depreciatory motive, give us anything but a favourable impression.

The views of Aristoxenus, so far as they are known to us, exhibit a union of the severe morality of the Pythagoreans with the scientific empiricism of the Peri-

CIC. Fin. v. 19, 50, De Orat. iii. 33, 132; SIMPL. Phys. 193, a; VITRUV. i. 14, v. 4.

¹ He frequently himself calls attention, with a certain pride, to the number and importance of the inquiries which he was the first to undertake: e.g. in Harm. El. pp. 2-7, 35-37, &c.

² It is his custom to preface each inquiry by a statement as to the procedure to be followed, and an outline of the argument, so that the reader may be clear as to the way which lies before him, and the exact point at which he finds himself; *Harm*. *El.* p. 30–1, 3–8, p. 43–4.

3 His works of ethical interest included, not only the Πυθαγορικαὶ ἀποφάσεις but also a great part of his historical writings about the Pythagoreans. Besides these, we hear of his νόμοι παιδευτικοὶ and νόμοι πολιτικοί. The books about the Pythagoreans may have contained the passages concerning the soul cited in the following notes,

since they are closely connected with Pythagorean views. From the σύμμικτα ὑπομνήματα, we have in MÜLLER, 290-1, extracts which relate to natural history.

⁴ In the Fragm. from the π. ἀριθμητικῆs, STOB. Ecl. i. 16.

⁵ He composed a History of Harmonics (cited in Harm. El. p. 2) a work on Tragic Poets, another on Flute-players, and also a work called βίοι ἀνδρῶν which dealt apparently with all the famous Philosophers down to Aristotle; and also the ὑπομνήματα ἱστορικὰ, from which we have citations referring to Plato and Alexander the Great. In his other books also there was no doubt much historical matter.

Gf. Zell. Ph. d. Gr. i. pp. 48, 51, 2, 54, 6, 59 sqq. 342, 372, 1, 373, 6, and the story cited by Lucian, Paras. 35 from Aristoxenus as to Plato's Sicilian journeys.

⁷ Generally speaking, the reputation for learning which Cic. *Tusc.* i. 18, 41; Gell. iv. 11, 4; HIERON. *Hist. Eccl.* Præf. accord

patetics. Of a stern and ascetic disposition, although a Peripatetic, he found himself so completely in agreement with the ethical teaching of the Pythagoreans, that he puts his own views into the mouth of philosophers of this school.2 The views he attributes to Pythagoreans commendatory of piety, moderation, gratitude, fidelity to friends, respect to parents, strict obedience to law, and a careful education of the young,3 while harmonising with the inner spirit of Pythagorean ethics, at the same time unquestionably express his own opinion. Similarly he connects himself with Pythagoreanism in going a step beyond Eudemus,4 and referring good fortune partly to a natural gift and partly to divine inspiration.⁵ Even in his views upon music the same tendency asserts itself. He attributes to music, as Aristotle, following the Pythagoreans, had

him, may be as well deserved as the reputation for style which Cic. Ad Att. viii. 4 concedes to both Aristoxenus and Dicaearchus.

1 So at least we are told: ÆLIAN, V. H. viii. 13, calls him τῶ γέλωτι ἀνὰ κράτος πολέμιος, and ADRAST. ap. PROCL. in Tim. 192 A, says of him: οὐ πάνυ τὸ εἶδος ἀνὴρ ἐκεῖνος μουσικὸς, ἀλλ' ὅπως ἀν δόξη τι καινὸν λέγειν πεφροντικώς.

² We must assume that he himself composed, or so far as he took them from ancient sources, at least fully accepted, such Pythagorean sayings as those in the Life of Archytas cited *infra*, in the following notes.

³ In this connection, cf. the Fragm. quoted in Zell. Ph. d. Gr. i. 428-9, and that apud Stob. Floril, x. 67 (see Müller,

ibid. Fr. 17), concerning artificial, natural and morbid desires, and the Fragm. given by ATHEN. xii. 545,a, out of the Life of Archytas (Fr. 16), of which, however, he has given only the first half, i.e. the speech of Polyarchus in praise of pleasure, while its refutation by Archytas, which must have followed, is not quoted.

* Supra, ii. p. 422 foll.

⁵ Fr. 21 ap. Stob. Ecl. i. 206 (taken from the πυθ. ἀποφάσεις): περὶ δὲ τύχης τὰδ' ἔφασκον εἶναι μέντοι [WYTT. conj. μέν τι] καὶ δαιμόνιον μέρος αὐτῆς, γενέσθαι γὰρ ἐπίπνοιἀν τινα παρὰ τοῦ δαιμονίου τῶν ἀνθρώπων ἔνίοις ἐπὶ τὸ βέλτιον ἡ ἐπὶ τὸ χεῖρον, καὶ εἶναι φανερῶς κατ' αὐτὸ τοῦτο τοὺς μὲν εὐτυχεῖς τοὺς δὲ ἀτυχεῖς, as may be seen by the

also done, a moral and educative, and at the same time a purifying, effect, inasmuch as it calms emotion and alleviates morbid states of feeling.2 But while insisting that music in this aspect should be permitted to retain its original dignity and severity, he holds that the same demand is made by its character as art; and accordingly we find him bitterly complaining of the effeminacy and barbarism which in the music of his time had usurped the place of the earlier classic style.3 Neverthe-

fact that the former without any judgment reach a fortunate result, and the latter with every care do not. είναι δὲ καὶ ἕτερον τύχης είδος, καθ' δ οἱ μὲν εὐφυεῖς καὶ εὔστοχοι, οἱ δὲ ἀφυεῖς τε καὶ έναντίαν έχοντες φύσιν βλάστοιεν,

¹ STRABO, i. 2, 3, p. 15-6: Poetry as an instrument in education acts not by ψυχαγωγία, but for σωφρονισμός; even the musicians μεταποιοθνται της άρετης ταύτης · παιδευτικοί γάρ είναί φασι και ἐπανορθωτικοι τῶν ἡθῶν, as, Pythagoreans, the following Aristoxenus said also. Cf. Fr. 17, a (STOB. Floril. v. 70, taken from the $\pi\nu\theta$. $a\pi\sigma\phi$.): the true φιλοκαλία is not concerned with the outward adornment of life, but consists in a love for the ἐπιτηδεύματα and ĕθn ἐπιστημαι. Harm. El. 31: ή μέν τοιαύτη [μουσική] βλάπτει τὰ ήθη, ή δὲ τοιαύτη ἀφελεῖ -but we must not on that account demand of Harmonics, which is only a part of the science of μουσική, that it should make people morally better. The moral effect of music is referred to in the remark of Aristotle, ap. PLUT. Mus. c. 17,

1136, e, in opposition to Plato's preference for the Dorian tones: and the matter cited by ORI-GENES ap. PROCL. in Tim. 27 C. from Aristoxenus also belongs to

this subject.

² MARC. CAPELLA, ix. 923 (Fr. 24): Aristox, and the Pythagoreans believed that the 'ferocia animi' can be softened by music. CRAMER, Anecd. Paris. i. 172. the Pythagorean, according to Aristox., used for the purification of the body laτρική, and for that of the soul μουσική. PLUT. Mus. c. 43, 5, p. 1146-7: Arist. said εἰσάγεσθαι μουσικὴν [at banquets] παρ' δσον δ μέν οἶνος σφάλλειν πέφυκε των άδην αὐτῷ χρησαμένων τά τε σώματα καὶ τὰς διανοίας, ή δε μουσική τῆ περί αὐτὴν τάξει τε καὶ συμμετρία εἰς τὴν ἐναντίαν κατάστασιν άγει τε καλ πραύνει. Aristox himself is said by Apollon. Mirab. c. 49 (who cites as his authority Theophrastus) to have cured by music a man afflicted with a mental ailment.

³ THEMIST. Or. xxxiii. p. 364: 'Αριστόξ δ μουσικός θηλυνομένην ήδη την μουσικην έπειρατο άναρρωνύναι, αὐτός τε άγαπων τὰ ἀνδρικώτερα τῶν κρουμάτων, καὶ τοῖs μαθηless Aristoxenus confronts his Pythagorean predecessors as the founder of a school which remained opposed to theirs down to the latest ages of antiquity.¹ He reproaches them, not only with their imperfect treatment of the subject,² but also with their capricious method of procedure: since, instead of following the guidance of facts, they had, as he believed, imposed certain a priori presuppositions upon them. He himself demands, indeed, as opposed to an unscientific empiricism, principles and proofs; but he starts from the data of experience, and refuses to seek for the essence and causes of that which perception reveals to us in any other field than that which these supply.³ In order,

ταίς ἐκκελεύων τοῦ μαλθακοῦ άφεμένους φιλεργείν το άρρενωπον έν τοῖς μέλεσιν; whereon follows an attack on the theatre music of his own time. Aristox, himself says in Fr. 90 (ap. ATHEN. xiv. 632, a): as the people of the Italian Posidonia, who were first Greeks and now Tyrrheneans or Romans, still celebrate yearly the Hellenic festival of sorrow because they have become barbarians, ούτω δη οδν, φησί, καί ήμεις, έπειδή και τα θέατρα έκβαρβάρωται καὶ είς μεγάλην διαφθοράν προελήλυθεν ή πάνδημος αυτη μουσική, καθ' αύτους γενόμενοι όλίγοι ἀναμιμνησκόμ∈θα οΐα ἦν ἡ μουσική. Cf. also Harm. El. 23, and the remarks apud PLUT. Qu. Conv. vii. 8. 1, 4, p. 711 c, where Aristox. calls his opponents άνανδροι καὶ διατεθρυμμένοι τὰ ὧτα δι' ἀμουσίαν καὶ ἀπειρο-καλίαν, and De Mus. c. 31, p. 1142, where he tells a contemporary how ill it becomes him to conform to the taste of the day.

¹ Cf. as to this opposition of the Pythagoreans or Harmonists, and the Aristoxenians, whose differences Ptolemæus seeks to solve, Bojesen, De Harmon. Scientia Graec. (Hafn. 1833) p. 19 sqq. and the citations there from Ptolemæus, Harm. i. (c. 2, 9, 13, &c.), Porphyre. in Ptol. Harm. (Wallis. Opp. iii.) 189, 207, 209-10, Cæsar, Grundz. der Rhythmik, 22-3.

² Supra, vol. ii. p. 431, n. 1. ³ Harm. El. 32: φυσικήν γάρ δή τινα φαμέν ήμεις την φωνην κίνησιν κινείσθαι, καλ ούχ ώς έτυχε διάστημα τιθέναι, και τούτων άποδείξεις πειρώμεθα λέγειν δμολογουμένας τοῖς φαινομένοις, οὐ καθάπερ οί ξμπροσθεν, οί μέν άλλοτριολογοθντες και την μέν αξσθησιν έκκλίνοντες, ως οδσων ούκ ακριβή, νοητας δὲ κατασκευάζοντες αἰτίας, καὶ φάσκοντες λόγους τέ τινας ἀριθμῶν είναι και τάχη πρός άλληλα, έν οίς τό τε όξὺ καὶ βαρὺ γίνεται, πάντων άλλοτριωτάτους λόγους λέγοντες καὶ ἐναντιω-άτους τοῖς φαινομένοις: moreover, to establish his conclusions upon an independent basis, he excludes on principle all those which might be borrowed from another science: the theory of music, he holds, must be limited to its own proper field, but it must completely exhaust it.¹

We cannot here enter more fully into Aristoxenus's theory of music, and must be content with the statement of its most general principles as an indication of its character and tendency.²

οί δὲ ἀποθεσπίζοντες ἕκαστα ἄνευ αίτίας καὶ ἀποδείξεως, οὐδὲ αὐτὰ τὰ Φαινόμ€να καλώς έξηριθμηκότες. ήμεῖς δὲ ἀρχάς τε πειρώμεθα λαβεῖν φαινομένας απάσας τοις έμπείροις μουσικής και τὰ ἐκ τούτων συμβαίνοντα ἀποδεικνύναι . . . ἀνάγεται δ' ή πραγματεία είς δύο : είς τε την άκοην καί είς την διάνοιαν. τη μέν γάρ ἀκοῆ κρίνομεν τὰ τῶν διαστημάτων μεγέθη, τη δε διανοία θεωροῦμεν τὰς τούτων δυνάμεις. Music is not like Geometry. The latter has no need of observation: τω δὲ μουσικῷ σχεδόν ἐστιν ἀρχῆς έχουσα τάξιν ή της αἰσθήσεως ακρίβεια, p. 38, ad fin.: ἐκ δύο γὰρ τούτων ή της μουσικής σύνεσίς έστιν, αἰσθήσεώς τε καὶ μνήμης. P. 43, ad fin.: three things are needful-right apprehension of the phenomena, right arrangement of them, and right conclusions from them. As to the somewhat hostile criticisms of later writers, such as PTOLEMÆUS (Harm. i. 2, 13), PORPHYR. (in Ptol. Harm. Wallis. Opp. iii. 211), and BOETHIUS (De Mus. 1417, 1472, 1476) upon the method of Aristoxenus, see MAHNE, p. 167 sqq. Brandis, iii. 380-1.

Harm. El. 44: Harmonics

must begin with data which are immediately established by perception. καθόλου δὲ ἐν τῷ ἄρχεσθαι παρατηρητέον, ὅπως μήτ' εἰς τὴν ὑπερορίαν ἐμπίπτωμεν, ἀπό τινος φωνῆς ἡ κινήσεως ἀέρος ἀρχόμενοι, μήτ' αδ κάμπτοντες ἐντὸς [narrowing the bounds of our knowledge] πολλὰ τῶν οἰκείων ἀπολιμπάνωμεν. In fact, however, Aristox. does not go into the physicalinquiries as to the nature of tones; see next note, and cf. ibid. pp. 1 and 8.

² The basis on which Aristox. proceeds in his Harmonics is the human voice (cf. Harm. El. 19. 20, and CENSORIN. c. 12, who says that Aristox, held that music consisted 'in voce et corporis motu'-but he cannot conclude from this that he considered it to consist merely in this and to have no deeper basis, especially as this would be in contradiction with the quotation supra, vol. ii. p. 432, r. 5, and as CENSORIN, in the same passage, says of Socrates also that, according to him, music was 'in voce tantummodo'). The voice has two kinds of movement: that of speech and that of song. For speech it Aristoxenus turther described the Soul as a harmony, and more definitely as the harmony of the Body. The activities of the soul were held by him to spring from the concurrent movements of the bodily organs as their

has a continuous motion; for song a movement of intervals (κίνησις συνεχής and διαστηματική): that is, in speech we have a continual change of tone, while in singing each tone is held for a certain time at the same level (ibid. p. 2, 8). Whether a tone is in itself a form of motion or no. Aristox, says he will not inquire (ibid. p. 9, 12); he says a tone is 'at rest' so long as it does not change its note, but allows that this may be an actual rest or may be merely a sameness of motion (δμαλότης κινήσεως † ταὐτότης); nor will he go into the question whether the voice really can hold exactly the same note, for it is enough that it appears to us to do so. άπλωs γὰρ, ὅταν ἄν οὕτω κινῆται ἡ φωνὴ, ώστε μηδαμού δοκείν Ίστασθαι τῆ άκοῆ, συνεχή λέγομεν ταύτην την κίνησιν, δταν δὲ στηναί που δόξασα είτα πάλιν διαβαίνειν τινά τόπον φανή, και τοῦτο ποιήσασα πάλιν έφ' έτέρας τάσεως [level of tone] στήναι δόξη, και τουτο έναλλάξ ποιείν φαινομένη συνεχώς διατελή, διαστηματικήν την τοιαύτην κίνησιν λέγομεν. The result of this must be a bad 'circulus in definiendo,' by which the ἐπίτασις φωνής is defined as a movement of the voice from a low to a high note, and the άνεσις φωνής a movement from a high to a low one, while όξύτης, conversely, is defined as τὸ γενόμενον διὰ τῆς ἐπιτάσεως, and βαρυτης as το γενόμειων δια της ανέσεως (p. 10). Again, the

lesser δίεσις (quarter tone) is given as the smallest perceptible and stateable difference of tone (pp. 13-4), while the greatest which can be represented by the human voice or by any single instrument is said to be the δια $\pi \in \nu \tau \in \kappa \alpha \lambda$ dis $\delta i \dot{\alpha} \pi \alpha \sigma \hat{\omega} \nu$ (= two octaves and a fifth) (p. 20). The notions of tone and interval are defined (p. 16-7), and the different tone-systems are given (p. 17-8) with the statement that of these the diatonic is the most original, the chromatic the next. and the enharmonic the last, so that the ear is with difficulty accustomed to it (p. 19), &c. The further course of the inquiry cannot be followed here. That Aristox. (as in Harm. pp. 24, 45-46) fixed the compass of the fourth at two and a half, of the fifth at three and a half, and of the octave at six tones, whereas the true compass is rather less, because the half-tones of the fourth and fifth are not a full half, is matter of criticism in PTOLEM. Harm. i. 10; BOETH. De Mus. 1417; CENSORIN. Di. Nat. 10, 7. Cf. also PLUT. An. Procr. c. 17, p. 1020-1 (where the άρμονικοί are the followers of Aristox., elsewhere called doγανικοί or μουσικοί). It is possible that in his treatment of rhythm Aristox, also treated of the letters of the alphabet as the elements of speech; see DIONYS. Comp. Verb. p. 154.

common product; a disturbance in one of these parts, which destroys the concord of their movements, causes the extinction of consciousness—in other words, death.¹ In this doctrine he only followed a view which had been already adopted by others—probably Pythagoreans—before him.² It would commend itself all the more to him as an empiric in that it offered an explanation of the soul which harmonised with his views upon music. Just as in music he confines himself to the facts of experience, so in treating of the life of the soul he confines himself strictly to its sensible manifestations; and just as there he sees harmony arising from the concurrence of particular sounds, so he holds that the

¹ Cic. Tusc. i. 10, 20; 'Aristox. . . ipsius corporis intentionem [\tau \text{\$\sigma vos\$} \] quandam [animam dixit]; velut in cantu et fidibus quæ harmonia dicitur, sic ex corporis totius natura et figura varios motus cieri, tanquam in cantu sonos.' Cf. c. 18, 41, where, on the other hand, we are told: 'membrorum vero situs et figura corporis vacans animo quam possit harmoniam efficere, non video.' C. 22, 51: 'Dicæarchus quidem et Aristox. . . . nullum omnino animum esse dixerunt.' LACTANT. Instit. vii. 13 (perhaps also following Cicero): Aristox., qui negavit omnino ullam esse animam, etiam cum vivit in corpore?'-but held that as harmony is engendered out of the tension of strings, 'ita in corporibus ex compage viscerum ac vigore membrorum vim sentiendi existere.' LACT. Opif. D. c. 16: 'Aristox. dixit, mentem omnino nullam esse, sed quasi

harmoniam in fidibus ex constructione corporis et compagibus viscerum vim sentiendi existere . . . scilicet ut singularum corporis partium firma conjunctio membrorumque omnium consentiens in unum vigor motum illum sensibilem faciat animumque concinnet, sicut nervi bene intenti conspirantem sonum. Et sicuti in fidibus, cum aliquid aut interruptum aut relaxatum est, omnis canendi ratio turbatur et solvitur, ita in corpore, cum pars aliqua membrorum duxerit vitium, destrui universa, corruptisque omnibus et turbatis occidere sensum eamque mortem vocari.'

² Zell. Ph. d. Gr. i. 413. Aristox. probably stated this view in his books on the Pythagoreans; but what is quoted from him by JAMBL. Theol. Arithm. p. 41, as to the Metempsychosis of Pythagoras does not prove that Aristox. himself believed in that

doctrine,

soul originates in the concurrence of bodily movements.

Along with Aristoxenus his friend and fellow-disciple 1 Dicæarchus of Messene 2 is usually classed, on account of his views upon the nature of the soul,3 which he appears to have made even more expressly and thoroughly the subject of his investigations.4 He also held that the soul has no absolute independent

¹ As to this, see Cic. Tusc. i. 18, Ad Att. xiii. 32, and supra, vol. ii. p. 429, n. 2.

² According to SUID. s. v., he was the son of Phidias, born at Messene in Sicily, a scholar of Aristotle, a philosopher, a rhetorician and a geometrician. He is often called a Messenian and a scholar of Aristotle (e.g. Cic. Legg. iii. 6, 14; ATHEN. xi. 460-1, xv. 666, b and a). Why THEMISTIUS names him among traducers of Aristotle (supra, vol. i. p. 40, n. 1), it is difficult to say; for neither the circumstance referred to by MÜL-LEB (Fragm. Hist. Gr. ii. 225-6) that he gave more importance to the practical life than Aristotle did (see below), nor the fact (which OSANN, p. 46, connects with this accusation) that Dicæarchus departed from Aristotle's teaching as to the soul, has anything to do with their personal relations, of which THEMIST. is speaking. It is possible that THEMIST. or his copyists have inserted the wrong name: Demochares, for example, might be suggested instead.-We have no further information about Dicæarchus, except that he lived in the Peloponnesus (CIC. Ad Att.

vi. 2) and that he was employed by the Macedonian kings to measure the heights of mountains (PLIN. H. Nat. ii. 65, 162), which work we know that he did in the Peloponnesus, for SUIDAS ascribes to him καταμετρήσεις τῶν ἐν Πελοποννήσφ όρων. His learning is praised by PLIN. (loc. cit.), by CIC. Ad Att. ii. 2 and elsewhere, and by VARRO, De R. R. i. 1 (cf. MÜLLER, ibid. p. 226). His dates of birth and death cannot be exactly determined As to his life and writings, see OSANN. Beitr. ii. 1-119; FUHR, Dicarchi Messen. quæ supersunt (Darmst. 1841); MÜLLER, Fragm. Hist. Gr. ii. 225 sqq., from whom the Fragments hereafter cited are taken.

³ Cic. Tusc. i. 18, 41, 22, 51.
⁴ We know from Cic. Ad Att.
xiii. 32, Tusc. i. 10, 21, 31, 77;
Plut. Adv. Col. 14, 2, p. 1115,
that he wrote two works on the
soul, which were dialogues, one
laid at Corinth, the other in
Lesbos. Whether with either of
these (OSANN, 40-1, suggests the
Koρινθιακόs) the work De Interitu
Hominum (Cic. Off. ii. 5, 16;
Consol. ix. 351) was identical
must remain an unsolved problem; but it seems improbable.

existence of its own, but is merely the result of the mixture of material constituents, being in fact nothing else than the harmonious union of the four elements in a living body: only as it is united to the body accordingly and diffused through all its parts does the soul partake of reality. It was only, therefore, to be expected that he should from this point of view vigorously combat the belief in immortality. It is more surprising to be told that he believed in revelations through dreams and ecstatic states. These, however,

¹ Cic. Tusc. i. 10, 21: Dic. makes a certain Pherecrates maintain, 'nihil esse omnino animum et hoc esse nomen totum inane . . neque in homine inesse animum vel animam nec in bestia; vimque omnem eam, qua vel agamus quid vel sentiamus [κίνησις and αἴσθησις were already indicated by ARIST. De An. i. 2, 403, b, 25, as the distinguishing marks of the ξμψυχον], omnibus corporibus vivis æquabiliter esse fusam, nec separabilem a corpore esse, quippe quæ nulla sit [cf. 11, 24. nihil omnino animum dicat essel, nec sit quidquam nisi corpus unum et simplex [the body alone], ita figuratum ut temperatione naturæ vigeat et sentiat;' Ibid. 18, 41: '[Dic.] ne condoluisse quidem unquam videtur, qui animum se habere non sentiat;' 22, 51 (v. supra, vol. ii. p. 437, n. 1, and Acad. ii. 39, 124). SEXT. says he taught μη είναι την ψυχην (Pyrrh. ii. 31), μηδέν είναι αὐτὴν παρά τὸ πῶς ἔχον σῶμα (Math. vii. 349). ATTICUS, ap. Eus. Praep. E_r . xv. 9, 5: ἀνήρηκε την δλην δπόστασιν της ψυχης. JAMBL. ap. STOB. Ecl. i. 870: the soul was,

according to Dicæarchus, τὸ τῆ φύσει συμμεμιγμένον, ή τὸ τοῦ σώματος ον, ὥσπερ τὸ ἐμψυχῶσθαι· αὐτῆ δὲ μὴ παρόν τῆ ψυχῆ ώσπερ ύπάρχον. (?) SIMPL. Categ. Schol. in Ar. 68, a, 26: Δικ. . . . τὸ μὲν ζώον συνεχώρει είναι, την δε αίτίαν αὐτοῦ ψυχὴν ἀνήρει. ΝΕΜΕS. Nat. Hom. p. 68: Δικαίαρχος δὲ [την ψυχην λέγει] άρμονίαν των τεσσάρων στοιχείων (so also PLUT. Plac. iv. 2, 5; STOB. Ecl. i. 796; HERMIAS, Irris. p. 402), which is the same as kpaous kal συμφωνία τῶν στοιχείων. For it is not the musical kind of 'harmony,' which is meant, but the harmonious mixture of the warm. cold, moist and dry elements in the body. Accordingly he is said to have considered the soul as ἀνούσιος (which means, not immaterial, as OSANN, p. 48, translates it, but non-substantial). The meaning of TER-TULL. De An. c. 15 (cf. infra, under STRATO) is not clear.

² CIC. Tusc. i. 31, 77, Lactant. Instit. vii. 7, 13; and cf. next note.

³ Ps.-PLUT. Plac. v.1,4: 'Αριστοτέλης καὶ Δικ. τὸ κατ' ἐνθουσιασμὸν [γένος μαντικῆς] μόνον παρεισάγουσι he was doubtless able, like Aristotle, to reconcile with his doctrine of the soul by means of a natural explanation. That he was no friend of divination and the priestly arts of prophecy can easily be gathered from the fragments of his work upon the Cave of Trophonius.

Connected with Dicæarchus's view of the soul is his assertion that the practical life is superior to the theoretic. One who held, as he did, that the soul was inseparably united to the body could not ascribe to that activity of thought in which it withdraws from all that is external in order to become absorbed in itself, the same value as Plato and Aristotle, following out their view of the nature of mind, had done. Conversely, one who found the highest activity of the soul only in the practical side of life must necessarily have been all the more ready to conceive of it as not in its nature separable from the bodily organs, but as the operative force that pervades them. But Dicæarchus demands

καὶ τοὺς ὀνείρους, ἀθάνατον μὲν εἶναι οὐ νομίζοντες τὴν ψυχὴν, θείου δέ τινος μετέχειν αὐτήν. Similarly in Cic. Divin. i, 3, 5, 50, 113. Cf. ibid. ii. 51, 10: 'magnus Dicæarchi liber est, nescire ea [quæ ventura sint] melius esse, quam scire.'

Cf. supra, vol. ii. pp. 76, 328.

The proposition (PSEUDO-PLUT. in the last note but one) that the soul has something divine, would not stand in his way, for even Democritus (ZELL. Ph. d. Gr. i. 812-3) admits as much. It is, however, questionable whether the Placita have any right to couple Dicæarchus

with Aristotle in this connection. Certainly we cannot ascribe to him what CIC. Divin. i. 50, 113, says as to the loosing of the soul from the body in sleep and in excitement, and, in fact, Cicero does not name Dicearchus for his view.

⁸ Fr. 71-2, ap. ATHEN. xiv. 641, e, xiii. 594, e; cf. OSANN, p. 107 sqq.

⁴ Cic. Ad Att. ii. 16: 'quoniam tanta controversia est Dicæarcho, familiari tuo, cum Theophrasto, amico meo, ut ille tuus τὸν πρακτικὸν βίον longe omnibus anteponat, hic autem τὸν θεωρητικὸν.' Cf. ibid. vii. 3. that just as this psychic force penetrates the whole body, the moral force should manifest itself throughout the whole of human life: it is not the lecture that makes the philosopher; it is not the public oration or the official business that makes the statesman; but the philosopher is he who carries his philosophy into every circumstance and action of his life, the statesman he who dedicates his whole life to the service of the people.¹

With this strong practical bent Dicæarchus naturally found political studies especially attractive; and accordingly we hear, not only generally that he gave special attention to these,² but also that he wrote accounts of Greek Constitutions; ³ particularly we know that in his *Tripoliticus*—a development of Aristotelian ideas ⁴—he proposed a combination of the three pure forms of constitution (democracy, aristocracy, and monarchy) as the best, and pointed to Sparta as an example of this combination.⁵ Beyond this we know hardly anything

¹ This is the leading idea of the passage in PLUT. An seni s. ger. resp. c. 26, p. 796, of which we may assume that its general content belongs to Dicaerchus and not merely the single sentence και γάρ τοὺς ἐν ταῖς στοαῖς άνακάμπτοντας περιπατείν φασίν, ως έλεγε Δικαίαρχος, ούκέτι δὲ τοὺς είς ἀγρὸν ἡ φίλον βαδίζοντας. The meaning of that sentence will then be as follows: as people use the word περιπατείν only of walking, which is done directly for the sake of movement, so they commonly use the words φιλοσοφείν and πολιτεύεσθαι only of those activities which expressly and directly serve a philosophic

or a political aim; but the one use is as incorrect as the other.

² CIC. Legg. iii. 5, 14.

³ OIC. Ad Att.; ii. 2 (cf. OSANN, p. 13 sqq.) names accounts by him of the Constitutions of Pella, Corinth, and Athens, which probably were parts of a general History of Constitutions, if not indeed of the Bios 'Eλλάδοs (infra); SUID. says that his πολιτεία Σπαρτιατῶν (which may also have been part of the Tripoliticus) was publicly read in Sparta every year.

⁴ Cf. supra, vol. ii. p. 230 sq, and especially pp. 278 sqq.

⁵ That this was the main idea of the Τριπολιτικόs and that

of Dicæarchus's political philosophy.¹ We may pass over the fragments of his numerous writings upon history, geography, and the development of literature and art, especially as the views expressed in them are of no particular philosophical interest.²

CICERO, who studied and admired Dicearchus (supra, vol. ii. p. 440, n. 4; Tusc. i. 31, 77, 'deliciæ meæ Dicæarchus'; Ad Att. ii. 2), borrowed from him the theory of the amalgamation of these forms of Constitution and the idea of exhibiting this amalgamation in a working polity, and that probably POLYB, vi. 2-10 also follows Dicæarchus, has been shown by OSANN, *ibid.* p. 8 sqq., who, however, is wrong in treating as genuine the political Fragments of Archytas and Hippodamus, and in citing in support of his view PLUT. Qu. Conv. viii. 2, 2, 3, p. 718, where Dicaerchus is merely speaking of the combination of Socratic and Pythagorean elements in Plato. This inference assumes the highest degree of probability when we observe that Phot. Bibl. Cod. 37, p. 8, a (following some scholar of the sixth century) speaks of είδος πολιτείας δικαιαρχικόν, which consists in an amalgamation of the three kinds of constitution, and is the best kind of government, and that (according to Fr. 23 b. ATHEN. iv. 141, a) the Tripoliticus contained an exact description of the Spartan Phiditia, and when we compare with these data the fashion in which both Cicero in the Republic (e.g. i. 29, 45-6, and ii. 28, 39) and Polybius loc. cit. deal with the subject. OSANN also suggests (p. 29 sqq.) that the work for which Cic.

Ad Att. xiii. 32 says he wishes to make use of the *Tripoliticus*, was the 'De Gloria.'

1 Direct information on this head we have none, except the remark (cited by PLUT. Qu. Conv. iv. Proœm. p. 659), that we should seek the good will of all, but the friendship of the good. We gather from PORPH. De Abst 17. I, 2 (see next note), and from the saying (Cic. Off. ii. 5, 16, Consol. ix. 351 Bip.) that many more men have been ruined by the hands of men than by wild beasts or catastrophes of nature. Dic. denounced that According to PORPH. ibid. it seems that Dic. (like Theophrastus) saw even in the custom slaughtering animals, the commencement of a downward tendency.

² His views as to the conical form of the earth (Fr. 53; PLIN. H. N. ii. 65, 162) and the eternity of the world and of the races of men and animals are purely Aristotelian (Fr. 3, 4 ap. CENS. Di. Nat. c. 4; VARRO, R. Rust. ii. 1); and inasmuch as he strove (using the myth of the rule of Kronos) to represent with much intelligence the original condition of mankind and the gradual transition from a primitive state of nature to pastoral life (with which began the eating of flesh and war) and the further advance to an agricultural life (Fr. 1-5, b; PORPH.

Of another Peripatetic known to us by name, Phanias, the friend and fellow-citizen of Theophrastus, we possess only isolated statements upon history and science.2 The same is true of Clearchus of Soli; 3 since although among his writings, so far as they are known to us,4 none are historical,5 yet almost all the quotations from them which we possess relate to history, and these are for the most part so paltry and insignificant,6 and

De Abstin. iv. 1, 2, p. 295-6; HIERON. Adv. Jovin. II. t. iv. b, 205, Mart.; CENSOR. c. 4: VARRO, R. \dot{R} . ii. 1, i. 9) he must, like Aristotle and Theophrastus (supra, vol. ii. pp. 30 sq. 378 sq.), have supposed that the history of human civilisation moved in a settled cycle.

Our information as to the life of this man (from SUID. s. v.; STRABO, xiii. 2, 4, p. 618; PLUT. Themist. c. 13; AMMON. in Categ., Schol. in Ar. 28, a, 40) is limited to the statements that he belonged to Eresos, that he was a scholar of Aristotle, and lived in and after Ol. 111 (in Ol. 111, 2, Aristotle returned from Macedonia to Athens). DIOGENES, v. 37, quotes a letter which Theophrastus, when he was advanced in age, wrote to this Phanias, de quo cf. also Schol. in Apoll. Rhod. i. 972.

² We hear of various historical works of Phanias; a work π . ποιητών, another on the Socratics (which may have dealt with other philosophers also); a book $\pi \rho \delta s$ τούς σοφιστάς, of which the πρός Διόδωρον (Diodorus Kronus) was perhaps a part, and a π . $\phi u \tau \hat{\omega} \nu$, to which the matter cited by PLIN. H. Nat. xxii. 13, 35 from 'Phanias the physicist' may have He is also said to belonged.

have written works on Logic (AMMON. ibid., and v. supra, vol. i. p. 64, n. 1). The information which exists about these texts, and the fragments of them which are preserved, have been collected by VOISIN (De Phania Eres. Gand. 1824) and after him by MÜLLER, Fragm. Hist. Gr. ii. 293 sqq.

3 Heisoften called Σολεύς; and that the Cyprian, not the Cilician, Soli is meant, is clear (as many have observed, and as MÜLLER, ibid, 302, maintains against VER-RAERT, De Clearcho Sol. Gand. 1828, p. 3-4) from ATHEN, vi. 256. c. e. f. We know nothing more about his life, except that he was a scholar of Aristotle. (See

notes on next page.)

4 See the list and Fragm. apud VERRAERT and MÜLLER,

ubi supra.

⁵ Éven the π . $\beta i\omega \nu$, which seems to have been his chief work, and from which we have citations of books 1, 2, 3, 4 and 8, cannot have been, if we are to judge by these Fragments, a biographical work, but only a discussion of the value of different kinds of lives; cf. MÜLLER. ibid. p. 302.

⁶ This cannot be wholly due to the fact that we owe the citations to a gossip like Athenaus.

exhibit so little critical power, while Clearchus's own conjectures are so devoid of taste,1 that they give us but a mean opinion of their author's powers. Generally it may be said that what we know of him is little fitted to establish the assertion that he is second to none of the Peripatetics,2 although, on the other hand, it must be confessed that we do not know what those departures from the true Peripatetic doctrine were with which Plutarch charges him.3 Besides a few unimportant scientific assertions,4 and a discussion of the different kinds of riddles,5 some hints as to his views upon ethics can be extracted from the fragments of Clearchus: these, however, merely amount to the statements that luxury and extravagance are in the highest degree reprehensible, although, on the other hand, Cynic and Stoic indifference to external circumstances are far from

'E.g. his explanation of the myth of the egg of Leda, ap. Athen. ii. 57, e: 'the ancients in place of ὑπερφον used ἀὐν simply, and so, since Helen was begotten in a ὑπερφον, the story arose that she came out of an egg'!—his statement, ap. Diog. i. 81, as to Pittacus (evidently founded only on the well-known verse ap. Plut. VII. Sap. Conv. c. 14, p. 157, e): τούτφ γυμνασία ἦν σίτον ἀλεῖν—and his idea that (Fr. 60 ap. Müller) the man-eating steeds of Diomedes meant his daughters!

² Joseph. C. Apion. i. 22, ii. 454 Haverc.: Κλ. δ 'Αριστοτέλους &ν μαθητής και τῶν ἐκ τοῦ περιπάτου φιλοσόφων οὐδενὸς δεύτερος. ΑΤΗΕΝ. Χν. 701, c.: Κλ. δ Σολεὺς οὐδενὸς δεύτερος τῶν τοῦ σοφοῦ

'Αριστοτέλους μαθητών.

3 De Fac. Lun. 2, 5, p. 920: ὑμέτερος γὰρ ὁ ἀνὴρ, 'Αριστοτέλους τοῦ παλαιοῦ γεγονώς συνήθης, εἰ καὶ πολλὰ τοῦ περιπάτου παρέτρεψεν.

⁴ Fr. 70-74, a, 76, 78; cf. SPRENGEL, Gesch. d. Arzneik. (fourth edition); v. ROSENBAUM, i 442-3

⁵ Fr. 63, apud ATHEN. x. 448, c. cf. PRANTL, Gesch. d. Log. i. 399 sq.

⁶ So Clearchus, in his π. βίων, had recounted the numerous examples of these failings and their consequences, which ATHENÆUS cites from him (Fragm. 3-14, cf. Fr. 16-18, 21-23); and, on the other hand (Fr. 15, ap. ATHEN. xii. 548, d), named Gorgias to prove the wholesome effects of moderation.

praiseworthy; 1 that a sharp distinction must be drawn between friendship and flattery; 2 that passionate and unnatural love should be avoided, 3 and such like. On the whole, Clearchus gives us the impression rather of a versatile and well-read, though somewhat superficial, man of letters, 4 than of a scholar and philosopher.

Among the pupils of Aristotle is sometimes reckoned Heraclides of Pontus. It has already been remarked,⁵ however, that neither the chronology nor the character of his doctrines is favourable to this assumption, although his learned efforts show that he was certainly closely akin to the Peripatetic school. Aristotle's influence may have had a more decided effect upon the orator and poet Theodectes, who died, however, before Alexander's Persian expedition.⁶ Several other Aristotelians, such as Callisthenes,⁷

¹ Apud ATHEN. xiii. 611, b, he distinguishes (apparently in opposition to the Cynics and perhaps to the Stoics also) between βίος καρτερικός and the βίος καντικός.

² Cf. Fr. 30, 32 (ATHEN. vi. 255, b, xii. 533, e) with the bold sketch of a young and weak Prince ruined by flattering courtiers, &c. Fr. 25-6 (ATHEN. vi. 255, c. 258, a).

³ Fr. 34-36 (ATHEN. xiii. 573,

a, 589, d, 605, d, e).

⁴ The conversation between Aristotle and a Jew reported by Clearchus (Fr. 69, ap. JOSEPH. C. Apion. i. 22), may be regarded as a literary invention, together with the accompanying explanation that the Jews derived their philosophy from India. The book cited (π. υπνου, de quo Ber-

NAYS, Abh. d. Hist.-philos. Gesellsch. in Breslau, i. 1858, 190, 'Theophr. üb. Frömmigk.' 110, 187) need not, from our extant information as to Clearchus, be considered spurious.

5 Supra, vol. ii. p. 387, n. 1, p. 433 sqq.; cf. Zell. Ph. d. Gr. i.

p. 843, n. 1.

Gon this writer, who is often quoted by Aristotle, and of whom we have suggested (supra, vol. i. p. 72, u., following PLUT. Alex. c. 17) that he was with Aristotle in Macedonia, see WESTEEMANN'S Gesch. d. Beredsamk. bei d. Griech. u. Röm. i. 84, A, 6, 142, A, 21, and supra, vol. i. p. 40, u. 2, p. 72.

⁷ This kinsman and scholar of Aristotle is referred to *supra*, vol. i. p. 22, n. 1 ad fin. (see also VALER. MAX. vii. 2, ext. 8, SUID.

Leo of Byzantium, and Clytus, are known to us only as writers on history, Meno only as the author of a history of pharmacology. Of a theological work of Hipparchus of Stagira only the title has come down to us. Of those who are not accredited with any written or oral teaching of their own, we need say nothing.

Kaλλισθ.), and as to his death, see supra, vol. i. p. 32 sqq. Further information about him and his writings will be found in GEIER, Alex. Hist. Script. 191 sqq.; MÜLLER, Script. Her. Alex. 1 sqq.

The little we can glean of this historian (whom SUID. $\Lambda \ell \omega \nu$ $B \nu \zeta$. confounds with an earlier politician of Byzantium of the same name) from SUID. ibid., ATHEN. xii. 553-1, and PSEUDO-PLUT. De Fluv. 2, 2, 24, 2, is set out in MULLER, Fragm. Hist. Gr. ii. 328-9.

ATHEN. xiv. 655, b, xii. 540,
 c; DIOG. i. 25; MÜLLER, ibid.
 333.

⁸ GALEN, in Hippoor. de Nat. Hom. vol. xv. 25–26 K., says this physician was a scholar of Aristotle's, and wrote an ἱατρική συναγωγή in several books, erroneously ascribed to Aristotle himself. It is clear that this was an historical collection of medical theories, both from the title (which is the equivalent of the Τεχνῶν συναγωγή supra, vol. i. p. 73, n. 1), and also from the remark of Galen, that he had used

for this work all the writings of earlier physicians then extant.

4 Of the historian Marsyas (supra, vol. i. p. 22, n. 1) we cannot tell whether and how far he adhered to the Peripatetic philosophy.

⁵ Suid. ⁴Iππαρχ. (cf. Lobeck, Aglaoph. 608) names a work of his: τί τὸ ἄρρεν καὶ θῆλυ παρὰ θεοῖς καὶ τίς ὁ γάμος, καὶ ἄλλα τινά.

6 Including Adrastus of Philippi (Steph. Byz. De Urb. Φίλιπποι); Echecratides of Methymna (STEPH. BYZ. Μήθυμνα); King Cassander (PLUT. Alex. c. 74): Mnason of Phocis (ATHEN. vi. 264, d.; ÆLIAN, V. H. iii. 19); Philo, whom, according to ATHEN. xiii. 610-11, and Diog. v. 38, Sophocles, the author of the law referred to supra, vol. ii. p. 350, n. 4, indicted for an offence against the constitution; the Eucairos named supra, vol. i. p. 97 (cf. HEITZ, Verl. Schr. 118-19), and the 'Plato' named by Diog. iii. 109. Antipater was Aristotle's friend, but not his pupil.

CHAPTER XX

SCHOOL OF THEOPHRASTUS: STRATO

With the majority of those who belonged to the school of Theophrastus, the literary and historical tendency seems also to have been the predominating one. Most of those who are mentioned as belonging to it have confined themselves in their literary labours to history, the history of literature, ethics, politics, and rhetoric. This is true of Demetrius of Phalerus, distinguished as a scholar and statesman; 1 of

OSTERMANN has studied his life in the most thorough manner in De Demetrii Phal. Vita, &c., published (Part I.) Hersf. 1847, and (Part II.) Fulda, 1857; the titles and fragments of his writings are given by him in Part II., and by HERWIG, Ueber Demetr. Phal. Schriften, &c., Rinteln, 1850. Born about the middle of the fourth century (Ost. i. 8), and probably while Aristotle was still alive, DEMETRIUS studied under Theophrastus (CIC. Brut. 9, 37, Fin. v. 19, 54, Legg. iii. 6, 14, Off. i. 1, 3; Diog. v. 75), and (according to DEMETR. MAGN. apud Diog. v. 75) he made his first appearance as a popular orator about the time that Harpalus came to Athens, i.e. about 324 B.C. On the termination of the Lamian War he seems. with Phocion, to have played some part as one of the chiefs of the Macedonian aristocratic party, for when, after Antipater's death (318 B.C.), the opposition party came into power for a while, and Phocion was executed, Demetrius also was tried and condemned to death (PLUT. Phoc. 35). He escaped his sentence, however, by flight, and when, in the following year, Cassander made himself master of Athens. he handed over to Demetrius the direction of the State under an oligarchical republican constitution. For ten years Demetrius occupied this position, and even if it be admitted that his rule may not have been blameless, he did most important service for the prosperity and order of Athens. He is accused of vanity, haughtiDuris,1 and his brother Lynceus 2 of Chamæleon,3 and

ness, and immorality by DURIS and DIYLLUS, ap. ATHEN. xii. 542, b sqq. xiii. 593, e, f (though ÆLIAN, \tilde{V} . H. ix. 9, transfers the statement to Demetrius Poliorcetes); but the untrustworthiness of Duris and the animus of his statements lead us to suppose a high degree of exaggeration. When Demetrius Poliorcetes, in 307 B.C., took the Piræus, an insurrection broke out in Athens against Demetrius Phal. and Cassander's party. Protected by Poliorcetes, he escaped to Thebes, and finally, after Cassander's death (Ol. 120, 2, 298-99 B.C.), went to Egypt. Here Ptolemy Lagi accorded him an honourable and influential position, in which he was specially active in founding the Alexandrian library (Ost. i. 26-64: who, however, on p. 64 makes a very improbable suggestion, ibid. ii. 2 sqq.; cf. Grauert, Hist. u. phil. Analekten, i. 310 sqq.; DROYSEN, Gesch. d. Hellenism. ii. b, 106 sqq). After the death of this prince (and according to HERMIPP. apud DIOG. v. 78 immediately after, which would be 283 BC.) Ptolemy Philadelphus, whose succession Demetrius had opposed, banished him to a place in the country, where he lived some time as a political prisoner, and where he eventually died from the bite of an adder (CIC. Pro Rabir. Post. 9, 23, says this was a suicide; but HERMIPP., ut supra, states it as an accident). CICERO speaks very highly of his talents as an orator and as a scholar (see Brut. 9, 37 sq. 82, 285, Orat. 27, 92, De Orat. ii.

23, 95, Offic. i. 1, 3, and cf. QUINT. Inst. x. 1, 33, 80, and DIOG. v. 82), although he does not find in his speeches the fire and the power of the great orators of free Athens. That he brought about the translation of the so-called Septuagint is palpably a fable, as to which OSTERMANN ought not to have credited the lying Aristæus (ii. 9 sqq. 46-7). So also the work on the Jews is a forgery, although both Herwig (pp. 15-16), and OSTERMANN (ii. 32-3), have

accepted it.

1 All we know of DURIS is that he was a Samian and a pupil of Theophrastus ECKERTZ'S account of him, De Duride Sam. Bonn, 1846; MÜL-1 ER, Fragm. Hist. Gr. ii. 466 sqq. and Athen. iv. 128, a). To define the exact date of his lifetime (cf. MÜLLER, ibid.) is not possible. According to ATHEN. viii. 337, d, he had, at some period, governed his native town, but when we cannot sav. His untrustworthiness in historical matters is very unfavourably criticised in PLUT. Pericl. 28. That this criticism is borne out by what we know of the statements cited from Duris. Eckertz has amply proved. Nor is his literary talent highly thought of either by Phot. Cod. 176, p. 121, a, 41 sqq., or by Dionys. Comp. Verb. v. 28 R.

² See Athen. *ibid*. A list of his writings is given by MÜLLER,

ibid. p. 466.

³ See KÖPKE, *De Chamæleonte Peripatetico*, Berl. 1856. Of him also we know but little. He was a native of Heraclea in Pontus

Praxiphanes.¹ Even from the ethical writings of these men, however, nothing has come down to us of a philosophical character.² Of a few other disciples of

(ATHEN. iv. 184, d, viii. 338, b, ix. 374, a, &c.), and is probably the same person as he whose courageous answer to king Seleucus is mentioned by MEMNON (apud Рнот. Cod. 224, р. 626, а). He is described as a Peripatetic by TATIAN, Ad Gr. 31, p. 269, a: and the circumstance that his book π. ήδονης was attributed also to Theophrastus (cf. ATHEN. vi. 273, e, viii. 377, e) corroborates that description. From this circumstance Köpke (p. 34) concludes that Chamæleon was in fact a pupil of Theophrastus. He may, however, have been his co-disciple, since he (apud Diog. v. 92) criticised his compatriot Heraclides, who was one of Plato's elder pupils (ZELL. Ph. d. Gr. i. p. 842, 2) for a plagiarism.— Besides Chamæleon we have also a mention by TATIAN, in the same passage (cf. also ATHEN. xii. 513, b, ÈUSTATH. in *Il.* α', p. 84, 18, SUID. 'Aθηναίας, and HESYCH. 'Aθηνα), of a Peripatetic named MEGACLIDES (or Metacl.) from whose work on Homer a critical remark is cited.

¹ Described as έταῖρος Θεοφράστου, by PROCL in Tim. 6, C. According to this passage he objected to the beginning of the Timœus; according to TZETZES, in Hesiod. Opp. et Di. v. 1, he considered the introduction to this book as spurious. STRABO, xiv. 2, 13, p. 655, calls him a Rhodian, and EPIPHAN. Exp. Fid. 1094, a, adds that his doctrine was in

accord with that of Theophrastus. Whether he is the same person as the Praxiphanes described as a Peripatetic and Grammarian, to whom Callimachus dedicated a work (BEKKER'S Anec. ii. 729, where, however, our text gives παρ' Έξιφάνους; see also ARAT, ed. Buhle, ii. 432), is uncertain (as ZUMPT, Abh. d. Berl. Akad. v. J. 1842, Hist.-phil. Kl. p. 91, has remarked), inasmuch as CLEM. Strom. i. 309, says that a Mytilenean named Praxiphanes was the first person who was called Nevertheless, νοαμματικός. seems probable that it is one and the same person who is intended in all these passages.—A pupil of Praxiphanes, named PLATO, is mentioned by DIOG. iii, 109, and expressly distinguished by him from the other Plato referred to supra, vol. ii. p. 466, n. 6.

² Of Praxiphanes we know nothing at all except what is stated in the text.—Of the eight works of Duris known to us, the most important were undoubtedly the three historical ones (the Greek and Macedonian Histories, the Agathocles, and the Samian Chronicles). other works treated of festival plays, of tragedy, of painters, and of sculpture. The work π . νόμων may have been philosophical, but we have from it nothing but two mythological notes.-From Lynceus, who was a writer of comedies and also a gourmet, and author of a book on the art of cookery (ATHEN. iv. p. 131-2, Theophrastus some are known to us only by name, while others hardly merit the title of philosophers.²

Much more important as a contributor to philosophy

vi. p. 228 c, vii. p. 313-4; cf. iv. p. 128, a), ATHENÆUS, in his numerous quotations (see the Index to ATHEN, and MULLER, ibid.), and PLUT. Demetr. c. 27, Schol. Theoer. to iv. 20, give us only a few notes and stories. chiefly about cookery .-- Of the sixteen writings of CHAMÆ-LEON which KÖPKE, p. 15 sqq., enumerates, twelve related to the epic, lyric, comic, and tragic poets, and were concerned merely with literary history. Only a few unimportant historical remarks have reached us from the Προτρεπτικὸs and the treatises π . $\mu \in \theta \eta s$, π . $\dot{\eta} \delta o \nu \dot{\eta} s$, π . $\Theta \in \hat{\omega} \nu$ (see KÖPKE, p. 36 sqq. . the citations are to be found in ATHENÆUS. passim, in CLEMENS ALEX. Strom. i. 300 A, in BEKKER, Anecd. i. 233, and Diog. iii. 46).—DEME-TRIUS was one of the most fertile authors of the Peripatetic school, and besides the forty-five works of his which Drog. v. 80 mentions, we hear of others. OSTER-MANN (op. cit. ii, p. 21 sqq.) and HERWIG (op. cit.p. 10 sqq.) identify fifty writings, some of them comprising several books: from this list, however, must be withdrawn, in any case, those on the Jews (see supra, vol. ii. p. 447, n. 1) and perhaps those on the Egyptians (see OSTERMANN, p. 34). Amongst the genuine writings there were a good many treatises on moral subjects (including the eight Dialogues, which appear to have been of this class), as well as two books on statecraft, and one π .

νόμων. There were also historical. grammatical and literary researches, a Rhetoric, a collection of speeches, which Cicero must have known, and another collection of letters. Nevertheless, out of all this mass of literary matter nothing, except a quantity of historical and grammatical scraps and a few insignificant remarks of moral and political interest, has come down to us. (Fr. 6-15, 38-40, 54, OSTERMANN, from DIOG. v. 82, 83; STOB. Floril. 8, 20, 12, 18; PLUT. Cons. ad Apoll. c. 6, p. 104; DIODOR. Exc. Vatic. libr. xxxi., also five in Mar's Nova Collect. ii. 81, POLYB. Exc. xxx. 3, ibid. 434 sq., Exc. 1. xxxiv.-xxxvii. 2, ibid. 444; ibid. x. 22, RUTIL. LUPUS, De Fig. Sent. i. 1.)

1 This is so of all the men who are named in the Will of Theophrastus (DIOG. v. 52-3; cf. supra, ii. p. 350, n. 5) to succeed Strato in the enjoyment of the ground bequeathed by him for the School, i.e. HIPPARCHUS. NELEUS (supra, vol. i. p. 137, and p. 139, n. 3), CALLINUS, DE-MOTIMUS, DEMARATUS, CALLIS-THENES, MELANTHES, PANCREON. NICIPPUS; the same may be said of NICOMACHUS and the three sons of Pythias (cf. supra, vol. i. p. 20, n. 3 ad fin., and SEXT. Math. i. 258), PROCLES, DEMARATUS, ARI-STOTLE; and of Theophrastus's slave, Pompylus (Diog. v. 36).

² Like MENANDER, the comic poet, who is also said to have been a pupil of Theophrastus.

is Strato of Lampsacus, the successor of Theophrastus, and the only one of his pupils of whom it is known that he followed out with success the scientific lines laid down by him and by Aristotle. After Theophrastus he is the most distinguished of all the Peripatetics, a

1 Strato, a native of Lampsacus (Diog. v. 58, &c., Λαμψακηvos is one of the epithets commonly used with his name) was a pupil of Theophrastus (ibid. Cic. Acad. i. 9, 34, Fin. v. 5, 13. SIMPL. Phys. 187, a, 225, a, &c.). He succeeded him as chief of the School, held that post for eighteen years, and died (ibid. p. 68) in Ol. 127, between 270 and 268 B.C. If, as Diog. ibid. says, he was really the teacher of Ptolemy Philadelphus (who was called to govern along with his father in 285 B.C., and succeeded him on the throne in 283 B.C.) he must have stayed some time at the Egyptian court, to which he may possibly have been invited on suggestion of Demetrius Phalereus. His letters (or letter) to Arsinoë, Ptolemy's sister and wife (quoted by Diog. p. 60), would lead us to suppose that such was the case. The story that his princely pupil gave him eighty talents, DIOG. himself tells only with a $\phi a \sigma i$. His will, however (apud Diog. p. 61 sqq.), shows him to be a wealthy man. He left in his testament the διατριβή (the garden and club-house of the School), with all arrangements necessary for the Syssitia, and his library, with the exception of his own MSS., to Lyco; the rest of his property he left to Arcesilaus, a namesake, either a son or a nephew of Strato's

father.—For other details, cf. NAUWERCH, De Stratone Lampsaceno, Berl. 1836; KRISCHE, Forschungen &c. p. 349 sqq.; and see also BRANDIS, iii. p. 394 sqq.

² Erasistratus, the celebrated physician, was also considered by many as one of Theophrastus's pupils (DIOG. v. 57; see also GALEN, Nat. Facult. ii. 4, vol. 88, 90-1, K., De Sang. in Arter. c. 7, vol. iv. 729, as the assertion of the followers of Erasistratus). This is not improbable, but according to GALEN (Nat. Facult. ii. 4, ibid. in Hippour. de Alim. iii. 14, vol. xv. 307-8, and cf. De Tremore, c. 6. vol. vii. 614) his doctrine differed in many ways from that of the Peripatetics. He even affirmed οὐδεν ὀρθώς εγνωκέναι περί φύσεως τούς περιπατητικούς. It appears that it is only in the acknowledgment of the complete teleology of nature (whereon cf. GALEN, Nat. Facult. ii. 2, vol. ii. 78, 81) that he agreed with them; and even to this he did not always adhere. So far as we know, he never made any independent philosophical researches: see SPRENGEL, Gesch. d. Arzneik. 4th. ed.; ROSENBAUM, i. p.321 sqq.

3 Cf. following note; and DIOG. v. 58: ἀνὴρ ἐλλογιμώτατος καὶ φυσικὸς ἐπικληθεὶς ἀπὸ τοῦ περὶ τὴν θεωρίαν ταὐτην παρ' ὁντινοῦν ἐπιμελέστατα διατετριφέναι. SIMPL. Phys. 225, a; τοῖς ἀρίστοις Περι.

position which he merited not only by the extent of his knowledge and his writings, but also still more by the acuteness and independence of his thought, for he surpassed Theophrastus himself in the originality of his scientific labours. His numerous writings, which seem to have aimed rather at the thorough investigation of particular questions than at a systematic and comprehensive treatment of the subject, extend over the whole field of philosophy. But his strong point was the study of

πατητικοίς ἀριθμούμενος. Even Cicero, who was not at all well disposed to Strato, calls him, in Fin.v. 5, 13, '(inphysicis] magnus,' and in Acad. i. 9, 34 praises his 'acre ingenium.' Nevertheless, his school was not so much frequented as that of Menedemus (of Eretria), as to which STRATO (apud PLUT. Tranqu. An. 13, p. 472) consoles himself with the remark: τί οὖν θαυμαστὸν, εἶ πλείονὲς εἶσιν οἱ λούεσθαι θέλοντες τῶν ἀλείφεσθαι βουλομένων;

¹ This independence, of which we shall find several proofs, was also recognised by the ancients; PLUT. Adv. Col. 14, 3, p. 1115: τῶν ἄλλων Περιπατητικῶν ὁ κορυφαιότατος Στράτων ούτ' 'Αριστοτέλει κατά πολλά συμφέρεται, &C. Pseudo GALEN, Hist. Phil. c. 2, ρ. 228 Κ.: ['Αριστοτέλης] τὸν Στράτωνα προσήγαγεν είς ίδιόν τινα χαρακτήρα φυσιολόγως [-ίας]. CIC. (following Antiochus) Fin. v. 5, 13, 'nova pleraque;' Acad. i. 9. 34, 'In ea ipsa [i.e. in Physics | plurimum discedit a suis.' POLYB. Exc. Libr. xii. 25, c. vol. ii. 750 Bekk.: καὶ γὰρ έκεῖνος [Στράτων δ φυσικός] ὅταν έγχειρήση τὰς τῶν ἄλλων δόξας διαστέλλεσθαι καὶ ψευδοποιείν θαυμάσιός ἐστιν, ὅταν δ' ἐξ αὐτοῦ τι προφέρηται καί τι τῶν ἰδίων ἐπινοημάτων ἐξηγῆται, παρὰ πολὺ φαίνεται τοῖς ἐπιστήμοσιν εὐηθέστερος αὐτοῦ καὶ νωθρότερος — which last statement, however, is difficult to accept as unbiassed.

² Diog. v. 59-60, gives (besides the Letters and the ὑπομνήματα, the authenticity of which was doubted), some forty-four writings, to which may be added the book περί τοῦ ὄντος mentioned by Procl. in Tim. 242 sq., and also the π. κινήσεως mentioned by SIMPL. Phys. 214, a, and His works may be classed as follows: (1) Logic: π . του δρου. π. του προτέρου γένους. π. τοῦ ἰδίου. τόπων προοίμια. (2) Metaphysics: π. τοῦ ὅντος, π. τοῦ προτέρου και ύστέρου (mentioned also by SIMPL. in Categ. 106, a, 107, a, Schol. in Ar. 89, a, 40, 90, α, 12). π. τοῦ μᾶλλον καὶ ἦττον. π. τοῦ συμβεβηκότος. π. τοῦ μέλλοντος, π , $\theta \in \hat{\omega} \nu \gamma'$, (3) Physics: π. ἀρχῶν γ' (which treated of heat and cold, &c., as physical principles). π. δυνάμεων, π. τοῦ κενού, π. χρόνου, π. κινήσεως, π. μίξεως. π. κούφου και βαρέος. π. τοῦ οὐρανοῦ, π. τοῦ πνεύματος, π. χρωμάτων. π. ζωογονίας. π. τρυφης Nature, which was pursued by him in a spirit which justifies the name, bestowed upon him pre-eminently

καλ αὐξήσεως, π. ὕπνου, π ένυπνίων. π. αἰσθήσεως. π. ύψεως. π. τῶν ἀπορουμένων (ώων, π. τῶν μυθολογουμένων ζώων. π. φύσεως άνθρωπίνης, π. ένθουσιασμού, π. νόσων. π. κρίσεων, π. λιμοῦ καὶ σκοτώσεων. (In the case of these three works it is possible that there is a confusion with writings of physician and follower of Erasistratus presently to be mentioned. but it is to be remembered that Theophrastus himself about vertigo and such subjects.) The $\lambda \dot{\nu} \sigma \epsilon is \dot{\alpha} \pi o \rho \eta \mu \dot{\alpha} \tau \omega \nu$ and the work π. αίτιῶν appear to have dealt with certain problems of physics; and the book π. των μεταλλικών μηχανημάτων also was concerned with the mechanical side of physics. (4) Ethics: π . τάγαθοῦ γ΄. π. ήδονης. π. εὐδαιμονίας, π. βίων (if this was not an historical work). π. ἀνδρείας. π. δικαιοσύνης γ'. π. άδίκου. π. βασιλείας γ'. π. βασιλέως φιλοσόφου (these two works, especially the latter, may have been written for Ptolemy Philadelphus; it is only COBET, however, who gives the title π. βασ. φιλ., for the earlier texts give π. φιλοσοφίας). There is, moreover, the work εύρημάτων ελεγχοι δύο, which is evidently the same as that which CLEMENS, Strom. i. 300, A 308, A (and EUSEB. Prap. Fv. x. 6, 6, quoting him) cites by the words εν τφ or έν τοις περί εύρημάτων. PLIN. H. Nat. i.: Ind. Libri, vii. ('Stratone qui contra Ephori εύρηματα scripsit') says it was written against (probably, however, Ephorus against others as well), and this accounts for the title given by

Strato wished to cor-Diogenes. rect the opinions of earlier writers on the subject of the origin of the various arts. Besides the above-named works (the authenticity of which cannot, except to a very limited extent, be tested), it would appear from GALEN (De Venæ Sect. adv. Erasistratum 2, vol. xi. 151, and De V. S. adv. Erasistrateos 2, vol. xi. 197) that we must also refer to this philosopher certain works on medicine, if the Strato named in these passages is in fact the same person. DIOG. v. 61 expressly makes a distinction between the two, and though in this he only follows Demetrius of Magnesia, there is the less reason to doubt his testimony (as Rose, De Arist. Lib. Ord. 174, has done) since the physician Strato described as a follower of Erasistratus, not only by GALEN (as is clear in the passages already cited and still more clear in De Puls. Differ. c. 17, vol. viii. 759), but also by ORIBAS. Collect. xlv. 23 (ap. MAI, Class. Auct. iv. 60), and by EROTIAN (Lex. Hippocr. p. 86, Franz); while TERTULLIAN, De An. 14, contrasts the views of 'Strato and Erasistratus 'with those of Strato the philosopher on the question of the seat of the soul. If, according to Diog. ibid., the physician was a personal pupil of Erasistratus. he is probably the same as the person whom GALEN, De Comp. Medic. iv. 3, vol. xii. 749 calls a Berytian; cf. on this subject SPRENGEL, Gesch. d. Arzneik, 4. 559 (ed. 1).

among all the Peripatetics, of 'the Physicist.' What we are told of his contributions to logic and ontology is not very important. On the other hand, the whole difference between his point of view and that of Aristotle becomes at once manifest when we ask how he conceived of the principles of existence and change in the world. Aristotle had referred these to Nature, which in the first instance he conceived as universal efficient cause, but also further described as God or the First Mover, without, however, clearly defining the relation

' Examples of the use of this, the commonest description applied to Strato (as to which see generally KRISCHE, Forsch. 351), we already have in the notes on p. 451, n. 1, 3, sup. Compare also CIC. Fin. v. 5, 13: 'primum Theophrasti Strato physicum se voluit, in quo etsi est magnus, tamen nova pleraque et perpauca de moribus.' This CIC. Acad. i. 9. 34, says with even less qualification: and he will not allow that Strato should be considered a Peripatetic, partly on this account and partly on account of the variance of his opinions on physics. The list of his writings, however, gives evidence that he did not leave ethics out of account. SENECA states the position more justly when he says of him (Nat. Qu. vi. 13, 2): 'hanc partem philosophiæ maxime coluit et rerum naturæ inquisitor fuit.'

² We are told by SEXT. Math. viii. 13, that he did not, like the Stoics, distinguish between idea, word, and thing (σημαϊνόμενον, σημαϊνον, τυγχάνον), but only, with Epicurus, between the σημαϊνον and the τυγχάνον, and that

thereby he placed truth and error merely in the voice (i.e. in the words). The second half of this statement is probably merely a deduction drawn by Sextus; and the first half of it does not accurately reproduce Strato's expressions or his meaning. Strato is further said to have given as the definition of Being: τὸ ὄν ἐστι τὸ τῆς διαμονῆς $\alpha i \tau_{iov}$, i.e. he defined it as the permanent element in things (PROCL. in Tim. 242, E). We see further from SIMPL. in Categ. 106, a, 107, a sqq. (Schol. in Ar. 89, a 37, 90, a, 12 sqq.), that he distinguished various significations of the terms πρότερον and υστερον, which SIMPL. ibid. takes the trouble to reduce to the five which Aristotle reckons in cap. 12 of the Categories. Finally ALEX. Top. 173, and ALD. (Schol. 281, b, 2) criticise an attempt which Strato had made to amplify an Aristotelian rule (Top. iv. 4, 125, a, 5) for ascertaining the relations of subordination between two concepts. It is impossible, however, to discuss the point here.

of these two conceptions to one another.1 Strato, on the other hand-whether because he recognised the obscurity and fundamental contradiction in the Aristotelian view, or because the whole bent of his thought was opposed to an external supernatural cause-renounced the idea of God as a Being separate and distinct from the world as a whole, and contented himself with 'Nature.' This itself, however, he was unable otherwise to conceive of (agreeing in this with Aristotle 2) than as a necessary Force operating without consciousness and reflection. He regarded the world, as Plutarch says,3 as a lifeless whole, and all natural phenomena as the effect of natural necessity. He was convinced with Democritus, in spite of his opposition to his doctrine of Atoms, that the explanation of everything must be found in gravity and motion, and he is accordingly accused by Cicero and others of maintaining that God was unnecessary in the constitution of the world.4

¹ See *supra*, vol. i. pp. 388, 420 sqq.

² See supra, vol. i. p. 464,

⁸ Adv. Col. 14, 3, p. 1115 (v. sup. vol. ii. p. 452, n. 1): οὐτ' Αριστοτέλει κατὰ πολλὰ συμφέρεται καὶ Πλάτωνι τὰς ἐναντίας ἔσχηχε δύξας περὶ κινήσεως περὶ νοῦ καὶ περὶ ψυχῆς καὶ περὶ γενέσεως ΄ τελευτῶν [δὲ] τὸν κόσμον αὐτὸν οὐ ζῷον εἶναι φησὶ, τὸ δὲ κατὰ φύσιν ἔπεσθαι τῷ κατὰ τύχην ἀρχὴν γὰρ ἐνδιδόναι τὸ αὐτόματον, εἶτα οὕτω περαίνεσθαι τῶν φυσικῶν παθῶν ἕκαστον. We must guard ourselves against believing Plutarch (as of Democritus, cf. Zeller, Ph. d. Gr. i. 788-9) when he tells us that Strato held chance (τύχη)

to be the basis of nature. He can only mean that Strato maintained the necessity of nature (αὐτόματον); it is Plutarch's own idea to identify this necessity with 'chance,' because both stand equally in antithesis to the teleological conception of nature (cf. supra, vol. i. pp. 357 sqq.).

⁴ Crc. Acad. ii. 38, 121:

⁶ Negas sine Deo posse quidquam, ecce tibi e transverso Lampsacenus Strato, qui det isti Deo immunitatem magni quidem muneris . . . negat opera Deorum se uti ad fabricandum mundum. Quæcunque sint docet omnia esse effecta natura: nec ut ille, qui asperis et lævibus et hamatis uncinatisque corporibus concreta

It would be truer to say that his view identified God with Nature, in which he saw nothing personal, nothing akin to man, but only the universal energy which is the source of all change and becoming in things: 1 and on this ground accurate writers represent him as denying that the Deity has a soul, 2 and holding that the heavens and the earth, in other words the universe, are God. 3

Passing to his account of natural causes, we find that Strato, as already remarked, was unable, in spite of his naturalism, to reconcile himself to any such mechanical explanation of the world as that of Democritus,⁴ partly because he found in it no adequate explanation of phenomena,⁵ and partly because he held that indivisible bodies were as inconceivable as an

hæc esse dicat, interjecto inani. Somnia censet hæc esse Democriti, non docentis, sed optantis. Ipse autem singulas mundi partes persequens, quidquid sit aut fiat naturalibus fieri aut factum esse docet ponderibus et motibus.'

¹ The Epicurean in Cic N. D. i. 13, 35 says: 'nec audiendus ejus [Theophrasti] auditor Strato, is qui physicus appellatur; qui omnem vim divinam in natura sitam esse censet, quæ causas gignendi augendi minuendi habeat, sed careat omni sensu [consciousness] et figura [i.e. the human form of the Epicurean gods].' This is repeated almost word for word by LACTANT. De Ira, D. c. 10 init. and more concisely by MINUC. FELIX, Octav. 19, 9: 'Straton quoque et ipse naturam [sc. Deum loquitur].' So likewise MAX. TYR. i. 17, 5 says that even the atheist has

the idea of God.... καν ύπαλλάξης τὴν φύσιν [even if he puts nature in God's place], ὡς Στράτων.

² SENECA apud AUGUSTIN. Civ. D. vii. 1. 'hoc loco dicet aliquis . . . ego feram aut Platonem aut Peripateticum Stratonem, quorum alter fecit Deum sine corpore, alter sine animo?'

³ TERTULLIAN, Adv. Marc. i. 13: 'Strato coelum et terram [Deos pronuntiavit].'

⁴ Supra, vol. ii. p. 455, n. 4.

⁵ At any rate this appears to be the meaning of Cicero's 'somnia non docentis sed optantis' (supra, vol. ii. p. 455, n. 4): the atoms are a capricious hypothesis, of which it is asserted and hoped, but not proved, that it will explain the facts it was invented to explain.

infinite void.¹ The essential causes consist rather, on his theory, in the properties of things,² or more accurately in the active forces that cause these properties.³ The ultimate properties he further held to be Heat and Cold,⁴ which Aristotle had already recognised as the active elements in things,⁵ apparently attributing, with Aristotle,⁶ the higher reality to that which he considered the primary and positive principle of life and being.¹ The primary substratum of cold he held to be water; of heat, fire or warm vapour.³ Heat and cold are continually at war; where the one forces an entrance, the other is expelled. This alternation explains, for example, the phenomena of the thunderstorm and the earthquake.⁵ Given these corporeal forces,

¹ On both points see further infra. The hypothesis of a vacuum was dealt with by STRATO (v. sup., vol. ii. p. 452, n. 2) in one of his treatises, presumably directed against Democritus. Whether he went further into the refutation of the Atomistic theory, or contented himself with Aristotle's elaborate criticism, we know not.

² Sext. Pyrrh. iii. 33 (and nearly word for word Galen. Hist. Phil. c. 5, p. 244): Στράτων δὲ ὁ φυσικὸς τὰς ποιότητας [ἀρχὴν λέγει]. So also, as Fabricius has already remarked, we must in the Clementine Recognitions, viii. 15, for 'Callistratus qualitates [sc. principia mundi dixit]' read 'Strato' for 'Callistratus.'

³ STRATO dealt with this question in the three books π $\tilde{\alpha}\rho\chi\tilde{\omega}\nu$, and perhaps also in the π . $\delta\nu\nu\dot{\alpha}$. $\mu\epsilon\omega\nu$ (supra, vol. ii. p. 452, n. 3).

4 Stob. Ecl. i. 298: Στράτων στοιχεῖα το θερμον καὶ το ψυχρόν. Cf. infra, n. 9.

⁵ Supra, vol. i. p. 480, n. 3.

 ⁶ Supra, vol. i. p. 483, n. 2.
 ⁷ EPIPHAN. Exp. Fid. 1090
 Α: Στρατωνίων [1. Στράτων] ἐκ Λαμψάκου την θερμην οὐσίαν ἔλεγεν

αἰτίαν πάντων ὑπάρχειν.

8 PLUT. Prim. Frig. 9, p. 948: of μèν Στοῦκοὶ τῷ ἀέρι τὸ πρώτως Ψυχρὸν ἀποδιδόντες. Γεμπεδοκλῆς δὲ καὶ Στράτων τῷ βάπι. As to warmth, though positive information fails us, the parallel is self-evident. All this is also Aristotelian; v. supra, vol. i. p. 483, n. 2.

9 SENECA, Nat. Qu. vi. 13, 2 (on Earthquakes): 'hujus [Strat.] tale decretum est: Frigidum et calidum semper in contraria abeunt, una esse non possunt. Eo frigidum confluit, unde vis calida discessit, et invicem ibi calidum

Strato found that he could dispense with the incorporeal.¹

We are not told how Strato connected the primary opposition of heat and cold with the other elementary kinds of opposites, or how he deduced the elements from it; on the latter point he probably followed Aristotle. On the other hand, he combated his views upon gravity. Aristotle assigned to each element its place in the universe according to the direction in which it tended. The earth he accordingly held to be alone absolutely heavy; fire, on the other hand, to be absolutely light; while air and water were relatively heavy and light.² Strato, on the other hand, asserted, with Democritus, on the ground of a very simple observation, that all bodies are

est, unde frigus expulsum est.' Wells and pits are therefore warm in the winter, 'quia illo se calor contulit superiora possidenti frigori cedens.' If, then, there is a certain amount of heat accumulated in the earth's interior, and a further quantity of heat, or of cold, is thereupon added under pressure, the excess must find for itself an outlet by force, and thereby earthouakes arise: 'vices deinde hujus pugnæ sunt: defit calori congregatio ac rursus eruptio. Tunc frigora compescuntur et succedunt mox futura potentiora; dum alterna cursat et ultro citroque spiritus concutitur.' commeat. terra STOB. Hel. i. 598; Στράτων, θερμοῦ ψυχρώ παρείξαντος, δταν έκβιασθέν τύχη, τὰ τοιαῦτα γίγνεσθαι, βροντην μέν ἀπορρύξει, φάει δὲ ἀστραπην, τάχει δὲ κεραυνόν, πρηστῆρας δὲ καί τυφώνας τῷ πλεονασμῷ τῷ

τῆς ὅλης, ἡν ἐκάτερος αὐτῶν ἐφέλκεται, θερμοτέραν μὲν ὁ πρηστὴρ, παχυτέραν δὲ ὁ τυφών. Cť. herewith what is said supra, vol i. p.515, n 2; vol. ii. p. 378, n. 1, as to the theory of ἀντιπερίστασις in Aristotle and Theophrastus.

¹ PLUT. ibid.: τὰ αἰσθητὰ ταυτί, έν οίς Έμπεδοκλής τε καί Στράτων καὶ οἱ Στωϊκοὶ τὰς οὐσίας τίθενται των δυναμένων, οι μέν Στωϊκοί &c. Cf. also what is said on Light and Heat, infra. p. 460. n. 2, and see PLUT. Plac. v. 4, 3 (GALEN. H. Phil. c. 31, p. 322): Στράτων καὶ Δημόκριτος καὶ τὴν δύναμιν [sc. τοῦ σπέρματος] σῶμα: πνευματική γάρ. Strato is as little likely as Democritus to have called a σώμα a δύναμις: he only affirmed, as the genuine text of Plutarch correctly says, that forces are attached to material things as to their substratum (οὐσία).

² Śupra, vol. i pp. 447-8, 477.

heavy and press towards the centre; and if some of these mount upwards, this is because of the pressure which the heavier exercise upon the lighter. How he further explained this difference of degree in weight-whether he conceived that while everything had weight, yet, on account of the qualitative difference in materials. everything had not the same weight; or whether, with Democritus, he held that all matter was equally heavy, and explained the difference of the specific gravity of bodies by the assumption of empty interspaces within them—we do not know. The views he elsewhere expresses rather support the latter supposition. while strenuously combating with Aristotle the atomic theory and asserting the infinite divisibility of bodies,3 he yet agreed with Democritus in assuming the existence of void: while rejecting as indecisive most of the

οὺ Στράτων μόνος οὐδὲ Ἐπίκουρος πάντα ἔλεγον εἶναι τὰ σώματο βαρέα καὶ φύσει μὲν ἐπὶ τὸ κάτω φερόμενα παρὰ φύσιν δὲ ἐπὶ τὸ κάνω, ἀλλὰ καὶ Πλάτων οἶδε φερομένην τὴν δόξαν καὶ διελέγχει. STOB. Εοὶ. ὶ 348: Στράτων μὲν προσεῖναι τοῖς σώμασι φυσικὸν βάρος, τὰ δὲ κουφότερα τοῖς βαρυτέροις ἐπιπολάςειν οῖον ἐκπυρηνιζόμενα.

2 ΖΕΙΙ. Ρλ. d. Gr. ì. 779.

3 Supra, vol. ii. p. 455, n. 4, and SEXT. Math. x. 155: και δη ούτως ηνέχθησαν οι περι τον Στράτωνα τον φυσικόν τους μεν γλρ χρόνους εἰς ἀμερὲς ὑπέλαβον καταλήγειν, τὰ δὲ σώματα καὶ τους τόπους εἰς ἄπειρον τέμνεσθαι, κινείσθαι τε τὸ κινούμενον ἐν ἀμερεῖ χρόνω ὅλον ἄθρουν μεριστὸν διά

στημα και ού περι το πρότερον πρό-

τερον. Cf. infra, p. 462, n. 2.

¹ SIMPL. De Cælo, 121, a, 32 sqq. K., Schol. in Ar. 486, a, 5: ότι δε ούτε τη ύπ' άλληλων εκθλ/ψει βιαζόμενα κινείται [the elements, by movement in their natural positions δείκνυσιν ['Αριστ.] έφεξης, ταύτης δὲ γεγόνασι της δόξης μετ' αὐτὸν Στράτων δ Λαμψακηνός τε καὶ Ἐπίκουρος, παν σῶμα βαρύτητα ἔχειν νομίζοντες καὶ πρός το μέσον φέρεσθαι, τῷ δὲ τὰ Βαρύτερα ύφιζάνειν τὰ ήττον βαρέα ύπ' ἐκείνων ἐκθλίβεσθαι βία πρὸς τὸ άνω, ώστε εί τις ύφειλε την γην, έλθεῖν αν τὸ ὕδωρ εἰς τὸ κέντρον, και εί τις το ύδωρ, τον άέρα, και εί τὸν ἀέρα, τὸ πῦρ . . . οἱ δὲ τοῦ πάντα πρὸς τὸ μέσον φέρεσθαι κατά φύσιν τεκμήριον κομίζοντες το της γης υποσπωμένης το δδωρ έπι το κάτω φέρεσθαι και τοῦ ὕδατος τον ά έρα, άγνορῦσι &C, Ιστέον δὲ ὅτι

reasons adduced in support of this assumption,1 he yet believed it impossible to explain many phenomena—as for instance those of light and heat—except on the presupposition of empty interspaces into which light and caloric may find an entrance.2 Since, however, this only proves the existence of empty spaces within the material world, and since his definition of space, which resembled Aristotle's,3 excluded the conception of a

The three reasons for the assumption of a vacuum, which ARISTOTLE reckons in Phys. iv. 6, 213 (cf. supra, vol. i. p. 434), Strato (according to SIMPL. Phys. 153, a) reduced to two, είς τε την κατά τόπον κίνησιν καί els την τῶν σωμάτων πίλησιν [i.e. that no movement in space and no condensation would be possible without a void]; τρίτον δέ προστίθησι τὸ ἀπὸ τῆς όλκῆς τὴν γὰρ σιδηρίτιν λίθον έτερα σιδήρια δι' έτέρων έλκειν συμβαίνει (as SIMPL. further explains). He cannot, however, have found that any of these arguments was convincing, for we find that as to the first of them SIMPL. 154, b, after citing the examples with which Aristotle had confuted it, goes on to remark: 'still more striking is the refutation which Strato brings against it—namely, that a small stone in a closed vessel filled with water will move towards the mouth when one turns the vessel round.' So again, as to the third argument, SIMPL. says in 155, b: δ δε Στράτων καί τὸν ἀπὸ τῆς ἕλξεως [SC. λόγον] άναλύων οὐδὲ ή ἕλξις, φησίν, άναγκάζει τίθεσθαι το κενόν. ούτε γὰρ εἶ ἔστιν ὅλως ἕλξις φανερὸν, δτε και Πλάτων αὐτος την έλκτικην

δύναμιν άναιρεῖν δοκεῖ. οὅτε, εἰ ἔστιν έλξις, δήλον, εί διὰ τὸ κενὸν ή λίθος έλκει καί μη δι' άλλην αιτίαν. οὐδὲ γὰρ ἀποδεικνύουσιν, ἀλλ' ὑποτίθενται τὸ κενὸν οἱ οὕτω λένοντες. These arguments, as well as the other remarks we find in SIMPL. on this subject, must be directly or indirectly derived from STRA-TO'S book π. κενού.

² SIMPL. Phys. 163, b : δ μέντοι Λαμψακηνός Στράτων δεικνύναι πειράται, ότι έστι το κενον διαλαμβάνον τὸ πᾶν σῶμα ὥστε μὴ εἶναι συνεχες, λέγων δτι οὐκ αν δι' ΰδατος ή αέρος ή άλλου σώματος εδύνατο διεκπίπτειν το φως ουδέ ή θερμότης οὐδὲ ἄλλη δύναμις οὐδεμία σωματική, πως γάρ αι του ήλιου άκτινες διεξέπιπτον εἰς τὸ τοῦ ἀγγείου ἔδαφος; εἰ γὰρ τὸ ὑγρὸν μὴ εἶχε πόρους, άλλα βία διέστελλον αὐτὸ αί αὐγαὶ, συνέβαινεν ὑπερεκχεῖσθαι τὰ πλήρη τῶν ἀγγείων, καὶ οὺκ ἃν αί μέν των άκτίνων άνεκλωντο πρός τον άνω τόπον αί δὲ κάτω διεξέπιπτον. From this passage we also gather that Strato, even more definitely than Aristotle, considered light and heat to be material.

³ STOB. Ecl. i. 380: τόπον δὲ είναι [according to Strato] τδ μεταξὺ διάστημα τοῦ περιέχοντος καl τοῦ περιεχομένου-which differs space outside the world, Strato confined the existence of void to the world itself, and rejected the view of Democritus that there is an infinite void outside our world.\(^1\) On time,\(^2\) likewise, he held views different from his predecessors. Aristotle's definition of time as number or count of movement appeared to him to be false. Number, he remarked, is a discontinuous, time and motion are continuous quantities, which cannot, therefore, be counted. Time is continually beginning and ending; with number this is not the case. The parts of number exist simultaneously; this is never so with portions of time. If time is number, present

from the Aristotelian definition (supra, vol. i. p. 432, n. 4) only in the circumstance that the latter assigned the inner boundary of the surrounding bodies as the space which the surrounded body occupies, whereas Strato, who allowed that bodies were separated by a void, considered the void between the surrounding and the surrounded bodies as the space of the latter.

1 STOB. ibid.: Στράτων έξωτέρω μεν έφη τοῦ κόσμου μη είναι κενον, ένδοτέοω δε δυνατόν γενέσθαι. From the same source, as it appears, we have in THEODORET, Cur. Gr. Aff. iv. 14, p. 58 : δ δὲ Στράτων ξμπαλιν [sc. ή οί Στωϊκοί], έξωθεν μέν μηδέν είναι κενόν, ένδοθεν δέ δυνατόν είναι. Herewith, and with n. 2 on p. 460, agrees SIMPL. Phys. 144, b: some hold the χωρητικόν to be unbounded, as did Democritus, οἱ δὲ ἰσόμετρον αὐτὸ τῷ κοσμικῷ σώματι ποιοῦσι, καὶ διὰ τοῦτο τῆ μὲν ἑαυτοῦ φύσει κενὸν είναι λέγουσι, πεπληρῶσθαι δὲ αὐτὸ σωμάτων ἀεὶ καὶ μόνη γε τῆ ἐπινοία θεωρείσθαι ώς καθ' αύτὸ ύφεστώς, οξοί τινες οί πολλοί τῶν Πλατωνικῶν φιλοσόφων γεγόνασι, καὶ Στράτωνα δὲ οίμαι τὸν Λαμψακηνὸν τῆς τοιαύτης γενέσθαι δόξης. For SIMPL., it will be observed, does not absolutely ascribe this view to Strato; and, besides, he is in this passage dealing only with the proposition that Space is entirely occupied by the body of the world, which excludes the notion of an exterior void, but not the possibility of smaller interior vacua. But SIMPL, is inaccurate when, at 140, b, he says that 'some believe that space is to be found without matter, as Democritus and Epicurus: oi δè διάστημα καὶ ἀεὶ σῶμα ἔχον καὶ ἐπιτήδειον πρός εκαστον, ώς . . . δ Λαμψακηνδς Στράτων. The empty spaces inside bodies are here ignored.

² Which subject, as well as that of 'the vacuum,' he treated in a separate work; *supra*, vol. ii. p. 452, n. 2.

time and unity must be the same. Why, finally, should time, as the measure of earlier and later, refer only to motion and not equally to rest, to which earlier and later also apply? 1 He himself defined time as amount of activity,2 the quantity or amount of motion and rest; 3 he carefully distinguished 4 between time and that which is in time,5 and accordingly refused to admit that days, years, &c., are portions of time: they correspond rather to real and definite events, whereas time

¹ See SIMPL. Phys. 187, a, for a detailed account of these objections. Strato also remarked as is observed in the latter part of the same passage, that if 'èv χρόνω είναι' = ' ὑπὸ τοῦ χρόνου περιέχεσθαι,' then Eternity is not in time. SIMPL. goes on as in next note.

² SIMPL. 187, a: καὶ ἄλλα δὲ πολλά άντειπών πρός την 'Αριστοτέλους ἀπόδοσιν ὁ Στράτων αὐτὸς τον χρόνον το έν ταις πράξεσι ποσον είναι τίθεται. πολύν γάρ, φησί, χρόνον φαμέν ἀποδημείν και πλείν καί στρατεύεσθαι καί πολεμείν, δμοίως δε καθησθαι καλ καθεύδειν καὶ μηθὲν πράττειν, καὶ πολὺν χρόνον φαμέν και όλίγον, ων μέν έστι τὸ ποσόν πολύ, πολύν χρόνον, ών δε όλίγον, όλίγον χρόνος γάρ τὸ ἐν ἐκάστοις τούτων ποσόν. We have a similar definition of Time from Speusippus, if the statement in ZELL. Ph. d. Gr. i. 859. n. 4 is correct.

⁸ STOB. *Ecl.* i. 250: Στράτων [τον χρόνον] των έν κινήσει καλ ήρεμία ποσόν. SEXT. Pyrrh. iii. 137 (Math. x. 128): Στράτων δέ, ή ως τινες 'Αριστοτέλης Γχρόνον φησίν είναι ημέτρον κινήσεως καί μονης. Math. x. 177: Στράτων δ

φυσικός ἔλεγεν χρόνον ὑπάρχειν μέτρον πάσης κινήσεως καλ μονής · παρήκει γάρ πασι τοίς κινουμένοις ότε κινείται και πασι τοίς άκινήτοις ότε άκινητίζει, και διά τοῦτο πάντα τὰ γινόμενα ἐν χρόνω γίνεται.

4 SIMPL. 187, a, Strato discusses the concepts of the Tayù and βραδύ, and says the former is έν ῷ τὸ μὲν ποσὸν, ἀφ' οῦ ἤρξατο και είς δ επαύσατο, όλίγου, τὸ δὲ γεγονδε έν αὐτῷ πολὺ, and the latter the opposite, 8 ταν ή τὸ μὲν ποσον έν αὐτῷ πολύ, το δὲ πεπραγμένον ὀλίγον. In rest we have no such distinctions, and so in a state of rest time is neither quick nor slow, but only greater or less: for it is only action and motion, not the ποσδν, έν δ ή πραξις which can be faster or slower.

⁵ Or more correctly, that in which time is; for in SIMPL. 187, b, d, he expressly says : διὰ τοῦτο δὲ πάντα ἐν χρόνφ εἶναι φαμὲν, ὅτι πάσι τὸ ποσὸν ἀκολουθεὶ καὶ τοῖs γίνομένοις καλ τοίς οδσιν. In such a case we use the word 'in' conversely (κατά τὸ ἐναντίον), as when we say, 'the town is in confusion.' or 'mankind in terror,' ὅτι ταῦτα έν έκείνοις.

is only the duration of these events.¹ The statement that time according to Strato consists of indivisible minima, and that motion does not proceed continuously in these several portions of time, but completes itself moment by moment,² seems to rest upon a misapprehension.³ Strato had shown in a more comprehensive fashion than Aristotle that motion,⁴ like space and time, is continuous.⁵ The seat of motion, especially in

SIMPL. 187, b: ἡμέρα δὲ καὶ νύξ, φησί [add. καὶ μην] καὶ ἐνιαυτὸς οὐκ ἔστι χρόνος οὐδὲ χρόνου μέρη, ἀλλὰ τὰ μὲν ὁ φωτισμὸς καὶ ἡ σκίασις, τὰ δὲ ἡ τῆς σελήνης καὶ ἡ τοῦ ἡλίου περίοδος, ἀλλὰ χρόνος έστι το ποσον έν ώ ταῦτα. (What follows is not from Strato, as BRANDIS, iii. 403, affirms, but rather a criticism of his view by SIMPL.) On the other hand, we must not conclude from SIMPL. ibid. 189, b (ἐκ δὲ τούτων τῶν **λύσεων καὶ τὰς τοῦ Στράτωνος** ἀπορίας περί τοῦ μη εἶναι τὸν χρόνον διαλύειν δυνατόν) that Strato denied the reality of time; he simply brings forward this aporia in the same sense as Aristotle himself had done in Phys. iv. 10 init.

² SEXTUS, sup. vol. ii. p. 452,

3 Strato expressly says, apud SIMPL. Phys. 187, a, that time cannot be the number of motion, διάτι ὁ μὲν ἀριθμὸς διωρισμένον ποσὸν ἡ δὲ κίνησις καὶ ὁ χρόνος συνεχής· τὸ δὲ συνεχὲς οὐκ ἀριθμητόν. On the continuity of motion, more will be found infra. Probably Strato only repeated the teaching already worked out by Aristotle (supra, vol. i. p. 439, n. 2; p. 417, and Phys. i. 3, 186,

a, 15) as to the indivisibility of the present and the $\dot{\alpha}\theta\rho\dot{\rho}a$ $\mu\epsilon\tau\alpha\beta\sigma\lambda\dot{\eta}$.

4 On this also Strato wrote a separate book.

⁵ SIMPL. Phys. 168, a: δ δè Λαμψακηνός Στράτων οὐκ ἀπό τοῦ μεγέθους μόνον συνεχή την κίνησιν είναι φησίν, άλλὰ καὶ καθ' έαυτην. ώs, εί διακοπείη [if it were not continuous], στάσει διαλαμβανομένη (1.-νην), καὶ τὸ μεταξὺ δύο διαστάσεων (1. στάσεων) κίνησιν οδσαν άδιάκοπον. ' καl ποσόν δέ τι, φησίν, ή κίνησις καλ διαιρετόν είς άελ διαιρετα.' What follows is not derived from Strato, but is an explanation of the Aristotelian text, as is shown by the words: άλλὰ πῶς εἶπεν [i.e. ARIST. Phys. iv. 11, 219, a, 13] δση γὰρ ἡ κίνησις, &c. It is not until the end of this section, i.e. in the middle of 168, a, that SIMPL. returns to Strato with the words: άλλ' δ μέν 'Αριστοτέλης ἔοικεν ἐκ τοῦ σαφεστέρου ποιήσασθαι την ἐπιβολήν · ὁ δὲ Στράτων φιλοκάλως κιλ αὐτὴν καθ' αύτὴν τὴν κίνησιν έδειξε τὸ συνεχὲς ἔχουσαν, ἴσως καὶ πρός τοῦτο βλέπων, Ίνα μὴ μόνον έπὶ τῆς κατὰ τόπον κινήσεως, ἀλλὰ καί ἐπί τῶν ἄλλων πασῶν συνάγηται τὰ λεγόμενα,

qualitative change, he sought for, not only in the material that is moved, but also in that which ceases and that which comes into being with the motion. He corroborated the theory of the acceleration of motion by simple observations of the fall of bodies. ²

A fundamental departure from the Aristotelian cosmology is attributed to Strato by Stobæus, who tells us that he held that the heavens are made of fire, and that the stellar radiance is a reflection of the sun's light.3 As to the former of these doctrines we may wonder that it is nowhere else mentioned, as it in reality involves nothing less than the abandonment of the theory of the ether and all the deductions founded upon it; yet we are not therefore justified in denying that the difficulties which beset the Aristotelian assumptions as to the light- and heat-giving power of the stars 4 may have caused Strato to attribute a fiery instead of an etherial nature to heaven and the heavenly bodies. Nor need the statement as to the light of the stars cause us any serious difficulty in view of the state of astronomy at that time. Yet the evidence of Stobæus gives us no sure guarantee of the truth of these statements.⁵ The assertion that Strato conceived

¹ SIMPL. 191, a (referring to Phys. v. 1): καὶ καλῶς γε, οἶμαι, ὁ Στράτων τὴν κίνησιν οὐ μόνον ἐν τῷ ἐξ οὖ καὶ ἐν τῷ ἐξ οὖ καὶ ἐν τῷ εἰς δ, ἄλλον δὲ τρόπον ἐν ἐκάστῳ. τὸ μὲν γὰρ ὑποκείμενον, φησὶ, κινεῖται ὡς μεταβάλλον, τὸ δὲ ἐξ οὖ καὶ τὸ εἰς δ, τὸ μὲν ὡς φθειρόμενον, τὸ δὲ ὡς γινόμενον. On the corresponding definitions of Aristotle, see vol. i. p. 417, n. 2, supra.

² See the Fragm. of the book π. κινήσεως apud SIMPL., ibid. 214, a.

 $^{^3}$ Ecl. i. 500: Παρμενίδης, Ήράκλειτος, Στράτων, Ζήνων πύρινον εἶναι τὸν οὖρανόν. I. 518: Στράτων καὶ αὐτὸς τὰ ἄστρα ὑπὸ τοῦ ἡλίου φωτίζεσθαι.

^{*} Supra, vol. i. p. 509 sq.

In the first place what Strato says only of the fiery sphere could not be transferred to

of the parts of the world as infinite ¹ is obviously untrue, if this involves, as it appears to do, the infinite extension of the world in space. ² Other reported doctrines of Strato relating to the fixity of the earth, ³ comets, ⁴ meteorological phenomena and earthquakes, ⁵ the formation of seas, ⁶ to colours ⁷ and sounds, ⁸ cannot be fully discussed here.

the heavens; and, in the second place, that which related only to the planets cannot be extended to all the stars.

¹ EPIPHAN. Exp. Fid. 1090, A: ἄπειρα δὲ ἔλεγεν εἶναι τὰ μέρη

τοῦ κόσμου.

² For this view was not held by Strato, as shown *supra*, p. 461, n. 1. The statement is probably only a misinterpretation of his teaching as to the unlimited divisibility of matter, as to which see *supra*, p. 459, n. 3.

3 That Strato (like Aristotle) held this view, and that he supported it by a special argument of his own, appears from CRAMER, Anecd. Ο αοπ. iii. 413: τῆ δὲ προμένη [l.προκειμένη] νῦν αἰτιολογία τῆ περὶ τῆς ἀκινησίας τῆς γῆς Στράτων δοκεῖ πρῶτος ὁ φυσικὸς χρήσασθαι. The argument unfortunately is not given.

⁴ Stob. Eol. i. 578 (Plut. Plac. iii. 2, 5; GALEN, H. Phil. 18, p. 286). A comet according to Strato was: ἄστρου φῶς περιληφθὲν νέφει πυκνῷ, καθάπερ ἐπὶ τῶν λαμπτήρων γίνεται.

⁵ See supra, vol. ii. p. 457,

n. 9.

6 According to STRABO, i, 3, 4, p. 49 (from Eratosthenes, who, however, without doubt is only quoting Strato as far as the words, on p. 50, τhν Σκυθῶν

έρημίαν; the rest is his own), Strato propounded the hypothesis, which he justified by palæontological observations, that the Black Sea was originally separated from the Mediterranean, and this sea from the Atlantic, by isthmuses, which were broken through in course of time.

7 As to this, the excerpts from Johan. Damasc. i. 17, 3 (Stob. Floril. iv. 173, ed. Meineke) give us only the not very clear remark: Στράτων χρώματά φησιν ἀπὸ τῶν σωμάτων φέρεσθαι συγχρώζουτ'

αὐτοῖς τὸν μεταξὺ ἀέρα.

8 ALEX. APHR. De Sensu, 117 (p. 265, 9 sqq., ed. Thurot), intimates that Strato explained the fact that it is impossible to distinguish tones at a great distance -not, like Aristotle (De Sensu, 6, 446, b, 6) by the theory that the form of movement in the air was altered on the wav—but τω έκλύεσθαι τον τόνον της πληγης οὐ γάρ φησιν ἐν τῶ σχηματίζεσθαί πως τὸν ἀέρα τοὺς διαφόρους φθόγγους γίνεσθαι, άλλὰ τῆ τῆς πληγης ανισότητι. (What follows is not the view of Strato, but of Alexander, as THUROT reminds us at p. 451 of his edition.) These words harmonise exactly with the beginning of the pseudo-Aristotelian fragment π. ἀκουστῶν. 800, a, 1: τὰς δὲ ¢ωνὰς ἀπάσας

Upon his physiological views also we have only isolated and unimportant statements.¹ His doctrine of

συμβαίνει γίγνεσθαι καλ ψόφους . . . οὐ τῷ τὸν ἀέρα has itself. σχηματίζεσθαι, καθάπερ οἴονταί τινες, ἀλλὰ τῷ κινεῖσθαι παραπλησίως αὐτὸν συστελλόμενον καὶ εκτεινόμενον, &c. This coincidence, however, does not go far enough to justify the supposition (BRANDIS, ii. b, 1201) that that treatise is the work of Strato, however well and carefully considered, and however worthy of him it may appear. It is not, therefore, necessary here to go into the manner in which the tones of the human voice and of musical instruments and their various modifications are in that tract explained. The general basis of the theory is most clearly set out at p. 803, b, p. 34 sqq. According to this passage, which reminds one of Heraclides's theory (ZELLER, Ph. d. Gr. i. p. 887, 1) every sound is composed of particular beating vibrations $(\pi\lambda\eta\gamma\alpha l)$, which we cannot distinguish as such, but perceive as one unbroken sound; high tones, whose movement is quicker, consist of more vibrations, and low tones of fewer. Several tones vibrating and ceasing at the same time are heard by us as one tone. The height or depth, harshness or softness, and in fact every quality of a tone depends (803, b, 26) on the quality of the motion originally created in the air by the body that gave out the tone. This motion propagates itself unchanged, inasmuch as each portion of the air sets the next portion of air in motion

rows with the same movement as it

¹ GALEN, De Sem. ii. 5, vol. iv. 629, informs us that Strato explained the origin of the difference of the sexes (supra, vol. ii. p. 55, n. 2) in a somewhat more material manner than Aristotle (without, however, adopting the views of Democritus, d. q. v. ZELL. Ph. d. Gr. i. 805, 2), by the theory that either the male seed has the preponderance over the female (which Aristotle would not admit, supra, vol. ii. p. 50 sq.) or the female over the male. According to Plut. Plac. v. 8. 2 (GALEN, H. Phil. 32, p. 325), he allowed that abortions originated παρά πρόσθεσιν. ή άφαίρεσιν. ή μετάθεσιν [misplacement of parts] η πνευμάτωσιν [evaporation, or perhaps addling of the seed caused by air contained therein]. Finally in Jamblich. Theol. Arithm. p. 47 (which MACROB. Somn. Scip. 1, 6, 65, repeats; cf. also Censorin. Di. Nat. 7, 5) we have his views on the first stages of the development of the embryo week by week.—Similar opinions on this subject are also attributed to the physician Diocles, of Carystus, who, according to AST'S notes on Theol. Arithm., flourished about Ol. 136 (i.e. about 232 B.C.), and who, according to IDELER, Arist. Meteorol. i. 157, was a pupil of Strato's, and one of the persons charged (see Diog. v. 62) with the execution of his testament. Sprengel, however (Gesch. d. Arzneik, fourth edition, p. 463), believes him to have

the human soul, on the other hand, owing to its divergence from that of Aristotle, claims our attention. That he should adopt an independent view was to be expected from what we already know of his general theory as to the efficient forces of the world. If these in general are inseparable from matter, this must be true also of the powers of the soul. While it does not follow from this that Strato must necessarily have explained the soul, with Aristoxenus and Dicearchus, as the harmony of the body, 2 yet he could not admit Aristotle's doctrine that it is motionless, and that a part of it is separate from all other parts and from the body. activities of the soul, he asserts still more emphatically than Theophrastus,3 are movements—thought, as well as perception-since they all consist in the action of a hitherto inactive force; and in proof of the view that between the activity of sense and reason there is in this respect no essential difference, he appealed to the fact which had been already observed by Aristotle,4 that we

been of an earlier date, and rightly; for even if it be true, as is alleged without proof, that 'he lived a short time after Hippocrates,' nevertheless GALEN (in his Aphorisms, vol. xviii. a, 7) expressly counts him amongst the predecessors of Erasistratus; and what we know of his views (SPRENGEL, ibid.) confirms this.

Which subject he treated in the works π. φύσεως ἀνθρωπίνης and π. αἰσθήσεως.

² OLYMPIODOR. Schol. in Phædon., p. 142, does indeed say: δτι ως άρμονία άρμονίας ὀξυτέρα καὶ βαρυτέρα, ούτω καὶ ψυχὴ ψυχῆς,

φησίν δ Στράτων, δξυτέρα καὶ νωθεστέρα. Whether he really meant to show that the soul is a harmony, or whether this remark is only meant to serve as an argument against the Platonic objection (Phæd. 92 E sqq.), or, finally, whether the phrase merely belonged to the statement of someone else's opinion, we do not learn. Tertull. De An. 15, distinguishes Strato's view from that of Dieæarchus, and we shall see that he is right.

Supra, vol. ii. p. 391, n. 2.
 Supra, vol. i p. 195, n. 1, and p. 206, n. 2.

are unable to think anything of which we have had no previous perception. But, on the other hand, he remarked that perception and sensation are conditioned by thought, since often when we are thinking of something else the impressions which our senses have received fail to rise into consciousness. In general, however, the soul and not the body is the seat of sensation; for when we believe ourselves to feel a pain in the part affected, this is merely the same delusion as when we think that we hear sounds outside, whereas in reality we apprehend them only in the ear. Pain is caused by the sudden transmission of the external impression from the part affected to the soul; if the connection is broken we feel no pain. Strato accord-

¹ SIMPL. Phys. 225, a: καl Στράτων δέ . . . την ψυχην όμολογεί κινείσθαι οὐ μόνον την άλογον, άλλὰ καὶ τὴν λογικὴν, κινήσεις λέγων είναι τὰς ἐνεργείας της ψυχης, λέγει οδν έν τῷ περί Κινήσεως πρός άλλοις πολλοίς καί τάδε· 'ἀεὶ γὰρ ὁ νοῶν κινεῖται, ὥσπερ καὶ ὁ ὁρῶν καὶ ἀκούων καὶ δσφραινόμενος · ενέργεια γάρ ή νόησις της διανοίας καθάπερ καὶ ή δρασις της όψεως '[he means that both are δυνάμει δντος ενέργειαι, movements]. καλ πρό τούτου δέ τοῦ βητοῦ γέγραφεν ' ' ὅτι οὖν εἰσιν αί πλείσται τών κινήσεων αίτιαι, às ή ψυχή καθ' αύτην κινείται διανοουμένη και ας ύπο των αίσθήσεων έκινήθη πρότερον, δηλόν έστιν. δσα γάρ μη πρότερον έφρακε ταῦτα οὐ δύναται νοείν, οίον τόπους ή λιμένας η γραφάς η άνδριάντας η άνθρώπους ή των άλλων τι των τοιούτων.' The words ὅτι οὖν—αἴτιαι are more or less incomprehensible, as we do not know the context.

^o PLUT. Solert. An. 3, 6, p. 961 (and from him PORPH. De Abst. iii. 24): καίτοι Στράτωνός γε τοῦ φυσικού λόγος έστιν αποδεικνύων. ώς οὐδ' αἰσθάνεσθαι τοπαράπαν ἄνευ τοῦ νοείν ὑπάρχει καὶ γὰρ γράμματα πολλάκις ἐπιπορευομένους τῆ όψει και λόγοι προσπίπτοντες τη άκοη διαλανθάνουσιν ήμας και διαφεύγουσι πρός έτέροις του νοῦν έχοντας, είτ' αδθις ἐπανῆλθε καί μεταθεῖ καὶ [μετα]διώκει τῶν προϊεμένων εκαστον έκλεγόμενος. [The rest is most probably not taken from Strato.] η και λέλεκται · νοῦς δρη &c. (ν. Zell. Ph. d. Gr. 462, 5), ώs τοῦ περὶ τὰ ὅμματα και ὧτα πάθους, ἃν μη παρή τὸ φρονοῦν, αζσθησιν οὐ ποιοῦντος,

3 PLUT. Utr. An. an Corp. sit Libido (Fragm. i. 4, 2, p. 697): οἱ μὲν γὰρ ἄπαυτα συλλήβδην ταῦτα [sc. τὰ πάθη] τῆ ψυχῆ φέρουτες ἀνέθεσαν, ὥσπερ Στράτων ὁ φυσικὸς, οἱ μόνον τὰς ἐπιθυμίας, ἀλλὰ καὶ τὰς λύπας, οἰδὲ τοὺς φόβους καὶ τὰς λύπας, οἰδὲ τοὺς φόβους καὶ

ingly combated the distinction which Aristotle drew between the rational and the sensitive part of the soul. The soul, according to his view, is a single force; reason (which, with the Stoics—preceded, however, by Aristotle 1—he seems to have called τὸ ἡγεμονικὸν 2) is the totality of the soul, and the different senses are only particular expressions of this central force. 3 The seat of the soul

τοὺς φθόνους καὶ τὰς ἐπιχαιρεκακίας, άλλὰ καὶ πόνους καὶ ἡδονὰς καὶ άλγηδόνας καὶ όλως πᾶσαν αἴσθησιν έν τη ψυχή συνίστασθαι φάμενος και της ψυχης τὰ τοιαῦτα πάντα είναι : μη τον πόδα πονούντων ημών δταν προσκρούσωμεν, μηδέ την κεφαλην όταν κατάξωμεν, μη τον δάκτυλον όταν ἐκτέμωμεν ἀναίσθητα γὰρ τὰ λοιπὰ πλην τοῦ ήγεμονικού, πρός δ της πληγης όξέως άναφερομένης την αζοθησιν άλγηδόνα καλουμεν : ώς δε την φωνην τοις ώσιν αὐτοῖς ἐνηγοῦσαν ἔξω δοκοῦμεν είναι το άπο της άρχης έπι το ήγεμονικόν διάστημα τῆ αἰσθήσει προσλογιζόμενοι, παραπλησίως τον έκ τοῦ τραύματος πόνον οὐχ ὅπου τὴν αἴσθησιν εἴληφεν, ἀλλ' ὅθεν ἔσχε την άρχην είναι δοκοθμεν, έλκομένης έπ' ἐκείνο της ψυχης ἀφ'οῦ πέπονθε. διό και προσκόψαντες αὐτίκα τὰς οφρῦς [here must be the seat of the soul, v. infra] συνήγαγον έν τῷ πληγέντι μορίω τοῦ ἡγεμονικοῦ την αΐσθησιν όξέως ἀποδιδόντος. καὶ παρεγκόπτομεν ἔσθ' ὅτε τὸ πνεθμα κάν τὰ μέρη δεσμοίς διαλαμβάνηται χερσί σφόδρα πιέζομεν WYTTENB. conjectures αν τ. μ. δ. διαλ. και ταις χερσί &c.; but it would, perhaps, be better to read άν τὰ μέρη δεσμ. διαλαμβάνηται ή ταις χερσί σφόδρα πιέζωμεν] ίστάμενοι πρός την διάδοσιν του πάθους και την πληγην έν τοις αναισθήτοις πλήττοντες [WYTT, conj. φυλάττοντες] ΐνα μὴ συνάψαι [-ασα WYTT.] πρὸς τὸ φρονοῦν ἀλγηδὼν γένηται. ταῦτα μὲν οῦν ὁ ¾τράτων ἐπὶ πολλοῖς ὡς εἰκὸς τοιούτοις. Plac. iv. 23, 3: ¾τράτων καὶ τὰ πάθη τῆς ψυχῆς καὶ τὰς αἰσθήσεις ἐν τῷ ἡγεμονικῷ, οὐκ ἐν τοῖς πεπονθόσι τόποις συνίστασθαι. ἐν γὰρ ταύτῃ [τούτῳ ?] κεῖσθαι τὴν ὑπυμονὴν, ὥσπερ ἐπὶ τῶν δεινῶν καὶ ἀλγεινῶν καὶ ὧσπερ ἐπὶ ἀνδρείων καὶ δείλων.

¹ V. supra, vol. ii. p. 127, n. 3. ² See preceding and following otes.

See p. 468, n. 3, supra; SEXT. Math. vii. 350: οἱ μεν διαφέρειν αὐτὴν [τὴν ψυχὴν] τῶν αἰσθήσεων, ως οί πλείους οί δε αὐτην είναι τὰς αίσθήσεις καθάπερ διά τινων όπων τῶν αἰσθητηρίων προκύπτουσαν, ἦs στάσεως ήρξε Στράτων τε ό φυσικός καὶ Αἰνησίδημος. TERTULL. De An. 14: 'non longe hoc exemplum est a Stratone et Ænesidemo et Heraclito; nam et ipsi unitatem animæ tuentur, quæ in totum corpus diffusa et ubique ipsa, velut flatus in calamo per cavernas, ita per sensualia variis modis emicet, non tam concisa quam dispensata.' Since Strato did not, at the same time, like Dicaerchus, regard the soul as a separate substance, but only as a force which is inseparable from the body through having therein

Strato placed in the region between the eyebrows ¹ and in the part of the brain which is there situated. Thence he held that it permeates the whole body, and especially the organs of sense,² connecting it probably with the anima vitæ.³ Sleep is the retreat of this spirit,⁴ but in

its appointed place, and in which the unity of the life of the soul is to be distinguished from its individual manifestations (see following note), TERT. De An. 15, is able to cite Strato, along with Plato, Aristotle, and others, in opposition to those who, like Dicæarchus, 'abstulerunt principale, dum in animo ipso volunt esse sensus, quorum vindicatur principale.' On the other hand. Sextus can also say that according to Strato the soul is identical with the $ai\sigma\theta\eta\sigma\epsilon\iota s$, inasmuch as Strato, like Aristotle, did not allocate different parts of the soul to feeling and thought.

1 PLUT. Plac. iv. 5, 2 (GALEN, H. Phil. c. 28, p. 315; THEODOBET, Cur. Gr. Aff. v. 23, p. 73): Στράτων [τδ τῆς ψυχῆς ήγεμονικόν εἶναι λέγει] ἐν μεσοφρύφ. POLLUX, Οποπαστ. ii. 226: καὶ ὁ μὲν νοῦς καὶ λογισμός καὶ ἡγεμονικόν εἴτε κατὰ τὸ μεσόφρυσν, ὡς ἔλεγε Στράτων. ΤΕπτυll. De An. 15: 'nec in superciliorum meditullio [principale cubare putes], ut Strato physicus.' Cf. supra, vol. ii. p. 468, n. 2.

² Such is the result when we combine the passages quoted supra, vol. ii. p. 468, n. 2 and n. 3, with the statement as to the seat of the soul. The expressions employed supra, p. 468, n. 2—namely προκύπτεν, cmicare, which imply, on the one hand, that outer impressions

reach the ἡγεμονικόν, and, on the other hand, that the soul is affected by the part in connection therewith-prove that the soul is not always spread all over the body, but has its seat in the head, whence after receipt of the impressions it streams to the organs of sense, &c. How Strato believed this was brought about, we do not learn. We can only suppose that he had in his mind either the nerves, which had at that time been discovered by Herophilus and Erasistratus, and which (or at any rate the ophthalmic nerves) were, appears from Sprengel, Gesch. d. Arzneik. 4th ed. i. pp. 511-2, 524 held by them to be conducting tubes—or, more probably, that he was thinking of the arteries, which, according to Erasistratus, carried, not the blood, but the πνευμα ζωτικόν through the body (ibid. p. 525 sq.).

3 This view is referred to in the following note. It also accords with what is said supra, vol. ii. p. 468, n. 2, about the interruption of the πνεῦμα flowing to the ἡγεμονικὸν, and on p. 458, n. 1 about the δύναμις πνευματική of the seed.

⁴ TERTULL. De An. 43:

⁶ Strato [here the natural philosopher and not the physician is meant] segregationem consati spiritus [somnum affirmat].

what way dreams were brought into connection with this view it is impossible to say.¹

As on this theory reason no longer constitutes the distinctive mark of the human soul, as a peculiar higher element in it, so Strato was free, on the one hand, to assert that all living creatures participate in reason, which for him coincided with consciousness, and without which he found sense-perception inconceivable; while, on the other hand, he was forced to extend to the whole of the soul what Aristotle had taught as to the finitude of its lower elements. We find him accordingly not only combating the Platonic doctrine of reminiscence, but criticising in a hostile spirit the proofs of the immortality of the soul advanced in the Phædo, in a way which leads us to sup-

Phæd. ed. Finckh. p. 127 (also PLUT. Fr. vii. 19) p. 177 (following Alexander of Aphrodisias, as this commentary so often does, as may be seen by the context), p. 188, a', β'.

^{&#}x27; PLUT. Plac. v. 2, 2 (GALEN, Hist. Ph. 30, p. 320) says: Στράτων [τοὺς ὀνείρους γίνεσθαι] αλόγω [τινί add. GAL.] φύσει της διανοίας έν τοις υπνοις αισθητικωτέρας μέν πως (της ψυχης add. GAL.) γιγνομένης, παρ' αὐτὸ δὲ τοῦτο τῷ γνωστικῷ κινομένης [GAL. gives incorrectly γνωστικής γινομ- $\{\nu\eta s\}$. The meaning appears to be that, during sleep the irrational nature of the mind is stronger, and the action of thought being interrupted, the mind receives and takes in many images or impressions, all more or less confused, which if awake it would allow to pass unnoticed (cf. supra, vol. ii. p. 75 sq. and p. 439, n. 3).

 ² ÉPIPHAN. Exp. Fid. 1090,
 A: πῶν ζῷον ἔλεγεν οὐ [l. ἔλεγενοῦ] δεκτικὸν εἶναι.

³ See the extracts, probably from the work π. φύσεωs ἀνθρω-πίνηs, in Olympiodor. Schol. in

⁴ The arguments against the proofs brought forward in the Phædo, 102, A sqq. which are given by OLYMPIODOR. in Phæd. p. 150-1, p. 191, are as follows: If the soul is immortal because as essentially life it cannot die, the same can be applied to all living bodies, of animals and of plants, for they also cannot, so long as they live, be dead; to every natural being, for the natural state of such excludes anything unnatural; to all things composed and created, for composition is incompatible with dissolution and existence with destruction. But death is not something which approaches life while it lasts, but it is a loss of

pose that along with these proofs he had abandoned the belief in immortality itself.

From the Ethics of Strato only a definition of the Good, which in substance agrees with that of Aristotle, has been preserved to us.1

life. It has not been proved that life is a quality inseparable from the concept of the soul, a quality inherent (ἐπιφέρουσα): and not imparted (ἐπιφερομένη), and even if this be the case, it can only impart life as long as it exists and as long as it is without death. Admitting all this, there always remains the consideration that, as a finite thing, it can only possess a finite and limited power, and consequently must in the end become weaker and die.-Strato also brought arguments against the assertion in the Phæd. 70 c sqq., that as the dead proceed from the living, so must the living proceed from the dead. statement he proves (ibid. 186) to be incorrect, for existing matter does not originate from destroyed matter. Further, if a part-for example, an amoutated limb-does not again live, this is

not the case with the whole. Also that which is derived from another resembles it only in species and not in quantity. And, again, we do not always find any such law of reciprocity, for food becomes flesh, metal turns into rust, wood into coal, and the young man becomes an old one, but the reverse changes never happen. Thus nothing can come of the contrary, unless the substratum is retained and That without not destroyed. such a reciprocity further origin of individuals must cease is not correct: it is only requisite that similar beings, and not the same individuals should be produced.

¹ Stob. *Ecl.* ii. 80 : Στράτων [άγαθὸν φησί] τὸ τελειοῦν τὴν δύναμιν δι' ην της ένεργείας τυγχάνομεν. Cf. herewith, supra,

vol. ii. p. 141 sq.

CHAPTER XXI

THE PERIPATETIC SCHOOL AFTER STRATO TILL TOWARDS
THE END OF THE SECOND CENTURY

EVEN after Strato there were not wanting men of the Peripatetic school who won distinction by their extensive knowledge and their powers of teaching and exposition; but there is no evidence that it henceforth produced any philosopher who merited the name of an independent thinker. It continued to be one of the chief centres of the learning of the time; and of the contemporary schools none but the Stoic, which had risen to eminence under Chrysippus, could rival it in this It cultivated especially the historical, literary and grammatical studies which marked the Alexandrian age above all others, and in connection with these it jealously devoted itself to rhetoric and ethics, but even in these fields contributed little that was original. Its efforts in science and metaphysics, if they did not remain altogether barren, seem to have been wholly confined to the propagation of older doctrines. can we make the scantiness of our information responsible for this seeming poverty; for not only have we express complaints of the unfruitfulness of the Peripatetic school in the period referred to,1 but we are

¹ STRABO, xiii. 1, 54, p. 609, Peripatetics being under the dissays that after Theophrastus the ability that they possessed of

forced to suppose that if there had been anything important to relate of Strato's successors there would have been a richer stream of historical allusion to them, and especially that the learned commentators upon Aristotle, who preserve so deep and significant a silence as to the Peripatetics between Strato and Andronicus, would have found more frequent occasion to mention them.

Strato's successor, Lyco of Troas, who was president of the Peripatetic school for nearly half a century,² and

Aristotle only a limited number of treatises, and these mostly 'exoterical,' μηδέν έχειν φιλοσοφείν πραγματικώς [in the way of real scientific advance], allà θέσεις [commonplaces] ληκυθίζειν [to embelish]. PLUT. Sulla, 26: οἱ δὲ πρεσβύτεροι Περιπα. τητικοί [before Andronicus] φαίνονται μέν καθ' έαυτοὺς γενόμενοι χαρίεντες και φιλολόγοι, but 'it is plain that they did not possess the texts of Aristotle and Theophrastus.' The last suggestion is, of course, incorrect; as is also the idea that the philosophic barrenness of the school began only after Theophrastus (v. supra, i. pp. 138-9 sqq.). 'Ignoratio dialecticæ' is also charged against the Peripatetics by CIC. Fin. iii.

¹ Zeller has been unable to find, among the countless citations of ancient philosophers in the various commentaries, a single one which refers to any of these writers.

² Lyco of Troas (Diog. v. 65, Plut. De Exil. 14, p. 605) was a pupil both of Strato and also of the dialectician Pantoides

(Diog. 68). He was named by Strato hisheir in the school (supra, vol. ii. p. 451, n. 1), and succeeded him in his chair as a young man, about 270-268 B.C., and after conducting the school for fortyfour years, died at the age of seventy-four, about 224 B.C. (DIOG. 68 and supra, vol, ii. p. 451, n. 1). Lyco was a famous orator (see next note but one); busied himself greatly with public affairs and, according to Diog. 66, did great service to Athens, where he must have become a citizen (if by συμβουλέυειν DIOG, here means that he spoke in the public assemblies). We hear that he was esteemed and rewarded by the earlier Pergamenian kings, admired by Antigonus, invited by Antiochus to his court in vain (DIOG. 65, 67: meaning, no doubt, Antiochus II., surnamed Theos), and his will (apud Diog. 69 sqq.) shows that he was a wealthy man. According to HERMIPP. (apud Diog. 67) he lived as one; but the account which Antigonus (apud Athen. xii. 547, d) gives of his pride is, no doubt, grossly exaggerated. The

475

left behind him a number of works. was distinguished by the grace and brilliancy of his style rather than by the originality of his contributions.² The little that has come down to us of his writings is confined to a definition of the Highest Good,3 and a few remarks upon ethical subjects.4

Contemporary with Lyco, but diverging more widely from Aristotle, was Hieronymus of Rhodes.5

same authority (ibid. 548, b) and Diog. 67 show him to have been greatly occupied with gymnastic arts. His testamentary direction as to his funeral (DIOG. 70) is that it should be seemly but not extravagant.

To a slave, who had, no doubt, helped him in his work and to whom he gave his freedom, he bequeaths (apud Diog. 73) τάμὰ βιβλία τὰ ἀνεγνωσμένα; the unpublished writings, on the other hand, he left to his pupil Callinus, to edit for publication.

² Cic. Fin. v. 5, 13: 'Hujus [Stratonis] Lyco est oratione locuples, rebus ipsis jejunior.' Also Diog. 65-6, praises the έκφραστικόν και περιγεγωνός έν τή έρμηνεία, and the εὐφδία of his speech, for which he was also called Γλύκων (as in Plut. ibid.), but he adds the remark: ἐν δὲ τῷ The γράφειν ἀνόμοιος αύτφે. examples cited by Diog. confirm his judgment. Cf. THEMIST. Orat. xxi. 255 B, as to his celebrity in his own time.

³ CLEMENS, Strom. i. 416 D: Λύκος [Lyco must be meant] δ Περιπατητικός την άληθινην χαράν της ψυχης τέλος έλεγεν είναι, ώς Λεύκιμος [?] την ἐπὶ τοῖς καλοῖς. This does not conflict with,

though it certainly does not exhaust, the Aristotelian definition of happiness; but we do not know whether Lyco meant it to be an exhaustive definition or On the trifling worth of worldly possessions, see following

4 Apud Cic. Tusc. iii. 32, 78, talking of 'ægritudo,' Lyco says, 'parvis eam rebus moveri, fortunæ et corporis incommodis, non animi malis.' Apud STOB. Floril., Exc. e Jo. Damasc. ii. 13. 140 (iv. 226, ed. Mein.), Lyco says of παιδεία that it is ίερον άσυλον. Diog. 65-6 describes him as φραστικός άνηρ και περί παίδων άγωγην άκρως συντεταγμένος, quoting at the same time some of his savings.

⁵ Cic. Fin. 3, 8; ATHEN. x. 424-5; Diog. ii. 26; STRABO, xiv. 2, 13, p. 656, and others, all HIERONYMUS as a speak of Rhodian. He was a contemporary of Lyco, Arcesilaus, and the sceptic Timon at Athens (DIOG. v. 68, iv. 41-2, ix. 112). When ATHEN. x. 424-5 calls him a disciple of Aristotle, he is merely using the phrase loosely as meaning a Peripatetic. Not to this man, but to the historian Hieronymus of Cardia, who was the

knowledge of this philosopher, who was distinguished, according to Cicero, 1 for his learning and versatility, is confined mainly to historical observations,2 the titles of books, and unimportant isolated quotations.3 We are told that he declared the summum bonum and the ultimate end of all action to consist in painlessness, which, however, he sharply distinguished from pleasure, going beyond Aristotle 4 in denying that the latter was in any

companion in arms of Eumenes and Antigonus, must we refer the statement of LUCIAN, anud MACROB., 22, as to a person of this name who lived to be 104 years of age, as is clearly shown at the beginning of the chapter.

1 CIC. in the Orutor, 57, 190 calls him 'Peripateticus inprimis nobilis,' and in Fin. v. 5, 14, he speaks of: 'prætereo multos, in his doctum hominem et suavem Hieronymum.' Cf. also Fin. ii. 6, 19. Sundry details are to be gathered also from the passages

cited infra.

² For example: ATHEN. ii. 48, b, v. 217, e, xiii. 556, a, 557, e, 602, a, 604, d (chiefly from the ίστορικά ὑπομνήματα, which is named at 557, e, and 604 d), xiv. 635-6 (from the fifth book π . ποιητών, which treated of odes for the κιθάρα), x. 424-5, xi. 499-500 (from the work π . $\mu \in \theta \eta s$), x. 434-5 (from the Letters): Diog. i. 267 (from the second book of the σποράδην ὑπομνήματα, which are no doubt identical with the $i\sigma\tau$. $\dot{\nu}\pi o\mu\nu$.), ii. 14 (the like), 26, 105 ($\epsilon \nu \tau \hat{\varphi} \pi \epsilon \pi o \chi \hat{\eta} s$), viii. 21, 57, ix. 16; PLUT. Qu. Conv. Procem. 3, mentions his λόγοι παρά πότον γενόμενοι and also reckons him (N. p. suav. Vivi, 13, 6, p. 1096) amongst the writers on music. That the Hieronymus mentioned in DAM-ASCIUS and JOSEPHUS is not the same as this writer has been shown by Zeller, Ph. d. Gr. i.

As in Cic. ibid. (from a work on Rhetoric or Metre); the citation of about thirty verses in Isocrates; a remark in PLUT. Qu. Conv. i. 8, 3, 1, p 626, on the shortsightedness of the aged; a word in SENECA, De Ira, i. 19, 3, against anger, and in STOB. Floril., Exc. e Jo. Dam. ii. 13, 121 (vol. iv. 209, ed. Mein.), against education by pedagogues.

4 The chief source of information here is CICERO, who often refers to this view of Hieron. So Acad. ii. 42, 131: 'Vacare omni molestia Hieronymus [finem esse voluit].' And Fin. v. 11, 35, 25, 73, Tusc. v. 30, 87-8; Fin. ii. 3, 8: 'Tenesne Hieronymus igitur, inquam, Rhodius quod dicat esse summum bonum, quo putet omnia referri oportere? Teneo, inquit, finem illi videri, nihil dolere. Quid? idem iste de voluptate quid sentit? Negat esse eam, inquit, propter se ipsam expetendam;' 6, 19: Nec Aristippus, qui voluptatem summum honum dicit, in voluptate ponit non dolere, neque sense a good. To the same period belongs also Prytanis.¹

After Lyco's death Aristo of Ceos² was elected by the choice of his fellow-disciples to the presidency of

Hieronymus, qui summum bonum statuit non dolere, voluptatis nomine unquam utitur pro illa indolentia; quippe qui ne in expetendis quidem rebus numeret voluptatem. v. 5, 14: 'Hieronymum; quem jam cur Peripateticum appellem, nescio, summum enim bonum exposuit vacuitatem doloris.' Cf. CLEMENS, Strom. ii. 415, C: δ τε Ίερώνυμος δ Περιπατητικός τέλος μέν είναι τὸ ἀόχλητως ζην · τελικόν δ' άγαθόν μόνον την εὐδαιμονίαν. Here Clement seems to have derived his information from the same source as CICERO, Acad. ii. 42, 131; and there ANTIOCHUS is indicated as Cicero's authority. That Cicero was directly acquainted with an ethical as well as a rhetorical work of Hieronymus cannot really be inferred from Fin. ii. 6. This ἀσχλησία is also referred to by JAMBL. apud STOB. Ecl. i. 920, and the ἡσυχία by Plut, Sto. Rep. 2, 2, as the ideal of Hieronymus. The latter adds that, like Epicurus, he lived up to his theory.

This Peripatetic was employed by Antigonus Doson (B.C. 230-221) in various State affairs, and Polyb. v. 93, 8, reckons him among the ἐπιφανεῖς ἀνδρες ἐκ τοῦ περιπάτου. He must have been at that time already considerably advanced in years, if his pupil EUPHORION was really born (as SUIDAS says) in Ol. 126, B.C. 277-273. PLUT. Qu. Conr.

Procem. 3, names him among the distinguished philosophers who have written table talk.

² Aristo is called Κείος in Lyco's will (DIOG. v. 74) and it has since been the custom to name him thus, in order to distinguish him from the Stoic of the same name, 'Αρίστων ὁ Xîos, who is, nevertheless, often confounded with him on account of the similarity of their surnames. Another surname, Ἰουλιήτης or 'Ιλιήτης (DIOG, vii. 164) shows that his family came from Julis, the chief town in the island of Ceos, as is remarked by STRABO, x. 5, 6, p. 486, and STEPHANUS. De Urb. 'Ioulis, PLUT. De Exil. 14, p. 605 names 'Αρίστων ἐκ Κέω between Glyco and Critolaus: Lyco himself speaks of him as his pupil (see following note) and Cic. Fin. v. 5, 13. When we find that not he but Aristo is in SEXT. Math. ii. 61 called the γνώριμος of Critolaus. it is hardly possible to suppose that a younger Peripatetic of the same name is meant, but we must suppose that γνώριμος, which is ordinarily used of a pupil, has a wider signification; here QUINTILIAN, xi. 15, 19 seems to have used the same expression: Critolai peripatetici discipulus. Again, we hear that he was a ζηλωτής of the Borysthenean Bio: see STRABO, x. 5, 6, and ZELLER, Ph. d. Gr. i. 294, 4. The meaning may be merely that he

the school.¹ He also is said to have been distinguished rather for the grace and finish of his style than for originality of thought.² Of his numerous writings only some of the titles,³ and a few fragments, chiefly of an historical character,⁴ have come down to

admired Bio's writings, or it may be that he was personally acquainted with Bio, who must have been still living during Aristo's youth (cf. ZELLER, Ph. d. Gr. i. 294, 4).— It is not Aristo of Ceos, but of Chios, that worked with Arcesilaus (who died 241 B.C.) according to STRABO, i. 2, 2, p. 15; SEXT. Pyrrh. i. 234; Diog. iv. 33. For further information about him and his works see HUBMANN, in Jahn's Jahrb. Supplement, iii. 1834, p. sqq.; RITSCHL, Aristo d. Perinat. apud Cic. De Sen. 3 (Rhein. Mus. N. F. 1842, i. 193 sqq.); KRISCHE, Forsch. 405-6, 408.

Aristotle appears to have at least indicated Theophrastus as his successor; Theophrastus bequeathed the mepimaros to ten friends; Strato to Lyco (v. supra, vol. i. p. 39, n. 1, and vol. ii. p. 350, n. 5); Lyco left it in his will (apud Diog. v. 70) τῶν γνωρίμων τοις βουλομένοις and particularly to ten friends there named (all of whom except Aristo are otherwise unknown), with the proviso: προστησάσθωσαν δ' αὐτοί δυ δυ ὑπολαμβάνωσι διαμενεῖν έπλ τοῦ πράγματος καλ συναύξειν μάλιστα δυνήσεσθαι. If, however, what THEMIST. Or. xxi. 255 B, relates is true, he must have allowed Aristo a precedence even before himself.

² Cic. Fin. v. 5, 13: 'Concinnus deinde et elegans hujus

[Lyconis, sc. discipulus] Aristo; sed ea quæ desideratur a magno philosopho gravitas in eo non fuit. Scripta sane et multa et polita; sed nescio quo pacto auctoritatem oratio non habet. The same is meant by STRABO (ut supra) in the comparison with Bio.

3 Of his works we know a 'Lyco' (mentioned by PLUT. Aud. Po. 1 init. p. 14, where no one else can be meant; cf. CIC. Cato M. 1, 3, and also RITSCHL, ibid.), which is there classed with Æsop's Fables and the Abaris of Heraclides, and which must. therefore, like this latter, have been a collection of fables; and also the Έρωτικά δμοια, cited by ATHEN. x. 419, c. xiii. 563-4, xv. It appears, however, 674, b. from Diog. vii. 163, that all the works there said to be by the Stoic Aristo (except the Letters of PANÆTIUS and SOSICRATES) were also ascribed to our Aristo of Ceos; probably, however, only some of them were so ascribed. and it is only of some that the ascription could in any case be true.

⁴ All the Fragments in ATHE-NEUS (see Index)—except that at ii. 38, 9 (a note on beverages) as also the notices apud PLUT. Themist. 3, Aristid. 2, SOTION, De Fluv. 25, are concerned with historical matter. No doubt DIGGENES (v. 64, supra, vol. i. p. 37, n. 4) took from Aristo the

us. His successor, Critolaus of Phaselis in Ly-

testaments of the Peripatetic philosophers, besides other information about them: and this is probably the reason why his history of the Lyceum does not go beyond Lyco. There has also been handed down to us, in STOB. Ecl. i. 828 (where it is our Aristo that is meant), a division of the αντιληπτική δύναμις της ψυγης into the αίσθητικών and the vous, the first working in connection with the bodily organs, and latter working without organs; and also in SEXT. Math. ii. 61, QUINTIL. ii. 15, 19 (cf. infra, p. 483, n. 1) a definition of Rhetoric, which allows us to suppose that he wrote some work on the subject .- The Fragments from Aristo in STOBÆUS, Floril. (see Index), belong to the Stoic of that name, as is clearly shown in various passages: for example, 4, 110; 80, 5; 82, 7, 11, The information about 15, 16, an Aristo given by SIMPL. Categ., Schol. in Ar. 65, b, 10, 66, a, 38 evidently refers to a younger Peripatetic, one of the successors of Andronicus, and probably the same as he whom SENECA, Ep. 29, 6, makes fun of. It is not clear which Aristo is meant in PLUT. Amator. 21, 2, p. 767, Præc. ger. Reip. 10, 4, p. 804. In Plut. Demosth. 10, 30 the printed texts, at any rate, give 'Xîos.' As to the work π. κενοδοξίαs, as the extract therefrom anud Philodem. De Vit. x. 10, 23, SAUPPE makes it probable (*Philocl. de Vit. Lib. Dec.* pp. 6-7, 34) that they refer to our Aristo.

¹ That Critolaus was Aristo's direct successor is not expressly

said by any of our authorities; for CLEMENT, who gives a list of the Peripatetic 'Diadochoi' in Strom. i. 201 B (or, at least, the printed text of that passage) passes over Aristo ('after Aristotle διαδέχεται Θεόφραστος · δν Στράτων δυ Λύκων εἶτα Κριτόλαος · είτα Διόδωρος '). PLUT. De Exil. 14, p. 605, does not give a full list, but only names those Peripatetics who came to Athens from abroad, when he says: 'Αριστοτέλης ην ἐκ Σταγείρων . . . Γλύκων ἐκ Τρωάδος, 'Αρίστων ἐκ Κέω, Κοιτόλαος Φασηλίτης, Neither does Cic. Fin. v. 5, 13-4 intend to state the order of sequence of the heads of the school, for is only speaking of the relation of the later Peripatetics to Aristotle and Theophrastus; and so, after naming Strato, Lyco, and Aristo, he continues, 'Prætereo multos. his . . . Hieronymum ; 'also after a few remarks about him, he adds, 'Critolaus imitari antiquos voluit,' &c. Thus there appears to be a possible vacancy for further names between Aristo and Critolaus, and this is made somewhat more probable when we consider the time which elapsed between Lyco's and Critolaus's death, which seems very long for only two school directors. Lyco died 226-4 B.C., but Critolaus (see foll. note) was in Rome 156-5 B.C. Supposing that he took this journey during the latter part of his life, we have a period of more than seventy years to cover his and Aristo's school-directorship, and if we add the forty-four years of Lyco's directorship it makes in all for cia, seems to have been more important. All that we

the three men nearly 120 years. ZUMPT ('Bestand d. Philos. Schulen in Athen.' Abh. d. Berl. Akad. Hist.-phil. Kl. 1842, p. 90 sqq.) is inclined to interpose other names between Aristo and Critolaus, and he cites the Anonymus of Menage, who at p. 13, 8, West., says: διάδοχοι δ' αὐτοῦ [Arist.] της σχολης κατά τάξιν έγένοντο οίδε· Θεόφραστος, Στράτων, Πραξιτέλης, Λύκων, 'Αρίστων, Λυκίσκος, Πραξιφάνης, Ίερώνυμος, Πούτανις, Φορμίων, Κριτόλαος. Unfortunately, this evidence is not satisfactory. For we cannot accept as a trustworthy list of the school-chiefs correctly set out κατά τάξιν, a statement which places between Strato and Lyco. undoubtedly followed -who directly one upon the other-an unknown individual. Praxiteles. not even mentioned in Strato's will (whom we cannot make a contemporary and colleague of Strato, as ZUMPT would have it, any more than his διάδοχος), and describes as the second in order after Aristo, Praxiphanes, who was a scholar of Theophrastus (supra, vol. ii. p. 449), and as the tifth after him at Athens Phormio, who, as we learn from CIC. De Orat. ii. 18, 75-6, was in 194 B.C. an old man, and in Ephesus, evidently not merely on a journey; and inserts the still earlier Prytanis (supra, vol. ii. p. 477, n. 1) as Aristo's fourth successor; and supplies us in all with as many as seven 'Diadochoi' between the years 226 and 156 B.C. — On the other side we must remember that CICERO'S words do not necessarily imply any

gap between Aristo and Critolaus. but that it rather seems most likely that he did not know of any intervening directors: Hieronymus and the 'multi' whom he passes over are those whom he could not insert in the list of διάδοχοι since they were not school-directors. Also the statement that Andronicus (or, according to some, his pupil Boëthus) was the twelfth director in succession from Aristotle, is decidedly against ZUMPT's theory. And why, after all, could not the presidencies of Aristo and Critolaus have lasted seventy or eighty years, just as well as that of Lyco lasted forty-four, and that of Theophrastus thirty-six years? The latter two, by the way, were no longer young when they were appointed. And we know from Lucian, Macrob. 20 that Critolaus (not as ZUMPT, p. 90, says, Aristo) lived in fact to over eighty-two years of age. The Stoics Chrysippus and Diogenes held the presidency for at least eighty years, and the first five Stoic Diadochoi presided in all for a period of 140 years. Similarly, from 1640 to 1740, and again from 1740 to 1840, only three princes, and from 1640 to 1786 (i.e. in 146 years) only four princes occupied the throne of Prussia.

¹ The native town of Critolaus is determined by PLUT. *ibid.* and other evidence. Otherwise the only certain piece of information we have relating to his life is that he took part, in conjunction with Diogenes and Critolaus, in the celebrated embassy which (according to CIC. *Acad.* ii. 45,

know of his views 1 shows him to have been in the main a true adherent of the Peripatetic teaching, 2 who, however, differed from Aristotle on several points. conceived of the soul, including the reason, as consisting of ether,3 and in his Ethics he went beyond Aristotle in asserting that pleasure was an evil.4 In other respects his views upon the nature of the summum bonum are thoroughly Aristotelian: he describes it generally as the perfection of a natural life, and further claims for it more particularly that it should embrace the three kinds of Goods,5 among which, however, he

137, during the consulship of P. Scipio and M. Marcellus, i.e. 598-9 A. U C., or 156-5 B.C.; see CLIN-TON, Fasti Hellen.) was sent to Rome by the Athenians to deprecate the fine of 500 talents which had been imposed on the Athenians for the sack of Oropus. For further information on this subject see PAUSAN. vii. 11; CIC. ibid., De Orat. ii. 37, 155, Tusc. iv. 3, 5, Ad Att. xii. 23; GELL. N. A. vi. 14, 8, xvii. 21, 48; PLIN. H. N. vii. 30, 112; PLUT. Cato Maj. 22; ÆL. V. H. iii. 17 (see also infra as to the historical bearings of the story). Critolaus, as well as the others, lectured in Rome is expressly stated (see following note). It is also apparent from what has been stated in the foregoing note, and from what we know of the age of his successors, that Critolaus made this journey late in life. Except by the fact that he lived to be over eighty-two years of age (v. ibid.), it is not possible to indicate the date of his death. ¹ Cf. also Cic. Fin. v. 5, 14:

mus, et redundat oratio, attamen is quidem in patriis institutis manet.' In reference to his lectures in Rome, GELL. vi. 14, 10 (following Rutilius and Polybius) says: 'Violenta et rapida Carneades dicebat, scita et teretia Critolaus, modesta Diogenes et sobria.' ² As CICERO indicates: see

'Critolaus imitari antiquos voluit.

et quidem est gravitate proxi-

preceding note.

³ STOB. Ecl. i. 58: Κριτόλαος καὶ Διόδωρος ὁ Τύριος νοῦν ἀπ' αὶθέρος ἀπαθοῦς. TERTULL. De An. 5: 'Nec illos dico solos, qui eam [animam] de manifest is corporalibus effingunt . . . ut Critolaus et Peripatetici ejus ex quinta nescio qua substantia [the $\pi \epsilon \mu \pi \tau \eta$ où $\sigma (a, the ether]$.

4 GELL. N. A. ix. 5, 6; 'Critolaus Peripateticus et malum esse voluptatem ait et multa alia mala parere ex sese, injurias, desidias, obliviones, ignavias.'

⁵ CLEMENS, Strom. ii. 316, D: Κριτόλαος δὲ, ὁ καὶ αὐτὸς Περιπατητικός, τελειότητα έλεγεν [sc. τδ

gave so unconditioned a preference to those of the soul that the others shrink into complete insignificance beside them. 1 Similarly in Physics he came forward as the defender of an important Aristotelian doctrine in maintaining the eternity of the world and of the human race against the Stoics.2 He rests his arguments chiefly upon the immutability of the order of nature, which excludes the supposition that man has ever come into existence in any other way than as he now does; he adduces as indirect proof of the same the multiform incongruities involved in the idea that primeval man sprang from the earth; and concludes that man, and therefore also the world, must be eternal, nature having, as Plato and Aristotle had already declared,3 conferred upon the whole race by means of propagation the immortality which she was unable to bestow upon He further remarks that a self-caused individuals. existence like the world must be eternal; if the world had a beginning, it would exhibit growth and evolution, not only in respect of its material frame, but also of the indwelling reason that governs it; this, however, is impossible in a being, like it, already perfect. While sickness, age, or want destroys living creatures, they

τέλος] κατὰ φύσιν εὐροοῦντος βίου.
τὴν ἐκ τῶν τριῶν γενῶν [the three kinds of Goods] συμπληρουμένην προγονικὴν [? ἀνθρωπικὴν]
τελειότητα μηνύων. STOB. Εσί.
ii. 58: ὑπὸ δὲ τῶν νεωτέρων Περιπατητικῶν, τῶν ἀπὸ Κριτολάου, [so.
τέλος λέγεται] τὸ ἐκ πάντων τῶν
ἀγαδῶν συμπεπληρωμένον. τοῦτο δὲ ῆν τὸ ἐκ τῶν τριῶν γενῶν.

1 Cic. Tusc. v. 17, 51: 'Quo loco quæro, quam vim habeat libra illa Critolai: qui cum in alteram lancem animi bona imponat, in alteram corporis et externa, tantum propendere illam bonorum animi lancem putet, ut terram et maria deprimat.'

PHILO, Ætern. Mundi, p.
 943 B—947 B, Hösch., c. 11 15, Bern.

³ Supra, vol ii. p. 35, n. 2 cf. ZELL. Ph. d. Gr. i. 512, 3.

cannot affect the world as a whole; if the order or destiny of the world is acknowledged to be eternal, this must also be true of the world itself, which indeed is nothing else than the manifestation of this order. While the leading thoughts of this argument are not new, yet we must recognise in them an able defence of the Peripatetic doctrine. What we are further told of Critolaus is of little importance.

Contemporaneous with Aristo and Critolaus was Phormio, the Peripatetic, whom Hannibal met at Ephesus (circ. 195 B.C.), but of whom beyond the unseasonable lecture which he delivered to the Carthaginian hero upon generalship, nothing further is known. To the same period belong apparently Sotion's much-read work on the schools of philosophy and the

¹ According to STOB. Ecl. i. 252, Critolaus held time to be a νόημα ή μέτρον, and not a υπόστασιs. See also SEXT. Math. ii. 12, According to QUINTIL. ii. 17, 15, he made sharp attacks on Rhetoric (of which Sext, tells us something), defining it, according to QUINT. ii. 15, 23, as usus dicendi (and QUINT. adds, nam hoc τριβή significat), which means (as PLATO had said in the Gorg. 463 B) that it was not an art but a mere readiness of speech acquired by practice. Further information as to what he said in connection with this criticism of oratory may be found in GELL.

² We have this incident from Crc. *De Orat.* ii. 18. As Hannibal was then with Antiochus in Ephesus, it must have been about the time stated in the text; and as he called the philosopher a

delirus senex, Phormio must have then been advanced in years.

⁸ For, as already remarked, we can make nothing of the statement of the ANON. MEN. cited at p. 480, n. supra.

⁴ That Sotion was a Peripatetic is not expressly stated, but is evident from the whole character of his writings. Cf. SOTION, De Fluv. 44 (Westermann, Παραδοξόγραφοι, p. 191).

⁵ Cf. Westermann, Παραδοξόγραφοι, p. xlix; and see particularly Panzerbieter, 'Sotion,' in Jahn's Jahrbb. Supplement, v. (1837) p. 211 sqq. where it is shown from the data given by Diogenes that the Διαδοχή τῶν φιλοσόφων must have been written between 200 and 150 B.C.—probably between 200 and 170 B.C.: inasmuch as, on the one hand, Chrysippus, who

histories 1 of Hermippus and Satyrus. Heraclides

died about 206, was mentioned in the book (DIOG, vii, 183), and, on the other hand, Heraclides Lembus (de quo infra) made an extract from it. PANZERBIETER also makes it probable that the Διαδοχή consisted of 13 books, whose contents he endeavours to indicate. To this work belong also the references in ATHEN. iv. 62, e. viii. 343, c. xi. 505, c; SEXT. Math. vii. 15 .- ATHEN. viii. 336, d, tells us of another work of Sotion's, περί τῶν Τίμωνος σίλλων. It is very questionable whether it is chronologically possible that he could have written the 12 books Διοκλείων ἐλέγχων directed against Diocles of Magnesia (v. DION. x. 4). At any rate the Képas 'Auahbeias, (GELL. N. A. i. 8, 1, cf. with PLIN. H. N. præf. 24), the fragment on rivers and springs (in WESTERMANN'S Παραδοξόγραφοι, р. 183 sqq., cf. with Pнот. Bibl. Cod. 189), which was probably part of the last-named work, the writing π. δργηs (Stob. Floril. 14, 10, 20, 53, 108, 59, 113, 15) and those from which are derived Fragments apud Floril. 84, 6-8, 17, 18, belong to one or perhaps to two younger men of the same name. We should say to one, if the Peripatetic Sotion mentioned by GELL. as author of the Κέρας 'Aμ. is identical with the Sotion who was Seneca's (Epist. 49, 2, 108, 17-20) teacher in the school of Sextus (ZELL. Ph. d. Gr. iii. a, 600, 3, 605, 3); MÜLLER, Fragm. Hist, Gr. iii. 168 takes it for granted that this is the case, but there seems to be some probability that they were different

persons. In this case we must also attribute to that Peripatetic (Zell, ibid. iii. a, 694, 2nd ed.) the citations in ALEX. APHR. Top. 123 (which appear to be from a commentary on Aristotle), and in CRAMER'S Anecd. Paris. i. 391, 3; and same man is perhaps meant in PLUT. Frat. Am. c. 16, p. 487, and Alex. c. 61. On the other hand, the moral maxims cited by STOBÆUS belong to Seneca's teacher. It is impossible to say who was the Sotion frequently cited in the Geoponica, but he was in any case not the author of the Διαδοχή. M. HERTZ 'Ramenta Gelliana' (Bresl. Universitatschrift, 1868) p. 15-6 attributes the Κέρας 'Αμαλθ. to the elder Sotion, but this does not follow from what is said by GELL. i. 8, 1; cf. ATHEN. xiii. 588 C; Diog. ii. 74.

¹ See Lozynski, Hermippi Fragm. Bonn, 1832; PRELLER, in Jahn's Jahrb. 1836, xvii. 159 sqq.; MÜLLER, Fragm, Hist. Gr. iii. 35 sqq.; NIETZSCHE, Rhein. Mus. xxiv. 188-9, z. HERMIPPUS described by HIERON. De Script. Eccl. c. I (whose authority is not of much value) as a Peripatetic, and by ATHEN. ii. 58-9, v. 213-4, xv. 696-7 as δ Καλλιμάχειος, i.e. 'the pupil of Callimachus'; he is, therefore, probably the same Hermippus as is said to be a native of Smyrna in ATHEN, vii, 327 C. hear that in his chief work he mentioned the death of Chrysippus (Diog. vii. 184) whereas he is not referred to as an authority for later events, we may infer that he must have written Lembus, Agatharchides and Antisthenes of Rhodes

about 200 B.C. or soon after. The citation in the Etymol. M. 118, 11 would carry the date a little further—to about 203 B.C. -if the work there referred to was by him; see MÜLLER's note to Fr. 72.—Of his books, we hear of a great work of biography. the Bioi, different parts of which seem to have been known by various separate names. -- A second work π. των έν παιδεία διαλαμψάντων (Etym. M. ibid.). of which the π. τῶν διαπρεψάντων έν παιδεία δούλων cited by SUIDAS s. v. Iστρος was no doubt a part, is · with a great balance of probability ascribed by PRELLER. MÜLLER and others to the later Hermippus of Berytus. As to other writings not belonging to our Hermippus, see Preller, p. 174 sqq. For the list of the works of Aristotle and Theophrastus probably given in the Bios, see vol. i. p. 51.—In like manner, SATYRUS is described as a Peripatetic in ATHEN. vi. 248, d. xii. 534, b, 541, c. xiii. 556, a. His chief work was a collection of biographies, cited as the Bioi (cf. ATHEN. vi. 248, d, f, 250 f, xii. 541, c, xiii. 557, c, 584, a; Diog. ii. 12, viii. 40, 53; Hieron. Adv. Jovin. ii. 14, De Script. Eccl. c. 1), and called more fully (as is inferred by BERNAYS, Theophr. üb. Frömm. 161 from HIER. Adv. Jov.) Βίοι ἐνδόξων åνδρών. Further ATHEN. iv. 168 E, cites from a writer who is evidently our Satyrus, a fragment from a work π. χαρακτήρων. Another book in which a list of the Demes of Alexandria was given (THEOPHIL. Ad Autol. ii. p. 94), and a collection of pro-

verbs (DIONYS, HAL. Antiquitt. i. 68) are probably, but not certainly, the work of a later scholar of whom (if he existed) we do not know whether he was or was not a Peripatetic (for in ATHEN. xiii. 556, a, only our Satyrus can be meant, and he is in fact always designated in the same manner). We can say with more certainty that the poem on precious stones, which PLIN. H. N. XXXVII. 2, 31, 6, 91, 7, 94, cites as by a Satyrus, was not the work of our Peripatetic. Cf. MÜLLER, ibid. 159, and the Fragments there, which in so far as they are genuine, contain only historical matter, excepting those from the 'Characters.

See MÜLLER, Hist. Gr. iii. 167 sog. HERACLIDES, surnamed Lembus (cf. MÜLLER, ibid.), came, according to Diog. v. 94, from Calatis in Pontus or from Alexandria; according to SUIDAS, s.v. 'Ηρακλ. from Oxyrvnchus in Egypt. According to SUID, he lived under Ptolemy Philometor (181–147 B.C.) in a distinguished position. SUID. calls him φιλόσοφος, and adds that he was the author of philosophical and other As his helper Agatharchides (see following note) is counted among the Peripatetics, and his own literary activity lay in this direction, we may include him also as one of the school. The Λεμβευτικός λόγος, which is said to have been the origin of his surname (DIOG. ibid.), was probably a philosophical work; but the most important of his works were, in any way, those which were historical. We know of an historical work in at least

are rather later. No single utterance on philosophy, however, has been preserved to us from any of these.

More important for us is Diodorus of Tyre,2 the successor of Critolaus. In his view of the soul he agreed with his master.3 but differed from him and from

thirty-seven books, an extract from the biography of Satyrus (Drog. viii. 40, 44, 53, 58), and a Διαδοχή in six books, which was an epitome of Sotion's work (Diog. v. 94, 79, viii. 7, x. 1). See the Fragm. of these, apud MÜLLER, ibid.

AGATHARCHIDES of Cnidos. δ ἐκ τῶν περιπάτων (STRABO, xiv. . marked, supra, vol. i. p. 81, n. 1. 2, 15, p. 656), was secretary to the above-named Heraclides Lembus (Phot. Cod. 213 init.), and was afterwards (as we learn from his own words apud Phot. Cod. 250, p. 445, a, 33, 460, b, 6) the tutor of a prince (MÜLLER, ibid. 191 supposes, with WESSE-LING, that it was Ptolemy Physicon II., who reigned from 117-107 B.C.). Agatharchides wrote several historical and ethnographical works, of which one on the Red Sea has been preserved in great part by PHOT. $Cod.\ 250$, pp. 441-460; as to the rest see MULLER, p. 190 sqq.—So ANTISTHENES is spoken of by PHLEGON, Mirab. 3, as a Peripatetic and a distinguished author, of whom he tells us a wonderful story about an alleged occurrence of the year 191 B.C. He is probably the same as the Peripatetic whose Διαδοχαl Diogenes often cites, and is, perhaps, also to be identified with the historian from Rhodes, who, according to Polybius, xvi. 14, was still alive during the first thirty years or so of the second

century (MÜLLER, Hist. Gr. iii. 182, believes the two to be different persons). The citations in Diogenes do not carry us beyond the death of Cleanthes (MÜLLER, ibid.). That the pseudo-Aristotelian Μαγικός probably belonged to this Antisthenes of Rhodes has been already re-

² Stob. Ecl. i. 58, calls this Diodorus a Tyrian, and in Cic. De Orat. i. 11, 45, Fin. v. 5, 14, and CLEM. Strom. 1, 301 B, he is described as the disciple and successor of Critolaus. Otherwise nothing is known about him, and it is impossible to define the date of his death or of his accession to the headship of the school; if, however, we can trust what CIC. says in the De Orat. ibid., he must have been still alive in 110 B.C. (see ZUMPT, 'Ueber d. Bestand d. philos. Schulen in Athen., Abh. d. Berl. Akad. Hist.-phil. Kl. 1842, p. 93); but this, in view of the facts set out in n. 3 on p. 487 infra, is questionable.

³ So STOB. ibid.; see supra, vol. ii. p. 481, n. 3. Still, he did not propose to overlook the difference between the rational and the irrational in the soul; for, according to PLUT. Fragm. 1, Utr. An. an Corp. v. 6, 2 (if 'here Διόδωρος may be read for Διόδοντος, or if we may take the 'Διόδυτος' adopted by Dübner as being another form of the same Aristotle in his ethics, uniting with their views upon the summum bonum those of Hieronymus, and to a certain extent combining the Stoic and Epicurean ethical principles with one another by maintaining that happiness consists in a virtuous and painless life; ¹ as, however, virtue was declared by him to be the most essential and indispensable element in it, this deviation is in reality less important than at first appears.² Erymneus,³ the successor of Diodorus, we know only

name), he allowed that the $\lambda \sigma \gamma \iota \kappa \delta \nu$ of the $\psi \iota \chi \dot{\eta}$ had its special $\pi d\theta \eta$, and that the $\sigma \iota \iota \mu - \psi \iota \dot{\nu}$ is $[sc. \tau \dot{\varphi} \sigma \delta \iota \mu a \tau \iota]$ and $\iota \kappa \delta \iota \gamma \sigma \nu$ had special $\pi d\theta \eta$ also; which can be reconciled with the ' $\delta \pi \alpha \theta \dot{\nu} \dot{\nu}$ ' of Stob. by supposing that he held that the modifications of the rational portion of the soul, including the activities of thought, were improperly described ' $\pi d\theta \sigma s$.'

¹ Cic. Fin. v. 5, 14: 'Diodorus, ejus [Critol.] auditor, adjungit ad honestatem vacuitatem doloris. Hic quoque suus est; de summoque bono dissentiens dici vere Peripateticus non potest.' So also 25, 73, ii. 6, 19, and Acad. ii. 42, 131; cf. Fin. ii. 11, 34: 'Callipho ad virtutem nihil adjunxit, nisi voluptatem: Diodorus, nisi vacuitatem doloris.' Tusc. v. 30, 85: 'Indolentiam autem honestati Peripateticus Diodorus adjunxit.' Ibid. 87: 'Eadem [like the Stoics Calliphontis erit Diodorique sententia; quorum uterque honestatem sic complectitur, ut omnia, quæ sine ea sint, longe et retro ponenda censeat.' CLEMENS, Strom. ii. 415 C: Kal Διόδωρος όμοίως, ἀπὸ τῆς αὐτῆς αἰρέσεως γενόμενος [as Hierony-

mus], τέλος ἀποφαίνεται τὸ ἀοχλήτως καὶ καλῶς (ῆν.

² We find also a definition of Rhetoric ascribed to a Diodorus (NIKOL. Progymn. Rhet. Gr. apud SPENGEL, iii. 451, 7), which implies that he wrote about Rhetoric. There is the less reason to doubt that this Diodorus is the Peripatetic, since we have seen that the same question arose in the cases of Aristo and Critolaus; supra, vol. ii. p. 483,

3 The long and detailed fragment of Posidonius, preserved by ATHEN. v. 211, d sqq, gives the history of one Athenion, described as a Peripatetic, who had studied first in Messene and in Larissa (the addition that he became head of the school in Athens is plainly a blunder of Athenœus, which is refuted by his own quotation from Posidonius), and had then contrived by flattery to ingratiate himself with Mithridates, and so to make himself for a time the master of Athens (meaning evidently the same man who is called 'Aristion' by PLUT. Sulla, 12, 13, 23, and elsewhere, and who is described by Applan, Mithr. 28, as an Epiby name. With regard to Callipho and Dinomachus, two philosophers who in ethics occupy an intermediate position between the Epicureans and the Peripatetics, we are wholly ignorant to which school they belonged.¹

Among our sources of information with regard to the state of the Peripatetic philosophy during the third and second century B.C. are probably to be reckoned most of the writings which our previous investigation excluded as spurious from the collected works of Aristotle. While the contribution they supply is an insignificant one, yet it is not so wholly worthless but that it will repay us to examine its contents. To this class belongs, in the field of logic, the second part of the Categories, which has probably come down to us in its present form from that period. Important as these so-called 'Postprædicamenta' of the later logic may have been, yet the treatment which a few of the principles of Aristotelian logic here receive cannot but appear

curean); and Posidonius says explicitly that this man was a natural son of Athenion, a pupil of Erymneus. As Athens revolted from the rule of the Romans in 88 B.C., it follows from the account given in this Fragment that Erymneus cannot have begun his headship of the school later than 120–110 B.C.

What is known of these two philosophers through Cic. Fin. ii. 6, 19, 11, 34 (suppra, vol. ii. p. 487, n. 1), v. 8, 21, 25, 73, Acad. ii. 42, 131, Tusc. v. 30, 85, 87, Offic. iii. 34, 119, and CLEM. Strom. ii. 415 C, limits itself to this: that they thought to find the highest happiness in the union of pleasure and virtue, or.

as CLEMENT says, they sought it in pleasure, but they further explained that virtue was equally valuable; or rather, according to Tusc. v. 30, 87 indispensable. According to Cic. Fin. v. 25, 73, Callipho was older than Diodorus, and according to Acad. ii. 45, 139, older, or at any rate not younger, than Carneades. It is not stated to what school he and Dinomachus belonged: but HARLESS (Fabric. Biblioth. iii. 491) makes a gross mistake when he suggests that this Dinomachus is the Stoic mentioned by LUCIAN, Philopseud. 6 sqq. for the latter was evidently a contemporary of Lucian. ² Supra, vol. i. p. 64, n. 1.

insignificant to us, and a like judgment must be passed upon the last chapter of the work περὶ Ἑρμηνείας.1 The spurious treatise on the Elements of Metaphysics 2 contains, with the exception of a passage in the second book already touched upon,3 scarcely any modification of the Aristotelian doctrine. The work upon Melissus, Zeno and Gorgias, of the date of whose composition we know absolutely nothing, proves its spuriousness not so much by any positive deviations from the Aristotelian teaching as by the defects of its historical statements and critical expressions, as well as by the general obscurity of its aim.4 Of works upon Physics the book upon the World will hereafter engage our attention as an example of the eclectic method of combining Peripatetic and Stoic doctrines.⁵ The treatise upon Indivisible Lines which, if it is not the work of Theophrastus himself,6 appears to date from his time, ably combats a view which Aristotle had rejected. To the school of Theophrastus and Strato perhaps belong the treatises upon Colours, Sounds, the Vital Spirit, and the

¹ The Postprædicamenta treat of (1) c. 10-1, the four kinds of opposition which have been described already, supra, vol. i. p. 223 soq.; (2) c. 12, the different significations of the πρότερον, with a slight, but merely, formal dissent from Metaph. v. 11; (3) c. 13, the significations of the äμα, this section being only based in part upon the earlier texts and in part original (cf. WAITZ, adloc.), though not contrary to the views of Aristotle; (4) c. 14, concerning the six kinds of

motion, in agreement with the views stated supra, vol. i. p. 423, n. 1; (5) c. 15, on the $\xi \chi \epsilon \iota \nu$, the meanings of which are set out rather differently from the Aristotelian account in Metaph. v. 23.

² Cf. with *supra*, vol. i. p. 66, a. 1.

Supra, vol. ii. p. 429, n. 1.
 Cf. herewith ZELL. Ph. d.
 Gr. i. 464 sqq.

⁵ ZELL. Ph. d. Gr. iii. a,

⁵⁵⁸ sqq. 2nd ed.

⁶ Cf. supra, vol. i. p. 86, n. 1, and Zell, Ph. d. Gr. i. 868, 4.

Motions of Animals—works which are not without independence, and exhibit evidence of respectable work in the field of science. The first of these, differing widely from Aristotle, traces the origin of the colours to the elements, of which fire is said to be yellow while the rest are naturally white; black is caused by the transmutation of one element into another, the burning up of air and water and the drying up of water.1 All colours are said to be mixtures of these three elements.2 Light is described as the proper colour of fire; 3 that it is conceived of as corporeal 4 is obvious, not only from its being classed, as we have just seen, with the colours, but also from the way in which the lustre and the dulness of thick transparent bodies are alike explained.5 Upon the further contents of this treatise, as it goes on to discuss in detail the preparation of colours and the natural hues of plants and animals, we cannot here stop to enlarge. With regard, similarly, to the short

1 De Color. c. 1; PRANTL, Arist. v. d. Farben, 108, finds in this treatise a confusion of two views: (a) that darkness is either the absence or partial absence of light (the latter in the case of shadows or of rays penetrating through the density of some transparent body); and (b) that blackness is to be explained in the manner stated in the text. The inconsistency, however, is only apparent: for the σκότος, which produces the appearance of the blackness (791, a, 12), is to be distinguished from the μέλαν χρώμα, which is the quality of bodies tending to check light and produce $\sigma\kappa\delta\tau$ os (791, b, 17). ² C. 1, 791, a, 11, c. 2, 792, a,

10, c. 3, 793, b, 33. For more detailed theories on the origin of the different colours, see c. 2, 3.

⁸ C. 1, 791, b, 6 sqq.; cf. with

791, a, 3.

⁴ Strato held the same views on this, but not Aristotle or Theophrastus; *supra*, vol. i. p. 518, n. 3, vol. ii. p. 379, n. 1.

⁵ Lustre (στίλβον) is (c. 3, 793, a, 12) a συνέχεια φωτὸς καὶ πυκνότης: transparent matter looks dark, when it is too thick to allow the rays of light to pierce it, and bright when it is thin, like air, which when not present in too dense a form is overcome by the rays: χωριζόμενος ὑπ' αὐτῶν πυκνοτέρων οὐσῶν καὶ διαφαινομένων δι' αὐτοῦ (c. 3, 794, a, 2 sqq.).

work upon Sounds, which in tone and method is related to that on Colours, and is to be attributed perhaps to the same author, it will be sufficient to refer to our previous quotation from it.1 We must assume a different author for the work upon the Vital Spirit,2 which discusses in a somewhat sceptical tone the origin, sustenance, diffusion, and operation of the anima vitæ accepted by Aristotle as the primary substratum of the soul.3 This book, on account of its fragmentary character and the numerous corruptions in the text, is sometimes almost incomprehensible to us. Its general presuppositions of design in nature,4 and of a soul and vital spirit united with it 5 in man, are Aristotelian. Peculiar to itself, on the other hand, is the assumption that the vital spirit, as Erasistratus had held,6 spreads from the heart by means of the arteries through the whole body, and that it is this (and not, as Aristotle held, the flesh) which is the primary organ of sensation.7 Respiration, the pulse, the consumption and distribution of the food,8 are effects of the operation of the vital spirit, which nourishes itself from the blood, the breath serving only, as Aristotle had taught, to cool it.9 The relation of the

³ Supra, vol. ii. p. 6, n. 2. ⁴ Cf. c. 7, 484, b, 19, 27 sqq.

⁴ Cf. c. 7, 484, b, 19, 27 sec. 9, 485, b, 2 sqq.

⁵ C. 9, 485, b, 11; cf. with c. 1, 480, a, 17, c. 4, 482, b, 22, c. 5, 483, a, 27 sqq. The subject of the treatise did not give any occasion for the statement of any view as to the Novs.

⁶ As to this physician, who was probably a pupil of Theo-

phrastus (supra, vol. ii. p. 451, n. 2), and as to his theory of the dissemination of the pneuma through the arteries, see SPRENGEL, Gesch. d. Arzneik. 4 ed. i. 525 sqq.; on the relations of the π. πνεύματως to his teaching see ROSE, De Arist. Libr. Ord. 167-8.

¹ Supra, vol. ii. p. 465, n. 8. ^a As to which of. also supra, vol. i. p. 89, n. 3, ad fin.

<sup>C. 5, 483, a, 23 sqq. b, 10-26,
c. 2, 481, b, 12, 18.</sup>

⁸ C. 4–5.

⁹ Cf. supra, vol. ii. p. 6, n. 2, p. 43.

operative *pneuma*, which was said to reside in the sinews and nerves, to this vital principal is not made altogether clear.

Of a later date than this treatise,⁴ and much more clearly written, is one upon the Motion of Animals, which professes to be the work of Aristotle,⁵ inadmissible as this claim is.⁶ The contents of this work are almost entirely drawn from Aristotle, but are in parts so combined as wholly to contradict the spirit of his teaching. It starts from the principle that all motion must ultimately be referred to a self-moving and unmoved entity,⁷ but proceeds by a singular application of it to draw the conclusion that every mechanical

¹ C. 1-2, c. 5 ad fin. where at p. 484, a, 8 we must read: σύμφυτον πῶς ἡ διαμονή, &c.

The sinews and nerves were not distinguished by Herophilus, the first discoverer of nerves, or by his contemporary, Erasistratus, or indeed for a long time afterwards, but they were designated as a whole by the common term νεῦρα, which had originally signified the sinews only; SPRENGEL, ibid. 511–12, 524–25.

3 C. 8 init. (where at p. 485, a, 4 we should probably read: πάντων δ' ἐστὶ λόγον βέλτιον ὡς καὶ νῦν ζητεῖν): οὐκ ἃν δόξειε κινήσεως ἕνεκα τὰ ὀστᾶ, ἀλλὰ μᾶλλον τὰ νεῦρα ἡ τὸ ἀνάλογον, ἐν ῷ πρώτω τὸ πνεῦμα τὸ κινητικόν.

As we see from the fact that the π . $\pi \nu \epsilon \nu \mu \alpha \tau \sigma s$ is quoted in the π . $\zeta \psi \omega \nu \kappa \nu \nu \dot{\eta} \sigma \epsilon \omega s$ c. 10, 703, a, 10; cf. supra, vol. i. p. 92. The possibility that both works have the same author is not excluded: but the style and manner of expression differ too much.

⁵ The first words of the π. ζώων κινήσεως present it as the completion of an earlier inquiry. which is evidently meant to indicate the π . $\zeta \psi \omega \nu \pi o \rho \epsilon i \alpha s$. Again in c. 1, 698, a, 7 we have a reference to Phys. viii. in c. 6, at p. 700, b, 4, lines 21. and 9 (cf. supra, vol. i. p. 80) to the π . $\psi v \chi \hat{\eta} s$ and the π . $\tau \hat{\eta} s \pi \rho \hat{\omega} \tau \eta s$ φιλοσοφίας; in c. 11 ad fin. to the π . ζώων μορίων, the π . ψυχη̂s, the π. αίσθήσεως και ύπνου και μνήμης, and to the π. (ψων γενέσεως as an immediately preceding treatise. These references are made just in the way in which Aristotle himself was accustomed to quote his works. Nevertheless the π . ζώων κινήσεωs is so free, both in style and matter, from any of the marks which would betray a very late date, that we should not be justified in referring it to a time subsequent to the work of Andronicus.

Supra, vol. i. p. 93, n. 1.
 C. 1, 698, a, 7 sqq. (where

motion presupposes two unmoved entities: in the thing itself a motionless point from which the motion proceeds, and outside of it a motionless body upon which the thing rests: 1 from which it again concludes that the unmoved principle which propels the world cannot be within the latter, but must be outside of it.2 It further shows in a discussion with which we are already familiar, how the presentation of the desirable object to the mind creates the desire, and this in turn the physical movements,3 which all proceed from the centre of the body as the seat of sensation—or. to be strict, from the soul, which there has its abode.4 The soul thus operates upon the body by means of the expansion and contraction, the rise and fall of the vital spirit ($\pi \nu \epsilon \hat{\nu} \mu a \sigma \nu \mu \phi \nu \tau \sigma \nu$). In order that it should so operate, however, it is not necessary that it should leave its seat in the heart and act directly upon all parts of the body, since, in virtue of the principle of order that governs the whole, its decrees find automatic fulfilment.5

we should read τούτου δὲ τὸ ἀκίνητον), and c. 6, 700, b, 7.

1 C. 1, 698, a, 11, c. 2 ad fin.; and c. 4, 700, a, 6 sqq. We have also at 698, a, 11 the remarkable statement: δεῖ δὲ τοῦτο μὴ μόνον τῷ λόγω καθόλου λαβεῖν, ἀλλὰ καὶ ἐπὶ τῶν καθέκαστα καὶ τῶν αἰσθητῶν, δι' ἄπερ καὶ τοὺs καθόλου ζητοῦμεν λόγουs—which is an exaggeration of the view which is indicated as that of Aristotle, supra, vol. i. p. 167.

² C. 3-4, where the myth of Atlas referred to in *De Cælo*, ii. 1, 284, a, 18, is proved to be mechanically impossible. We might conclude from 699, a, 31 that the author did not share

Aristotle's belief as to the stillness of the earth, but this is hardly his meaning. He is only carried away in the heat of controversy into using an argument which would make, in fact, against Aristotle himself.

³ C. 6-8; *supra*, vol. ii. p. 110 sq.

4 C. 9.

⁵ C. 10. This recalls both the work quoted, the π . πνεύμανος, and also the π . κόσμον, which, in the discussion it contains as to the action of God on the world (c. 6, 398, b, 12 sqq, 400, b, 11 sqq.), appears to have in view the passage referred to in the text, as also c. 7, 701, b, 1.

The pamphlet ends with some remarks upon involuntary movements.1

Among the superior pseudo-Aristotelian writings we must reckon also the Mechanical Problems, which, however, contain too little of a philosophical character to detain us here.—Even the work on Physiognomy, however mistaken the attempt as a whole, furnishes us with an example of logical methods and careful, sometimes even keen, observation. Its leading thought is the complete interdependence of body and soul; 3 from which it concludes that there must be certain physical indications of moral and intellectual characteristics, the extent and subtilty of which may be measured both by the analogy of certain of the lower animals and by the impression produced by the figure, features and gait. On this latter subject many of its observations are not without value.—The tenth book of the Natural History 4 deviates from one of the fundamental principles of the Aristotelian physiology 5 by the assumption of a female seed, but in other respects gives evidence of careful observation, remarkable for that time. At the earliest it belongs to the school of Strato.6—The pseudo-

¹ C. 11.

² Supra, vol. i. p. 86, n. 1.

³ C. 1 init.: 8т. al бійгова επονται τοις σώμασι, και οὐκ εἰσιν αὐταὶ καθ' ἐαυτὰς ἀπαθεῖς οὖσαι τῶν τοῦ σώματος κινήσεων . . . καὶ τούναντίον δή τοις τής ψυχής παθήμασι το σωμα συμπάσχον φανερον γίνεται &c.; c. 4 init.: δοκεί δέ μοι ή ψυχή και το σώμα συμπαθείν αλλήλοις &c. This συμπάθεια recalls the terminology of the Stoics.

ύπὲρ τοῦ μὴ γεννᾶν, which has been mentioned supra, vol. i. p. 87, n. 1.

⁵ C. 5, 636, b, 15, 26, 37, c. 6 fin. c. 2, 634, b, 29, 36, c. 3, 636, a, 11, c. 4 fin. &c., wherewith cf. vol. ii. p. 50 sq.

⁶ The female seed has already been discussed in connection with Strato, supra, vol. ii. p. 466, n. 1. This book differs still further from Aristotle (as Rose, Arist. Libr. Ord. 172, points 4 Probably identical with the out) in that it inculcates that the

Aristotelian Tales of the Marvellous cannot be adduced as examples of independent research, but only as a proof of the uncritical eagerness with which the later learning was wont to collect even the most improbable statements, if only they were surprising enough; and the same is in the main true of the form in which the Problems have come down to us. These works are useless to us in a history like the present, if for no other reason, because we are entirely ignorant through how many hands they have come, and when they received their present form.¹

Among the ethical works in the Aristotelian collection there are three besides the Eudemian Ethics which are of later Peripatetic origin: the essay upon Virtues and Vices, the so-called Magna Moralia, and the Economics. The first of these will come before us hereafter among the evidences of the Eclecticism of the younger Peripatetic school.—

The Magna Moralia is an abbreviated reproduction of the Nicomachean and the Eudemian Ethics, which (apart from the books which are common to both of these) for the most part follows the latter, although in individual sections preferring the former. The essential points of the earlier works are as a rule intelligently grasped and placed in due prominence, sometimes even receiving

seed is absorbed through the $\pi\nu\epsilon\hat{v}\mu\alpha$, and not, as Aristotle believed, by the warmth of the uterus (c. 2, 634, b, 34, c. 3, 636, a, 4, c. 5, 637, a, 15 sqq.). That the book is post-Aristotelian is again proved by the passage on the $\mu b\lambda \eta$, c. 7, 638, a, 10–18, which is copied, word for word, from the Gen. An. iv. 7, 775, a, 27 sqq.

¹ See supra, vol. i. p. 96 sqq.; and see also p. 85, n., as to the Aristotelian fragment on the Signs of the Weather; and as to the books on Plants, which do not here concern us, see p. 93 n. 2.

² Cf. Spengel, Abhandl. d philos.-philol. Kl. d. Bayr. Ahad iii. 515-6; Brandis, ii. b, 1566.

further development and elucidation. The manner of presentation is in parts clumsy and not free from repetitions, nor is the proof always convincing, while the $a\pi o\rho la\iota$, which the writer frequently delights to propose, receive an unsatisfactory solution, or none at all. In the original parts of the work we find much that is more or less at variance with the spirit of the Aristotelian ethics. The author avoids the religious view of ethics

E.g. B. i. 1, 1183, b, 8 sqq.
2 So ii. 3, 1199, a, 19—b, 36,
ii. 15, 1212, b, 37 sqq. i. 35, 1127,
b, 27 sqq. The difficulties so

seriously discussed at ii. 6, 1201, a, 16 sqq. are curiously and

characteristically petty.

3 In this respect the following points may be noticed :- i. 2-3 gives us various divisions of the kinds of Good, of which only that into spiritual, bodily, and external goods (in c. 3) is Aristotelian, and the subdivision of the spiritual goods into φρόνησις, άρετη, and ήδονη is taken from Eud. ii. 1, 1218, b, 34, where, however, these three are not given as a division, but are only intended as examples of spiritual goods. Peculiar to this author is the division of goods into the τίμια (God, the Soul, the Nous, &c.), the ἐπαινετὰ (the Virtues), the δυνάμεις (a curious expression for the δυνάμει άγαθά, i.e. the things, such as riches, beauty, &c., which may be used for good or evil), and fourthly, the σωστικον και ποιητικον τοῦ ἀγαθοῦ; ρεсиliar to him also are the divisions into things which are good unconditionally or good conditionally (i.e. virtues and external goods), into τέλη and οὐ τέλη (as health and the means to health), and into $\tau \in \lambda \in \alpha$ and $a \tau \in \lambda \hat{\eta}$. The methods already introduced by the Stoics seem to have influenced the writer of the M. Mor. in this matter, for we know something of their fondness for multiplying distinctions between different senses of the ἀγαθὸν, de quo v. Stob. ii. 92-102, 124-5, 130, 136-7; Diog. vii. 94-98; CIC. Fin. iii. 16, 55; SEXT. Pyrrh. iii. 181; SENECA, Epist. 66, 5, 36-7. As these Stoical classifications had their origin chiefly in the work of Chrysippus, we might found upon this circumstance an inference as to the date of the M. Mor. itself .-Again, though it is not true that the M. Mor. leaves out the dianoëtic virtues (for only the name is wanting, and at i. 5, 1185, b, 5, i. 35, the subject is really dealt with), yet, on the other hand, it is against the Aristotelian principles to say, as the author does, that only the virtues of the ἄλογον (i.e. the ethical virtues, which, therefore, are alone named άρεται) are ἐπαινεται, but that those of the Adyov Exov are not (i. 5, 1185, b, 5 sqq. c. 35, 1197, a, 16). The author, in this respect dissenting from Aristotle, under the head of the dianoëtic virtues combines τέχνη with ἐπιστήμη, which he found in Eudemus.1 Of the later combination of the Peripatetic teaching with Stoic and Academic elements his work contains hardly a trace; 2

which term in the M. Mor. is constantly used for τέχνη (i. 35, 1197, a, 18, cf. with the Nic. Eth. vi. 5, 1140, b, 21; and 1198, a, 32, ii. 7, 1205, a, 31, 1206, a, 25, cf. Nic. Eth. vii. 12-13, 1152, b, 18, 1153, a, 23; ii, 12, 1211, b, 25, cf. Nic. Eth. x. 7, 1167 b, 33; only in M. Mor. i. 35, 1197, a, 12 sqq. is $\tau \in \chi \nu \eta$ used in the same way as in Nic. Eth. vi. 4, 1140, a, 11; see Spengel, ibid. p. 447); while, on the other hand, the M. Mor. oddly adds to the four remaining dianoëtic virtues ύπόληψις as a fifth (i. 35, 1196, b, 37). When the author defines justice in a wide sense as ἀρετή $\tau \in \lambda \in (\alpha, and adds that in this sense$ a man can be just for himself alone (i. 94, 1193, b, 2-15), he overlooks the closer definition given by Aristotle, that it is the άρετη τελεία πρός έτερον (ευρτα, vol. ii. p. 170, n. 2). As to the question whether a man can do himself an injustice, which Aristotle had dealt with in the Nic. Eth. v. 15 ad fin. metaphorically as referring to the injustice of one part of the soul towards another, the author of the M. Mor. takes it literally (i. 34, 1196, a, 25, ii. 11, 1211, a, 27). So the question if a man can be his own friend was similarly treated by EUDEMUS, vii. 6, 1240, a, 13 sqq. b, 28 sqq. and M. Mor. ii. 11, 1211, a, 30 sqq. The M. Mor. is very unaristotelian in the circumstance that (at ii. 3, 1199, b, 1) it includes Tyranny as one of the things which may be good in themselves, even if

they are not always good for individual people; and when the author (in ii. 7, 1204, b, 25 sqq.) describes pleasure as a movement of the sensitive part of the soul. he follows Theophrastus rather than Aristotle; cf. supra, ii. pp. 147, 391, n. 2.

In the discussion on evruy'a. (M. Mor. ii. 8; Eud. vii. 14) the author suggests that it consists in an $\epsilon \pi_i \mu \epsilon \lambda \epsilon_i \alpha \theta \epsilon \hat{\omega} \nu$, in that he supposes God to apportion good and evil according to merit ; and. with Eudemus (supra, vol. ii. p. 424 sq.), he traces it back partly to a μετάπτωσις τῶν πραγμάτων, but partly also and chiefly to the happy disposition of the person's nature (the φύσις άλογος), the operation of which he compares with that of an enthusiasm. admitting, however, as did his predecessors, that it is directed by a Divine Being. The author of the M. Mor. further agrees with Eudemus (supra, vol. ii. p. 425, n. 1) as to the union of all the virtues to form καλοκάγαθία (ii. 9), and concludes with him that the real function of ethical virtues is that they guard the active reason from derangement by the passions; but he omits the consideration of the relation of reason to the Godhead and the doctrine that the knowledge of God is the final aim of life.

² The only passage in which we can find any positive reference to the doctrine of the Stoics is that just cited, i.e. i. 2; there is, perhaps, a negative reference in ii. 7, 1206, b, 17: ἀπλῶς δ'

and partly on this account, and partly on account of the poverty of its language as contrasted with the richness of such writers as Critolaus, it must be referred to the third or at latest to the second century; but in scientific independence it is decidedly inferior even to the Eudemian Ethics.—Of earlier date than the Magna Moralia is without doubt the first book of the Œconomics. The contents of this small but well-written treatise consist partly of a recapitulation and summary, partly of an expansion of the view Aristotle had taken in the 'Politics of the Household, the relation of Man and Wife, and Slavery; 1 the last of these he does not attempt to justify.2 The most original part of it refers to the separation of Economics as a special science from Politics—a modification of Aristotle's views which we have already met with in Eudemus.3 The book in general reminds us of Eudemus; its relation to the economical sections of the Politics very much resembles that of the Eudemian to the Nicomachean Ethics, and the whole style of treatment, and even the language which is clear and elegant, but lacks the nerve of Aristotle's 4-would afford further support to the conjecture that Eudemus was its author. Philodemus, however, attributes it to Theophrastus; 5 and although

οὐχ, ώς οἴονται οἱ ἄλλοι, τῆς certainly cannot attribute to άρετης άρχη και ήγεμών έστιν δ λόγος, άλλὰ μᾶλλον τὰ πάθη.

¹ Supra, vol. ii. p. 213 sqq.

Aristotle.

³ Supra, vol. i. p. 186, n. 4.

b, 9, is surprising.

5 De Vit. ix. (Vol. Herc. iii.)
Col. 7, 38, 47, 27, 15, where chaps.

² This circumstance amongst others goes to prove that this work is not an Aristotelian sketch antecedent to the Politics. but is based on the cognate section of the Politics itself and is an elaboration of it which we

⁴ It is difficult to find, as in the Ethics of Eudemus, any doctrine that can be called un-Aristotelian; but the expression την των Ιατρών δύναμιν, с. 5, 1244,

all we can conclude from this is that several MSS. bore his name,¹ yet there is no decisive consideration that can be urged against the correctness of this view.² The second book of the Œconomics, which has no connection with the first, is as unmistakably later in origin as it is inferior in value. Its contents consist chiefly of a collection of anecdotes in illustration of a point in Aristotle's doctrine,³ introduced by a dry and somewhat singular enumeration of the different kinds of Economy.⁴ This book, while without doubt proceeding from the Peripatetic school, is only one of the many proofs of the paltry pedantry which after a few generations became its predominating feature.

The *Rhetoric* dedicated to Alexander, which, as formerly remarked,⁵ cannot be previous to Aristotle, is the work of a rhetorician whose date cannot be further determined. It need not here delay us, as it exhibits no philosophical originality.

Even with these pseudo-Aristotelian books, our knowledge of the written works which proceeded from the Peripatetic school of the third and second centuries, and of their contents, must be admitted to be in the highest degree defective as compared with their number

1-5 of the *Economics* are submitted to a detailed and searching criticism. Cf. as to this and as to certain variations of the Philodemian from the common text which it indicates, the notes of the 'editor and his preface (vii.-viii.).

Supra, vol. ii. p. 204, n. 2, vol. i. p. 86, n. 1 (π . $\delta r \phi \mu \omega \nu \gamma \rho a \mu \mu \tilde{\omega} \nu$) 104, and Zell. Ph. d. Gr i. 476, 1, where it is shown that this was the case with many of these works, genuine

or spurious, attributed to Aristotle.

² The absence of the *Economics* from the list of works by Theophrastus given by Diogenes proves little.

³ Supra, vol. ii. p. 222, n. 2.
⁴ The βασιλική, σατραπική, πολιτική, and ἰδιωτική—followed by a catalogue of the various sources of income belonging to each of these.

⁵ Supra, vol. і. р. 74, п. 3.

and copiousness. Nevertheless such imperfect knowledge as we have places us in a position to form a true estimate of the development of this school as a whole. We see it, under Theophrastus and Strato, taking an honourable place till towards the middle of the third century; we see it especially making important contributions in the field of natural science, and under the influence of this scientific interest modifying important Aristotelian doctrines in a direction which seemed to promise greater unity to the system, but which if consistently followed out must have involved the abandonment of many of its essential features. But the spirit of the time was unfavourable to these efforts, and the Peripatetic school could not long resist its influence. Soon after the time of Strato all independence of thought in science, and simultaneously also in logic and metaphysics, ceased, and the school began to confine itself to ethics and rhetoric, and that historical and philosophical erudition which with all its extent and variety compensates us neither with a healthy criticism of tradition nor a broad treatment of history for its poverty in philosophic thought. This was the signal for its relapse into a position of subordinate importance. continued nevertheless to do good service in propagating the knowledge of earlier researches, and in forming by the moderation of its ethical doctrine, which differed from Aristotle's only in a few isolated particulars, a wholesome counterpoise to the one-sidedness of other schools. But the lead in the scientific movement had passed into other hands, and we have to seek in the younger schools the true exponents of the philosophy of the age.

APPENDIX

ON THE FORM OF THE 'POLITICS'

(Being vol. ii. p. 204, n. 1.)

The form in which Aristotle's Politics has come down to us (as to which see also i. 100, n. 1) presents many peculiar features. After a short introduction, bk. i. discusses the Household as an element in the State—chiefly on the economic side. other hand, the Family and Education are reserved for a later place, on the ground that they have to adapt themselves to the general form of political life (c. 13, 1260, b. 8). Passing in bk. ii. to the doctrine of the State itself. Aristotle proposes, in the first place, to investigate the Best Form of State (i. 13 fin. ii. 1 init.), , proceeding by way of introduction to criticise the most famous States, whether actually historical or merely imagined by philosophers. After examining the idea of the state and of the citizen (iii. 1-5), he goes on in bk. iii. (6-13) to distinguish the different Forms of Constitution and to discuss the various points of view from which their value may be estimated. In iti. 14 he turns to Monarchy as the first of the true forms, devoting four chapters to its discussion. Chapter 18 proposes to take up the discussion of the Best State, but breaks off with an incomplete sentence, which is not resumed till bk. vii. 1 init. Meanwhile the subject also has to stand over. Bk. iv. treats of the Constitutions which remain after Monarchy and Aristocracy have been disposed of, viz. Oligarchy, Democracy, Polity and Tyranny. It discusses which is the best suited for the majority of states and under what conditions each is natural. Finally (cc. 14-16) it investigates the various possible arrangements for the bodies entrusted with legislative, executive and judicial powers. Bk. v. is devoted to the question of change in the different forms of government, their decay and the means for their preservation. Bk. vi. introduces us (2-7) to the subordinate species of democracy and oligarchy, and (c. 8) to the discussion of the different offices of state. Bk. vii. begins (1-3) the treatment of the best state promised in iii. 18, with a discussion of happiness in the individual and in the community, and then proceeds to sketch the outlines of the best state itself (c. 4 bk. viii. fin.), devoting especial care to the subject of education and kindred questions (vii. 15, 1134, b, 5-viii. 7). The work ends informally with the discussion of Music.

Even earlier scholars recognised that neither the scope nor the arrangement of the work as it stands corresponds with Aristotle's original plan, and recent critics are still more pronounced on this head. After NICOL. ORESME (1489) and SEGNI (1559) had remarked that the subject of bks. vii. and viii. connects with bk. iii.. Scaino da Salo (1577) was the first to propose actually to place them between bks. iii. and iv. Sixty years later (1637) Conring not only independently repeated this suggestion but went on to attack the integrity of our text, indicating in his edition of 1656 a number of lacunæ of greater or less extent which he suspected to exist. In more recent times the subject attracted the attention of Barthélemy St-HILAIRE (Politique d'Aristote, i. pp. cxli-clxxii), who, while he denied that the work as we have it is either incomplete or mutilated, held, on the other hand, not only that bks. vii. and viii, should come after iii., but that bks. v. and vi. should likewise be transposed (the latter coming between iv. and v.). He himself observes this order in his translation, and he has been followed by Bekker in his smaller edition and by Congreve. Both of these suggestions are accepted by Spengel ('Ueb. d. Politik d. Arist.' Abh. d. Münchn. Akad. philos.-philol. Kl. v. 1-49), NICKES (De Arist. Polit. Libr. Bonn, 1851, p. 67 sqg. 112 sqq.), Brandis(Gr.-röm. Phil. ii. p. 1666 sqq. 1679 sq.), and others. WOLTMANN ('Ueb. d. Ordnung d. Bücher in d. Arist. Politik.' Rhein, Mus. 1842, 321 sqg.), on the other hand, while accepting the transposition of v. and vi., rejects the removal of vii. and

viii. from their present place. HILDENBRAND (Gesch. u. Syst. d. Rechts- und Staatsphil. i. 345-385; cf. Fechner, Gerechtigkeitsbegr. d. Arist. p. 65, p. 87, 6), on the contrary, defends the traditional order of v. and vi., but inserts vii. and viii. between iii. and iv. The traditional arrangement of both these sections has been defended by GÖTTLING (Preface to his edition published 1824, p. xx sqq.), FORCHHAMMER (Verhandl. d. Philologenvers. in Kapsel, p. 81 sq., Philologus, xv. 1, 50 sq.; on the former with its curious suggestion that the Politics follows the order of the four causes, see Spengel, loc. cit. 48 sq., Hildenbrand, op. cit. 390 sq.), Rose (De Arist. Libr. Ord. 125 sq.), Bendixen (Zur Politik d. Arist. Philol. xiii. 264-301; see HILDENBRAND, p. 496), and others. No modern scholar accepts Conring's judgment on the integrity of the work without reservation; several—e.g. Göttling (loc. cit.), and especially Nickes (p. 90, 92 sq. 109, 123, 130 sq.)—even controvert it. Spengel, however (p. 8 sq. 11 sq. 41 sq.), Brandis (p. 1669 sq. 1673 sq.) and even NICKES (98 sq.) admit several not inconsiderable lacunæ especially at the end of bk. viii., while Van Schwinderen (De Arist. Polit. Libr. p. 12; see HILDENBRAND, p. 449) held that two books, Schneider (Arist. Polit. i. p. viii, ii. p. 232) that the greater part of the discussion on the best state, is lost. Lastly, HILDENBRAND (p. 387 sq. 449 sq.) surmises that at least three books are wanting at the end of bk. viii., and at the end of the whole the last section of bk. vi., besides, perhaps, four books on the philosophy of law.

If, finally, we ask how we are to explain the present state of the text, the common opinion is that the work was completed by Aristotle himself, but that it was subsequently mutilated and fell into disorder. Brandis, however (p. 1669 sq.), is inclined to consider bk. viii. unfinished rather than mutilated, and this view is more fully developed by Hildenbrand (p. 355 sq. 379 sq.), who holds that Aristotle intended to insert the essay on the ideal state which is begun in bks. vii. and viii. between iii. and iv., but postponed its completion till he should have written bks. iv. and v. and was overtaken by death before he had finished either it or bk. vi., which was to follow v.

(Some further references to the literature of the subject will be found in Barthélemy St-Hilaire, p. 146 sq.; Nickes, p. 67; BENDIXEN, p. 265 sq.; HILDENBRAND, p. 345 sq., from whom the above are partly taken.)

Zeller's own view, the grounds of which can here be only shortly given, is as follows:

- (1) As regards the order of the text, the majority of recent scholars are undoubtedly right in holding that Aristotle intended bks. vii. and viii. to follow immediately after iii. The contents of bk. ii. as well as its opening words taken with the conclusion of bk. i. are clearly preparatory to a discussion of the best state. This discussion is expressly taken up at the end of bk. iii.. and the interrupted sentence with which it closes is resumed at the beginning of vii. in a manner that can hardly be explained except upon the hypothesis that the passage was continuous in the original. Finally, the section upon the best constitution is quite certainly presupposed by such passages as iv. 2, 1289, a. 30, b, 14, c. 3, 1290, a, 1 (cp. vii. 8, 9), c. 7, 1293, b, 1, also c. 4, 1290, b, 38 (cp. iv. 3, vii. 3), and even c. 1 (on which see Spengel, p. 20 sq.). If it be urged that the words καὶ περὶ τὰς ἄλλας πολιτείας ἡμῖν τεθεώρηται πρότερον appear to refer to the contents of bks. iv.-vi., it may be replied that these words may just as well be taken to refer to the ideal constitutions criticised in bk. ii. (τὰς ἄλλας πολιτείας, ii. 1, 1260, b, 29) as HILDENBRAND takes them (p. 363 sq.). The words in question, however, fit so ill the passage in which they occur that it is best to consider them. with Spengel (p. 26) and most other critics, as a later gloss.
- (2) On the other hand, there seems no necessity to transpose bks. v. and vi., as has already been shown by Hildenbrand. The only valid ground for this change is the close connection of the contents of iv. and vi. taken together with the preliminary review in iv. 2, 1289, b, 12 sq.—The other arguments, e.g. that the words èν τῆ μεθόδω τῆ πρὸ ταύτης in vi. 2, 1317, b, 34, refer to iv. c. 15, as though it immediately preceded, and that v. 9, 1309, b, 16, τὸ πολλάκις εἰρημένον refers to vi. 6 as well as to iv. 12, are of little value: the 'μέθοδος πρὸ ταύτης' may denote not only the immediately preceding book (the division into books can hardly be Aristotle's) but the whole preceding section, including bks. iv. and v.; while 'πολλάκις' is more naturally taken as referring to v. 3, 6 than to vi. 6, if indeed it is necessary to see in it a reference to any other passage besides

iv. 12, where the principle that the supporters of the existing constitution should consider their opponents, although only expressly stated in this general form, is applied with so much detail that it might very well be said to have been here repeatedly (1296, b. 24, 31, 37, as well as 15) emphasised.—The argument, however, above referred to rests upon a gratuitous assumption as to the plan of the work. The contents of iv. and vi. are undoubtedly closely related, but it does not follow that they must have formed a continuous whole. It is possible that Aristotle first completed the general theory of the imperfect forms of constitution (iv. and v.), and afterwards in vi. returned to the first section of the earlier investigation, because he wished to make a more special application of the principles there laid So far from contradicting this view the passage iv. 2, 1289, b. 12 sq. is quite satisfactorily explained on the supposition that it is intended merely as a sketch of the plan of bks. iv. and Of the five points here mentioned, the first three are discussed in iv. 3-13, the fifth (the φθοραί and σωτηρίαι τῶν πολιτειῶν) in v., while it is all the more likely that the section iv. 14-16 is meant for the discussion of the fourth (τίνα τρόπον δεῖ καθιστάναι ταύτας τὰς πολιτείας), as Aristotle expressly says (1289, b, 22) that he intends here to touch only lightly on all these subjects (πάντων τούτων όταν ποιησώμεθα συντόμως την ένδεχομένην μνείαν: hence also the νῦν iv. 15. 1300, a, 8), and as the scheme of this discussion which is laid down in iv. 14 init. is actually carried out in c. 16. It is quite natural, therefore, that v. 1 should open with the words περὶ μὲν οὖν τῶν ἄλλων ὧν προειλόμεθα σχεδον εἴρηται περὶ πάντων, nor is there any necessity to take these words as referring to bk. vi. as well. That we should even be wrong in doing so is proved by the passages in vi. which admittedly refer to v., viz. c. 1 init. and fin. c. 4. 1319, b, 4, c. 5, 1319, b, 37; since in all these passages the rejection of the words in question or the change of a τεθεώρηται πρότερον with a θεωρηθήσεται ύστερον could be justified only as a last resource. Finally, the incompleteness of the discussions in vi. is more easily explained if we suppose it to have been composed subsequently to v.

(3) With regard to the integrity of the text, we have to acknowledge, in the first place, that many single sentences are

irremediably corrupt. In the second place, we have several isolated passages which are undoubtedly insertions by a later hand, e.g., ii. 12, which was suspected by Göttling (p. 345 sq. on the passage in question) and Brandis (1590, A, 586), though defended by Spengel (p. 11) and Nickes (p. 55 sq.). and rejected from 1274, a. 22 onwards by Susemial (no impartial critic can accept Krohn's conclusion in the Brandenburger Programm, 'Zur Kritik Arist. Schriften,' 1872, p. 29 sq. that scarcely the half of the Politics can be attributed to Aristotle). Lastly, we have every ground to believe that important sections of the work were either left unfinished or have been The treatment of the best state is obviously incomplete: Aristotle himself refers us for the further discussion of musical education with which he breaks off to essays on rhythms (viii. 7 init.) and on comedy (vii. 13, 1336, b, 20); but besides these we had a right to expect a full discussion of the question of the proper treatment of poetry, and the scientific training of the citizen, which Aristotle's principles could hardly have permitted him to leave untouched (see vii. 14, 1333, b. 16 sq. c. 15, 1334, b, 8, viii, 4, 1339, a, 4, and more fully on this and other points the section on the best state); the life of the family, the education of women, the treatment of children (παιδονομία), property, the treatment of slaves, drinking booths, are merely mentioned to be expressly reserved for later treatment (see i. 13, 1260, b. 8, vii. 16, 1335, b, 2, vii. 6, 1326, b, 32 sq. vii. 10 fin. vii. 17, 1336, b. 24): the constitution of the ideal state is only sketched on the most general lines, vii. 15; similarly we look in vain for any account of the laws for the regulation of adult life, indispensable as they are declared (Ethics, x. 10, 1180, a, 1) to be for the welfare of the state, and of legislation in general in the narrower sense as distinguished from the constitution, although earlier writers are expressly reproached (Ethics, loc, cit. 1181. b, 12) with the neglect of this point, while Pol. iv. 1, 1289, a, 11 requires that the discussion of the different constitutions shall be followed by that of the laws (on the distinction between them see also ii. 6, 1265, a, 1), not only of the best absolutely but of those which are best adapted for each form of constitution, and express reference is made in other passages to a section upon legislation (see v. 9, 1309, b, 14: άπλῶς δὲ, ὅσα ἐν τοῖς νόμοις ὡς συμ-

Φέροντα λέγομεν ταις πολιτείαις, ἄπαντα ταιτα σώζει τας πολιτείας. and iii. 15, 1286, a, 2: τὸ μὲν οὖν περὶ τῆς τοιαύτης στρατηγίας έπισκοπείν νόμων έχει μαλλον είδος ή πολιτείας ώστ' άφείσθω την πρώτην). Cf. Hildenbrand, 351 sq. 449 sq. If we consider how much space all these discussions would have required, we can easily understand how large a part of the essay on the best state which Aristotle had designed is wanting. But the lastquoted passages prove also that the discussion of the imperfect forms was to be supplemented by a section on legislation to which bk. vi. appears to have been designed as an introduction. As moreover the discussion of the doyal in iv. 15 is resumed in vi. 8, we should have expected similar discussions of the legislative assemblies and the law courts (iv. 14, 16). Finally, seeing that vi. 1, 1316, b, 39 sq. expressly notes the absence in the foregoing discussions of all reference to the forms of constitution which result from the union of heterogeneous elements (e.g. an oligarchical senate with aristocratic courts of law), and proposes to remedy this omission, we must reckon this section also among those which either have been lost or were never completed.

(4) Which of these alternatives we ought to accept, and how accordingly we ought to explain the form in which the work has come down to us, we have not sufficient data to decide. But the circumstance that the chief lacunæ are at the end of the second and third of the main divisions of the work lends countenance, as Hildenbrand rightly remarks (p. 356), to the view that neither was completed by Aristotle himself. We must suppose, moreover, that he developed coincidently the doctrine of the best state and of the imperfect forms, although he intended on completion of the whole to combine them in strict order of succession. This view gains some support from the fact that there is no evidence that the work ever existed in a more complete form, and that even Diog. v. 24 (Hermippus) gives only eight books, while the extract from Arius Didymus given by Stobæus, Ecl. ii. 326 sq. (cf. vol. iii. a, 546 sq.) at no point goes beyond what is contained in the Politics as we have The view here taken is accepted by Schintzer (Zu Arist. Politik Eos, i. 499 sq.), and with more hesitation by UEBERWEG (Grundr. i. 178, 5th ed.). Susemial, on the other hand

(Jahrbb, f. Philol, xcix. 593 sq. ci. 343 sq 349 sq. Arist. Polit. li. sg.), and Oncken (Staatsl. d. Ar. i. 95 sg.) follow Barthélemy St-Hilaire even in the transposition of bks. v. and vi. Oncken's hypothesis that the Politics and other works of Aristotle have come down to us only in the form given to them by students. Zeller has already expressed his opinion (supra, vol. i. p. 133), which coincides with what Susemihl had previously held upon the same point (see Jahrbb. f. Philol. vol. cxiv. 1876, The passage from Politics, vii. 1, discussed in p. 122 sq.). vol. i. p. 115, n. 4, itself contradicts this hypothesis. similar grounds we must reject the view (Bernays, Arist. Politik, 212) that the work we have consists of a collection of notes which were designed for the philosopher's own use in his oral instructions. In this case his style would have been much terser and more condensed, nor should we have had those forms of transition to which attention has been called by Zeller (supra. vol i. p. 135, n. 2) and by Oncken, i. 58 (for further examples see i. 3, 1253, b, 14, i. 8 init. i. 9, 1257, b, 14, vii. 1, 1323, b, 36, vii. 2, 1325, a, 15), or of reference, as in iii. 12, 1282, b, 20 (οἱ κατὰ φιλοσοφίαν λόγοι, ἐν οἶς διώρισται περὶ τῶν ἦθικῶν), viii. 7, 1341, b, 40 (πάλιν έν τοις περί ποιητικής έρουμεν σαφέστερον), vii. 1, 1323, a, 21, iii. 6, 1278, b, 30 (see supra, vol. i. p. 115, n. 4). The Politics, in fact, together with the Ethics and the Rhetoric, belong to that class of Aristotle's works in which the reader is most plainly before his eyes, the style being much too full for notes designed for the author's exclusive use. Let the reader take the passages i. 2, 1252, a, 34-b, 27, c. 4, 1253, b, 33-39, c. 9, 1257, b. 14-17, i. 11, 1258, b. 39-1259, a. 36, vii. 1, 1323, a, 2-1324, a, 4, vii. 2, 1324, a, 25-1325, a, 15, iv. 1 init. and then ask himself whether anyone would write in such a way for his own private use.

INDEX

ACADEMY, i. 10, 29, 142: ii. 497 Accidents, i. 213, 223, 281 Actuality, i. 278, 340; ii. 97 Alexander the Great, i. 21-43. 169, 396; ii. 255 Analytics, i. 67, 124, 147, 191. 211, 232, 265; ii. 363 Anaxagoras, i. 307, 442; ii. 11 Andronicus: his edition of Aristotle's works, i. 49-51, 112, 137; of Theophrastus' works, ii. 352 Animals, ii. 21, 37, 85-89, 90 - History of, 87-88, 125, 149, 155, 494; smaller tracts as to, i. 91, 152; ii. 39, 110 Aristo, ii. 477-79 Aristocracy, ii. 215, 241-44, 255, 273, 278-82, 50T Aristotle, Life and Character, i. 1 - 47 Philosophy, general view of, i. 161-71; method, i. 171-80; divisions, i. 180-90; ii. 336 - 37— Works, i. 48–160 Aristoxenus, i. 11; ii. 429-38 Art, i. 464; ii. 301-24 'Aρχαl, i. 344, 355, 392, 409, 507 Atomists, i. 305-08, 426, 434, 442-58; ii. 455-56 Axioms, i. 248-52

BEAUTY, ii. 191, 264, 301-04, 331 Becoming and Being, i. 294-95, 297, 302, 310, 324, 341, 347, 366 Body and soul, ii. 4, 90-98, 101, 130, 390-92, 436-38, 467-70, 480

CALLISTHENES, i, 32; ii, 348, 445 Categories, i. 64, 147, 155, 192, 274-90; ii. 421, 488 Categories, i. 274 foll. Catharsis, ii. 307, 311-17 Cause, i. 355; ii. 456-57 Change, i. 302, 347, 366, 395, 423, 441 Citizen, ii. 227-33, 261-62 Clearchus, ii. 443–45 Concepts, i. 192, 212, 298, 376; ii. 336 Constitution, forms of, ii. 233-58, 441-42, 501 Contingency, i. 362-64 Contradiction, principle of, i. 225-51, 304

Conversión, i. 236, 240 Corpus Aristotelicum, i. 105, 131, 145, 177 Courage, ii. 167 Critolaus, ii. 479 foll.

DE ANIMA, i. 89, 150, 378; ii. 1 Death, ii. 77, 133 Definition, i. 70, 75, 192, 213, 265-70 Demetrius of Phalerus, i. 142; ii. 351, 447 Democracy, ii. 238-41, 274-77, 501

Democritus, i. 210, 442-58; ii. 5, 36, 455-61

Demonstration, ii. 294 foll.
Desire, ii. 108-15, 160
Dialectic, i. 173, 185, 252, 255;
ii. 290-92
Dialogues, i. 55-61, 177
Dicæarchus, i. 151; ii. 438-42
Difference, i. 70, 223
Diodorus, ii. 486
Diogenes, Catalogue of Aristotle's works, i. 2, 48, 144-52
Dreams, ii. 72, 76

EDUCATION, ii. 262-72, 307 Eleatics, i. 309-10, 323 Elements, i. 469-520 Empedocles, i. 304, 442, 450; ii. 5, 12-13, 413 Epicurus, i. 9; ii. 350 Essence, i. 163, 194-95, 213. 220, 337; ii. 10 Ethical Theories: of Aristotle, i. 159, 168; ii. 136, 225 - of Plato, ii. 147, 161 - of later Peripatetics, i. 157; ii. 399, 410, 412, 422-91 - of other schools, ii. 158, 432 Ethics, Nicomachean, i. 44, 73, 98, 116, 132, 250, 318; ii. 137, 153, 166-67, 177-78, 333, 495, 498 Eudemian Ethics, i. 97, 115, 143, 157, 250, 397, 427, 495, 497-98 Eudemus, i. 55, 80, 110, 135, 142; ii. 115, 148, 234-35, 358-63,

FINAL CAUSE, i. 174, 356, 404, 459
First Philosophy, i. 76, 184, 189, 273, 290, 417; ii. 4 (see also *Metaphysics*)
Form and Matter, i. 179, 204, 329, 340-80; ii. 339

Exoteric teaching, i. 27, 110,

Experience (see Knowledge)

417-29, 497-98 Evolution, i. 196; ii. 24

121, 223

'Freedom of the Will, i. 230, 363; ii. 114-18, 129, 399 Friendship, i. 29; ii. 148, 191, 202

God, i. 389-416, 470; ii. 122, 211, 327-33, 343, 364, 370-71 Goods, external, ii. 139, 144-53, 496 -- community of, ii. 222-24

HAPPINESS, i. 116, 151; ii. 138-53, 208, 487-88 Hieronymus, ii. 475 History of Animals, i. 87 Household, ii. 213-27

IDEAS, Platonic theory of, i. 162, 204, 296-97, 313-27, 436 : ii. 337-47 Identity, i. 223 Imagination, ii. 70; 85 Immortality, ii. 129-30, 134. 139, 471-72, 482 Impulse, ii. 155-56 Individual, i. 167, 195, 296, 329, 369-74; ii. 224, 338 Induction, i. 202, 212, 252 Infinity, i. 350, 427 Insight, ii. 157-59, 163, 166, 177, 182-88 (see also Φρόvyois)

JUDGMENT, i. 229 foll. Justice, ii. 170-176, 192, 196

KNOWLEDGE and Opinion, i. 46, 70, 163, 194-203, 319, 336; ii. 180, 367, 392

Logic, i. 191-273 Lyceum, i. 27, 36; ii. 479 Lyco, ii. 474-75, 479

Magna Moralia, i. 80, 97, 150; ii. 137, 495-96 Mathematics, i. 183-84, 418; ii. 364 Matter (see Form and Matter) Mean, doctrine of the, ii. 162-64, 168, 170, 177-78 Melissus, i. 309, 311; ii. 489 Memory, ii. 70, 85 Metaphysics, i. 62, 76, 124-36, 160, 274-327, 328-416; ii. 204, 364, 369 Meteorology, i. 83, 149, 155, 512-Methodology, i. 193, 212 Modality, i. 233 Monarchy, ii. 243, 249-55, 501 Motion, i. 380_89, 394, 422, 473; ii, 339, 365-66, 373-75, 463, 492±93 Music, ii. 266-68, 301, 308, 311-14, 319, 415, 432-35, 465-66

NATURAL HISTORY, 29-30, 259-60, 417-68; ii. 16-49, 81-89, 381-90. (For Aristotle's Natural History, see Animals, History of)
Nature, i. 359-64, 417-68; ii. 10-21, 343, 454
Necessity, i. 358, 362
Nous, i. 199, 201, 248; ii. 93-105, 131-32, 181, 184

Economics, i. 100, 151, 186; ii. 166, 495-98 Oligarchy, ii. 239, 274, 277-78, 501 Opinion (see Knowledge) Organon, i. 69, 193-194

Π. έρμηνείας, i. 49, 50, 66, 114, 147, 192; ii. 489
Π. ζώων γενέσεως, i. 50, 90, 92, 125; ii. 48
Π. ζώων μορίων, i. 50, 83, 92-93, 125
Π. ψνχῆς, i. 55, 89 foll., 158
Perception, 202-11; ii. 59-60, 106, 468
Peripatetics, i. 27, 137, 441; ii. 105, 340-47, 348-500

Personality 1. 402; ii. 125, 134-Phanias, ii. 443 Phormio, ii. 483 Physics, i. 81-86, 124, 417, 520; ii. 6, 376, 419, 489 Planets, i. 501; ii. 464 Plants, i. 93-94; ii. 33-37 Plato, Aristotle's relations to: personal, i. 6-18; phin phical, i. 161-62, 296, 428, 477, 508; ii. 161, 259 philoso- — æsthetics of, ii. 301, 307 - Ideal Theory, i. 313 foll.; ii. 337 foll --- Religion, ii. 325-35 - Republic, ii. 222-23, 262 – (see also Ideas) Pleasure, ii. 75, 108-11, 146-49, 157, 481 Poetics, i. 102, 127, 151, 155; ii. 204, 303, 310, 501 Poetry, 301-06, 309, 319 Πολιτείαι, i. 30, 49, 58, 101 Politics, i. 100-01, 127, 133. 155; ii. 137, 178, 203-88, 335, 501 (Appendix) Polity, ii. 234, 274, 280, 345, 501 Possibility, i. 340-48, 278 Postulates, i. 248-49 Potentiality, i. 347-55, 85 Pre-Socratics, i. 161, 313 Problems, i. 87, 96, 106; ii. 495 Production, ii. 220 foll. Proof, i. 68, 128, 191, 212, 243-56; ii. 293-98 Property, ii. 220-27 Pseudo-Arist. Writings, i. 63-64; ii. 379, 488–99 Ptolemy, i. 52, 91, 96 Philadelphus, i. 139, 142, 144; ii. 448, 451, 453 — Lagi, ii. 448 — Philometor, ii. 485 — Physcon, ii. 486 Punishment, ii. 172, 271

Pythagoreans, i. 63, 282, 311, 320,

428; ii. 9, 431

REASON, i. 180; ii, 93-109, 113, 120-35, 179, 182, 392-95
Religion, ii. 325-35
Republic, ii. 249
**Rhetoric, i. 72-74, 107, 127, 155; ii. 289-99
**Rhetoric to Alexander, i. 73-74, 148; ii. 499
Rhetoric, school of, i. 28, 414
Right, ii. 175 foll.

Scepsis, cellar of, i. 137-41; ii. Science, i. 164, 178, 194, 211, 290, 335; ii. 355 Self-control, (σωφροσύνη), ii. 167, 188 Sensation, i. 305; ii, 43, 58, 66, 70, 108, 468 Senses, ii. 62-70, 396-98, 468-70 Sex, ii. 48-58, 466 Slaves, ií. 161, 166, 216–19 Sleep, ii. 68, 75, 470 Socrates, i. 1, 162, 171-80, 213, 313, 392; ii. 100, 337, 344 Socratic Schools, i. 313 Σοφιστ. έλεγχοι, i. 69 Sophists, i. 162, 296-97, 312 Sotion, ii. 483 Soul, ii. 1, 92-94, 119-23, 130-35, 344, 395-96, 467-72, 481, 486, 491, 493 Space, i. 282, 432-37; ii. 105, 461 Speusippus, i. 19, 320-22 Spheres, i. 304, 489-501 Stars, i. 492 foll., 504; ii. 464-65 State, ii. 193, 203-13, 411, 501 — the best, ii. 241, 258-74 Strato, i. 141-2; ii. 450-72 Substance, i. 284-90, 293, 330-

37, 373

Syllogism, i. 67, 70, 191-92, 283; ii. 361

TEMPERANCE, ii. 188-89 Theophrastus, i. 36, 79, 135, 137, 148, 234-35; ii. 32, 105, 349 Time, i. 282, 433; ii. 105, 461-64 Topics, i. 68, 107, 124-36, 191, 265; ii. 363 Tragedy, ii. 310, 316-24 Tyranny, ii. 241, 274, 282, 501

UNIVERSALS, i. 167, 194-95, 214, 296, 329, 338-39, 369; ii. 224, 338, 343 Universe, i. 469, 520; ii 377-81 Uprightness (καλοκάγαθία), ii. 426

VIRTUE, ii. 90, 142, 153-62, 185, 208-10
Virtues, ii. 163-77, 496-97
— intellectual, ii. 107, 177-202, 344, 496-97
Virtues and Vices, ii. 495

Will, ii. 108-18, 126-29, 135, 155, 160, 188-89, 344

Women, ii. 214, 220, 224, 262, 270, 506

World, eternity of, i. 469; ii. 331, 482

— structure of, i. 472

XENOCRATES, i. 15, 320 Xenophanes, i. 309; ii. 332

unity of, i. 485

ZENO, i. 296-97, 310, 439; ii. 355, 489

Φρόνησις, i. 186; ii. 107, 178, 184, 309, 496 (see also Insight)

THE END.

Spottiswoode & Co. Printers. New-street Square, London.

